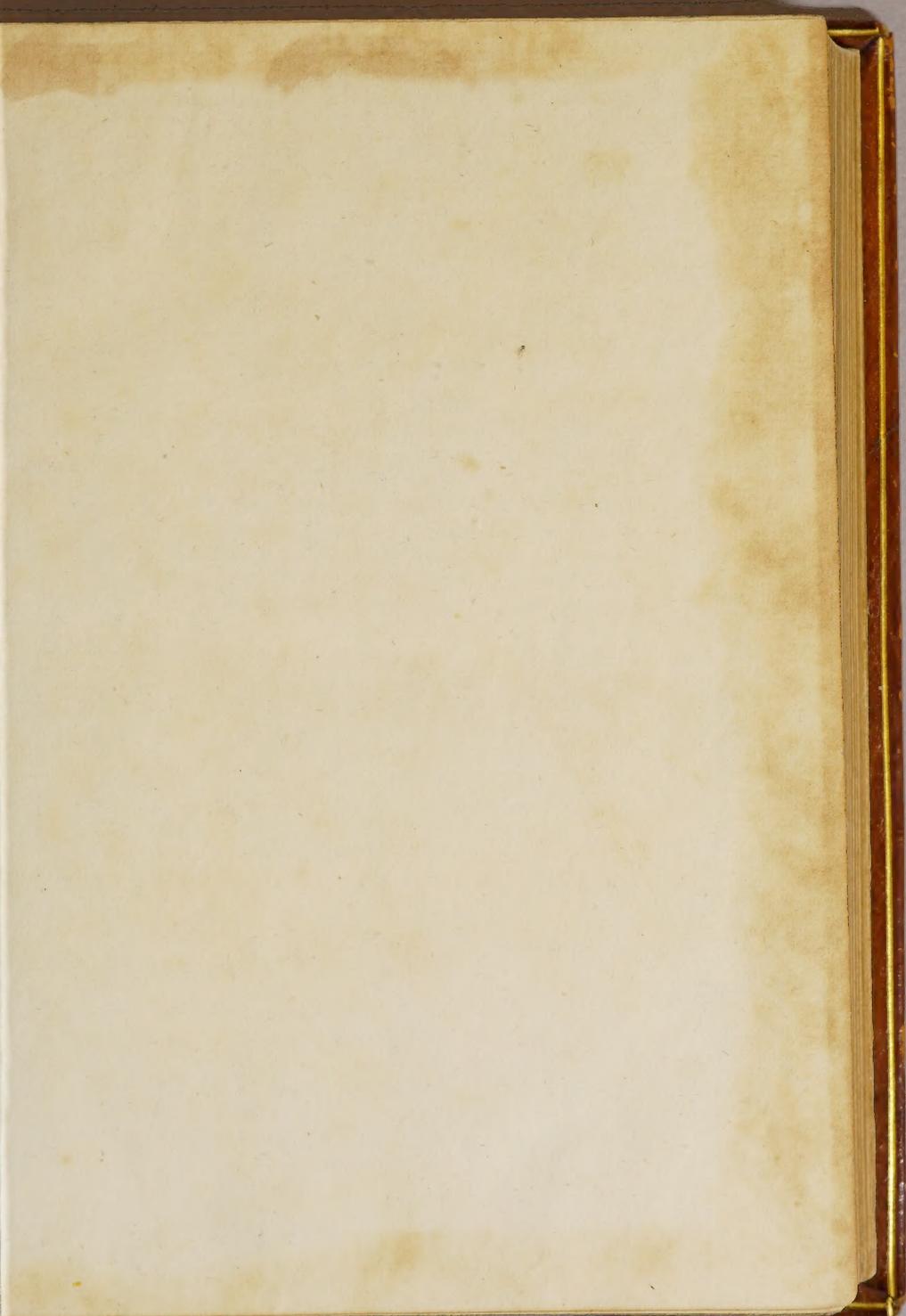


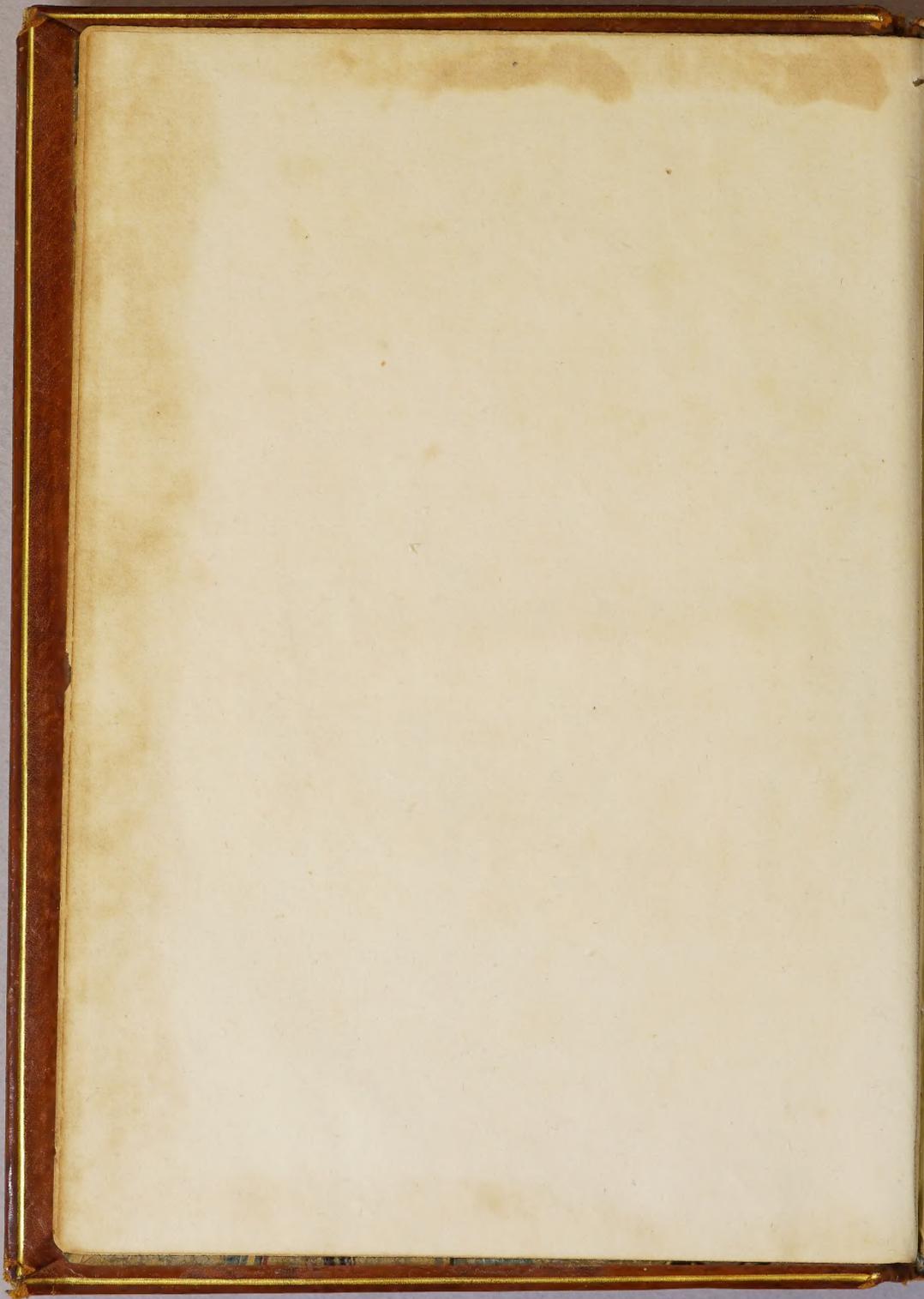


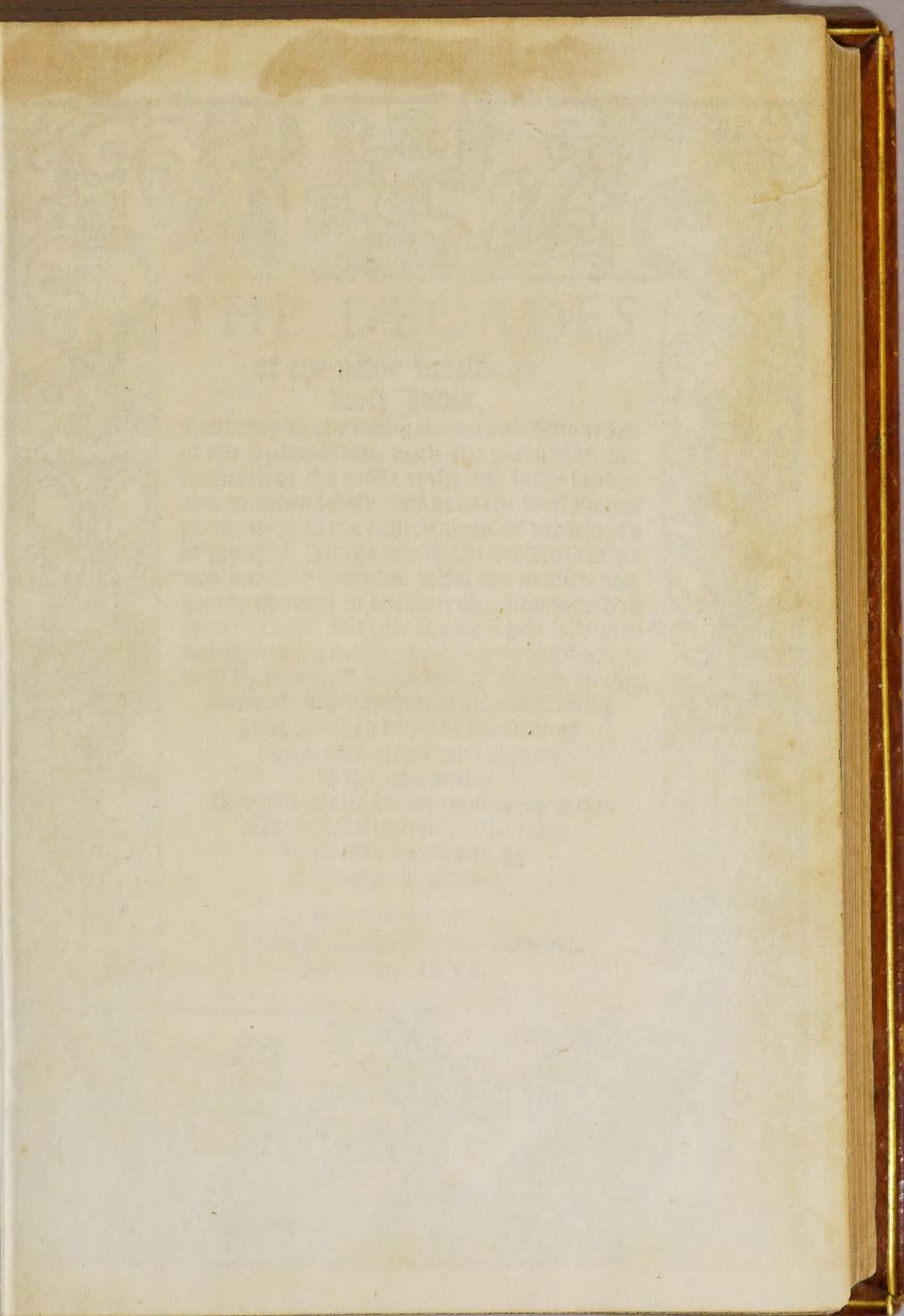
John Carter Brown.



D. 50.







Lem 70

col



# THE DECADES

of the newe worlde oz  
west India,

Conteynyng the navigations and conquestes  
of the Spanyardes, with the particular de-  
scription of the moſte ryche and large landes  
and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean  
perteynyng to the inheritance of the kinges  
of Spayne. In the which the diligent reader  
may not only conſyder what commoditie may  
hereby chaunce to the hole chriſtian world in  
tyme to come, but alſo learne many ſecretes  
touchyng the lande, the ſea, and the ſtarres,  
very neceſſarie to be knowe to al ſuch as ſhal  
attempte any navigations, oz otherwiſe  
haue delite to beholde the ſtrange  
and woonderfull woorkes of  
God and nature.

Wrytten in the Latine tounge by Iſtete  
Martyr of Angleria, and tranſ-  
lated into Englyſhe by  
Rycharde Eden,

LONDINI,  
In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell,  
ANNO. 1555.





**P**POTENTISSIMO AC SERE  
 NISSIMO PHILIPPO, AC SERENIS  
 simæ potentissimæq; Mariæ, Dei gratia Regi ac Re  
 ginæ, Angliæ, Franciæ, Neapolis, Ierusalem, et His  
 berniæ: Fidei defensoribus, Principibus Hispanias  
 rum et Siciliæ, Archiducibus Austriæ, Ducis  
 bus Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et Brabantia,  
 comitibus Haspurgi, Flandriæ, et  
 Tirolis, Richardus Edenus  
 perpetuam optat felici  
 citatem.



**V**M IN PRIMO VESTRO  
 ingressu in hanc celeberrimam Londini  
 urbem (illustrissimi Principes) cerne  
 rem quanto omnium applausu, popu  
 li concursu, ac civium frequentia, quã  
 to insuper spectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum  
 splendore, equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore,  
 cæterisq; magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro  
 dignitate vestra accepti estis dum omnes q; sui est  
 officij facere satagebant, ubi in tanta hominum tur  
 ba vix vnus reperiat qui non aliquid agendo ad  
 ventum vestrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoq; a  
 liorum exemplo (propius presertim ad me accedens  
 tibus

## The Epistle.

tibus Celsitudinibus vestris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid agendum accendi ne solus in tanta hominum corona otiosus viderer, & vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem temere erupissem, nisi et presentiae vestrae maiestas, et mea obscuritas a tam audaci facinore deterruissent. Verum, cum postea penitius de hac re mecum cogitassem, considerassemque quam haec omnia alioqui per se laude digna, vestris tamen meritis ac regiae dignitatis eminentiae comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, coepi denuo cum animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortalis rerum memoria foelicissimum vestrum aduentum gratularer, ut inde nominis vestri fama et splendor, non vllis spectaculorum temporarijs ostentis, sed rerum gestarum gloria, ad posteros perpetuo emanaret. Excutio statim diuitias meas. Perscrutor si quid ex penu meo depromere possum & me ad aliquid agendum vestris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale reperio, agnosco nuditatem meam, atque ad vos confugio, Patrum, auorum, proauorum, atque atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum gestarum video, totque preclarissimorum principum propagines, ut merito ab ipsiis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac Hercule, caeterisque theanthropis, originem duxisse videantur.

Quod

## The Epistle.

Quod cum ita sit, non aliunde profecto quam ex hac sylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus hominum et aeterna rerum memoria, perpetua spectacula reseratis et vobis et progenitoribus vestris praclare gestarum, in mundi theatro ab omnibus cum summa nominis vestri fama ac veneratione cernantur.

Cum itaque inter caetera a maioribus vestris praclare gesta, nihil sit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam Herculeis laboribus superato Oceano, felicissimo tandem euentu, Indiae Occidentalis ditissimas Insulas atque Continentis amplissimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenerunt, in quibus infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Christi conuerterunt (quo nihil augustius aut Christianis principibus magis dignum excogitari potest) visus sum mihi quod non alia in re magis posse foelicitati vestrae merito gratulari, quam si nostris quoque hominibus quibus haec haec hactenus nihil aut parum cognita sunt, innotescere faciam, ut perspectis illorum simul et vestrorum amplissimis imperijs non sine diuina prouidentia (ut credere par est) ad ipsos usque Antipodes et **PLVS VLTRA** terminatis, omnes boni, ipsa rerum magnitudine in admiratione ducti, vos ament et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obstruatur si quam in maledicendo voluptatem

## The Epistle.

tem capiunt. Hæc dum cogito, venit mihi in mentē  
q̄ olim adolescens perlegi Decades de Nouo Orbe  
a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illustrissimi Ferdinādi  
regis Catholici, ac tui (Serenissime rex) <sup>re</sup> <sup>Qui</sup> ora-  
tore, Latine conscriptas, atq̄ sacrae Cæsariæ maie-  
stati patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaq̄ autoris fide et  
eruditione motus, eum præ cæteris in nostram lin-  
guam traducendum suscepi, q̄ non solum vt historis-  
cus res Indicas cum summa fide scriptis mandauit,  
sed etiam vt philosophus (q̄ in cæteris scriptoribus  
desyderatur (naturalium rerum occultas causas red-  
dit, ac admirabilium naturæ operum (quibus hæc  
vestra India plena est) rationes inuestigat. Atq̄ vt  
huius Indiæ posterior status cognoscatur, quantusq̄  
thesaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumq̄  
ditissimarum mercium ac annui census inde quotan-  
nis in Hispaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctissimi vi-  
ri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouiedi libellum quem ille  
Indicæ historiæ generalis Summarij titulo inscripsit,  
eiusdemq̄ illustrissimi Caroli Imperatoris patris tui  
nomini consecrauit: Cæteraq̄ plurima ex recentio-  
ribus scriptoribus excerpsi, quæ mihi in tam immen-  
sa rerum memorabiliū bibliotheca, præcipue adno-  
tanda videbantur. Quæ, quanta et qualia sunt, quā-  
tisq̄ parasangis, omnium heroum ac Argonautarū

## The Epistle.

res gestas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas  
superent, hæc mea sequens præfacio vulgari sermone  
ad huius historiæ lectores populumq; Anglicū con-  
scripta, satis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo vt idem  
hic repetere superuacaneum sit, minimeq; necessari-  
um, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Serenissī-  
ma Regina vernacula est, idemq; illustrissimo Regi  
q; tibi scriptum aut dictum existimen, non solum q;  
diuino vinculo vnum sitis in carne vna, sed etiam q;  
eadē animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, cæteris-  
q; virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quā carnis  
vinculo vnum sitis. Sed neq; hic opus est vt ego La-  
tino sermone vestras virtutes, animi moderationem,  
clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationē, casti-  
tatem, fœlicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam,  
victorias, imperia, stemmata, cæteraq; huiusmodi  
multa enumerē, cum præsertim vir nobilis et doctus  
Leonhardus Goretius Polonus de his omnibus deq;  
fœlicissīmo vestro matrimonio, orationæ satis fula  
tractauit, in qua nihil pretermisit q; ad Celsitudinis  
vestræ et progenitorum vestrorum gloriam virtute  
partam, pertineat. Cæterū cum regiæ vestre virtutes  
nominisq; splendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per  
vniuersa Christiani orbis imperia satis nota sint, nisi  
forte ibi minime vbi maxime nota esse deberēt, nem-  
pe in

The Epistle.

pe in hoc Angliæ regno, ideo opere præcium et rem  
omnibus bonis gratam, quodq; mei est officij erga  
Cellitudines vestras me facturum existimaui, si hæc  
nostris (vt dixi) hominibus, nostraq; lingua ob oculos  
contemplanda proposuero. Quod quam foeliciter  
aut dextre a me factum sit, aliorum esto iudicium.  
Quam vero fideliter, sincere, ac animo in Ma-  
iestatis vestras propenso hoc idem aggressus sum,  
testis est mihi conscientia mea in conspectu illius qui  
hominum corda et renes scrutatur. Maeste igitur vir-  
tutis istius animi vestri estote Serenissimi Principes,  
atq; Diuino auxilio freti, pergite ea qua cœpistis fi-  
ducia, huius deploratæ ac collapsæ reipub. nostræ sta-  
tum, pristino decori restituere, id q; omnes a vo-  
bis expectant atq; efflagitant, pollicentes insuper vo-  
bis in eo negotio suam operam in nullo defuturam.  
Ne terreat vos quorūdam canum latratus qui bonis  
omnibus oblatrant, et tunc desinent latrare cum des-  
sinent viuere, Vulgatissimum semper fuit improbos  
homines viris probis vel propter inuidiam vel prop-  
ter dissimilitudinem, solere latrare. Et tamen ille pro-  
bus semper habitus est, quem peruersi maxime im-  
probauerint. Non est igitur curandum quid de no-  
bis homunculi, sed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogi-  
tate (Serenissimi Principes) q; magnanimitate ac ma-  
iorum

## The Epistle.

forum insignijs, aquilis et leonibus similes estis. Aquilæ natura est, alta petere, et aduersus solis radios in altum volare, Leonis proprium est parcere subiectis et debellare superbos. Generosus equus per plateas incedens, canes vt animalcula imbella præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe administrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile est: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuenili ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magistra: hijs præsertim qui contumelia lacescuntur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidissimos solet de gradu deijcere. Sed (vt supra dixi) non est hic mei propositi (Serenissimi Principes) vestras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in summo rerum fastigio vos humiles præbuisistis, de quare fulius in præfatione ad lectores tractaui. Iam itaq; vt huic epistolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Serenissimas Maiestates vestras vt has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas vestro nomini consecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore suscipiatis, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem reijcitis. Quæ admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam planta-

The Epistle.

uit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primis  
tias soluit a quo prima semina primaque arborum in-  
sitiones habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum vestrorum  
rebus gestis primis sumptis seminibus, hos quales-  
cumque fructus adidi, videor profecto mihi, debito  
vestro honore vos defraudasse, nisi eisdem vestro  
nomini ac numini obtulisset. Deus, Opt.  
Max, Celsitudines vestras perpetuo ser-  
uat incolumes, faxitque ut fecunda  
sobolis propagine, summaque pace  
et hac tranquillitate, huius regni ha-  
bitantes benas ad Divini nominis  
gloriam, diu gubernetis.

FINIS.

Table of Contents

**C** The table of the contentes  
of this booke.

Wesylde the Decades (the table of whose contentes you  
may reade in the ende of the booke) are contey-  
ned furthermoze in this boooke these  
thynges folowynge.

- C** Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. Folio. 149.
- The popes bulle and donacion. 167. and. 171.
- The hystorie of the Weste Indies, wyztten by Gonzalus  
Ferdinandus. 174.
- The ordinarie navigation from Spayne to the Weste  
Indies. 175.
- Of two notable thynges as touchynge the West Indies: and  
of the greate ryches brought from thense into Spaine. 176
- Of the golde mines and maner of woorkynge in them. 177.
- The maner of fyllyng for pearles. 180.
- The familiaritie that the Indians haue with the deuyll. 181.
- Of temperate and habitable regions vnder the Equinoc:  
triall line. &c. 184.
- Of dyuers particular thynges, as woozmes, serpentes,  
beastes, foules. &c. 185.
- Of trees, frutes, and plantes. &c. 194.
- Of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibales inueneme  
theyr arrowes. 199.
- Of fyllyes and theyr maner of fyllyng. 201.
- Of the rypynge and faulynge of oovre Ocean sea and the  
south sea cauled the sea of Sur. 204.
- Of the streight of lande beinge betwene the north and  
south sea. 205.
- Howe thynges of one kynde, dyffer by the nature of the  
place: and of the beastes cauled Tygers. 206.
- Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme  
lande and of theyr women. 208.
- Of the Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba. 210.
- Of the Ilande of Cuba and other. 213.
- Of the lande of Baccallaos. 213.
- Other notable thynges gathered ovt of dyuers autours: and  
of the vniuersall carde and newe worlde. 214.

## The Table,

- A discourse of the maruelous vyage made by the Spany-  
ardes rounde about the worlde. 215.
- The order of the starres about the pole Antartike. 222.
- The prices of precious stones and spices with their weightes  
and measures as they are soulede bothe of the Moozes  
and Bentyles. 233.
- Of the weightes of Portugale and India, and howe they  
agree. 239.
- Of the doones of the Ilande of Madera. 239.
- Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoc:  
rial line. 240.
- The debate and strife betwene the Spanyardes and Portu-  
gales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of  
spices. 240.
- Of the pole Antartike and the starres about the same: and of  
the qualitie of the regions and disposition of the elementes  
about the Equinoctiall line: Also of certeyne secretes tou-  
chyng the arte of saylpyng. 245.
- A discourse of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which spices,  
precious stones, and golde were brought in owlde tyme from  
India into Europe and other partes of the worlde. Also of  
the vyage to Cathay and East India by the north sea: And  
of the viages of Sebastian Cabot. 249.
- Of the vyages to Moscouia and Cathay. 249.
- A breefe description of Moscouia. 259.
- The description of the north regions: and how they are habi-  
table, contrary to thopinion of the owlde wyfers. 264.
- Scandia. 267.      Suetia or Suetthlande. 275.
- Bronlande. 268.      Bothia or Bothlande. 276.
- Ilande. 269.      Finlande and Eningia. 276.
- Laponia. 270.      Bochnia. 275.
- Norway. 273.
- The difference of regions and causes of great cities. 277.
- The historie of Paulus Jovius of the ambassade of great Ba-  
silus Prince of Moscouia to pope Clement the seuenth. 278.
- Other notable thynge as concernyng Moscouia, gathered  
out of the bookes of Sigismundus Liberius. 289.
- The description of the regions and people lyng North and  
East from Moscouia to the ryuer Perzora and the pro-  
uince of Jugaria and the ryuer Obi, &c. 294.

## The Table.

- Of the famous ryuer of Tanais. 297.  
More directly from Moscouia to Cathay. 298.  
Of the Tartars. 299.  
The navigation by the frozen sea. 303.  
The letters mistiue which kynge Edwarde the. vi. sent to the  
kynges, princes, and other potentates inhabitynge the  
north east partes of the worlde towards the Empire of  
Cathay. 306. and, 308.  
The letters of the prince of Moscouia sente to kynge  
Edwarde. 319.  
Other notable thynges as touchyng the Indies: and of the  
foreknowledge that the poet Seneca had of the fyndyng  
of the newe worlde & other regions not then known. 310  
Of the greate Islande whiche Plato cauled Atlantica or  
Atlantide. 310.  
Of the coloure of the Indians. 311.  
Why they were cauled Indians. 311.  
The fyrst discoueryng of the West Indies. 312.  
What maner of man Christopher Colon was, and howe he  
came fyrst to the knowlege of the Indies. 313.  
What labour and trauaile he tooke in attempyng his firste  
vyage to the Indies. 313.  
Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania or Mexico. 315.  
Of Peru. 316.  
Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata. 316.  
Of the hygher or superior India cauled India Tercera or  
Terciera. 317.  
Ageryng of the landes of Laboradoz and Baccalaos. 318.  
The discoueryng of the lande of Flozida. 319.  
An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Asia, are Islandes: and  
of certeyne Nauygations abowt the same. 320.  
That the Spanyardes haue sayled to the Antipodes whiche  
inhabite the vndermost halfe of the haule of the earth, con-  
trary to thopinions of the owlde wyters. 321.  
Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse and the vse  
therof. 322.  
The situation and byggenesse of the earth. 323.  
What degrees are. 324.  
A demonstration of the roundenesse of the earth. 324.  
What credit ought to be gyuen to wyters as touchyng the  
woordes

## The Table,

- Woorkes of nature, 325.  
The preface to the booke of metals, 326.  
Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the maner of fyndynge the same, 327.  
Of the mine of golde and the qualitie therof, 334.  
Of the myne of syluer, 340.  
The maner of woorkynge in the golde mines of Egypte in oulde tyme, 342.  
The discription of the two vyages made out of Englande to Guinea in Afrike, 343.  
A bryefe description of Afrike, 344.  
The fyrste vyage to Guinea, 345.  
The seconde vyage to guinea, 355.  
The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes, 360.  
A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions, 361.  
A bryefe rehearfall of the contentes of the bookes of the Decades, &c.

FINIS.

## The interpretacion of certeyne Woordes.

**C**ontinente (that is) the firme lande not inclosed with water, or no Ilande.

**A** Carauel or Caruel, a kynde of shippes.

**H**emispherium, the halfe globe of the earth and water.

**H**elus, a ducate and a halfe.

**E**quinoccial, the line that diuideth the heauen and the earth in the myddest betwene the two poles, in the which when the sonne commeth, the days & nyghtes are of equal length.

**C**lime, is a portion of the worlde betwene north and south.

**P**aralleles, are lines wherby the sonne passynge causeth variation of tyme.

**B**arti Gammoni, Monkeys.

**S**choenus, is a space of. xl. furlonges.

**W**erst, is an Italian mile.

**C**olonie, an habitacion.

## The Indian language.

**C**anoa, a boate or barke.

**C**aciqui, kynges or gouernours.

**Z**emes an Idole.

**T**uyza, the deuyll.

**M**achana, a sworde.

**A**reitos, longes or balades.

**T**ona, the moone.

**T**onatico, the soonne.

**Q**uines, prestes.

**C**hiuy, a man.

**I**ra, a woman.

**B**oa, a house.

**T**auni, golde.

**M**ayani, nothynge. &c.

**C** Note that the Ilande of Hispaniola, is now called San Domingo by reason of the chiefe citie so named. Also saynte Johns Ilande called sancti Johannis, or Burichena, is as the toyle called Boriquen.

The History of the  
County of York

The County of York is one of the most fertile and populous in the Kingdom. It is bounded on the north by the County of Lincoln, on the east by the County of Northampton, on the south by the County of Lincoln, and on the west by the County of West Yorkshire. The River Ouse is the principal river of the County, and the City of York is the principal town. The County is divided into several hundreds, and the principal towns are York, Beverley, Easingwold, and Thirsk.

The History of the  
County of York

The County of York is one of the most fertile and populous in the Kingdom. It is bounded on the north by the County of Lincoln, on the east by the County of Northampton, on the south by the County of Lincoln, and on the west by the County of West Yorkshire. The River Ouse is the principal river of the County, and the City of York is the principal town. The County is divided into several hundreds, and the principal towns are York, Beverley, Easingwold, and Thirsk.

Richard Ede to  
the reader.



The moſte famous oratoure and learned Philoſopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wyrteth, that in all conſultations as touchynge our behauioure and order of lyuynge amonge men, it becometh vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre the dignitie of mans nature, excelleth the condition of brute beaſtes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by ſence, delyte in nothyng but beaſtely appetites, wherunto they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nurtyſhed with knowleage, and taketh pleaſure in diuyllynge or exerciſynge ſome honeſt thyng, wherby it not onely leaueth amonge men a memorie of his immortall nature, but alſo engendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to ſee and heare ſuch thinges as are commendable in theyr predicellours. And this ſurely thynke I to bee the cauſe that eyther the famous factes of woorthy men, or ingenious inuentions of experte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and diſtillers of the ſame, or ſuch to whom they haue byn dedicate, but alſo that parte of theyr commendations haue redounded to all ſuche as haue ſpente theyr tyme and taken peynes in iuſtratyng and ſeruyng furthe theyr doyngeſ. For who ſhulde at this daie haue knowen Maſolus the kynge of Caria, wth his wyfe Artemiſia, or theſe famous artificers, Scopas, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Hythis, if the wonderfull and ſumptuous woork of the ſepulcher whiche Artemiſia made for kynge Maſolus her huſband (beinge of ſuch woorkemaſtſhippe that it was accounted for one of the marueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all theſe immortall fame, wherreas neuertheleſſe it coulde not defende ic ſelfe agaynſt thiniurie of tyme conſumynge all thynges. There remaineth at this daie no token of the laborious Tabernacle whiche Moyle buylded, or of the renowned and marueilous Temple that was buylded in Hieruſalem by Salomon and renewed by Eſdras. yet ſhall the name of the excellent artificers Doliab and Beſelchel, and Hyram the kynge of Tyruſ, lyue

Commendation of noble factes.

Maſolus.

Cunynge artificers.

The Tabernacle of Moyleſ.

The Temple of Salomon.

Hiram.

## The preface to the reader.

**Trewe glozy.**

**Great and super-  
uous works,**

**Fame differeth  
from true  
glozy.**

**Absolute  
glozy.**

**What is true  
glozy.**

**The kynnes  
of Spayne.  
Heroes.**

lyne for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore also, Salomon hym selfe, although he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his glozy to that princely buyl-  
dyng. But certeynely the most trewe and permanent glozy, procedeth of such monumentes as byynge sume great and notable comoditie & profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of stones of the pyramides of Egypt, wherin is nought els to see but the fonde & barbarous ostentation of superfluous riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrynthe, or of horryble great Images cauled Colossi, of knottes inexplicable, of brazen caudrons of monstrous byggensse, of hauens with echo seuen tymes reboundynge, and dyuers suche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in consideringe the maruelous arte and witte of suche artificers as dinised and made the same, so are they otherwyse vnpofitable: And byynge rather a fame to theyr inuentours, then trewe glozye. Perillus was famous by diuynge his brazen bulle: yet so, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obscure and vnknowen. They haue therefore deserued more trewe commendation whiche in buyldynge of cityes, townes, fortresses, bridges, cundites, hauens, Gypyes, and suche other, haue so ioyned magnificence with profecte, that bothe may remaine for an eternal testimonie of absolute glozy, whose perfection extendeth to the gratifyng of vniuersal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I consider, and caule to memoize holwe Cicero defineth trewe glozy to bee a fame of many and greate desertes eyther towarde owre citizens, owre countrey, or towarde all man kynde, and the same to bee of such excellencie that the owlde poetes for sume effecte sayned it to bee the sweete Ambrosia and Nectar wherewith the goddes are fedde, and that of such force that who so may drynke therof, shal also become a god, (that is to say immortall and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man maye be a god to men as holy scripture speaketh of Moyses and other) the kynnes of Spayne of late dayes (if I may speake it without offence of other) may so much the more for theyr iust desertes and good fortune be compared to those goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynde honoured them with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes so farre excell at  
other

## The preface to the reader.

other, as I dare not speake to such as haue not yet harde or  
 redde of the same, least the greatnesse thereof shulde at the first  
 bunte so muche astonyshe the reader that he myght geue the  
 lesse credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuerthelesse  
 hath mosse faythfully wyrtten this hystoie of suche thynges  
 wherof he hath seene a greate parte him selfe (as being by the  
 mosse catholyke and puissaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted  
 a commissionarie in thaffayres of India) and gathered the re-  
 sidewe partly by information and partly out of the wyrynges  
 of such as haue byn (as Wyrgyll wyrteth of Eneas, *Et quorum  
 pars magna fui*) that is, doers and parte of such thynges as are  
 conteyned in the hystoie: as Gouvernours, Licutenantes,  
 Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylottes, who by theyr paineful  
 trauayles and prowes, haue not onely subdued these landes  
 and seas, but haue also with lyke diligence commytted thoz-  
 der therof to wyrynge: And not this onely, but for the better  
 tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner dayly  
 sende from thense into Spayne such monumentes as are most  
 certeyne testimonies of theyr doynge, as yow may reade in dy-  
 uers places in this boke. This newe worlde is nowe so much  
 frequented, the Ocean nowe so well knowen, and the commo-  
 dities so greate, that the kynge erected a house in the cite of  
 Siuile (cauled the house of the contractes of India) pertye-  
 nyng onely to thaffayres of the Ocean, to the which al such  
 resorte for necessaries as attempte anye hyage to this newe  
 worlde, and lykewyse at theyr retorne make theyr accompte  
 to the counsaile for the Indies for the golde and suche other  
 thynges as they byynge from thense. It is therefore appa-  
 rent that the heroical factes of the Spaniardes of these days,  
 deserue so greate prayse that thautour of this booke (beinge  
 no Spaniarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doynge aboue  
 the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and such other  
 which for theyr glozious and vertuous enterpyles were ac-  
 counted as goddes amonge men. And surely if great Alex-  
 ander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then de-  
 serued immortall fame amonge men for theyr bluddye victo-  
 ries onely for theyr owne glozy and amplifyinge theyr empire  
 obteyned by slawghter of innocentes and kepte by violence,  
 haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much moze then  
 shal we thynke these men woorthy iust commendations which

The certentie  
 of this hystoie

The house of  
 the contractes  
 of India.

The counsaile  
 for the Indies

The heroical  
 factes of the  
 Spaniardes.

Great Alexan-  
 der.

The Spany-  
 ardes warres  
 in the Indies.

## The pface to the reader.

in theyr mercyfull warres ageynst these naked people haue so vbled them selues towarde them in exchaungynge of benefites for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof ensued to the vanquished then the victouers. They haue taken no: thyng from them but such as they them selues were wel wyllynge to departe with, and accounted as superfluities, as golde, perles, precious stones and such other: for the which they recompensed them with suche thynges as they muche more esteemed. But sum wyl say, they possesse and inhabyte theyr regions and vse them as bondemen and tributaries, where befoze they were free. They inhabite theyr regions in dedde: yet so, that by theyr diligence and better manuryng the same, they maye nowe bettet susteyne both, then one befoze. Theyr bondage is suche as is much rather to be desired then theyr former libertie which was to the cruell Canibales rather a horrible licenciousnesse then a libertie, and to the innocnt so terrible a bondage, that in the myddest of theyr fere full idleness, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to those manhuntynge woodues. But nowe thanked be God, by the manhodde and pollicie of the Spanyardes, this deuelythe generation is so consumed, partly by the slaughte of suche as coulde by no meanes be brought to ciuilitie, and partly by reseruyng such as were ouercome in the warres, and conuertynge them to a better mynde, that the propheticke may herein bee fulfilled that the wolfe and the lambe shall feede together, and the wylde fieldes with the vale of Achor, shall be the folde of the heard of gods people. Moyses as the minister of the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in syer & repelles, was commaunded in his warres to saue neyther man, woman, nor chyld, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom he ouercame and possessed theyr landes. But the Spaniardes as the mynisters of grace and libertie, brought vnto these newe gentyles the victorie of Chrysties deatch wherby they beinge subdued with the worldely sword, are nowe made free from the bondage of Sathans tyrannie, by the myghtry poure of this triumphant victouer, whom (as sayth the prophet) god hath ordeyned to be a lycht to the gentyles, to open the eyes of the blynde, and to delpyer the bounde owt of pylson and captiuitie. What other men do phantasie herein, I can not tell: but suer I am, that lyke as the slowe and brutethe

The benefites  
that the Indi-  
ans haue recei-  
ued by the  
Spanyardes.

Lybercie.

The Cani-  
bales,

Fearful idles-  
nesse.

Iai. 65.

The warres  
of Moyses.

The Indians  
subdued to  
the sayth.

Iai. 42.

wyttes

## The preface to the reader.

Wyttes, for the sclenderneſſe of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or ſeldome lyfte by theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maicſtie of nature, but lyke brute beaſtes lookynge euer downewarde, thynke the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theyr owne dungehylls or cages, lytle paſſynge whether the Chryſtian fayth do ſprade through the worlde, or bee dzyuen to one corner: Euen ſo al good wyttes and honeſt natures (I doubt not) wyl not onely reioyce to ſee the kyngedome of God to bee ſo farre enlarged vpon the face of the earthe, to the confuſion of the deuyll and the Turkye Antichryſte, but alſo do the vttermoſt of theyr poure to further the ſame. For ſurely, as Bonifacius Quiedus wyrteth to the Emperours maicſtie in his hyſtorie of the Weſte Indies, that he thynketh hym no trowe Spanyarde whiche reioyceth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whole ayde and godly zeale this myghrie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the ſtocke of Chryſtes congregation, Euen ſo do I thinke them no trowe Chryſtian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heauen for the deliuerie of theſe owre brotherne, owre fleſhe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemye the oulde ſerpente who hath ſo longe had them in hyr poſſeſſion, vntyll the fulneſſe of the gentyles be accompliſhed accordynge to the time preſinite by hym, who vnto the yeare after his incarnation, M. CCC. lxxxii. hath ſuffered the greate ſerpente of the ſea Leuiathan, to haue ſuche dominion in the Ocean and to caſte ſuch myſtes in the eyes of men, that ſence the creation of the worlde vntyll the yeare befoze named, there hath byn no paſſage from owre knownen partes of the worlde to theſe newe landes, wheras nowe the ſame are moſte certeynely knownen to be not paſt. xxx. dayes ſaylynge from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowleage of tye myghrie Chryſtian Empire of Precioſus Johannes, otherwyſe cauled Preſbyter Johannes, Emperour of many Chryſtian nationes in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryſte. M. CCC. xxxiii. as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and eſpecially in the booke of Damianus a Boes, wyrtten to the byſshop of Rome, Paule the thyrde of that name, of the fayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde ſence the tyme of the Apoſtles, A thynge certes moſt wonderfull,

The contemplation of gods workes.

The Chryſtian Empire enlarged.

The conuertion of the gentyles.

Leuiathan.

Precioſus Johannes the Chryſtian Emperour of Ethiope.

## The preface to the reader.

**Don Ferdinando**  
kynge  
of Aragon.

**The fauour**  
of god know-  
en by his bene-  
fittes.

**Roe.**

**What god**  
hath wrought  
by kynge Fer-  
dinando.

**Abraham,**

**Spirituall**  
**Israell.**

**Moses,**

derfull, and suche, that yf the same were not hydde hetherto by gods vnsercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in our forefathers and predicessours vnyll the dayes of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kynge of Aragon Don Ferdinando grandfather to Themperours maiestie by his eldest dowghter, & to the queenes hyghnesse by his seconde dowghter the most vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces moother: A prince doubtlesse of suche nobilitie, prowes, magnificence, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who so shall indifferently way all his doinges and good successe in all his affayres, comparinge the same to thentrepryses and doinges atchpyued by suche famous princes in whome the Greeces and Romans haue so greatly glozyed, maye with one eye perceauie not onely howe farre his noble factes do surmount theyrs, but also wel consyder what noble braunches of issewe were lyke to sprynge out of so woorty a stocke. And suerly if sence the begynning of the worlde, the fauour of god toward men hath byn knowen by such benefites and blessinges as he hath geuen to men, it seemeth to me that in maner (onely Chyriste excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and shewed moze fauoure. Great doubtlesse was the fauour and mercie that god shewed vnto Roe, by whom he saued the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he shewed to kynge Ferdinando vnder whom and by whose meanes he saued not onely the bodies but also the soules of innumerable millions of men inhabytynge a great part of the worlde heretofore vnknoen and drowned in the deluge of erreure. What shulde I here speake of Abraham the father of fayth whose promyses were great, and he caused the frende of god? Dyd he or his posteritie see Israell increase to such multitudes and nations as kynge Ferdinandos posteritie may see thincreease of this spirituall Israell vnto whome as a seconde Abraham he was the father of fayth? Moises was so great in the syght of god that he disclosed vnto hym his secrete name, and miraculouly caused a corner of the sea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinando the greate Ocean thowght befoze that tyme to bee without ende, where neuerthelife he and his posteritie the  
kynge

## The peface to the reader.

kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Iſraell muche  
 greater then that whiche Moifes ledde throughe the red ſea.  
 It were here ſuperfluous to ſpeake of Dauid whom Godde  
 founde a man accordyng to his hartes deſyre: and yet maye  
 it be doubted whether his plagies and ſcourges were greater  
 then his benefites: His ſonne Salomon for al his inconstant  
 and waueryng wyſedome and his great ryches obteyned by  
 his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no  
 knowlege of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his ſhyppes  
 ſayle about the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerſe  
 the Equinoctial line to thinferiour hemiſpherie or halfe globe  
 of the earthe and ſea as dyd the famous ſhyppe Victoria ſent  
 furth by the Emperours maieſtie. A thyng doubtleſſe ſo ſtrange  
 and marueylous that as the lyke was neuer done before, ſo  
 is it perhaps neuer lyke to be done ageyne: ſo farre haue the  
 nauigations of the Spanyardeſ excelled the vyage of Jaſon  
 and the *Argonaute* to the region of Colchos, or all that euer  
 were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Para  
 lipomenon it bee hyperborically wyrtten that in the dayes of  
 Salomon golde & ſyluer were in Hieruſalẽ in maner as plenti  
 ful as ſtones, & that his ſeruantes brought from Ophir foure  
 hundred & ſixtie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that a  
 ny of his ſhyppes were ſo laden with golde that they ſoonke,  
 as dyd a ſhyppe of kyng Ferdinandos as you maye reade in  
 the laſt booke of the fyrſte Decade. Neyther was the domini  
 on of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the  
 lande of the Philiftians and the extreme confines of Egypte  
 to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of  
 Spayne haue in the weſt Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to  
 be thought much in reſpect of that which hath byn brought  
 from thence into Spayne as ſhall playnely appere to al ſuche  
 as wyll ſecke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let paſſe to  
 ſpeake any further of the myzacles which god hath wroughte  
 by the handes of this noble prince in this newe world among  
 theſe newe gentyles. Is it not well knowne to all the world  
 what a defence and brycken wall he hath byn to all Chryſten  
 dome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores  
 or Saracens and Jewes which ſo many hundred yeares poſ  
 ſeſſed a greate parte of Spayne to no ſmaule daungoure of  
 the hole Chriſtian Empire, and yet coulde neuer before bee  
 cleane

Dauid.

Salomon.

Ophir.  
Antipodes.

The nauiga  
tion rounde  
about the  
worlde.

The dominion  
of Salomon.  
Paral. 9.

The Indies.

The warres  
of kyng Fer  
dinando a  
geynſt the  
Saracens.

## The preface to the reader,

cleane vanquished buttill the dayes of this noble and Catho-  
lyke prince so named for his warres ageynste the infidelles,  
whom God rayled for a Capitayne of his people as an other  
Bedion vnder whose banner they myght ouercome theyr ene-  
mies and pouрге his vinegarde from suche wycked weedes.  
The which thyng doubtlesse may seeme so much the greater  
and moze difficulte, sozalmuch as in the myddest of the chiefe  
heate of his chargeable warres ageynste the Moores of Bra-  
nada, he euen then and at the same tyme sente furth shippes  
for the conquestynge of the Indies, as thowgh he and the na-  
tion of the Spanyarde had byn appoynted by god eyther to  
subdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe theym to Christs  
religion. The selve same kynge Ferdinando also aboute the  
yeare of Chryst. 1503. sent a nauie of shippes into Italy, where  
they vanquished, chased, and slewe the Frenchemen, and  
recovered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions  
belongynge thereunto. By which noble victoery, his successi-  
on and posteritie as thempereours maiestie and nowe his sonne  
the kynge ooure master and soueraigne lord haue euer sence  
enioyed this heritaunce of the same as of antiquitie by iust and  
ryght tyle deuie to them and theyr prediceours. And as it  
is the nature of god not only to shewe his loue and fauour to  
such as haue pleased hym, but also to poure furth the plentie  
of his grace hypon theyr succession from generation to gene-  
ration, so hath he with lyke fecilitie prospered the reigne of  
Thempereours maiestie who by his wisdom and prowes hath  
not onely polittikly gouerned, but also augmented and inlar-  
ged such dominions as fel to hym by discent of inheritaunce.  
What shuld I speake of his warres and conquestes in India,  
in Aphrike, in Italye, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaun-  
ders: all the which to be declared accoꝝdyngely wolde rather  
require hole volumes then fewe sheetes of paper. Yet hath one  
in fewe woordes effectually expressed his dominions and con-  
questes in these verses folowynge.

The conqueste  
of the Indies

The conqueste  
of Naples.

The Emperours  
maiestie

The pface to the reader.

Impiger expauit rapidas transire per vndas  
Oceani Alcides: continuitq; gradum.  
Maximus at Cæsar, PLYS VLTRA tendere cursum  
Ausus, et ignotis est dare iura locis.  
Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuersus,  
Cætera sub sceptro ponat vt ipse suo.  
Nam pater omnipotens vt famam terminet astris  
Iulsit, et imperium lineat Oceano.

¶ An other also briefely hath declared the  
same in these verses,

Consortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,  
Astra Deo cedunt, Carole terra tibi.

And certes who so well considereth the progenie of kynges  
that in so shorte a time haue linially descended from Don Fer  
dinando, and howe many kyngedomes they possesse, may see  
that God hath fulfilled in hym also the promises and bless  
inges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nati  
ons, and his seede to growe great vpon the earth: Also that  
many kynges shalde come furth of his loynes, and to make a  
perperuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his posterite  
to bee theyr god for ever. And here to omittre to speake of  
other: Was there euer better hope or more liknes then now,  
that these blessings and promyses of god shulde contynue  
in this princely progenie, syth the vertues and felicitie of the  
al doo so shyne and flourish in our noble and gracious prince  
kyng Phillippe, to whom euen in his youth his father (oc  
cupied in the warres of Italye and Africke) commytted the  
hole gouernance of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Ier  
dies. Of his behauiour in Englande, his enemies (which can  
ker, vertue neuer lacked) they say (if any such yet remaine)  
haue greates cause to repute well: ye so well, that of his na  
me and of his name they say that he is the most noble and most  
valiant prince that euer was.

Gen. 17.

The kynges  
matche.

## The preface to the reader.

turall clementie were not greater then was they: vnnaturall indignation they knowe them selues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyse men are declared in these old verses.

**Quid stulti proprium? Non posse et velle nocere.**

**Quid sapientis opus: Non velle et posse nocere.**

What is to say: What is the property of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woork of a wyse man? Not to wyl to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyl, it is knowen to barbers and bles eyde men. Who lamented they? folly more then he? Who more humbly admittet they? lutes and supplications? Ye who obteyned they? pardon hat he? Beynge a Lion he behaued hym selfe as a lambe, and strooke not his enemye hauynge the sworde in his hande. Scoope Englands scoope, and learne to knowe thy lorde and master, as hoxses and other brute beastes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and such other monsters nypon to mak kynde. God by the mouth of Isaias the prophet reproveth the Israclites that they knewe not so well they? dewtie towarde hym as dyd the brute beastes the mangiers of they? masters. The oxe and the asse (sayth he) knoweth the mangier of they? master, but Israell knoweth not me. For shame let vs not be woorked then oxe and asses, & lyke vnto hoxses and mules in whom is no vnderstandynge. But O vnhanketull Englande and boorde of honest shame: Who hath geuen thee the face of a hooze and toonge of a serpent withowt shame to speake venemous woordes in secrete agesynst the annoynted of god. O paynted hooze that hast Chryste in thy mouth and the deuyl in thy harte. Hath not the pocke of thy licentiousnesse bruste furth in maner to thyne owne destruction. Howe longe wilt thou nurse in thy boosome that serpente whose nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme lest thy disease become incurable. What neede I rehearse vnto thee thy manyfolde infirmities and deformities whiche thou arte faulen into by thyne owne outrageousnesse? If the greekes of them bee to thee vnsensible by reason of thy feeblenesse and longe sickenes, take vnto thee that glasse wherein thou glozest with the Jewe and thyngest that thou seest al thynges and canst iudge all mysteries. Looke I say in that pure glasse and be:

*Apostrophe  
to Englands.*

*Isa. l.*

## The preface to the reader.

holde thy owne deformities, which thou canste not or wylt not seele. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke euen throughe thy selfe, thou wylt abhorre thy selfe to see howe many monsters lye hid in the vnder the shape of man. There is euen now great talke of the in the monthes of all men that thou hast of late yeares brought furthe many monsters and straunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretations more monstrous then the monsters them selues. But shall I breuely and simply declare vnto thee the signification of thy monsters? First then consyder that they are monsters of mankynde and not of other beastes. Secundarily marke well that in them al, the headde is perfect, so that the monstroullite groweth owt of the body, although not owt of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to farre. Consyder ageyne that disorder of the partes is a deformitie to the hole. One hath well interpreted that such monstrous byrthes signifie the monstrous and deformed myndes of the people myshapened with phantastical opinions, discolate luyunge, licentious talke, and such other vicious behauiours which monstrously deforme the myndes of men in the syght of god who by suche signes dooeth certifie vs in what similitude we appere befoze hym, & thereby giueth vs admonition to amende befoze the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beastes are moze monstrous then lpyng, rebel lion, strife, contention, priuie malice, flauderpyng, mutterpyng, conspiraces, and such other deuilysh imaginacions. But O Englande whyle tyme is gyuen thee, circumsife thy harte. Put to onely thy good wyll, and thou mayste fynde grace and fauoure to recouer thyne aunciente betwie whiche hath so longe byn defaced. Thou haste now a kynge and queene that desyre thee to remember thy dewtie, and holde theyr armes abroad to embrace thee yf thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are soze to occupie the whyppe yf thou mightest otherwyse bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleasure to persist in forward stubbornesse, knowe thou hat they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monsters wherof thou hast had suche experience, that proude trustyng in thyne owne strengthe, and attemptyng lyke an other Democory to buylde a newe towre of confusion, the woodkes of thy gigantes were miraculously overthryuon by a woman who de-

Monstrous  
byrthes.

The Significa  
tions of mon-  
strous byrthes.

The deformity  
of monstrous  
myndes.

The kynge and  
Queene.

## The peface to the reader.

liuered thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughtest to knowe the daungious thou wast in, and bee thankfull to thy deliuerer. Beware therefore leaste whyle thou contemne the peaceable princes that god hath sent thee, thou bee lyke vnto Slopes frogges to whō for theyr vnguietnesse, Jupiter sent a hearon to picke them in the hedes. Consider what benefites thou mayst receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Conspyder ageyne that as they are able, so may thy gentlenesse make them wyllynge to recompense the same. Stoppe thyne eares from bayne fables as from the inchauntinge Mermaydes. For as manye speake of Robbyn Hoode and of his bowe that neuer thor therein, so doo fooles prate of such thynge as they knowe not. But O god? what phantasies are nowe in the heades of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe smaul sparkes they kindle greate flames? Summe are so curious to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iust matter woorthy reproche in them whom they desyre to depraue, they speake euill of theyr parentes & kynned of whom they knowe as lytle. And not so satisfied they dispise and with lyeinge dispraysle theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye sum take such pleasure herein, that if they can fynde nought els to dispraysle, they wyll fynde faute in suche as they fauour not, because they weate not theyr apparell as they doo, or perchappes are not so effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fyght, so parciall is the iudgement of fooles in theyr owne rudenesse, thynkyng them selues the better for dispraysinge of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey sayth one: The mperour is but poore sayth another: He is deade sayth another: The Indies haue rebelled sayth another, and epher there cometh no moze golde from thense, or there is no moze founde nowe: with suche other false and licentious talke diuisid by vnquiet bzaines in whose heades the hammers of sedition sease not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I shulde here answer to all these querels particularly and as the woorthynesse of the thynge requiereth, I myght fynde matter sufficient to make a volume of iust quantitie and perchappes be tedious to summe. Yet not to passe oer ner so great a matter vntouched, and partly to stoppe the mouthes of suche impudent lyes, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat hereof. For the more to speake of Spayne,

and

How curious  
summe are to  
fynde faute in  
other.

Eyes Imagi-  
ned.

Commendati-  
one of Spaine

## The preface to the reader.

& by the testimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodi-  
ties therof: Plinie a graue & faythful autour, in the last boke  
& last chapiture of his natural histozy greatly commendynge  
Italy aboue al ocher countreys, giueth the second prayse vnto  
Spaine, aswel for al such thynges as in maner the heuen can  
geue & the earth byynge furth for the commoditie of this lyfe  
as also for the excellent wittes of men & Ciuile gouernaunce.  
Also Diodorus Siculus in the sixt booke of his Bibliotheca  
speakyng of Spayne (cauled of the Greekes Iberia) writeth  
that when in the mountaines named Pyriner th inhabitants  
burnte by the wooddes, there ranne out of the mountaynes  
as it were dyuers streames of pure syluer molten by the heate  
of the fyre. But the estimation and price of syluer beinge at  
those dayes to them vnknewen, the Phenician marchauntes  
bought the same of them for thynges of smaule value: And  
carpyng it into Grecia, Asia, and other countreys, got great  
rychesse therby. For the desyre of gaynes (sayth he) so great-  
ly moued the marchauntes, that when more syluer remayned  
then myght lade theyr shippes, they tooke the leade frome  
theyr ankers, and put syluer in the place therof. The Phenit-  
ces by this gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd assigne many  
colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there abowt, and  
also in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many yeares  
when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price  
of syluer, and applyed them selues to the seekyng of metals  
and founde great plentie of syluer, they obteyned greate ry-  
ches therby forasmuch as in maner al that earch of the moun-  
taynes is so replenyshed with syluer that it is a marueylous  
thyng to consyder the nature of the region and the continual  
laboure of the woodkemen in those mynes. Lykewyse when  
afterwarde the Romans subdued the Iberians, the Italians  
which for the desyre of gaynes searched those metals, gotte  
great rychesse by the same. For they deputed to that labour  
a multitude of botoght seruauantes, whiche searchynge the  
haynes of metals in dyuers places, and perceyng the earth dy-  
uers wayes for the space of many furlonges, brooght furthe  
great plentie of golde and syluer. But the rychesse of these  
mynes was fyrst founde at such tyme as the Carthaginenses  
(the enemies of the Roman Empire) had the Iberians in sub-  
jection: which was the cause that they, poure afterwarde in-  
created

Ryche syluer  
mynes in  
Spayne.

The Romans  
enriched by the  
syluer of  
Spayne.

The Cartha-  
ginenses enrich-  
ed by the syl-  
uer of Spayne.

## The pface to the reader.

created. For, with monye hyringe the best and mosse experte  
souldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynst theyr enemies.  
And not vlynge the ayde eyther of theyr owne souldiers or  
theyr associates, they were a terrout to the Romanes, Sic-  
lians, and Libyans, whom they browght into great daungls  
our by reason they passed them al in abundaunce of golde and  
syluer. With better fortune therfore, and greater hope of  
gayne are ryche metals sought in Spayne, the goodnesse of  
whose tople yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynyng much golde  
and syluer. And these be the very wordes of Diodorius Sicu-  
lus, which the later wyrters doo also confirme. For Julius  
Solinus in his polyhistor, comparerh Spayne to the best coun-  
treys in plentie of grayne, byctayles, oyle, syluer, golde, and  
Iron. Likewyse Strabo, Scatius, and Claudius, do no lesse  
commend it. It were to longe here to speake of the greate  
plentie of fine woolles lytle inferiour vnto others: also abun-  
dauce of sugar, vines, pome granates, limondes, and oran-  
gies in such plentie that they suffice not only Spayne, but al-  
so in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of  
Englande are scarcely able to serue it selfe. And althowgh  
here summe wyll objecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and  
certeyne other thynges, yet are theyr commodities so greate  
otherwyse, that al such thynges are browght them out of o-  
ther countreys for theyr wares: and that in such plentie, that  
they are there better chepe then ever they were in Englande  
sence the signe of the sheple the pooze mans Jnne was pulled  
downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde  
greate faute that in traauaylyng in Spayne, men shalbe ser-  
ued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theyr meate  
and to the tauerne for theyr drynke. And what then I praye  
you? What inconuenience ensleweth hereof? Is it not better  
to doo then to pay thysle for one thinge as is the maner to  
doo in summe of othere Jnnes and in tauerne where all that  
eate roste meate are beaten with the sparte, as wher they that  
of late in Barthelmeus saye payde forzie pence for a pygge,  
wher the good man of the house was not a shamed to make  
his vaunte that he had made foure shyllinges of a pygge, and  
had in one day taken foure pounce for pygges. But if I shuld  
here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in  
foure yeares decayed and impoverisshed, and howe on the  
contrary

The commodi-  
ties of Spaine

The signe of  
the sheple.

England im-  
poverisshed,  
Spayne enrich-  
ed.

## The peface to the reader.

contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I ſhulde perhappes dif-  
 pleafe moze in deſcrybyng the myſerie of the one, then pleaſe  
 other in expreſſyng the flooythyng ſtate of the other, which  
 by all reaſon is lyke dayly to increaſe, alwell for the great ry-  
 cheſſe that are yearely broughed thyeher from the Indies, as  
 alſo for the ryche ſyluer mynes that are founde of late in  
 Spayne in the countrey of Aſturia as I was credably infor-  
 med by the woorthy and leered gentelman Auguſtinus de Ce-  
 rarta, Contador (that is) the auditor of the kynges mynes.  
 who had longe befoze byn ſuruepoure of the golde mynes of  
 Peru, and broughed from thence and from Rio de Plata, xlii.  
 thouſand pounde weyght of ſyluer which was coyned to the  
 kinges vie in the towne of London where neuer ſo much hath  
 byn ſcene at once as ſuche as haue byn olde officers in the  
 mynte doo affirme. What ſhulde I heare ſpeake of the golde  
 which themperours maieſtie receaueth frome all the Indies,  
 wheras onely in the two meltyng ſoppes of the gold mines  
 of the Iſlande of Hiſpaniola, is molten yearely three hun-  
 dret thouſande pounde weyghte of .viii. vnces to the pounde,  
 wherof the fyfte parte is deuote vnto hym, whiche amounteth  
 to three ſcoze thouſande weyght yearely. yet doo I not here  
 ſpeake of the golde mines of the other Iſlandes and the firme  
 lande reachyng. viii. thouſande myles from the north to the  
 South: Neyther of the ryche Iſlandes of the ſouth ſea cauled  
 Mare del Sur, where the kyng of one lyttle Iſlande named  
 Tararequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulfe  
 of Saynt Michael, payeth yearely for his tribute a hundret  
 pounde weight of perles: Neyther yet of the fyfte parte of o-  
 ther thynges, as precious ſtones, braſile, goſſampine cotton,  
 ſpices, and dyuers other thynges, wheras alſo the ryche Iſ-  
 landes cauled the Maluchas perreyne to the inheritaunce of  
 Caſtile, althowgh the kyng of Portugale enioy them for cer-  
 tayne yeares by compoſition. But the Indies haue rebelled  
 (ſay they) and there commeth no more golde from thence. But  
 what if ſumme of them haue rebelled? dooth it therby folowe  
 that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vnder  
 obedience? But if thou wylte ſay that they haue al rebelled  
 ſed at once, thou muſt prouze that thou ſayeſt eyther by hyſto-  
 rie or wytnelle of ſuch as knowe the truth herof, as I (hauing  
 made diligent ſearche for the ſame) am able to prouze the con-  
 trarie.

Syluer mines  
 founde of late  
 in Spayne.

Syluer  
 broughed frome  
 Peru into  
 Englande.

The perours  
 reuenues from  
 the Indies.

The Iſlandes  
 of the South  
 ſea.

The Iſlandes  
 of Maluca.

THE  
 END  
 OF  
 THE

## The preface to the reader.

trarie; and that suche talke is onely imagined by busie heades. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in summe prouinces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be brought vnder subiection as were oftentimes the prouinces of the Romanes and as were in oovre dayes dyuers countreys of Englande whiche haue byn soze afflicted with that plague. But whether the landes of the rpuers and the mountaynes of the Indies bee so emptied with golde that no moze can be founde there, I thinke it here superfluous to answer to this objection, forasmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of metals where you shall fynde by experience that metals growe and increase, and that after certeyne yeares, suche olde canes of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenished with vre: Also that the spynges of suche mountaynes turnynge theyr course and breakynge furth in other places, byynge with them greate plentie of such golden sande as is founde in the rpuers into the which they faule. What impudencie is it therfore with woordes of reproche to caule hym poore whose poure is so greate, his treasure so infinite, and his doinges so chargeable, that I beleue that when so euer it pleaseth almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the greate damage of all Chrystendome, it shalbe harde to fynde an other that shall in all poyntes bee so well able to supplye that roome and maynteyne thimperiall dignitie. Let al honest natures therfore learne to speake well of princes accordynge to the sentence *De Principibus nil nisi bonum*, forasmuch as they are the ministers of god who hath theyr hartes in his hande and ruleth the same as seemeth beste vnto hym. For there is no poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that reprobeth or speaketh euill of the pouer, resisteth and speaketh euill of god. Thou shalt not speake euill of the prince or ruler of thy people saith saint Paule.

But wheras nowe by the poute of Neptunus (I wote nere with what wynde) I haue byn dysuened thus farre from my nauigations, I haue thought good to turne my saytes and to folowe the ordinarie course which I beganne, and by the example of this woorthy capitayne kynge Ferdinando, encourage al ether to theyr poure to attempte the lyke byages: As touchynge the which in fewe woordes to declare my oppynion, if any man shalbe aske me what I thinke these thinges will

The nauigations  
of the  
Spanyarde

## The pface to the reader.

Wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll answere as dooth the autowre of this booke, that when I consyder howe farre oovre possesurie shall see the Christian religion enlarged, I am not able with tounge or penne to expresse what I conceaue hereof in my mynde. yet one thyng I see whiche enforceth me to lament, that the harvest is so great and the woorkemen so fewe. The Spanyarde haue shewed a good exemple to all Christian nations to folowe. But as god is great and woonderfull in all his woorkes, so besyde the portion of lande perceyving to the Spanyarde (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italye as yowe maye reade in the laste booke of the seconde Decade) and beside that which pertaineth to the Portugales, there yet remaineth an other portion of that mayne lande reachyng towards the north east, thought to be as large as the other, and not yet knowne but only by the sea coastes, neyther inhabited by any Christian men: whereas neuerthelesse (as wyrcote: h. Gemma Phisicus) in this lande there are many fayre and frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beastes. Also cities and towres so wel buylde and people of such civillite, that this parte of the worlde seemeth lytle inferiour to oovre Europe, if inhabitants had receaved oovre religion. They are wyttie people and refuse not barterynge with straungers. These regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalearum or Bacchallios of the which yowe may reade sumwhat in this booke in the vpage of the woorthy owlde man yet luyng Sebastiane Cabote, in the. vi. booke of the thyrde Decade. But Cabote touched only in the north corner and most barbarous parte hereof, from whence he was repulled with Ise in the moneth of July. Neuerthelesse, the west and south partes of these regions haue sence byn better searched by other, and founde to bee as we haue sayde before. The chiefe cite in the south west partes of these regions, is cauled Temirtetan, or Mexico in maner vnder the circle cauled Tropicus Canceri, and strongly defended by the nature of the place. For it standeth in a very great lake hauyng above it innumerable byddges, and buyldynges to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus. Inhabitantes also can wyrcote and reade. Summe wyrcoters connecte this lande to the firme lande of Asia: But the truth hereof is not yet knowne. And althoughe the Spanyarde

*It is 19. 120. myles in lengthe and 126. in breadthe.*

*The lande cauled Terra Florida, & regio baccalearum.*

*Looke the last booke. thirde Decade.*

*This region is now cauled Noua Hispania. Some thinke that this cite is Quinsat of Marcus Paulus.*

*Looke the last booke of the 3. Decade, and the beginninge of the landes lastly found.*

## The preface to the reader.

haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is now  
cauled Noua Hispania, yet are the people for the mosse parte  
Idolatours. Howe much therfore is it to be lamented, and  
howe greatly dooth it sounde to the reproche of all Christens  
dome, and especially to such as dwell nereft to these landes  
(as we doo) beinge muche nearer vnto the same then are the  
Spaniardes (as within, xxv. dayes saylinge and lesse) howe  
muche I saye shall this sounde vnto owre reproche and mer-  
cifulle storkfulness and negligence bothe before god and the  
worlde, that so large dominions of such tractable people and  
pure gentiles, not beinge hitherto corrupted with any other  
false religion (and therfore the easer to be allured to em-  
brace owres) are now knowne vnto vs, and that we haue  
no respecte neyther for goddes cause nor for owre com-  
moditie to attempte summe vyages into these coastes, to doo  
for owre partes as the Spaniardes haue doone for theys, and  
not euer lyke sheepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothyng  
woorthy memorie amonge men or thanks before god, who  
maye herein woorthely accuse vs for the slackenesse of owre  
dewtie towarde hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gen-  
tiles (to whose Apostelshipp also these newe gentiles doe  
pertain) was of such zeale toward the Jewes whom god had  
reiected, that he wylshed hym selfe to be accused of god for  
theyr sakes. He went from Damascus to Arabie, preached  
the gospell in Grecia, came prisoner to Rome, was scourged  
and stoned, and suffered thysse thynge, what then thinke  
you he wolde do if he were now aliue? Is it to be thought that  
he wolde not aduventure. xxv. dayes saylynge to come to such  
a marre of soules in such redinesse to be easely obteyned? I  
beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyl, nor Aen-  
than, nor the worlde, shoulde let hym but that he wolde geue  
thonsent ageynst them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom  
he sayth he can doo all thynge. He was not negligent in his  
office nor ignozant of his rewardes, but trusted to the promise  
of him that sayde by the mouth of the prophet Isai: Of them  
that shalbe saued, I wyl sende sum to the gentyles in the sea,  
into Aphrike and Libia, Fralie, and Grecia, and into the I-  
landes a farre of, to the that haue not harde of me, and haue  
not seene my glozie. The like zeale that Paule had, and pro-  
ceedynge of the same spirite, hath euer sence Christes tyme,  
moued

The godlye  
zeale of S.  
Paule.

Act. 66.

## The peface to the reader.

inoued not only the Apoftles, but alfo many other famous and godly men (as fupervifours of his teftamente) to fende ovt preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to fctwe furth the gladde tydyng of the gofpell. By this zeale dyd Gregoype byfhoppe of Rome and fyrft of that name, when he fawe Englyfhe mens chylzen in Rome and asked what nation they were, when anfwere was made hym in the laten tounge that they were Angli, (that is, Englyfhe men) he fayd (alluding to the fimilitude of the worde) that they myght wel be cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural beute and comelyneffe, fo it apperteyned to his office beinge the cheefe paffour of goddes flocke, to prouyde that theyr foules might be made woorthy to inhabite fuch bodies and the hole nation confecrated vnto god by baptifme. For he fayde furethermore: It is meece that vnto thefe alfo, the gofpell of life bee preached: And hereuppon immediatly fent preachers into Englande wherby the hole nation was in fhorre tyme conuerted to Chriftes faith, although fum had receaued the gofpell longe befoze euen from Chriftes tyme by the preaching of Iofeph of Arimathia who asked the body of Chrifte of Pilore, and buryed it reuerently. I wolde to god that there were now many mo fuch Gregoyses in the worlde: And that there might lyke zeale and gentelneffe bee founde in vs Englyfhe men towards other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde vs. Ovtre predicatours were not vtterlye vnmyndefull of thefe benefices, but applyed them felues lykewife to fpreade the gofpell in other nations. For Uadianus in his booke *De tribus terre partibus*, wyrteth, that more then feuen hundreth yeres after the death of Chrifte, one Vnefride an Englyfhe man and byfhoppe of Mogunce (nowe cauled Mente) was the fyrft that brought the fayth of Chrifte amonge the Bermaynes, at fuch tyme as the Frankes and Almaynes had pafsed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttinge the garrifons of the Romans to flight, had poffeffed a great parte of theyr moft notable prouinces. For albeit that thefe rude and barbarous nations then accuftomed onely to warte and robberie did hardly admitte that holfome doctrine at the beginning. yet by the pollicie and wifedome of the Frankes, it came fo to paffe that in maner throughe ovt all Germanie,

Gregoyle the  
firft.

The office of  
byfhoppes.

England con-  
uerted to the  
faith of chrift.

This vnefride  
was after  
warde named  
Boniface.

## The preface to the reader.

Whether any  
may bee com-  
pelled to the  
fa, the.

The tyme of  
miracles.

Miracles of  
late dayes.

Howe Israell  
possessed the  
lande of  
promesse.

Esdra. 2,  
52. 4.

greate increase of the Christian religion folowed there moste ample vicories, as the lyke successe is also seene in these barbarous nations subdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although sum holde opinion that none oughte to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we see by experience that without disputynge of opinions (lesse the patientes shulde dye befoze the phisitians agree of the remedie) these enterpris ses haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who can leth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declinyng worlde, otherwyle nowe then in the tyme of Christe and his Apostles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe fayth which had yet prevailed no where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it shulde so be requisite as youe may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a simple mariner euen in thinfancie of faythe. And surely, lyke as there is no cause why we shalde anye thyng doubt of goddes goodnesse in this behalfe if the fault be not in owre selues. Euen so, if we wolde fynde sette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giue increase and woork with vs as he hath doone with other, by whose prosperous successe we may plainly see that it was his wyll that suche thynges shulde go forwarde. For euen Israell to whom promesse was made by signes and miracles that they shulde possesse the lande to thinheritaunce wherof, the sea opened it selfe to giue them free passage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the sword to make way, with greate losse and slaughte of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promysed to theyr fathers, whiche neuertheless fewe of them possessed that first fought for the same, but lefte theyr carkeles in the wildernesse. Is it not also writren of the Iudwes which repayed the walles of the citie of Hierusalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine set the people in order with swordes, speares, and bowes to defende the woorkemen? And that also euen the princes of Iuda wrought vpon the walles and caried burdens? lykwyle that they wrought with one hande and held theyr swordes in the other? And if it were lawfull for Israell accordyng to the flesh, to vse all meanes and pollicies

## The p[re]face to the reader.

to buylde by the walles of earthly Hierusalem, howe muche  
more then ought the spirituall Israellites to vse all possible  
meanes to buylde by the walles and temples of spirituall Hierusalem;  
whose fundarion is Christe, wyllynge all the nations of the worlde  
to bee buylded vpon the same. It is the proper tie of a wylde buylder  
to vse such rooles as the woorkes requireth. And not at all tymes  
oz in all woorkes to vse one roole. For that that serueth in  
softe tymer, wyl not serue in knotte  
pieces, noz yet for stones. Therfore phisician  
blessyd vehement remedies for desperate diseases: And cunninge  
surgiens vse burnynge and currynge if the case so require, as in  
currynge of the spynge to saue the hande, oz in curryng of the  
hande to saue the hole body. For it hath sum tymes so chaun  
ced that wheras men haue entred hurt, there hath good pro  
ceeded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue haine  
Prometheus, wounded his wenne with his swoorde, wherby he  
was healed of that disease. So is god able to turne euyl in  
to good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that  
are. Euen so although summe wyl obiecte that the desyre of  
golde was the chiefe cause that moued the Spanyardes and  
Portugales to searche the newe founde landes, truely albeit  
we shulde admitte it to bee the chiefe cause, yet dooth it not  
folowe that it was the only cause, forasmuch as nothyng les  
serly but that a man may bee a warrier oz a marchaunte, and  
also a Christian. Therefore what so euer ooure chiefe intente  
bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame oz rycheffe, (al though  
the zeale to encrease Christian religion ought chiefly to moue  
vs) I wolde to god we wolde first attempte the matter: And  
then I doubte not but that it wolde so comye to passe with  
vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning  
of the worlde befoze meyne were accustomed to care lesse,  
though it first sufficient so to vse them selues amonge bestes  
that they were not hurt of them: but shortly after, vscd them  
for theyr commoditie: Then begynne to weare theyr skynnes:  
And in fine, fell to eatynge of theyr fleshe, and to vse certein  
partes of the for remedies ageinst diseases. Euen so may these  
barbarians by the only conuersation with the Christians, (al  
though they were enforced thereto) be brought to such famili  
arity with ciuility and vertue, that not onely we maye take  
greate commoditie thereby, but they may also here with im  
bibe

The buyldng  
of spirituall  
Hierusalem.

## The peface to the reader.

imbite trewe religion as a thing accidental although they see  
 they noz we shulde seeke the same. For lyke as they that go  
 much in the soonne, are coloured therewith although they go  
 not for that purpose, So may the conuersation of the Christi-  
 ans with the gentyles induce them to otwe religion, where  
 there is no greater cause of contrarye to respitte as is in the  
 Iewes and Turkes who are alreadye drowned in theyr confu-  
 med erreure. But these simple gentiles lpyunge only after the  
 lawe of nature, may well bee lykned to a smoothe and bare  
 table unpainted, or a white paper unnotitten, vpon the which  
 you may at the fyrst paynte or wypte what you lyst, as you  
 can not vppon tables alreadye paynted, vntilte you rase or blot  
 out the fyrst formes. They may also thesyer bee allured to  
 the Christian fayth, for that it is more agreable to the lawe  
 of nature then eythre the cerimonious lawe of Moyses, or por-  
 tentous fables of Mahometes Alcharon. If we were therfore  
 as desyrous to enlarge the fayth of Chryste as to seeke world-  
 ly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduerture that wherein we  
 may doo bothe. We muste not nowe looke for a newe Haule  
 or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuerted by heauenly reue-  
 lations: Or for a newe Moyses to leade men through the sea:  
 Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayer from one place to an-  
 oher as Habacucke the prophete was caryed by the heare of  
 his heade from Iudea to Babilon: Or as Shylippe thappor-  
 tile was caryed by the spirite from Gaza to Azorus: but muste  
 (as sayth the prophete Ilaias) euery man exhorte his neygh-  
 bour, and bid his broother be of good chere: That the ma-  
 son and carpenter may buylde togyther, and say to the glewe  
 or cemente, it is good and faste byndyng. What negligence  
 and slackenelle hath hyther to hyn in Christian men in this  
 kynde of buyldyng of goddes lyuely temple, the great clerke  
 Erasmus hath declared in his booke intituled Ecclesiastes,  
 whose woordes for the woorthynesse of the autoure, I haue  
 here thowght good to rehearse as they are wyrtren by hym in  
 the latten tounge in the fyrst booke of the sayde woork. He  
 wyrteth therfore as foloweth.

The conuer-  
 sion of the gen-  
 tiles.

The christian  
 fayth.

Iai. 49.

Regula Christi-  
 ane religionis.

Audimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantiū col-  
 lapsā Christianā religionē, eamq; ditionē quæ quon-  
 dam complexa est vniuersum terrarum orbem, in

The p̄face to the reader.

has angustias esse contractam. Hoc igitur quibus  
ex animo dolet, eos decet ardentibus assiduisq; votis  
flagitare a Christo vt operatios dignetur mittere in  
messam suam, aut (vt melius dicam) seminatores mit  
tere in segetem suam. Deum immortalem, quantum  
in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactū  
est semen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum est, vt plus  
sit zizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars est  
Europa: Omnium florentissima pars est Græcia et  
Asia minor in quam magno successu primum a Iu  
dæa demigravit Euangelium. At hæc fere tota, non  
ne tenetur a Mahumetanis et ijs qui Christi nomen  
habent inuisum? Iam in Asia maiore quæ latissime  
patet, quid obsecro nostrum est? quum ipsa Palesti  
na vnde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, seruiat Allo  
phylis? In Afrîca vero quid nostrum est? Nec du  
bitandum est quin in tanta vastitate regionum sint  
populi rudes et simplices qui facile possent ad Chris  
tum alici, si mitterentur qui facerent bonam semenz  
tem. Quid quod quotidie regiones hæctenus in  
cognita reperuntur, ferunturq; superesse quo nul  
lus adhuc nostratium peruenit. Omitto nunc infi  
nitam Iudæorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plu  
rimos qui titulo Christi tegunt Ethnicos: omitto  
tantas schismaticorum et hæreticorum phalanges.  
Quantus in his esset prouentus Christo, si quauis ac  
fideles

## The preface to the reader.

fideles mitterentur operarii qui iaciant semen bonum, qui reuellant zizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur estructuras non innitentes petrae Christo, denique qui metant maturam segetem, sed Christo metant non sibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes sibi. Nuper Aethiopiae rex quem vulgus appellat Presteian, per oratorem suum submitit se sedi Romanae, non nihil exoptulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quum a fide Christi non sit aliena, tam diu fuerit a totius orbis pastore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandae religionis studiosi, queruntur Pilapios Scythiae septentrionalis populum mire simplicem ac rudem, a nescio quibus principibus Christianis teneri ditione, sed ita duro premi iugo humano, ut eis non imponatur suauius iugum Christi, atque ita spoliari bonis externis, ut non ditentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratissimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos studemus Christo lucrifacere, ac sic eos in ditionem nostram recipere ut gaudeant se subiectos esse principibus sub quorum imperio commodius degant quam ante degebant. Nouimus cicurare bestias feras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad usum vulgarem: et non nouimus mansuefacere homines ut seruiant Christo. Monarchae alunt qui doceant elephantos ad saltandum

*Presteian Aethio-  
piae rex.*

*Pilapios.*

The preface to the reader.

dum, qui doment leones ad lufum, qui doment lynces  
et leopardos ad venatum : et monarcha ecclesiæ non  
inuenit quo homines alliciat ad amabile Christi ser-  
uiciũ : Scio vix vllam reperiri beluam domitu diffi-  
ciliorem quam est Iudæus obstinatus, et obduratus  
hæreticus : quanquam nullum est animal tam immi-  
te quod non cicuretur beneficentia et suauitate. E re-  
pertis regionibus cuehitur aurum et gemmæ : Sed  
triumpho dignius erat illuc inuehere Christianam  
sapientiam auro preciosiorem, ac margaritum euan-  
gelicum quod omnibus diuenditis benæ compara-  
tur. Dominus iubet suis rogare dominum melsis  
vt extrudat operarios quod melsis esset ampla, ope-  
rarij pauci. Non minus opus est nunc rogare deũ  
vt in tam late patentibus agris eijciat operarios, Sed  
excusant omnes, alius aliud. Atqui Christiana di-  
tio tot habet myriadas Franciscanorum in quibus  
probabile est quamplurimos esse qui vere flagrant  
igni seraphico : nec pauciores sunt myriades Domi-  
nicanorum, et in his consentaneum est permultos  
esse Cherubici spiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur  
viri, mundo vere mortui, Christo viui, qui syncere a-  
pud barbaras gentes doceant verbum Dei. Excusa-  
tur linguæ imperitia. Atqui principes ob humanas  
legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiscant :  
Et Themistocles Athenienses vno anno sic didicit

*Franciscani Seraphici.*

*Dominicani Cherubici.*

*Linguæ imperitiæ.*

*Miracula.*

d. i.

sermo

## The preface to the reader.

sermonem Asiaticum vt absq; interprete cum rege lo-  
qui posset: An idem non studebimus in tam sublimi  
negocio? Inter barbaras et ignotas nationes Apосто-  
li inuenerunt victum et amictum: et Deus pollicitus  
est nihil defuturum quarentibus regnum Dei. Nec  
miracula quidem defutura sunt si res postulet, modo  
ad sit sincera fides cum seraphica charitate. &c.

**Damianus  
a Goes**

Furthermoze Damianus a Goes, wryteth in his booke *de de-  
ploratione Lappiana gentis*, that he was the fyrst that moued Eras-  
mus to speake sumwhat hereof: And that he (Erasmus) was determined to wryte a iust volume of this matter  
yf he had not byn pꝛeuented by death. Albeit (sayth Damia-  
nus) in his booke entituled *Ecclesiastes*, he dyd not keepe si-  
lence of so wicked an vngodlynesse, whiche surely is suche,  
that it may in maner make all Chyristian men (and especiallye  
such vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowleage) gyltie  
of so hepyghnous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them  
in the day of iudgement befoze the iuste iudge Chyrist. Howe-  
therfoze (sayth he) let the Chyristian Monarches take heede  
what accounte they shall make befoze the tribunal of Chyriste  
at the laste day, when neyther fauoure, noz pardon, or flatter-  
ie can take place to bee any excuse for the losse of so manye  
soules. And these be the very woordes of the woorthypful and  
lerned man Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byshoppe of  
Rome saule the thyrde of that name, whom he further char-  
gerh to looke diligently hereunto, as a thynge mosse chiefly  
perceyninge to the office of Chyristian prelates. Wee thynke  
hevely that the sheepe of Europe shulde by this tyme be so well  
fedde, that they shulde by good reason be so stronge and migh-  
tic in Chyristes religion (excepte they be infected with the dy-  
sease which the phisicians caule *Tachetia*, beinge an euyl dis-  
position of the body wherby the more they are fed the worse  
they lyke) that many sheppardes myght well bee spared to bee  
sent to other shepe which ought to be of the same soule. For  
this purpose the doctoure of diuinitie when he comenseth,  
hath his scapular cast ouer his headde in token that he hath  
forsaaken

**To the chyrst  
an pꝛinces.**

**The sheepe of  
Europe.**

**The doctoure  
of diuinitie**

## The preface to the reader.

forſaken the worlde for Chyiſtes ſake: And his bootes on his legges in token that he ſhall euer bee in a readineſſe to go forwarde in preachynge the goſpell, as I doubt not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amonge theſe new gentyles if they were thereto mainteyned by the ayde of the ſecular poure as in this caſe it ſhalbe requiſite for the furniture of neceſſaries herunto apperteynyng, I muſt nowe therfore appele vnto you, you riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thynges neyther good nor badde of them ſelues, but onely as they are vſed wel or euil. If you vſe them well, they are the gyftes of god wherewith you may doo many thynges acceptable both to god and men. And if you vſe them otherwyſe, you poſſeſſe not them, but they poſſeſſe you, and theyr canker and ruſte (as ſayrhc the Apoſtle) ſhalbe a teſtimonie againſt you in the day of the great audit. Thinke not therfore that this thyng perreyneth not vnto you, if you perreyne vnto Chyiſte and looke to haue any parte with hym. Conſyder with youre ſelues if it were onely to get worldely ryches, howe redye and greedy you wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thyzde part, with out caſynge of any perell by lande or by ſea, as the wyetic poet Horace hath in fewe wordes deſcrybed the marchauntes deſyre and aduentures to obteyne rychelle.

Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,  
Per mare pauperiem fugiens, per ſaxa, per ignes.

The which verſes are thus much to ſay in effecte,

The marchaunt in hope greate rychelle to fynde,  
By fyr and by water paſſerh to Inde,  
By the burnt line or Equinoctiall,  
To flye from pouerrie and haſarde all.

As the poet hath in theſe verſes, by the marchaunt declared the deſyre that couetous men haue to obteyne ſlipperry riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we ſee in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contende to put them ſelues forwarde to the moſte dangerous aduenture as to haue the forwarde of the battayle: a token ſurely of much nobilitie and manly corage. But oh immortal god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be ſo vaſt, ſlowe, and in maner deſperate in theyr owne private

An admonitiō  
to riſhe men.

The marchaunt

The deſyre of  
worldly fame.

## The peface to the reader.

Men are ftoth  
full in goddes  
caufe.

Pages from  
Englande.

Sy: Hugh  
Wylloby and  
Rycharde  
Chaunceler.

Glozy and  
fame.

matters, perceyving onely to theyr bodies, and yet fo coulde,  
negligent, and fearefull in goddes caufe and thynges tou:  
chyng the health of theyr foules? If there were neyther de:  
tyll nor lawe to accufe men before god in this cafe, fhall not  
theyr owne confciences bee a lawe of condemnation ageynfte  
theym in that they haue not fhewed that loue to mankynde,  
whiche the very lawe of nature moueth brute beaftes to fhewe  
one to an other in theyr generations? But what hope is there  
(excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerte the hartes  
of fuch men) what hope is there I fay, that they wyll depart  
with any of theyr gooddes, muche leffe adu:nture theyr bo:  
dies, to the furtheraunce of Chryftes religion in thefe regions.  
beinge fo farre from them, wheras many fhewe lytle loue, cha:  
ritie, or liberalitie (if not rather crueltie, tyzannie, and op:  
preffion) to theyr pooze neighbours and brootherne dwelling  
euyn at home at theyr owne elbowes. But as this couctous:  
neffe is to bee repproued, fo is the liberalitie of fuch to be com:  
mended as haue byn at greate coaffe and charges in fceyng  
forwarde fuche viages: wherain not onely the marchauntes  
of London, but alfo diuers noble men and gentelmen as well  
of the counfayle as other, which bothe with theyr money and  
furtheraunce otherwyfe haue fupplyed and fent furch cert:  
teyne fhypes for the difcouerynge of fuch landes and regions  
as were heretofore vnknowen, haue herein deferued immor:  
tall fame, for as much as in fuch attemptes and daungerous  
vyages, they haue fhewed no fmaule liberalitie vpon vncer:  
teyne hope of gayne: wherain they haue deferued fo much the  
greater pzaple as theyr intent feemed to bee rather to further  
honest enterprifes then for refpecte of vantage. And here cer:  
teynely in the mention of thefe viages I myght feeme vngraz:  
tefull if I fhulde omitte to giue betwe commendations to the  
two chiefe capitaynes of the fame as the woorthy knyght Iy:  
Hugh Wylloby and the excellent pilotte Rycharde Chauncer:  
ler who haue therein aduentured theyr lyues for the commo:  
ditie of theyr countrey: Men doubleffe woorthye for theyr  
noble attemptes to bee made knights of the Ocean or other:  
wyfe preferred if euer god fende them home ageyne although  
they fayle of theyr purpose. For as fuche haue obteyned abfo:  
lute glozy that haue brought great thynges to paffe, fo haue  
they deferued immortal fame which haue only attempted the  
same

## The preface to the reader.

same: forasmuch as fortune (who sumtymes fauoureth the  
 vnworthiest) is not in the poure of man. Xerxes obteyned glo  
 ric in makynge a brydge ouer the sea Hellespontus ioyninge  
 Europe to Asia, and Darius ouer Bosporus when he passed  
 with his armye towarde the Scythians. No lesse fame and  
 commendacion (although not lyke glozy) deserued Demetrius,  
 Cesar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted  
 to cutte in sundre certeyne places cauled Isthmi, (beinge na  
 rowe portions of lande so diuidynge twoo seas, that there is  
 no passage from the one to the other) and yet neuer finished  
 that they tooke in hande, beinge hyndered epyther by deathe,  
 warres, or other chaunces. The aunient Romans & Greekes  
 gaue such glozpe vnto them that had epyther well deserued of  
 the common welthe, or otherwyse attempted such great enter  
 pryses as might bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyz  
 death they caused Iimages of golde, syluer, brasse, Iuery, and  
 marble to bee made to theyz lyknesse, and the same to be pla  
 ced in theyz solemne haules, palaices, or temples, with cer  
 teyne verses made to the commendacion of them whom the I  
 mages represented. And this no lesse to prouoke and enco  
 rage other forwarde natures to the mularion of their vertues,  
 then also to geue them the due honoure of theyz iust desertes.  
 And surely if euer sence the begynnynge of the worlde any en  
 terpryse haue deserued greate prayse as a chyngc atchyued by  
 men of heroicall vertue, doubtleste there was neuer any more  
 woorty commendacion and admiration then is that whiche  
 othere nation haue attempted by the north seas to discover the  
 mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which byage not on  
 ly golde, syluer, precious stones, and spices, may be brought  
 hether by a safer and shorter way, but also much greater mat  
 ters may hereof enliue in tyme if it shall please God to gyue  
 vnto Christian men such passage into those regions, whereby  
 such familiaritie may further growe betwene the Christiana prin  
 ces of Europe and the greare emperoure of Cathay, that (as  
 wyrteth Haytho *De societate Christianorum et Tartarorum*) there can  
 nothyngc be imagined more effectiuall for the confusion of the  
 Turke if the great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Per  
 sia on the one syde, and the Christian Princes on the other  
 syde, shulde with one content inuade his dominions, as dyd  
 Samburlanes Theemperoure of the Tartars who abowte the  
 ycare

The reward  
 of noble enter  
 prises.

The byage to  
 Cathay by the  
 north seas.

So lette be  
 twene the Te  
 tars and the  
 Christians.  
 The Turke.  
 The Sophie.

Samburlanes.  
 Bataletes.

## The epistle of Peter Martyr

yeare of Christe. M. CCC. lxxxviii. toke prisoner Basafetes Detomanus Themperoure of the Turkes and slew .xx. thousande of his men in one battayle belyde many other great victories, as youe may further reade in this booke in the hystorie of Paulus Jovius. And to haue sayde thus muche in manner of a pface it may suffice.

To the moste noble Prince and Catholike kynge,  
Charles, Peter Martyr of Angleria  
wysbeth perpetuall felicitie.



The diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he fyrste created the worlde, hath reserved vnto this day the knowlege of the great and large Ocean sea: In the which tyme he hath opened the same, chiefly vnto your (moste mightie Prince) by the good fortune and happie success of your grandfather by your mothers syde. The same prouidence (I knowe not by what deskenie) hath brought me out of my natiue countrey of Milane, and out of the cite of Rome (where I continued almost .x. yeares) into Spaine, that I myght particularlye collecte, these marueylous and newe thynges, which shoulde otherwyle perchappes haue linc drowned in the whirlepoole of oblivion: forasmuch as the Spanyardes (men woorthy greate commendation) had onely care to the generall inuentions of these thynges. Norwithstandinge, I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the reauaile bestowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Alcanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceaupnge that I was wylling to departe out of the cite to be present at the warres of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose. But seing that I was fully resolved to departe, exhorted and required me to wyrite vnto hym such newes as were famous in Spayne and woorthy to be noted. I tooke therfore my iorney into Spaine chiefly for the desyre I had to see the expedition whiche was prepared ageynst the enemies of the fayth: forasmuche as in Italpe, by reason of the dissention amonge the Princes, I coulde fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wyrite, beinge a younge man despyous of knowlege and experience of thynges. I was therfore presente at the warres: frome whense I wyrite to Cardinal Alcanius, and by sundry epistels certified

The largenes  
of the Ocean  
vnto this day.

Cardinal Al-  
canius.

The warres  
of Granatum  
ageynst the  
Moors.

## The epistle of Peter Martyr.

certified hym of such thynges as I thought mosse woorthye to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune was turned from a naturall moother to a steppdame, I ceased from wyryng. Yet after I sawe, that by thowertowne of the enemies of oure saythe, Spayne was purged of the Moores as of an euill weede plucked by by the rootes, I leaste I shulde bestowe my slippery yeares in vnprofitable Idlenesse I was mynded to returne to Italie. But the singuler benig- nitie of bothe the Catholyke kynge and queene nowe depar- ted, and theyr large promises towarde me vppon my returne frome my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpose. Yet dooth it not repent me that I drew backe my foote: Al- wel for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time the lyke woorthy thynges to bee done: As also that in maner thowgh oure all Italy, by reason of the disorde of the Chri- stian Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headelonge into ruine, the countreys to be destroyed and made fatte with humane bludde: The cities sacked, virgines and matrones with theyr gooddes and possessions carried away as captiues and miserable innocentes without offence to be slayne bhar- med within theyr owne houses. Of the which calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable outcries, but dyd also feele the same. For euen the bludde of mine owne kinfolk and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was ther fore musyng with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of Arragonie, after that he had seene the two fyrste bookes of my Decades wyrtten to Alcanius, required me in the name of kynge Frederike his vncle, to put forth the other eyght epistell bookes, In the meane tyme also, while I was boyde of all care as touchyng the matters of the Decan, the Apo- stolicall messengers of the byshoppe of Rome Leo the tenth, (by whose holosome counsaile and autozitie we truste the cala- mities of Italy shalbe synysshed) rayled me as it were frome sleape, and encouraged me to proccade as I had begunne. To his holynesse I wyrite two Decades copysed in short bokes after the maner of epistells, and added them to the fyrst, which was printed withowt myne aduise, as shall further appere by the peface folowynge. But nowe I returne to you (most noble Prince) from whom I haue sumwhat digressed. Ther- fore wheras your graundesathers by powre moothers syde haue

The autour was sent ambassador to the Solcane of Alcap in Egypte.

Italy disquieted with warres.

The sequels of warre.

Bynge Frederike.

Leo the tenth, byshoppe of Rome.

Spayne subdued from the Moores.

## The epistle of Peter Martyr

The kyndom  
of Naples.

Note, from  
the beginning  
of the worlde

The temperat  
nes of the E  
quinoctial vn  
known to the  
owlde wy  
ters.

Contynente of  
firme lande  
as bygge as  
the Europes

Ryches are  
the instru  
mentes of con  
questes.

have subdued all Spayne vnder your dominion except onely one corner of the same, and haue also lefte youe the kynges dome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of oure seas, it is suerly a greate thyng and woorthy to be noted in oure cronacles. But not offendynge the reuerence due to oure predecessours, what so euer frome the begynnynge of the worlde hath byn doone or wyrtten to this day, to my iudgement seesmeth but litle, if we consyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe seas, what sundry nations and tounges, what goldemynes, what treasures of perles they haue lefte vnto youe hyghnesse, besyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare. Come therfore moste noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe estate of thynges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto youe the Equinoctial line hethereto vnknowen and burnt by the furious heate of the soonne and vnhabitable after the opinion of the owlde wyrtters a fewe crepted: But nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, frutefull, and moste fortunate, with a thousande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, besyde that greate portion of earth supposed to bee parte of the firme lande, exceedinge in quantitie thre Europes. Come therfore and embrace this newe worlde, and suffer vs no longer to consume in desyre of your presence. From hence, from hence I saye (moste noble younge Prince) shall instrumentes be prepared for you, whereby all the worlde shalbe vnder your obeyssaunce.

And thus I byd your maiestie farewell: To whose taste if I shal perceaue the fruites of this my pillage to be delectable, I wyll hereafter doo my endeuoure that youe maye receaue the same more abundantly. From Madrid. The day before the Calendes of Decer, In the yeare of Christe. M. D.

F. J.

F. J. S.



VIS EXACTAE TOTIVS NOVI ORBIS EVSQUE INSVLARVM DESCRIPTIO RECENS A IOAN. BELLERO EDITA



# The fyrst decade.

I

THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES  
of the Ocean, written by Peter Martyr of Angleria,  
Milneses, counsiler to the kyng of Spayne and  
Prototonaric Apostolicall, To *Ascanius*  
*sphorcia*, vicount Cardinall. &c.



HE REVERENDE AND thanckefull  
antiquite was accustomed to esteeme those men  
as goddes, by whose industrie and magnaniz  
mitie such Landes and Regions were disco  
uered, as were vnknowen to theyz predices  
sours. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god  
whom we honour in triplicitie of person, this

resteth, that albeit we do not woozship that kind of men with  
diuine honoure, yet do we reuerēce them, and woozthely mar  
uell at theyz noble actes and enterprises. Vnto kynges and  
princes we gyue due obeyfaunce, by whose gouernaunce and  
furtheraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfurme theyz attemp  
tes. We commende bothe, and for theyz iust desertes worthe  
ly extoll them. Wherfore, as concernyng the Ilandes of the  
west Ocean, lately discovered, & of the auctours of the same,  
(whiche thyngge you desyre by your letters to knowe) I will  
begynne at the fyrst auctoure therof, lesse I be iniurious to a  
ny man. Take it therfore as foloweth.

Christophorus Colonus (other wise called Columbus) A gentilman  
of Italy, borne in the cite of *Genua*, perswaded fernando and  
Elzabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde  
certaine Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto owre Ocean sea, if they  
wolde furnyshe hym with shippes and other thynges apper  
teynynge. Assyminge that therby not onely the Chystran re  
ligion myght be enlarged, but Spayne also enryched by the  
great plentie of golde, pearles, precious stones, and spices,  
whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three shippes  
were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the which one  
was a great caracke with deckes: and the other twoo were  
light marchaunte shippes without deckes, whiche the Spa  
nyardes call *Caruelas*. Thus he departed from the costes of  
Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Chyust  
1492. and set forward on his viage, being accompanied with  
A. C. xx. Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye  
thynke

The reward  
of Vertue

The Ilandes  
of the weste  
Ocean.

Christophorus  
Colonus,

India.

The first vi  
age of Colo  
nus.

A. i.

thynke

## The fyrst decade.

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.  
Gades or  
Cals mals.  
A leaque,  
What it con-  
teyneth by  
sea.  
the fortunate  
Ilandes.

Caboverde.

The seven I  
landes of Ca  
narie.  
Betanchor A  
frenche man  
subdued the  
Ilandes of  
Canarie.  
Lancelotus.  
Fortisuetura.  
Ferrea.  
Gomera.  
Grancanaria.  
Palma.  
Tenerisen.  
  
Alphonfus  
Lugo.

thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canarie*, found but of late dayes) are distaunte from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thousande and two hundred myles, accordyng to theyr accoupte: for they say they are distant three hundred leaques: wheras such as are expert sea men, affyrme that euery leaque conteyneth foure myles, after theyr supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldenesse of wynter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of sommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore sayled fyrste to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, to the intente there to refreche his thypes with freshe water and suell, before he committed him selfe to this so laborious a vyage. And because I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canarie*: It shall not be muche from my purpose to declare howe of vnknoen they became knowne, and of saluage and wilde, better manured. For by the longe course of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknoen.

These seven Ilandes (thetfore) called the *Canaries*, were soude by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permission of queene *Katharine*, protectrice of kyng *John* her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of *Christe*. *M. C. C. C. III.* This *Betanchor* inuaded two of these Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortisuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his son and heire solde bothe the sayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes. After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, inuaded *Ferrea* and *Gomera*. The other three were subdued in our tyme. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble citie of *Xericium*, and *Agizchaell* of *Moxica*. *Palma* and *Tenerisen*, by *Alphonfus Lugo*, at the kynges charges. *Gomera* and *Ferrea* were easely subdued: But the matter wente harde with *Alphonfus Lugo*. For that naked and wyld nation, fyghtinge onely with stones and clubbes, dyoue his armie to flighte at the fyrste assaulte, and slewe aboute foure hundred of his men. But at the length he ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canarie* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* directyng his vyage towarde the weste, folowinge the fallinge of the sonne, but declining somewhat towarde the left hande, sayled

sayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, haüynge onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyrist to murmure secretly among them selues: and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euyll of *Colonus* theyr gouernoure, and consulted with them selues, epyther to rydde hym out of the waye, ozelles to cast hym into the sea: Wagyng that they were deceyued of a straunger, an outlandishe man, a Ligurian a *Genues*, and byonght into suche daungerous places, that they myght neuer retorne ageyne. And after. xxx. days were past, they furiously cryed out againste him, and threained him that he shulde passe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyses, appeased theyr furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme desyring them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that if they shulde attempte any thinge agaynst him, oz other wille disobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they espied the lande longe looked for. In this fyrst nauigation, he discovered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceeding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectly that *Iohanna* (other wyse called *Cuba*.) was an Ilande. As they coasted alonge by the shore of certayne of these Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales synge in the thicke woodes in the mouth of *November*. They found also great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitye to harborowe greate nauies of shippes. Saylinge by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynte to the west, he rode byttell lesse then eyght hundreth miles (for they call it a hundreth and foure score leagues) supposyng that it had byn the continent oz fyrme land, because he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde iudgc with his eye: wherfoze he determined to retorne backe agayne, beynge therto partly enforced by the roughnesse of the sea. for the sea bankes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by sondrye wyndinges and turnynges, bende them selues so muche toward the Northe, that the northnortheaste wynde roughely colled the shippes by reason of the wynter. Turnynge therefore the stemmes of his shippes toward the Easte, he admyred that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, wherther *Salomon*

*Colonus* men  
rebel agaynst  
hym.

Faire wordes  
and promyses.

*Hispaniola*.  
*Iohanna*.

Nyghtingales  
synge in  
*November*.

The Ilande  
of *Ophir*.

## The fyrst decade.

mons Shyppes sayled for golde. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that bothe these, and the other Ilandes adioynng, are the Ilandes of Antilia. This Ilande he called *Hispaniola*: on whose northe syde as he approached nere to the lande, the keele or battome of the bigge gosse beicell ranne vpon a blynde rocke covered with water, and clove in sunder. But the playnenesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makyng haste therfore with the other two shypes to helpe them, they brought away al the men without hurte. Herc comming fyrst a land, they sawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauynge an vnknown nation comminge towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thicke wooddes, as it hadde byn hares courted with grehoundes. Ovre men pursuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the Shyppes: where fyllinge her with meate and wyne, and apparelinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the shore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue descended from heauen. They cast them selues by heapes into the sea, and came swimmyng to the Shyppes, byngng golde with them, which they chaunged with ovre men for erthen pottes, drinking glasses, popntes, pynnes, hawkes belles, lokinge glasses, and suche other trifles. Thus growng to further familiaritie, ovre men were honorably enterteyned of the kynge of that parte of the Ilande, whose name was *Guaccanarillus*: for it hath many kynnges, as when *Eneas* arriued in *Italy*, he founde *Latium diuided* into many kyngdomes and prouinces, as *Latium*, *Mexcutium*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were seperated with narrow boundes, as shall moze largely appere hereafter. At the euen tyde about the faulng of the sonne, when ovre men went to praier, and kneeled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they dyd the lyke also. And after what maner so euer they sawe them praye to the crosse, they folowed them in all popntes as well as they coulde. They shewed much humanitie towardes ovre men: and helpen them with theyr lighters or small boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlade theyr broken shyppe: And that with suche celeritie and cheerefulnesse, that no frende for frende, or kynseman for kynseman, in suche case moued with pitie, coulde do moze. Theyr boates are made

The Ilandes of Antilia.

A Shyppwrack

The people of the Ilande.

Naked people.

Expert Swimmers.  
Gold for erth and glasse.

Many kinges

Relygious & humane people.

Canoas.

made only of one tree, made holow with a certain sharpe stone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narrow. Many affirme that they haue sene some of them with fortye eyes. The wylde and mylcherous people called *Canibales*, or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mannes fleshe (and called of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) molest them excedyngly, inuadynge theyr countrey, takynge them captiue, kyllyng and eatynge them. As owre men sayled to the Ilandes of these meke and humayne people, they leste the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middelt of theyr viage towards the south. They complayned that theyr Ilandes were no lesse vexed with the incursions of these manhuntynge *Canibales* when they go forth a younge to seeke theyr praye: then are other tame beastes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of suche as they eate, they fyrst eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other most fleshy partes, they powder for soze, as we do pestelles of pozke and gammondes of bakon. yet do they absteyne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therfoze suche younge women as they take, they keepe for increace, as we doo hennes to leye egges. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe caul owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceaue the *Canibales* coming, haue none other myfte but onely to fle: for althoughe they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to represte the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confesse, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouertome a hundred of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they cal *Ages*: muche lyke a nauon roote in fourme and greatnesse: but of sweete taste, muche lyke a greene chestnutte. They haue also an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Iucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often rosted or sodden, then to make breade therof: But they neuer eate *Iucca*, excepte it be first sliced and pressed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or sodden. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a popson as strong as *Aconitum*, so that if it be donke it causeth present death, and yet the breade made of the masse

A. iii.

therof

*monoryla*.  
They haue  
no Iren.

*Canibales* or  
*Caribes*  
*Anthropo-*  
*phagi*.

The crueltie  
of the *Canibales*.

*Ages*.  
Rootes in the  
freede of  
meate.  
*Iucca*.  
Breade of  
rootes.

an herbe of a  
straunge na-  
ture.

## The fyrst decade.

Maizum.

therof, is of good taste and holsome, as all they haue proued. They make also an other kynde of brade of a certayne pulse, called *Panicum*, muche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plenty in the dukedome of Aylane, Spayne, and Brantum.

Solde in estimation.

But that of this countrey is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brayne: The graynes wherof are sette in a maruelous order, and are in fourme somewhat lyke a peale. While they be soure and vnrype, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whytter then snowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizum*. Solde is of some estimation among them: for some of them hange certain small pieces therof at theyr eares and nosethulles. A lytell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for freshe water,

Solde in the sandes of ryuers.

Serpentes without venime.  
Turtle doues  
Duckes.  
Poppingiayes.

Plini.

where they chaunced vpon a Ryuer whose lande was mpyred with muche golde. They founde there no kyndes of soure footed beastes excepte thre kyndes of lytell conyes. These Ilandes also nourishe serpentes: but such as are without hurt. Lykewise wilde geese, turtle doues, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as swannes, with heades of purple coloure. Also Poppingiaies, of the whiche some are greene, some yelowe, and some lyke them of *India*, with yelowe rynges about theyr neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they broughte forth with them, of moske liuely and delectable coloures, hauyng thre feathers entermengled with greene, yelowe, and purple, whiche varietie, deliteth the sense not a litle. Thus muche thought I good to speake of Poppingiaies, (ryghte noble Prynce) specially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Christophorus Colonus (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be parte of *India*) dothe not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient wyrters as touchyng the bignesse of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe as concernyng the nauigable portion of the same beyng vnder vs, yet the Poppingiaies and many other thynges brought from thence, do declare that these Ilandes sauoure somewhat of *India*, eyther beyng nere vnto it, or elles of the same nature: forasmuche as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke *De Celo et Mundo*, and likewise *Seneca*, with diuerse other authours not ignorant in Cosmography, do affirme that *India* is no longe tracte by sea, distante from Spayne by the wecke Ocean, for the soyle

These Ilandes are parte of India.  
The Indians are Antipodes to the spaniardes.

Aristotle.  
Seneca.  
India not far from Spayne

of these

of these Ilandes, byngeth forthe *Maſtik*, Aloes, and ſun-  
drie other ſweete gummes and ſpyces as doth *India*. Cotton  
alſo of the goſſampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the  
people called *Seres*.

The languages of all the nations of theſe Ilandes, maye  
well be wrytten with our Latine letters. For they cal heauen  
*Turi*. A houſe, *Boa*. Bolde, *Caumi*. A good man, *Taino*. nothing  
*Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce  
as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In theſe Ilandes  
they founde no trees knowen vnto them, but pyne appe trees,  
and date trees: And thoſe of maruelous heygth and exceeding  
harde, by reaſon of the greate moyſincle and farnesse of the  
grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the ſonne,  
whiche endureth ſo all the hole yere. They playnely aſſyume  
the Ilande of *Hiſpaniola* to be the moſt fruiteful lande that the  
heauen compaſſeth aboute, as ſhall moze largely appere here:  
after in the particular deſcription of the ſame, whiche we in-  
tende to ſette ſoorthe when we ſhall be better inſtructed.

Thus makynge a leage of frendſhypp with the kynge, and  
leaupnge with hym. xxxviii. men to ſearche the Ilande, he de-  
parted to Spayne takynge with hym. x. of the inhabitauntes  
to lerne the Spaniſhe tongue, to the intent to vſe them after-  
warde for interpretours. *Colonus* therfoze at his returne, was  
honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who cauſed him  
to ſytte in theyr preſence, whiche is a token of great loue and  
honoure amonge the Spaniardes. He was alſo made Admi-  
rall of the Ocean: and his brother gouenoure of the Iland.

Towarde the ſecond viage, he was furniſhed with. xii. ſhip-  
pes: wherof there were great carackes of a thouſand tunne:  
xii. were of that ſozte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Carauelas*:  
without deckes: and twoo other of the ſame ſozte ſomewhat  
bygger, and moze apte to beare deckes, by reaſon of the greet-  
neſſe of theyr maſtes. He had alſo a thouſand and two hun-  
dred armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were  
many artificers, as ſmythes, carpenters, myners, and ſuche  
other: Certayne horſemen alſo, wel armed: Likewiſe mares,  
ſhepe, heygthfers, and ſuch other of bothe kindes for increaſe.  
Lykewiſe all kynde of pulſe or grayne and corne, as wheate,  
barlye, rye, beanes and peale, and ſuche other, as well for  
food as to ſowe: Welyde vynes, plantes and ſeedes, of ſuche  
trees,

*Maſtik*,  
Aloe.  
Goſſampyne  
cotton or bom-  
baſe.  
*Seres*.  
The language  
of theſe *Indi-  
ans*.

Trees and  
frutes vnkno-  
wen to vs.  
fat & moyſte  
grounde.  
heate conti-  
nuall and tem-  
perate.  
The fruitful-  
neſſe of *Hiſpa-  
niola*

The ſeconde  
viage of *Co-  
lonus*.

Come and ſe-  
des to ſowe.

## The fyrst decade.

Tooles and  
artillery.

water drop-  
pyng from a  
tree continu-  
ally.

trees, fruites, and herbes, as those countreyes lacke. And (not to be forgotten) sundry kindes of artillery & iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, croſſebowes, bylles, hargabuzes, brode ſwordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, ſhouelles, hammers, nayles, ſawes, axes, and ſuche other. Thus beynge furniſhed accordyngely, they ſet forwarde from the Ilandes of *Gades*, (nowe called *Cals*.) the. vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Chyiſte. 1493. and arrived at the Ilandes of *Canarie*, at the calendes of October. Of theſe Ilandes, the laſte is called *Ferres*, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually diſtilleth from one onely tree growyng on the highest backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trench made with mannes hande. We were inforced of theſe thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What ſhal ſuccede, we wyl certifie yowe hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the court, at the Ides of *November*. 1493.

¶ The ſeconde booke of the fyrſte Decade  
to *Aſcanius Phorda*, vicounte  
Cardinall, &c.



Methymna  
Campi.  
Castella Ve-  
tus.

Gades

¶ We repete (ryght honorable Synce) that yowe are desirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that thoſe thynges haue greatly deyled yow which I wrote unto yowe highneſſe of the fyrſte nauigation, yowe ſhal now therefore receaue what hath ſucceeded. *Methymna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the reſpect from yowe, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Castella Vetus*: beynge diſtante from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the court remayned, when aboute the. ix. of the calendes of *Aprill* in this yere of nyneitie and foure, there were poſtes ſente to the kynge and queene, certifyinge them that there were. xii. ſhippes come from the newe Ilandes and arriued at *Gades*. But the gouernoure of the ſhippes ſente worde to the kynge and queene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the poſtes, but onely that the Admiral with ſiue ſhippes and. iiii. ſcore and tenne men remayned ſtill in *Hiſpaniola*, to ſearch the ſea cretes

secretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym selfe wolde shortly make relation in theyr presence, by worde of mouthe. Therfore the daye before the nones of April, he came to the courte him selfe. What I learned of him and other saythefull and credible men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl rehearse vnto youe in such order as they declared the same to me when I demaunded them. Take it therfore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departyng from Ferrea, the laste of the Ilandes of Canaria, and from the costes of Spayne with a nauie of xviii. shippes, they sayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclyning of purpose more towarde the lefte hand then at the fyrst viage, folowynge the northnortheast wynde: and arriued fyrst at the Ilandes of the Canibales, or Caribes of whiche, onely the same was knowen to our men. Amonge these, they chaunted fyrste vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not se so muche as an elle space of bare earthe or stony grounde. this they called *Dominica*, bicause they found it on the sunday. They taried here no tyme, bycause they sawe it to be deserte. In the space of these. xxi. dayes, they thynke that they sayled. viii. hundreth and. xx. leaques, the Northnortheast wynde was so full with them, and so freshely folowed the sterne of theyr shippes. After they hadde sayled a lirtell further, they espied diuerse Ilandes replenyshed with sundrye kyndes of trees, from the whiche came fragrant sauours of spyces and swete gummies. Here they sawe neyther man nor beaste, except certayne lisartes of huge bignesse, as they reported whiche went alande to biewe the countrey. This Iland they called *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poynt of this Iland, espying a mountayne a farre of, they sayled thither. Aboute. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer disceding whiche seemed to be a token of some great and large fludde. This is the fyrste lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Ilandes of Canaria, and is an Ilande of the Canibales, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hispaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrst viage. Serchyng the Ilande, they founde innumerable villages of. xx. houses or. xxx. at the mooste, sette rounde aboute in order, makinge the strette in coompassse lyke a markette place. And soz as much as I haue made mention of theyr houses, it shal nothe

The Iland of  
Ferrea.

Ilands of the  
Canibales.

The Iland of  
Dominica.

viii. hundreth  
xx. leaques  
in. xxi. dayes.

Desertes,

The Ilande  
of Galanta.

The Iland of  
Guadalupe.

villages of. xx  
or. xxx. houses

## The fyrst decade.

The building  
of theyr hou-  
ses.

So Tampie  
cotton.

Bombase  
hanginge  
beddes.

Images.

Fyne cookery

Arrowe heds  
of bones.

Greatly from my purpose to describe in what maner they are  
bylde. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde paup-  
lions. Theyr frame is rayled of exceedyng hyyge trees, sette  
close together and fast rampaired in the grounde, so standyng  
a slope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyn  
together and beare one agaynste an other, hauynge also withy-  
in the house, certayne stronge and shorte props or postes whi-  
che susteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with  
the leaues of date trees and other trees strongly compact and  
hardened, wherewith they make them close from wynde and  
wether. At the shorthe postes or proppes within the house, they  
tie ropes of the cottis of goTampine trees, or other ropes made  
of certayne long and toughe rotes much lyke vnto the shrubbe  
called *spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vsed to make bondes  
for bynes and cabuls and ropes for shyppes. These they tye  
ouerthwarte the house from poste to poste. On these they lay  
as it were certayne mattresses made of the cotton of the goT-  
sarpine trees, whiche growe plentifully in these Ilandes.  
This cotton the Spaniardes call *Algodon*, and the Italians  
*Bombasine*. And thus they sleepe in hangynge beddes. At the  
enteraunce of one of theyr houses, they sawe two Images of  
woodde lyke vnto serpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn  
such idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that  
they were sette there onely for coomlynesse. For they knowe  
none other god then the Sunne and Moone, althoughe they  
make certayne Images of goTampine cotton to the similitude  
of such phantasies as they say appere to them in the nyght.  
Our men found in theyr houses, all kyndes of erthen vessels,  
not muche vnylike vnto oures. They founde also in theyr ki-  
chens, mannes fleshe, duckes fleshe, and goole fleshe, al in  
one pot: and other on the spites redye to be layde to the fire.  
Entrynge into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes  
of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they reserue  
to make heades for theyr arrowes, because they lacke iron.  
The other bones they caste awaye when they haue eaten the  
fleshe. They founde likewise the heade of a ponge man faste-  
ned to a poste and yet bledinge. They haue in some villages,  
one great hault or pallaice, aboute the whiche theyr common  
houses are placed. To this they resort, as often as they come  
together to playe. When they perceaued the commynge of  
our men

our men, they fledde, in theyr houses they founde also about  
xxx. chyldren and women captiues which were reserued to be  
eaten, but our men tooke them awaye to vse them for inter-  
pretoures. Searchyng more diligently thynner partes of the  
Ilande, they founde. vii. other ryuers, bygger then this whi-  
che we spake of before, cunnyng throughe the Ilande, with  
fruitefull and pleasante bankes, delectable to beholde. This  
Ilande, they called *Guadalupes*, for the similitude that it hath  
to the mounte *Guadalupes* in Spayne, where the Image of the  
virgin *MARIE* is religiously honored. But the inhabitanz-  
tes caul it *Carucueria*, or *Queraquiers*. It is the chiefe habitation  
of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland. vii. *Popin-*  
*gaves*, bygger then pheasantes, muche differynge from other in  
coloure: hauynge theyr backs, brestes, and bealies of purple  
coloure, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al  
these Ilandes is no lesse plentie of poppingayes then with  
vs of Sparrowes or Starlinges. As we byynge by capons and  
hennes to francke or make them fatte, so do they these bigger  
kyndes of poppingaies for the same purpose. After that they  
hadde thus searched the Ilande and dyuen these *Canibales* to  
frighte, (whiche ranne awaye at theyr fyrst approche as soone  
as they had espied them) they cauled theyr company together.  
And as soone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lygh-  
ters (whiche they call *Canoas*) they towled theyr ankers the  
daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Gua-*  
*dalupes*. *Colonus* the admirall, for the desyre he hadde to se his  
companions, whiche at his fyrst byage he lefte the yere before  
in *Hispaniola* to searche the countrey, lette passe many Ilandes  
bothe on his righte hande and lefte hande, and sayled direct-  
ly thither. By the waye, there appeared from the North. A  
great Ilande which the captiues that were taken in *Hispaniola*,  
cauled *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmyng it to be inhabited only  
with womē: To whō the *Canibales* haue access at certen tymes  
of the yere, as in owlde tyme the *Ibracians* had to the *Amix-*  
*ones* in the Ilande of *Lesbos*. The men children, they sende to  
theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them selues.  
They haue greate and stronge caues or dennes in the ground,  
to the which they flye for safegarde if any men resorte vnto  
them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende  
them selues with bowes and arrowes, agens the violence of

The mount  
*Guadalupes*:

*Carucueria*.

poppyngayes  
bygger then  
pheasantes

The *Caniba-*  
les dyuen to  
frighte.

*Matinino* an  
Ilande of wo-  
men.

## The fyrst decade.

The Ilandes  
of Mons Ser  
ratus.

huntinge for  
men.  
Sancta Mari  
a Rotunda.  
Sanctus Mar  
tinus.

Sancta Mari  
a Antiqua,

Insula crucis  
An Ilande of  
the Canibals

The Caniba  
les are ex  
pert archers.

Arrowes in  
fecte with  
Veneme.

A conflict  
with the Ca  
nibales.

suche as attempte to enuade them. They coulde not at this tyme approche to this Ilande, by reaso<sup>n</sup> of the Northenorth east wynde which blew soo vehemently from the same, wher as they nowe folowed the Eastsoutheaste. After they departed from Madanino, and sayled by the space of .xl. myles, they passed not farre frome an other Ilande which the captyues sayde to bee verve peopulous, and replenyshed with all thynges necessarie for the life of man. This they cauled Mons Serratus, bycause it was ful of mountaynes. The captyues further declared that the Canibales, are wonte at some tyme to goo frome theyr owne coastes aboute a thousande myle to hunt for men. The daye folowynge, they sawe an other Ilande the whiche, bycause it was rounde, they cauled Sancta Maria Rotunda. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauled s. Martini. Which they lette passe also bycause they had no leasure to tarpe. Lykewyse the thirde daye they elyped an other, whose Diametral syde extendynge frome the Easte to the weste, they iudged to bee a hundreth and fyfte myle. Theye affirme all these Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and frutefull. This laste, they cauled Sancta Maria Antiqua. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had sayled aboute fortie myle, they chanced vpon an other muche bygger then any of the reste, which thynhabitans caule Ay Ay, but they named it Insula crucis. Heere they cast anker to fetch the freshe water. The Admiral also commaunded .xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne shipp, and to search the Ilande Here they founde fowre dogges on the shore. The Inhabitants are Canibales, and maruelous experte in shutinge, as well women as men: And vse to infecte theyr arrowes with poyson: when they had tarped there two dayes, they sawe a farr of, a Canoa, in the whiche were eight men and as manye women haupyng with them bowes and arrowes. They fearfly assayled owre men withoute all feare, and hurte sum of them with theyr venenous arrowes. Amonge these there was a certen woman to whome the other gaue reuerence and obeyde as though she were theyr quene. Her sonne wayted vpon her, beinge a younge man, strongly made, of terrible & frownyng countenaunce and a lyons face. Owre men leaste they sholde take the more hurte by beinge wounded a farr of, thowght it beste to ioyne with them, Therfore with all spede settinge

settinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in whiche they were sette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, which beinge ouerwhelmed, they notwithstandinge, as well the women as the men swimminge, caste theyr dartes at owre men, thicke and threefolde. At the lengthe, gatheringe them selues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fought manfully vntyll they were ouercome and taken, one beinge slayne, and the queenes sonne sore wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals shippe, they dyd no more put of their fierces and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when theye perceauē the selues to be botonde in chaynes. There is no man able to beholde them, but he shall feele his bowelles grate with a certain horroure, nature hath endewed them with soo terrible menacyge, and cruel aspecte. This coniecture I make of my selfe and other which often tymes wente with me to see them at *Methymna Campi*. But nowe to returne to the viage. Proceedinge thus further and further, more then fiue hundred myles, firste towardes the Westsouthweste, then towarde the Southwest, and at the lengthe towarde the West north weste, they entered into a mayne large sea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelously differinge one frome another, for sum of them were verpe frutefull and full of herbes and trees. Other sum, verpe drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of stone, wherof sum were of bright blew or asurine coloure, and other glysteringe white: wherfore they supposed them by good reason to bee the mynes of metalles and precious stones. But the rowghnes of the sea, and multitude of Ilandes standinge so thicke togyther, hindered them soo, that they coulde caste no anker leasse the bigger vesselles shulde runne vpon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the searchinge of these Ilandes vntill an other tyme. They were so manye and soode so thicke, that they coulde not number them. Yet the smauler vesselles which drewe no greate depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortye and fyre Ilandes. But the bigger vesselles, kepte aloofe in the mayne sea for feare of the rockes. They caule the sea where this multitude of Ilandes are situate, *Archipelagus*. Frome this tracte proceedinge forewarde, in the mydde waye there lyeth an Iland which thynhabitanes caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena*.

B.iii.

But

The fiercesnes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

*Methymna Campi*.

Innumerable Ilandes.

The mynes of metalles & precious stones.

The sea cauled *Archipelagus*.

## The fyrst decade.

Insula. S. Jo:  
hannes or Su  
thena.

Death for  
death

The moun:  
taines are  
coulde then  
the playnes.

From Domini  
ca to Hispani:  
ola fyue hun:  
dred leaques

The Spany:  
ardes leste in  
the Ilande are  
slayne.  
kyng Guac:  
canarillus re  
bellet.

Two Images  
of goulde.

But they named it *Insula. S. Iohannis*, Dyuers of theym whome we had deliuered from the *Canibales*, sayde that they were bozne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be very peopulous and frutefull, hauinge also manye fayre wooddes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them & the *Canibales*, They haue no boates to passe from their owne coastes to the *Canibales*, But if it bee their chaunce to ouercome them, when they make incursion into theyr countreye to seke their praye (as it sumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteyne) they secue them with like faulse, requitinge death for death. For one of theym mangleth an other in pieces, and roste them and eate them euen befoze their eyes. They tarped not in this Ilande. yet in the weste angle ther of, a fewe of them went a lande for freshe water, and found a greate and high hylle after the maner of their buylding, hauinge .xii. other of their bulgare cottages placed abowre the same: but were all leste desolate, whether it were that they resorted to the mountaynes by reason of the heate which was that tyme of the yeave, and to returne to the playne when the ayre wareth colilder, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incursion into the Ilande at certen seasons. In all this Ilande is only one kyng. The south syde hereof extendeth abowte two hundred the myles. Shortly after, they came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, beinge distante from the fyrste Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundred the leaques. Here they founde all thynges out of order, and theyr felowes slayne which they leste here at their fyrste vyage. In the beginninge of *Hispaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngdomes as we haue sayde) is the region of *Xamani* whose kyng is named *Guaccanarillus*. This *Guaccanarillus* ioynded frendshippe with owre men at the fyrste viage, and made a league with them: But in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, & was the cause of owre mens destruction, althowgh he dissimuled the same, and pretended frendship at the Admirales returne. As owre men sayled on yet a litle further, they espied a longe *Canoe* with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guaccanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He browghe with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And tolde a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owre men, as they proued afterwarde

warde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communicati-  
 on for lacke of interpretours, which were epyther all deade,  
 or escaped and floune awaye when they drewe nere the Ilan-  
 des. But of the .x. vii. dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The  
 inhabitantes of these Ilandes haue byn euer soo vlsed to liue  
 at libertie, in playe and pastyme, that they can hardely awaye  
 with the yoke of seruitude which they attempte to shake of  
 by all meanes they maye. And surely if they had receaued  
 oovre religion, I wolde thinke their life moste happye of all  
 men, if they might therewith enioye their aunciente libertie.  
 A fewe thinges contente them, haunge no delite in suche su-  
 perfluites, for the which in other places men take infinite  
 paynes and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer  
 satisfied, wheras many haue to muche, and none inough.  
 But emonge these simple sowles, a fewe clothes serue the na-  
 ked: weightes and measures are not needefull to such as can  
 not skylle of crafte and deceypte and haue not the vse of pestife-  
 rous monye, the seede of innumerable myscheues. So that if  
 we shall not be ashamed to confesse the truth, they seeme to  
 lyue in that goulden worlde of the whiche owlde wyrters  
 speake so much: wherin men lyued simple and innocentlye  
 without inforcement of lawes, without quarellinge Judges  
 and libelles, contente onely to satisfie nature, without fur-  
 ther veration for knowelege of thinges to come. Yet these na-  
 ked people also are tormeted with ambitio for the desyre they  
 haue to enlarge their dominions: by reason wherof they kepe  
 warre & destroy one an other: fro the which plage I suppoie  
 the golden world was not free. For euen then also, *Cede, non  
 redam,* that is, gyue place, & I wyll not giue place, had entred  
 emonge men. But nowe to retorne to thematter fro which we  
 haue digressed. The admiral desyrous to knowe further of  
 the death of his men, sent for *Guaccanayllus* to come to him to  
 his ship, dissimulinge that he knew any thinge of the matter.  
 After that he came aboard ship, saluting the Admiral & his co-  
 pany gyuing also certē golde to the Capetaynes and officers,  
 turned him to the womē captiues which not longe before our  
 mē had deliuered fro the *Canibales*. And earnestly beholding one  
 of them whome oovre men cauled *Catharyne*, he spake gentel-  
 ly vnto her. And thus when he had seene and marueyled at  
 the hoyses and suche other thinges as were in the shyppe, vn-  
 known

Libertie and  
 idleness.

A happy kind  
 of lyfe.

Superfluite.

many haue to  
 much and  
 none inough.

The goulden  
 worlde

Naked men  
 troubled with  
 ambition.

Gyue place.

The Admira  
 sendeth for  
 the kynge.

No hoyses in  
 the Ilandes

## The fyrst decade.

A tyme for all  
thynges.

A desperate  
aduenture of  
a woman.

Cloelia of  
Rome.

Guaccanaril:  
lus is sought.  
Melchior.

knownen to them, and had with a good grace and merelye asked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. yet sum there were which counseyled the Admirall to kepe hym styll: that if they might by any meanes proue that he was consentinge to the death of owre men, he might bee punished accordynglie. But the Admirall considering that it was yet no tyme to incense thynhabitanes myndes to wrathe, dysmyssed hym. The next daye folowynge, the kynges brother resortyng to the Shyppes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine aswell to recouer her owne libertie as also her felowes, being suborned therto eyther by the kyng or his brothers promises attempted a much more difficulte and daungerous aduenture then dyd Cloelia of Rome, which beynge in hostage with other maydes to the kyng <sup>Porcena</sup>, deceaued her keepers, and rode ouer the ryuer Tiber, with the other virgins which were pledged with her. For wheras they swamme ouer the ryuer on horsebacke. This Katharyne with seuen other women, trustyng onely to the strengthe of theyr owne armes, swamme aboue thre longe myles: and that also, at suche tyme as the sea was lumbhat rologhe. For euen soo farre of frome the shore, lay the Shyppes at rode, as nigh as they could comiecture. But owre men folowynge them with the shippeboates, by the same light scene on the shore wherby the women were ledde, tooke thre of them: supposynge that Katharyne with the other foure, wente to Guaccanarillus. For in the sprynge of the mornynge, certen messengers beynge sente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and suffe, and the women also. which thynge minitred further suspicion that he was consentinge to the death of owre men. Wherfore the Admirall sente forth an armye of thre hundred men, ouer the which he appoynted one Melchior to be capitayne, wylling hym to make diligent searche to fynde oute Guaccanarillus. Melchior therfore with the smaleste vessels enterynge into the countreye by the ryuers and scourynge the shores, chaunced into certen crooked goulfes defended with vlyttle & steepe hilles, supposynge that it had byn the mouth of sum greate ryuer. He founde here also a verve commodious and safe hauen, and therefore named it <sup>Portus Regalis</sup>. They saye that the enterance of this is so crooked and bendynge, that

that after the Shippes are once within the same, whether they turne the to the lefte hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceave where they came in vntyll they retorne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there so brode that thre of the byggeste vessels may sayle together on a froont. The sharpe & high hilles on the one syde and on the other, so brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr sayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleasaunte groue full of Hopingayes and other byrdes which breede therein and singe verye sweetlye. They perceaued also that two ryuers of no smaule largenes fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus searched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* espied a high house a farre of, where supposinge that *Guaccanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goynge, there mette hym a man with a frowynge countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundredeth men folowynge hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staues like iauelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approachyng towarde owre men, spake owte alowde with a terryble voyce, sayenge that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when owre men had gyuen them signes of peace, they lefte bothe theyr weapons and fiercesnes. Thus geuynge eche of them certen haukes belles, they tooke it for so greate a rewarde, that they despyred to enter bondes of nere frendeshyppe with vs, and feared not immediatly to submitte them selues vnder owre power, and resorted to our Shypps with theyr presentes. They that measured the house (beinge made in rounde fourme) founde it to be from syde to syde. xxxii. greate paces, comparfed abowte with .xxx. other vulgare houses, hauinge in them many beames crosse ouer, and couered with reedes of sundry colours, wrythed and as it were weaued with maruelous art. When owre men asked sum of them where they myght fynde *Guaccanarillus*, They aunswered that that Region was none of his. But theyr kynges beyng there presente. Yet they sayde they supposed that *Guaccanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makynge therfoze a brotherly league with this *Caccicus*, (that is to saye a kynge) they retourned to the Admirall to make relation what they hadde scene and harde. wherbyppon he sent forth dyuers other Centurians with their

Hopingayes  
and byrdes.

Taini.

haukes bel-  
les.

A large hous

Reedes of sun-  
dry colours.

Caccicus.

## The fyrst decade.

Hoiedus and  
Goualanus.

Golde in ry-  
uers faulinge  
from moun-  
taynes.

The maner  
of gatherin-  
g golde.

Straynes of  
golde.

A masse of  
rude golde  
weighinge .ix  
ounces.

Cannaboa,  
kyng of the  
house of gold

Holsome wa-  
ter and plen-  
tie of fysh.

The day and  
nyght of e-  
qual length  
in December.

Bydes breed  
in December

The elevati-  
on of the pole

The starres  
are cauled  
gardens of  
the pole.

hundredes to searche the countrey yet further. Amonge the which were *Hoiedus* and *Goualanus*, noble younge gentlemen & of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaynes to seeke *Guaccanarillus*, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene the one of them so bounde on the one syde therof foure ryuers faulynge from the same mountaynes: and the other founde. iii. on the other syde. In the sandes of all these ryuers is folowd great plentye of goulde, which thynhabitantcs of the same I laude which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the sande with theyr handes, a Cubette deape, and takynge vp sande with theyr lefte handes from the botome of the same, they picked out graynes of goulde with theyr ryght handes withoute any more arte or cunnynge. And so deliuered it to oovre men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fyrchis. And I my selfe sawe a masse of rude goulde, (that is to say, suche as was neuer molten) lyke unto suche stiones as are founde in the botz tomes of ryuers, weighinge nyne ounces, which *Hoieda* him selfe founde. Beinge contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punishment that they shuld meddle no further then their commission: which was only to searche the places with their signes. For the same went that there was a certeyne kyng of the mountaynes from whense those ryuers had their faule, whom they caule *Cacicus Cannaboa* that is, the lord of the house of golde. For they caule a house *Boa*, goulde, *Cauni*: and a kyng or Lorde, *Cacicus*, as we haue sayde befoze. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fysh, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holsome then in these ryuers: also the waters of the same to be most holsom to drynke. *Melchior* hym selfe towd me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the *Canibales*. But the sphere or circles of the heauen, agreeth not therunto. Albeit that in the same moneth, sume bydes make their nestes, and sume haue alredy hatched their egges by reason of the heate beinge rather continuall then extreme. He towd me also when I questioned with hym as concerning the elevation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that all the starres cauled *Plastrum* or *Charles wayne*, are hydde vnder the North pole to the *Canibales*. And surely there returned none from thence at this viage, to whome there is more

credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Astronomie, he shulde haue sayde that the day was al mosse equall with the night. For in no place towarde the stay of the sonne (cauled *solficium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctiall*, for asmuch as they had euer the north pole theyr guyde, and euer eleuate in sight aboute the *Horizontall*. Thus haue I brievely written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought sufficiente at this tyme. And shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wyrite vnto you moze largely of suche matters as shall be dayly better knowen. For the admirall hym selfe (whome I vse famlyperly as my verye frende) hath promysed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowlege of al such thynges as shall chaunce. He hath nowe chosen a stronge place where he may buyld a Citie nere vnto a comodious haven. And hath already buylded many houses and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) god is dayly serued with .xiii. preestes accordinge to the maner of owre churches. When the tyme nowe approched when he promysed to sende to the kynge and queene, and hauynge prosperous wynde for that purpose, sent backe the .xii. Carauelles wherof we made mencion before it was no smaull hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Especially consydeyrng the death of his men whom he left in the Ilande at the fyrst vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places & other secretes wherof we might otherwylc haue had further knowlege. But as tyme shall reueale them ageyne, so wyl I aduertise yowre of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt *Strangers Sirophenicians*, what these Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue sent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke & inner partes of that tree whiche they suppose to bee the *Lina mome tree*. And yf it be your pleasure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the smaule seedes the which you shoulde perceaue to haue fallen from these graynes, or of the wodde it selfe, touch them firste softly mouinge them to your lippes. For although they bee not hurtfull, yet for theyr excelle of heate, they are sharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any whyle thereon. But if the tongue be blystered by tastynge of them, the same is taken away by dzynkynge of water. Of

The Equinoctiall lyne.

A chapel and preestes.

Marchaunts' Sirophenicians.

The Lina mome tree.

## The fyrst decade.

the corne also wherof they make theyr breade, this brynget shall deliuer sume graynes to your Lordeshyppe bothe whyte and blacke: And therewith also, a Trunke of the tree of Aloes The which if you cutte in peeces, you shall feele a sweete savoure to proccade from the same. Thus fare you hartely wel. From the courte of *Merbimna Campi*. The thyrde day before the Calendes of May. *Anno. Domini, M. CCCC. XCIIII.*

Xilaloos or  
lignū Aloes.

**C** The thyrde boke of the fyrst Decade, to  
Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonye and  
Rene to the kynge.

The fable of  
Phaeton.



kynge Ferdinandus and  
queene Helisabeth

hercules,  
he meaneth  
the Ilandes.

hispaniola.

Ophir whe-

**O**we desyre that folyse *Phaeton* shulde ageine rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And contende to drawe sweete lycoures out of the harde spnte, wheras you requyre me to dyscribe vnto you the newe worlde, folownde in the weste by the good fortune & gouernaunce of the Catholike Princes *Ferdinandus* and *Helisabeth*, your Uncle and Aunte: shewyng me also the letters of kynge *Frederike* your vncke, wyrtten to me in the same behalfe. But sythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whose power it is to commaunde me to take vppon me more then I am wel able. ye bothe shal receaue this precious stone, rudely closed in leade after my maner of workemanshyppe. Wherfore when you shall perceaue the lerned sorte frendely: The malicious, enuiously: And the backebyters, furiously, to hende theyr sclaunderous dartes ageynst owre fayre *Nymphes* of the *Ocean*, you shall freely proteste in howe short tyme, and in the myddeste of what troubles and calamities, you haue enforced me to wypte of the same. Thus fare you well frome *Granata* the ninthe day before the Calendes of May.

**C**We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admirall passed by the coastes of the *Cambales* to the Ilande of *Hispaniola* with his whole nauie. But nowe we entende further to shewe what he folownde as concernynge the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better searched the seacreates of the same: Likewyle of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he yet supposed to bee the firme lande. *Hispaniola* therfore (which he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyrde boke of

of the kynges) is of latitude, fyue southe degrees : hauynge the northe pole eleuate on the northe syde .xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe syde (as they saye) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the East to the Weste, seuen hundredeth and foure scoze myles. It is distant from the Ilandes of Gades (cauled Cades) xlix. degrees, and more as sum saye. The forme of the Ilande, resembleth the leafe of a chesnutte tree. Upon a high hyll on the North syde of the Ilande, he buylded a citie, bycause this place was most apte for that purpose by reason of a myne of stones which was nere vnto the same, seruyng well bothe to buylde with, and also to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of thre scoze myles in length: and in bredth sumwhere .xii. sumwhere .xx. myles where it is broadest, and .vi. myles where it is narrowest. Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of holsome waters. But the greatest of them which is nauigable, fauleth into the haueu of the citie for the space of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you shal vnderstand by these thynges which folowe. On the shore of this ryuer, they haue lympted and enclosed certeyne grounde to make gardynes and orchardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyshe, letule, colewortes, bozage, and such other, ware rypp within .xvi. dayes after the seede is sown. Lyke wyse Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and suche other, within the space of .xxxvi. dayes. These garden herbes, they haue freshe and greene all the whole yeare. Also the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, suger is made, growe a cubette high within the space of .xv. dayes : but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or throuddes of younge vines : And that they haue the second yeare gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same. But by reason of to muche rankenes, they beare but selue clustres. Furthermore, a man of the countrey sowed a lyttle wheate about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handefull of the rypp eares of the same the thyrde day before the calendes of Aprill: which was that yeare the vigile of the Resurrection of oure Lorde. Also, al kyndes of pulse, as beanes, peason, fytches, tares, and suche other, are rypp thysle in the yeare, as all they which come from thense, affirme with one voyce : yet that the grounde is not vniuer-

ther Salo-  
mens ships  
sayled for  
golde.

Isabella.

A playne of  
threescore  
myles of len-  
gthe.

A token of  
maruelous  
fruitfulness,

herbes grene  
all the hole  
yeare.

Suger reeds  
plantes and  
vines.

Come and  
grayne rypp  
twise a yeare

## The fyrst decade.

sally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tyme whyle these  
 thynges were doinge, the Admirall sent owte a compaigne of  
 xxx. men to searche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwylse cauled  
*Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And  
 the myddle backe of the hole Ilande in the whiche is greate  
 plentie of goulde. When they that went to searche the Regi-  
 on, were returned they reported marvelous thynges as tou-  
 chinge the great ryches of this Region. Frome these moun-  
 taynes, descende foure greate ryuers, which by the marue-  
 lous industrye of nature, deuided the hole Ilande into foure  
 partes, in maner equall, ouerspreadinge and wateringe the  
 hole Ilande with their branches. Of these foure ryuers, the  
 one reacheth towarde the Easte. This the inhabitantes caule  
*Iunna*: An other, towarde the Weste, and is cauled *Attibunicus*.  
 The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laste reach-  
 eth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before  
 the Ides of Marche, the Admirall him selfe with al his horse  
 men and foure hundreth footemen, marched directly towarde  
 the South syde of the goulden Region. Thus passinge ouer  
 the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the  
 other syde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the  
 which a ryuer muche bygger then the fyrste, and many other  
 meane ryuers runne through. When he had also conueighed  
 his armye ouer the ryuer and passed the seconde vale whiche  
 was in no part inferiour to the firste, he made away through  
 the thirde mountayne, where was no passage before, and del-  
 cended into an other vale which was nowe the beginninge of  
*Cibana*. Through this also runne many studdes, and ryuers,  
 out of euery hyll, and in the sandes of theym all, is founde  
 great plentie of goulde. And when he had nowe entered thre  
 scoze and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie  
 he intended to buylde a fortreffe vpon the toppe of a hyll,  
 standing by the hoze of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might  
 the better and more safely searche the secreates of the inner  
 partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortreffe of saynte  
*Thomas*. The whiche in the meane tyme whyle he was buyl-  
 dyng, th inhabitantes beinge desirous of haukes belles and  
 other of oore thynges, resorted dayly thither. So to whom the  
 Admirall declared, that if they wolde bryng goulde, they  
 shulde haue what so euer they wolde aske, Forthwith cur-  
 ynge

The Region  
of Cipanga or  
Cibana.  
Solde.

Foure greate  
ryuers.

The golden  
region of  
Cibana.

Vales and  
mountaynes.

The vale of  
Cibana.

Solde for  
hawkes bels.

ninge theyr backes and runnyng to the shore of the next ry-  
uer, they returned in a short tyme, bynginge with them their  
handes full of goulde. Amongest al other, there came a owld  
man bynginge with him two pybble stones of goulde weigh-  
inge an vnce, desyringe them to gyue him a bell for the same  
who when he sawe oure men maruell at the byggenes therof,  
he made signes that they were but smaule and of no value in  
respecte of sume that he had scene. And takyng in his hande  
foure stones the least wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and  
the byggest as bygge as an orange, he sayde that there was  
fownde pecces of goulde soo bygge in his countrey, beyng  
but halfe a dayes iourney from thense, and that they had no  
regarde to the gatheringe therof. Whereby we perceauē that  
they passe not muche for goulde in asmuch as it is goulde on-  
ly, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hathe  
fashioned it in any coomely fourme. For who doth greatly  
esteeme a wygh marble or vntwrought Iuerye. But if they be  
wrought with the cunninge hande of *Phidias* or *Praxiteles*, and  
shaped to the similitude of the fayre nymphes or fayeres of the  
Sea (cauled *Nereides*) or the fayres of the woods, (cauled *Hamadri-  
ades*) they shal neuer lacke byers. Besyde this owld man, there  
came also dyuers other, bynginge with them pypple stones of  
gold weighyng .v. or .xii. drammes: And feared not to confesse,  
that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were  
found sūryme stones of gold as bygge as the heade of a chyld  
When he had tarped heare a fewe dayes, he sent one *Luxanus*,  
a noble younge geptylman with a fewe armed men to searche  
all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported  
that thynhabitantes shewed him greater thinges thē we haue  
spoken of here befoze. But he dyd openly declare nothyng  
therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales com-  
maundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne spyes:  
but not suche as we commonly vse. These they gather euen  
as they do golde: that is as much as wyl serue for theyr pur-  
pose, euery man for hym selfe, to exchange the same with the  
inhabitantes of other countreys adioyninge to them, for such  
thinges as they lacke, as dyllshes, portes, schooles, and suche  
other necessaries. As *Luxanus* returned to the Admiral, (which  
was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes,  
certeyne wyld vines, tyepe and of pleasaunt taste, But thyn-  
habitans

Raynes and  
pypple stones  
of golde.

They passe  
not for golde,  
in that it is  
golde onely  
but .*cc.*

Stones of  
golde as byg  
as the heade  
of a chyld.

Spyes.

wylde vines  
of pleasaunt  
taste.

## The fyfth decade.

Fruitful mou-  
taynes

Golde in the  
sandcs of ry-  
uers faulnge  
from the mou-  
taynes.

Libertie and  
Fdelnes.  
The moun-  
taynes are  
coulede.

The Ilande  
of Cuba.

Least any o-  
ther pynce. ⁊c

Discencion  
berweene the  
Portugales  
and Spani-  
ardes.

The Ilandes  
of Cobouerde  
or Hyspertides

habitantes passe not on them. This Region though it bee full of stones and rockes (and is therfore cauled *Cibana*, which is as muche to saye as a stone) yet it is well replenyshed with trees and pastures. Ye they instantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the space of foure dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many showres of rayne doo faule in this Region, whercof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increase, in enery of the which, golde is founde myxte with sande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountaynes, by the vehement course of the streames which faule from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Fdelnes and playe. For suche as inhabyte the mountaynes, syt quakyng for coulede in the wynter season, & had rather soo wander bype and downe Fdely, then take the peines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of gossypine cotton. But such as dwel in the vales or plaines feele no coulede in wynter. When the Admirall had thus searched the beginninge of the region of *Cibana*, he repayred to *Isabella* (for so he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to search further the lymettes of the Ilande of *Cuba* or *Iobanna*, which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from *Hispaniola*. onely three scoze and ten myles. This dyd he with more speedy expedicion, caulpyng to remembraunce the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyyst with all celeritie to ouer runne the coastes of the newe Ilandes, leaste any other pynce shulde in the meane tyme attempte to inuade the same. For the kynge of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to discover these vnknown landes. But the byshop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the cause of this discention, graunted to the kynge of Spayne by thauctoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other pynce shulde bee so bouldc as to make any viages to any of those vnknown regions, lpyenge without the precinct of a directe lpyne drawe from the North to the South a hundzeth leagues westwarde without the paralelles of the Ilandes cauled *Capud Viride*. or *Cabouerde*, which we thynke to bee those that in owlde tyme were cauled *Hesperides*. These perteyne to the kynge of Portugale. And frome these, his pylottes whiche doo yearely searche newe coastes  
and

and regions, directe their course to the Easte, saylynge euer  
 towarde the lefte hande by the backe of Aphyrike and the seas  
 of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales  
 at any tyme sayled Southwarde, or Westwarde from the I-  
 landes of Cabouerde. Preparynge therfore thre shippes, he made  
 haste towarde the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba whyther he came  
 in shorte space, and named the poynt therof where he fyrst ar-  
 ryued, Alpha and O: that is, the fyrste and the laste: for he  
 supposed that there had byn thend of owre Easte bycause the  
 sonne fauleth there: And of the weste, bycause it ryseth there.  
 For it is apparente, that westwarde, it is the beginninge of  
 India beyonde the ryuer of Ganges: And Eastwarde, the fur-  
 thest ende of the same: which thinge is not contrary to reason  
 forasmuche as the Cosmographers haue left the lymites of  
 India beyonde Ganges vnderdetermined: where as also sume were  
 of opinion that India was not farre fro the coastes of Spaine  
 as we haue sayde before. Within the prospecte of the begyn-  
 nyng of Cuba, he founde a commodious haven in the extreme  
 angle of the Ilande of Hispaniola. For in this part, the Iland  
 receaueth a greate goulfe. This haven, he named saynt My-  
 colas porte, beinge scarcely .xx. leaques from Cuba. As he de-  
 parted from hence and sayled westwarde by the south syde of  
 Cuba, the further that he went, so muche the more the sea see-  
 med to bee extended in breadth & to bende towarde the south.  
 On the south syde of Cuba, he founde an Ilande which thir-  
 habitantes caule Iamaica. This he affirmeth to bee longer and  
 broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauyng in it only one moun-  
 tayne, which on euery parte begynninge from the sea, ryseth  
 by litle and litle into the myddest of the Ilande: And that  
 soo playnely without rowghnes, that luche as goo by to the  
 toppe of the same, can scarcely perceaue that they ascende.  
 This Ilande he affirmeth to bee very fruitfull and full of peo-  
 ple as well in thinner partes of the same as by the shore: And  
 that thirhabitantes are of quicker wytte then in the other I-  
 landes, and more experte artificers and warrelpyke men. For  
 in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came ar-  
 med agensst him and forbodde him with threathening wordes.  
 But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendship with  
 hym. Thus departynge from Iamaica, he sayled towarde the  
 Weste with a prosperous wynde for the space of threescore &  
 tenne dayes

The portus  
 gales Viages

Alpha and O

The ende of  
 the Easte and  
 west.

Note.  
 India not far  
 fro Spayne.

Saynt Mycolas  
 a porte.

The Iland of  
 Iamaica.

Iamaica.

Quicke wytted  
 people.

The compass  
 sence of the  
 earth.

## The fyrst decade.

**Aurea Cher-  
sonesus, or  
Malaccha.**

**A secreate of  
Astronomie.**

**The ryuer of  
Ganges.**

**Daungerous  
freightes by  
reason of ma-  
ny Ilandes.**

**The Admi-  
ral gaue na-  
mes to seven  
hundred the I-  
landes.  
thre thousand  
Ilandes.**

**A large haue**

**Rosted fysh  
and serpents  
of .viii. foote  
longe.**

tenne dayes: thinkinge that he had passed so farre by the com-  
 passe of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had byn nere  
 vnto *Aurea Chersonesus* (nowe cauled *Malaccha*;) in owre *Easte In-*  
*dia* beyonde the beginninge of *Perfides*. For he playnely bele-  
 ued that he had lefte onely two of the twelue howzes of the  
 soune, which were vnknowne to vs, for the owlde wyters  
 haue lefte halfe the course of the soune vntouchted, where as  
 they haue but onely discuffed that superficiall parte of the  
 earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of *Bades* and the ry-  
 uer of *Ganges*: or at the vttermoste, to *Aurea Chersonesus*. In  
 this navigation, he chaunced on many furious seas, running  
 with a faule as it had byn the streames of fluddes: Also many  
 whorlepooles, and shelles, with many other daungers, and  
 streyghtes by reason of the multyitude of Ilandes, which ley  
 on euery syde. But not regardinge all these percelles, he deter-  
 myned to proceade vntyl he had certayne knowledge whether  
*Cuba* were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he sayled forwarde  
 coastinge euer by the shore towarde the weste for the space of  
 CC. xxi. leaques, that is, abovte a thousande and thre hun-  
 dret h myles: And gaue names to seven hundred Ilandes by  
 the waye: Leauynge also on the lefte hande (as he feared not  
 to reporte) thre thousande here and thre. But let vs nowe  
 returne to suche thinges as he fownde worthy to be noted in  
 this navigation. Saylinge therfore by the syde of *Cuba*, and  
 searchinge the nature of the places, he espied not farre from  
*Alpha* and *O*, a large haue of capacitie to harborowe manye  
 shippes: whose enterance is bendinge, beinge inclosed on  
 bothe sydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water.  
 This haue is large within, and of exceadinge depthe. Say-  
 linge by the shore of this porte, he sawe not farre frome the  
 same, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places  
 spher kyndeled. Here he sente certeyne armed men owte of the  
 shippes to the cotages: where they fownde nother man nor  
 woman, but rostemeate enowgh. For they fownde certeyne  
 spyttes of woodde lyenge at the fyre, hauinge fysh on them  
 abovt a hundred pounde weight, and two serpentes of .viii.  
 foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokynge abovt  
 if they coulde espye any of thynhabitantes, and that none ap-  
 peared in syght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the  
 comminge of owre men) they fell to theyr meate, and ate the  
 fysh

fyfhe taken with other mens trauayle: But they absteyned frō  
 the serpentcs, which they affirme to differ nothynge from Cro  
 codiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Plinie* sayth)  
 Crocodiles haue sumetymes byn founde of. *xliiii.* cubettes  
 longe. But of these the byggest were but of. *viii.* fote. Thus be  
 ynge well refreshe, they entered into the next woodde where  
 they founde many of the same kynde of serpentcs hangynge  
 bypon bowghes of trees: of the which, some had theyr mou:  
 thes tyed with strynges, and some theyr teethe taken owtc.  
 And as they searched the places nere vnto the haueu, they  
 sawe aboute. *lxx.* men in the toppe of a hyghe rocke, whiche  
 fledde as soone as they had espied owtc men. Who by signes  
 and tokens of peace, caulinge them ageyne, there was one  
 which came nere them and stode on the toppe of a rocke, see:  
 mynge as thowgh he were yet ferefull. But the Admirall sent  
 one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the same countrey, whom he had  
 at his fyfthe byage taken in the Ilande of *Guanabani*, beinge  
 nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee a:  
 frayde. When he harde *Didacus* speke to him in his owne tonge  
 he came boldly to hym: and shortly after resorted to his co:  
 pany, persuadinge them to come without all feare. After this  
 message was doone, there descended frome the rockes to the  
 Shippes, about thre score and ten of thynhabitantes, pro:  
 feringe frendeshippe and gentelnes to owtc men: whiche the  
 Admirall acceptedd thankefully, and gaue them dyuers rewar:  
 des: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Di:  
 dacus* thenterpretoure, that they were the kynges fyfthers, sent  
 of theyr lordc to take fyfthe ageynst a solemne feaste which he  
 prepared for another kyngc. And wheras the Admirales men  
 had eaten the fyfthe whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were  
 the gladder therof, bycause they had lefte the serpentcs. For  
 there is nothynge amonge theyr delicate dyfthes, that they  
 esteeme so muche as these serpentcs: In soo muche that it is  
 no moze lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then  
 peacockes oz phefantes amonge vs. As for the fyfthes, they  
 doubted not to take as many moze the same upght. Weynge  
 asked why they fyrst rosted the fyfthe which they entended to  
 beate to their kyngc. They answered, that they might bee the  
 fresher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token  
 of further frendeship, every man resorted to his owne. The

Crocodiles of  
 Egypte.

*Didacus* thyn  
 terpretour.

The kynges  
 fyfthers.

Serpentes  
 esteemed for  
 delicate meat  
 Ophiophagi.

## The fyrst decade.

Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the  
 faulinge of the sonne from the beginninge of *Cuba* cauled *Al-*  
*pha* and *O*. The shores oz sea bankes euen unto this haucn, al-  
 beit they be ful of trees, yet are they rowgh with mountains.  
 Of these trees, some were ful of bloosdomes and flowres, and  
 other laden with frutes. Beyond the haue the lande is moze  
 fertile and populous, whose inhabitantes are moze gentyll  
 and moze desyrus of oovre thinges. For as sone as they had  
 espied oovre shippes, they stocked all to the shore, bynginge  
 with them suche breade as they are accustomed to eate, and  
 gourdes full of water, offeringe theym unto oovre men, and  
 further desyringe them to coome alande. In all these Ilandes  
 is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare  
 gourdes in the steade of frutes. These they vse only for drin-  
 kyng pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for  
 the inner substance of them, is sowzer then gaul, & the barke  
 as harde as any shelle. At the Ides of Maye, the watche men  
 lokinge oovre of the toppe castell of the shyppe towarde the  
 Southe, sawe a multitude of Ilandes standinge thicke togez-  
 ther, beyng all well replenished with trees, grasse, and her-  
 bes, and wel inhabyted. In the shore of the continent, he chaf-  
 ced into a nauigable ryuer whose water was soo hotte, that  
 no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tyme.  
 The day folowinge, espying a farre of a Canoa of fysher men  
 of thynhabitantes, fearinge least they shulde slye at the syght  
 of oovre men, he commaunded certeyne to assayle them pryvily  
 with the shyppe boates. But they fearinge nathing, taryed  
 the commyng of oovre men. Nowe shal you heare a newe kind  
 of fyshinge. Lyke as we with greyhoundes doo hunt hares,  
 in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a huntynge  
 fysh, take other fyshes. This fysh was of shape oz fourme  
 unknowen unto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnlyke a  
 greate yele: hauinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very  
 rowgh thynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge oz purse. This fysh  
 is tyed by the syde of the boare with a corde lette downe soo  
 farre into the water, that the fysh maye lye close hyd by the  
 keele oz bottome of the same, for thee may in no case abyde the  
 sight of the ayer. Thus when they espie any greate fysh, oz  
 tortoyse (wherof there is great abundance bygger then great  
 targettes) they let the corde at lengthe. But when the feeleth  
 her

Blossomes &  
 frutes bothe  
 at one tyme.

Trees which  
 beare gourds

A multitude  
 of Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A straunge  
 kynde of fysh-  
 syng,  
 A huntynge  
 fysh.

Abundance  
 of tortoyes.

her selfe loosed, shee enuadeth the fyllthe or tortoyse as swift-  
ly as an arrowe. And where she hath once fastened her hold  
shee casteth the purse of skynne wherof we spake before: And  
by drawyng the same togyther, soo graspeleth her pray, that  
no mans strength is sufficient to vnloose the same, excepte by  
lyttle and lyttle drawyng the lynce, shee bee lyfted sumwhat  
aboue the byrmye of the water. For then, as soone as she se-  
eth the brightnes of the ayer, shee letteth the god her holde.  
The praye therfoze, beinge nowe drawn nere to the byrmye  
of the water, there leapeyth soodenly owte of the boate into  
the sea soo manye fyllthers, as maye suffice to holde faste the  
praye, vntyll the reste of the coompany haue taken it into the  
boate. Which thinge doone, they loose soo muche of the cord,  
that the hunting fyllthe, may ageyne returne to her place with  
in the wáter: where by an other corde, they let downe to her  
a peece of the praye, as we vse to rewarde grephoundes after  
they haue kylled theyr game. This fyllthe, they caule *Gudicanii*,  
But owere men caule it *Reuersum*. They gaue owere men foure  
tortoyles taken by this meanes: And those of such byggenes  
that they almoste fylled theyr fyllthinge boate. For these fyll-  
thes are esteemed amonge them for delicate meate. Owere men  
recompensed them ageyne with other rewarde, and soo lette  
them departe. Beinge asked of the coompaite of that lande,  
they answered that it had no ende westwarde. Most instant-  
ly desyryng the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to  
sende one with thē to salute their *Caxicus*, (that is) their kinge:  
Affirmyng that he wolde gyue owere men many presentes, yf  
they wolde goo to hym. But the Admiral, leaste he shalde bee  
hyndered of the vyage which he had begunne, refused to goo  
with them. Then they desyred to knowe his name, and to wold  
owere men lykewyse the name of theyr kyng. Thus sayng on  
yet further euer toward the West, within fewe dayes he came  
nere vnto a certeyne exceeding high mountayne, wel inhabyted  
by reason of the great fertillite of the same. The inhabitants  
of this mountayne, brought to owere shippe, breade, gossam-  
pine cotton, cunnies, and sundry kyndes of wyldfowle: de-  
maundyng relygiously of thinterpretours, if this nation de-  
scended not from heauen. The kyng of this people, and dy-  
uers other sage men that stode by hym, informed hym that  
that lande was no Islande, Shortly after, enteringe into one

fyllther men.

The fyllthe  
Gudicanum.humaine peo-  
ple.A mountaine  
fruitefull and  
well inhaby-  
ted.

## The fyrst decade.

Dogges of  
strange shape  
and dumme.  
Duckes.  
hearons.

Streightes.

whyte and  
thicke water.

wooddes of  
date trees.

men appare-  
led like white  
fryers.

of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they  
fownde no body therein: for they Redde al at the commyng of  
owre men. yet fownde they there fowre dogges of maruelous  
deformed shape, and suche as coulde not barke. This kynd of  
dogges, they cate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of  
geete, duckes, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the  
contynente, he entered into soo narowe streyghtes, that he  
coulde scarcely turne backe the shippes: And these also so nar-  
rowe, that the keele of the shypes sumtyme rased on the sandes  
The water of these streyghtes, for the space of fortie myles,  
was white and thicke lyke unto mylke, and as thowgh mele  
had byn sparkeled through owre al that sea. And when they  
had at the lengthe escaped these streyghtes, and were nowe  
coome into a mayne and large sea, and had sayled thereon for  
the space of foure scoze myles, they espyed an other exceedinge  
hygh mountayne, whyther the Admirall resorted to stoze his  
shippes with freshe water and fuel. Heare amouge certeyn  
wooddes of date trees, and pyncable trees of exceedinge height  
he fownd two natieue sprynges of freshe water. In th: meane  
tyme whyle the woodde was cuttynge and the barrelles fyl-  
lyng, one of owre archers went into the wood to hunt: where  
he espyed a certeyne man with a whyte vesture, soo lyke a  
fryer of thorder of saynt Marye of *Mercedis*, that at the fyrste  
sight he supposed it had byn the Admiralles prestie which he  
brought with hym, beyng a man of the same order. But two  
other folowed hym immediatly owre of the same wooddes,  
shortly after, he sawe a farre of a hole company of men clo-  
thed in apparel, beinge abowte. xxx. in number. Then turning  
his backe and cryinge owre to his felowes, he made haste to  
the shippes with all that he myght dryue. These apparelled  
men, made signes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee  
afrayde. But that notwithstandinge, he ceased not to flye.  
The Admirall beinge aduertised hereof, and not a lyttle reioy-  
fyng that he had fownde a ciuile people, in continently sent  
forth armed men, with commaundement, that yf neede should  
soo requyre, they shulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande,  
untyl they myght fynde eyther those apparelled men, or other  
inhabitanes of that countrey. When they hadde passed ouer  
the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of grasse and  
herbes, in which appeared no token of any path: he way. Here  
attemptinge

attemptinge to goo throughe the grasse and herbes, they were soe entangled and bewrapte therein, that they were scarcely able to passe a myle, the grasse beinge there lyttle lower then owre rype corne. Beinge therfore weryed, they were enforced to retorne ageyne, syndyng no pathe way. The day folowing he sent forth .xxv. armed men an other way: Commanding them to make diligent searche and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had sownde not farre from the sea syde certeyne steppes of wyld beastes, of the which they suspected sum to bee of Lyons feete beinge stricken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came they sownde a woodde in the which were many natie vines here and there crepinge abovte highe trees, with many other trees bearinge aromaticall frutes and spyces. Of these vines they broughit with them into Spaine many clusters of grapes very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other frutes, they broughit none bycause they putrifid by the waye in the shippe, and were cast into the sea. They saye also that in the laundes or medowes of those wooddes, they sawe flockes of greate cranes twofle as bygge as owres. As he went forward and turned his sayles towarde certeyne other mountaynes, he espied two corages on the shore, in the whiche he sawe onely one man: who beinge broughit to the shippe, signified with heade, fyngers, and by al other signes, that he could deuse that the lande which lay beyonde those mountaynes, was very full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the shore of the same, there mette hym certeyne *Canoas* hauinge in them many people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of peace and frendeshyp. But here *Didacus* thinterpretour whiche vnderstode the language of th inhabitants of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderstode not them one whytte, wherby they confyred that in sundry prouinces of *Cuba*, were sundry languages. He had also intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region, was a kynge of greate power, and accustomed to weare apparel. He sayth that all the tracte of this shore, was drowned with water and full of mudde, besette with many trees, after the maner of owre maryshes. Yet wherreas in this place they wente alande for freshe water, they sownde many of the shel fyshes in the whiche pearles are gathered. But that could not cause the Admirall to tracte the tyme there, entendinge at this

grasse almost as bygge as corne.

Steppes of wyld beastes feete.

Natie vines

Trees bearinge spyces and sweete frutes.

Greate Cranes.

Dyers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in shel fyshes.

## The fyrst decade.

this biage, only to proue howe many landes & seas he coulde discover accordinge to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceeded forward, they sawe here and there al the waye alonge by the shore, a great smoke rysinge, vntyll they came to an other mountayne foure score myles distant. There was no rocke or hyll that coulde be scene, but the same was all of a smoke. But whether these fyres were made by th inhabitantes for their necessary busynes, or as we are wont to sette beacons on fyre when we suspecte thapproche of owre enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redines, and gather togyther if perhappes owre men shulde attempte any thinge ageynst them, or otherwyle as seemethe most lykely, to caule them togyther as to a wonder to behould owre shippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended sumertyme towarde the Southe, and sumertyme towarde the Weste and westesouthwest: And the sea was euery where entangeled with Ilandes: by reason whereof, the keeles of the shippes often tymes raised the sandes for halownes of the water: So that the shippes beinge very soze bzyled and appayred the sayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in maner rotten, and the byracles, (especially the byskette breade) corrupted by takynge water at the riftes euyl closed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laste poynte where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beinge knowen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangelista*. Thus turning his sayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the supposed continente, he chaunced into a mayne sea where was suche a multitude of greate tortoyles, that sumertyme they stayed the shippes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulfe of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we spake befoze. At the lenth fearing the shelles of the Ilands, he returned to the shore of *Cuba* by the same way which he came. Here a multitude of th inhabitantes, as well women as men, resorted to hym with cheerefull countenance and without feare: bringynge with them poppingayes breade, water, and cunnys: But especially stocke doves much bygger then doves: which he affirmeth, in sauour and taste, to bee muche moze pleasaunt then dove partryches. Wherfoze where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne sauoure of spyce to proceade from them, he commaunded the crowpe to bee opened of suche as were newly kylled, and fownde the same

The sea entangeled with Ilandes

Euangelista.

A multitude of great tortoyles  
A goufe of whyte water  
humaine people.

Stocke doves of more pleasaunt taste than partryches.

Came full of sweete spyes, whiche he argued to bee the cause of theyr strange taste. For it standeth with good reason, that the desire of beastes, shulde drawe the nature and qualite of theyr accustomed nuryment. As the Admirall harde masse on the shoze, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernour, a man of foure score yeates of age, and of great grauitie, although he were naked sauinge his pryue partes. He had a greate trayne of menne waytinge on hym. All the while the preeste was at masse, he shewed hym selfe verye humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenance. When the masse was ended, he presented to the Admirall, a baskette of the frutes of his countrey, deliueringe the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gently interteyned hym, desyringe leaue to speake, he made oration in the presence of *Didacus* thinterpreour, in this effecte. I haue byn aduertised (moste mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power subdued many landes and Regions hitherto unbeknowne to you: and haue brought no little feare vpon all the people and inhabitants of the same. The which your good fortune, you shal beare with lesse insolencie, if you remember that the soules of men haue two iourneys after they are departed from this bodye. The one soyle and darke, prepared for suche as are iniurious and cruell to man kynde: The other pleasaunt and delectable, ordeyned for the which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge your selfe to bee mortall, and consider that every man shall receaue condigne rewarde or punishment for such thinges as he hath done in this life, you wyl wrongfully hurte no man. When he had sayde these wordes and of ther lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by thinterpreour, he marceplinge at the iudgemente of the naked olde man, answered, that he was gladde to heare his opinion as touchinge the sundry iourneys and rewarde of soules departed from theyr bodyes: Supposinge that nother he, or any other of th inhabitants of those Regions, had had any knowledge thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cause of his comynge thither was to instructe them in such godly knowledge and trewe religion: And that he was sente into those countreys by the Christian kynge of Spayne (his lord and maister) for the same purpose: And specially to subdue and

The humantie of a reuerende owlde gouernour.

An oration of the naked gouernour.

Theyr opynion of the soul of man.

Desyre of golde founde that which religion coulde not synde. *Virtus post numerum.*

## The fyrst decade.

puniſhe the Canibales and ſuch other miſcheuous people: And to defende innocentes ageynſt the violence of ſuch euyl doers wyllynge hym and all other ſuch as embraced vertue, in no caſe to bee afrayde: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if cyther he, or any other ſuche quiete men as he was, hadde ſuſceyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold ſee the ſame reuenged. Theſe comfortable wordes of the Admirall ſoo pleaſed the owlde man, that notwithstanding his extreme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admirall as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chyl dren had not hyndered hym of his purpoſe. But he marueyled not a lytle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when thinterpretour tolde hym of the glozpe, magnificence, pompes, greate power, and furnymentes of warre of oware kyngeſ, and of the multitudes of cities and towneſ which were vnder theyr dominions. Intendynge theſe foze to haue gonne with the Admirall, his wyfe and children fell proſtrate at his feete, with teares deſpyngge hym not to forſake them and leaue them deſolate. At whoſe pyrifull requieſtes, the worthy owlde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and familye, ſatiffyenge rather them then hym ſelfe. For not yet cealyng to wonder, and of heauy countenaunce bccaule he myght not departe, he demaunded oftentimes if that lande were not heauen, which brought forth ſuche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the ſonne and water: And that Wyne and Whyue (the ſeedes of all myſcheyffe) haue no place with them: They are contente with ſod lytle, that in ſoo large a countrey, they haue rather ſuperfluitie the ſcarſenes. Soo that (as we haue ſayde befoze) they ſeeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuinge in open gardenſ, not intrenched with dykes, dpyuded with hedgſ, or defended with waules. They deale cruelly one with another, without lawes, without bookes, and without Judges. They take hym for an euyl and miſchereous man, which rather pleaſure in doinge hurt to other. And albeit that they deſyte not in ſuperfluitieſ, yet make they prouiſion for thincreaſe of ſuche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as *Mizium*, *Iuca*, and *Ages*, contented with ſuche ſimple dyet, wherby health is preſerued, and dyſeaſes auoyded, The Admirall therefore

The Glandas  
common as  
the ſunne and  
water.

The golden  
worlde.

Prouiſio with  
out care.

Simple diete

plyng

therfore departinge from thence, and myndinge to returne ageyne shortly after, chanced to come ageyne to the Ilande of *Jamaica* beinge on the southe syde thereof: and coasted all a longe by the shore of the same, from the Weste to the Easte. From whose last corner on the East syde, when he sawe towarde the North on his lefte hande, certeyn high mountains he knewe at the length that it was the southe syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which he had not yet passed by. Wherefore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the haven of the same Ilande, cauled saynt *Nicolas* haven, he repayred his shippes to thirtent that he myght ageyne wast and spoyle the Ilandes of the *Tanibales*, and burne all theyr Canoas, that those raueninge wolues myght no longer persecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe. But he was at this tyme hyndered of his purpose by reason of a dyscase which he had gotten with to muche watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the mayners to the cite of *Isabella*, where, with his two bytherne which were there, & other his familiers, he recouered his health in shortly space. yet coulde he not at this tyme assaile the *Tanibales*, by reason of sedicion that was risen of late amonge the *Spanyarden* which he had left in *Hispaniola*, wherof we wyll speake moze hereafter. Thus saue ye wel.

The fourth booke of the fyrst Decade to  
Lodowike Cardinall of Aragonie.



*Colonus* the Admirall of the Ocean, returninge (as he supposed) from the continent or firme lande of East India, had aduertisement that his brother *Boilus* & one *Peter Margarita*, an old familiar of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernemēt of the Ilande, were of corrupted myndes agaynst him, departed into Spayne. Wherefore as wel to purge him of such crimes as they shuld ley to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, & especially to prouyde for vitayles, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and such other which the *Spanyarden* are accustomed to eat, because they coulde not yet well agree with such meates as they founde in the Ilandes, determined short

E.ii.

ly to

The Ilande of  
*Jamaica*.*Hispaniola*.The *Tanibales*.Sickenes of  
to much watchinge.

East India.

The *Spanyarden*  
rebelles  
in the Admirals  
absence.

The fyrst decade.

ly to take his hyage into Spayne. But what he dyd befoze his departure, I wyll brefely rehearse.

The kynge  
of the Ilande  
rebell.

The Spani-  
ardes misde-  
favour.

Guarionerius  
the kynge of  
the great vale  
Didacus the  
interpretour.

Caunaboa,  
the kynge of  
the howle of  
goide.

Capitayne ho-  
leda.

The kynge of the Ilandes which had hitherto lpyed quiet-ly and content with theyr lytle whiche they thowght abundante, wheras they nowe perceaued that oovre men began to fasten foote within theyr Regions and to beare rule amonge them, tooke the matter so greuously, that they thowght no-thinge elles but by what meanes they myght vtterly destroy them, and for euer abolyfhe the memory of theyr name. For that kynde of men (the Spanyarde I meane which folowd the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the most parte vn-ruely, regardynge nothinge but Idleness, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes absteyne from iniuries: Raupthynge the womē of the Ilandes befoze the faces of their husbendes fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhomyable mysde maynour, they disquieted the myndes of all thynhabitantes: In so much that where so euer they founde any of oovre men vnprepared, they slew them with suche spercenes and glad-nes, as thowgh they had offered sacryfyce to God. Inten-dynge therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to pu-nyfhe them that slew his men befoze he departed from thense, he sent for the kynge of that vale, which in the booke befoze, we descrybed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Re-gion of *Cibana*. This kynge's name was *Guarionerius*: who, the more streyghly to conceple vnto hym the frendeshyppe of the Admirall, gaue his syster to wyf to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age browght vp with the Admirall, whom he vsed for his interpretour in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he sent for *Caunaboa*, cauled the lorde of the howle of goilde: that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibana*. For this *Caunaboa*, he sent one ca-pitayne *Hoieda*, whom the ditionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his howlde bysiegeinge for the space of. xxx. dayes, the fortreffe of saynte Thomas, in the which *Hoieda* with his sptie souldiers, stode at theyr defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, ma-ny ambailadours of the kynge of dyuers Regions were sene to *Caunaboa*, persuadinge hym in no condiction to permitte the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather serue then rule. On the other partie, *Hoieda* aduertised *Caunaboa* to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendeshyp with hym.

hym. But the ambassadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde soo doo, the other kynges wolde invade his Region. But *Hoinda* answered theym ageyne, that wheras they conspired to maynteyne their libertie, they shuld by that meanes be brought to seruitude & destruction if they intended to resist or keepe warre ageins the Christians. Thus *Caunabos* on the one syde and the other, beinge troublede as it were a rocke in the sea, beaten with contrary fluddes, & much more vexed with the stormes of his gyltie conscience for that he had prouide slaine .xx. of othere men vnder pretence of peace feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing recogitated this deceyte, to haue slayne the Admirall and his company vnder the colour of frendshipp if oportunitie wold soo haue seruede, he repayed to the Admirall with his hole familie and many other wayring on hym, armed after theyr manner. Beinge demaunded why he brought soo greate a rout of men with hym, he answered that it was not decenre for soo great a prince as he was, to goo soorth of his howse withoute suche a bande of men. But the thinge chaunced much otherwyse then he looked for. For he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repent hym that he came soorth of his howse, *Hoinda* with many fayre wordes and promyses, brought hym to the Admirall: At whose commaundement, he was immediatly taken & put in prison: So that the sowles of othere men were not longe from their bodies vnreruenged. Thus *Caunabos* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determind to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was such famine amonge the inhabitants, that there was alcedye syftie thousande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotten sheepe: The cause wherof was wel knowen to bee theyr owne obstinacie and forwardnes. For wher as they sawe that othere men intended to choose them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposinge that they myght haue driven them from thence if the bytailes of the Ilande shoulde fayle, they determynd with them selues, not only to leaue sowing and plantyng, but also to destroy and plucke by the rootes euery man in his owne region, that whiche they had alcedye sowen of both kyndes of beade wherof we made mencion in the fyrst booke. But especially amonge the mountaynes of

kynge Caunabos had slaine the Spanyardes.

Caunabos espyeth the Admiralles death.

Fayre wordes make fooles fayre.

Famine in the Ilande of Hispaniola.

The hunger of golde. caya sceth greas famine.

## The fyft decade.

*Cibaua*, otherwoyse cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knoweledge that the golde which aboundeth in that Region, was the cheefe cause that deteyned owre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he sent forth a Capitayne with a bande of men to searche the lowthe syde of the Ilande. Who at his returne, reported that throughte out all the Regions that he trauallyed, there was suche scarcenes of breade, that for the space of .xvi. dayes he ate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the fruites of other wyldre trees. But *Guarionexius*, the kynge of the vale lyinge beneth the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose kyngedome was not soo walled as the other, gaue owre menne certeyne bytayles.

The towre of  
conception.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe that the iourneys myght bee the shorter, and also that owre men myght haue moze safe places of refuge, if the inhabitantes shuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buyldeed an other fortesse (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the citie of *Isabella* and saint *Thomas* fortesse, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the syde of *Ahyll*, hauynge a fayre ryuer of holosome water runnyng hard by the same. Thus when the inhabitantes sawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and owre shippes lyinge in the harbor rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to despayre of any hope of libertie, & wandered by and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, searchyng diligentely the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeyne kyng whiche gaue them a masse of rude golde, as bygge as a mans fyft, weighing .xx. vnces. This golde was not founde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the stone cauled *Tofus*, whiche is soone resolued into lande. This masse of golde, I my selfe sawe in *Casstile*, in the famous citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the court lay all that wynter. I sawe also a great peece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many such other vessels and instrumentes maye bee made, as were in olde tyme of copper of the citie of *Corinthus*. This peece of *Electrum*, was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lifte it from the grounde, but also not of strengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They asseymed that it wayde moze then thre hundred weight

A masse of  
gold weigh-  
inge .xx. oun-  
ces.  
*Tofus*.

*Electrum* is a  
metall natu-  
rally mixt of  
one portion  
of golde & an  
other of siluer  
beinge of pro-  
perties to be-

weight, after. viii. buces to the poloude. It was foloude in the howle of a certen prynce, and lefte hym by his predeceffours. And albeit that in the dayes of thynhabitantes yet lyinge, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owze men with muche adoo, coulde hardely caufe them to shewe them the place, they boze them suche pryue harred. yet at the length, they brawght theym to the myne, beyng nowe ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbifste. It is muche easier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee restozed agein, if myners and other woodke-men skylfull therein, were appoynted therto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is foloude great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the same distilleth a substance of the yelowe coloure whiche the paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many greates wooddes, in the which are none other trees then brasile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yowre wolde aske what shoulde be the cause, that where as the Spanyarde haue brought owte of these Ilandes certen shippes laden with brasile, sumwhat of gossam: pine cotton, a quantitie of amber, a lyttel golde, and sum spices, why they haue not broughite suche plentie of golde and suche other ryche marchaundies as the fruitfulnessse of these regions seeme to promise. To this I answere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewise demaunded the cause hereof, he made answere that the Spanyarde whiche he tooke with hym into these regions, were gyuen rather to slepe, pley, and ydlenesse, then to labour: And were more studious of sedition and newes, then desyrous of peace and quietnesse: Also that beyng gyuen to lycenciousnes, they rebelled & forlooke hym, fyndyng matter of false accusations agaynst hym, by cause he went aboute to repress their outragioulenes. By reason wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabytantes, and freely to possesse the full dominion of the Ilande. And these hynderaunces to be the cause that hit herto the gaynes haue scarcely counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wypte these thynges at owze requeste, they gathered in twoo moonethes the summe of a thousande and twoo hundred poundes weight of golde. But because we intende to speake more largely of these thynges in theyr

way payson, and was therfore in owld tyme in greater estimation then golde.

The myne of *Electrum*.

An other kynde of amber is taken out of greates whale fishes Opement or oker.

wooddes of brasile trees.

Causes of hinderance.

Lycenciousnes of the bertie

And this only gathered & not digged out of the bowdi of the mine

## The fyrst decade.

The people  
make supplic-  
ation to stand  
to their tribu-  
te

Famine,

The nature  
of the Region  
disposeth the  
maner of the  
people.

kyng Cana-  
boa in capti-  
uic.

The persuasi-  
on of Cana-  
boa.

In theyr place, we wyll nowe retourne from whense we haue digressed. When the inhabitantes perceaued that they could by no meanes shake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble supplication to the Admirall that they myght stande to theyr tribute, and apply them selues to reincreafe the frutes of theyr countrey, beinge nowe almoste wasted. He graunted them theyr requeste: and appoynted such order that euery Region shulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreys, accordinge to theyr portion, and at suche tyme as they were agreed vppon. But the violent famine dyd frustrate all these appoyntmentes. For all the trauayles of theyr bozdyes, were scarcely able to suffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to susteyne theyr lyues, beinge of longe tyme contented with rootes and the frutes of wylde trees. Yet manye of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessitie, brought parte of theyr tribute: whiche humbly desyryng the Admirall to haue compassion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyll the Island were restored to the owlde state. Whompyng further, that that which was nowe wantinge, shulde then bee dowble recompensed. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaynes of *Cibaut*, kepte theyr promyse, because they were sozer oppressed with famine then any of the other. They saye, that the inhabitantes of these mountaynes, differ no lesse in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, then amonge vs, the rusticalles of the countrey from gentylmen of the courte: whereas notwithstandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many thinges, much after one fashon, as in nakednes, and rude simplicitie. But nowe lette vs retourne to *Canaboa*, the kyng of the howse of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him selfe to be caste in pryson, frettinge and gratinge his teethe as it had bin a lyon of *Libia*, and dayely and nightely deuyng with hym selfe howe he myght bee delpuered, beganne to persuaue the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Regis of *Cipanga* or *Cibaut* (wherof he was king) it shulde bee expedient to sende thither a garryson of Christian men, to defende the same from the incursions of his owld enemyes and bozderers. For he sayde, that it was signified vnto hym, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with  
such

suche incursions. By this crafty deuise, he thought to haue brought to passe, that his brother whiche was in that region, and the other his kynsefolkes and frendes with their adherentes, shoulde haue taken, eyther by slepyghte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemed hym. But the Admirall vnderstandynge his crafty meanyng, sente <sup>Hoieda</sup> with suche a company of men, as might vanquish the Cibauians, if they shulde moue warre ageynste them. Owre men had scarcely entered into the Region, but the brother of <sup>Cambos</sup> *Cambos* came agenste them with an armie of fyue thousande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and speares made harde at the endes with fyre. He stole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howses: and encamped rounde about the same on euery syde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignozant in the disciplyne of warre, arbowre the distaunce of a furlonge from the howse, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to euery of them a circuite by equal diuision: And placed the froont of his owne batayle, directlye ageynst owre men. When he had thus set his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne signes that the hole army shulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a lawme freshly assaile theyr enemies, in such sort that none might escape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onfet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycause that place was most commodious for the horsmen. When the horsmen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrowe them with the brestes of theyr horses, and slewe as many as abode thynde of the fyght. The residue beinge stryken with feare, disparcelled, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whense they made a pytifull houlynge to owre men, desyryng them to spare them: protestinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what so euer they wolde commaunde them, if they wolde suffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of <sup>Cambos</sup> *Cambos* beinge taken, the Admirall licenced the people to resorte euery man to his owne. These thinges thus fortunately achieved this Region was pacified. Amonge those mountaynes, the vale which <sup>Cambos</sup> *Cambos* inhabited, is cauled *Magonis* and is exceedinge fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly springes: and ry-

*Cambos*  
his brother  
rebellet.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spanyardes.

The Cibauians haue the ouerthrowe.

## The fyrst decade.

A great tem-  
pest in the mo-  
neth of June.

Three ships  
drowned by  
ynge at anker

Whyrle wyndes.  
Furacanes.

The death of  
kyng Caunabo  
and his  
brother.

Bartholomeus  
Colonus the  
leanerenaunt  
searcheth the  
golde mines.

uers, in the lande wherof, is founde great plentie of golde.  
The same yeare in the mooneth of June, they sawe there rose  
suche a boyfious tempeste of wynde from the southeaste, as  
hath not lyghly ben harde of: The violence hereof was such  
that it plucked hye by the rootes what so euer greete trees  
were within the reache of the force thereof. When this whirle  
wynde came to the haven of the citie, it beate downe to the  
bottome of the sea, three shippes which lay at anker, & broke  
the cables in sundrie: and that (which is the greater marvail)  
without any storme or rowghnes of the sea, onely turnynge  
them three or foure tymes abowte. The inhabitantes also af-  
firmie, that the same yeare, the sea extended it selfe further in  
to the lande, and rose higher then euer it dyd before by the  
memozy of man, by the space of a cubet. The people therefore,  
muttered amonge them selues, that owre nation hadde trow-  
bled the elementes, and caused such portentous signes. These  
tempestes of the ayre (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that  
is, whyrle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they say, doo  
often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they  
noz they great grandfathers euer sawe suche violent and fur-  
rious *Furacanes*, that plucked hye greete trees by the rootes:  
Neyther yete suche surges and vehement motions on the sea,  
that soo wasted the lande. As in deede it may appeare, for as  
much as, where so euer the sea bankes are nere to any plaine  
there are in maner euery where, flourishing medowes reachinge  
euen vnto the shore. But nowe let vs returne to *Caunabo*. As  
kyng *Caunabo* therefore and his brother shoulde haue binne  
brought into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for verpe pen-  
syuenes and anguythe of mynde. The Admiral, whose shippes  
were drowned in the forsayde tempeste, perceauinge him selfe  
to bee nowe enclosed, commaunded forthwith two other ship-  
pes (which the Spaniardes caule *Carauelas*) to bee made. For  
he had with hym, all maner of artificers perteyninge therun-  
to. Whyle these thinges were dooinge, he sent forth *Bartholo-  
meus Colonus* his brother, beinge leauietenaunt of the Ilande,  
with an army of men to searche the golde mines beinge dy-  
stant three score leaques from the citie of *Isabella*, which were  
founde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, bee-  
fore the mines of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua*, were knowne. In these  
mines, they founde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn dig-  
ged

ged in owlde tyme, owte of these pyttes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hispaniola* to bee *Ophir*, as we haue sayde befoze) supposeth that *Salomon* the kynge of *Hierusalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde testament: And that his shippes sayled to this *Ophir* by the goulfe of *Persia* cauled *Sinus Persicus*. But whether it bee soo or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farte of. As the myners dygged the superficiall or vppermost parte of the earthe of the mynes, durynge for the space of .vi. miles, and in dyuers places slyted the same on the dnye lande, they fownde such plentie of golde, that euery hyed labourer could safely fynde euery day, the weyght of thre drammes. These mynes beinge thus searched and fownde, the Licuenaunte certifyed the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the .v. dape of the *Jdes* of *Marche*. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe shippes, and tooke his viage directly to *Spayne* to aduertise the kynge of all his assayes, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Licuenaunte,

The golde mynes of *Salomon*.

Solde in the superficiall partes of the earth.

The Admirall taketh his viage to *spaine*

The fyfte booke of the fyrst decade, to  
Lodouike Cardinall of *Aragonie*.



After the Admiralles departyng into *Spain* his Brother the Licuenaunte, buylded a fortreffe in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, because the labourers fownde golde in the earth and stone wherof they made the waules of the fortreffe. He consumed thre monethes in makynge the instrumentes wherwith the golde shulde bee gathered, washed, cryed, and molten. yet was he at this tyme by reason of wante of vitayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo seeke for meate. Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered thre score myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there resoptyng to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theyr breade in exchange for other of owre thynges. But he coude not long tary here, because they lacked meate in the fortreffe. wherther he hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leauyng  
F.ii. therfore

The golden towre.

Lacke of vyllytaylor.

## The fyrst decade.

huntinge  
houndes.

kyngs want-  
cauteries.

Vytayles  
brought fro  
Spayne.

Saynt Domi-  
nikes towre.

Groues of  
date trees.

Isabella.

therfore in the fortreffe a garryson of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leaupnge also with them a hownde to take those kyndes of lyttle beastes which they caule *Vitis*, not muche vnlpyke owre conyes, he returned to the fortreffe of Conception. This also, was the moonthe wherin the kyngs *Guzionexius*, and also *Mamicautexius*, barytherer vnto hym, shulde haue brought in theyr tributes. Remaynyng there the hole moonthe of June, he erased the hole tribute of these twoo kynges, and vytayles necessary for hym and suche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowte foure hundreth in number. Shortely after, abowte the calendes of Iulye, there came thre Caraucles from Spayne, bringyng with them sundry kyndes of vitayles, as wheate, ople wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beafe: whiche were dyuyded to euery man accordyng as neede required. Sum also was lost in the cariage for lacke of good lookyng too. At the arryual of these thypes, the lieutenant receaued commandment from the kyng and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men shulde renoue theyr habitation to the south syde of the Ilande, bycause it was nerer to the golde mynes: Also that he shoulde make diligent searche for those kynges whiche had slayne the Chyistian men, and to sende them with theyr confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nerte vyage therfore, he sent thre hundred captiues with thre kynges: And when he had diligently searched the coastes of the south syde, he transported his habitation, and buylde a fortreffe there, vpon the topp of a hyll, neere vnto a shure haueu. This fortreffe, he cauled saynt Dominikes towre. Vnto this haueu, runneth A ryuer of holosome water, replenyshed with sundrye kyndes of good fyshes. They asyryme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature, for, where so euer it runneth all thynges are excedyng pleasaunte and fruitfull: haupng on euery syde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes so plentyfully, that as they sayled alonge by the shore, often tymes the branches thereof laden with rowres & frutes, hunge soo ouer theyr heades, that they mighte plucke them with theyr handes. Also that the frutesfulnes of this grovnde, is epyther equall with the soyle of Isabella, or better. In *Isabella*, he left only certeyne sicke men and shippe wyghres, whom he had appoynted to make certeyne carauels

The

The residue of his men, he conueighed to the south, to saint Dominiches towne. After he had buylded this fortreffe, lea- uinge therein a garrison of .xx. men, he with the remanent of his souldiers, prepared them selues to searche the inner par- tes of the Weste syde of the Ilande, hitherto knowne onely by name. Therfore abowte .xxx. leagues, (that is) foure score and tenne myles from the fortreffe, he chaunced on the ryuer Naiba, whiche we sayde to descende from the mountaynes of Cibaua, ryght towarde the south, by the myddest of the Iland. When he had ouerpassest this ryuer with a companye of ar- med men diuided into .xxv. decursions, that is, tenne in a com- pany with theyr capitaynes, he sent two decursions to the re- gions of those kinges in whose laudes were the great woods of braile trees. Inclyninge towarde the left hande, they fownde the wooddes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, whiche were to that day, vntouched. & he of the decursions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howles with the trunks of braile, there to be reserued vntyll the shippes came which shulde cary them away. But the Lieutenannt di- rectinge his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of Naiba, fownde a certeyne kynge whose name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped ageynst thynha- bitantes of the prouince of Naiba, to subdue them vnder his do- minion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, boztherers vnto hym: The palaice of this great kynge, is cau- led *Xaragua*: and is situate towarde the Weste ende of the I- lande, distants from the ryuer of Naiba. .xxx. leagues. All the prynces whiche dwell betwene the Weste ende and his palaice, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from Naiba, to the furthest marches of the weste, is vterly withoute golde, al- though it bee full of mountaynes. When the kynge had espie- ed owte men, layinge a parte his weapons, & gyuinge signes of peace, he spake gentelly to them, in certeyne whether it were of humanitie or feare, and demaunded of the what they wolde haue. The Lieutenante answered: That he shulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian kynge of Spayne. To whom he sayde: Howe can youe requyre that of me, wherreas neuer a Region vnder my dominion bringeth forth golde. For he had harde, that there was a strange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made

The ryuer of Naiba.

wooddes of braile trees.

kinge Beuchius Anacauchoa.

The palaice of Xaragua.

mountaynes without gold

Tribute.

## The fyrst decade.

greate searche for golde. But he supposed that they desired none other thyng. The leauctenaunt answered ageyne: God forbiddeth that we shulde enioyne any man to pay such tribute as he myght not easely forbear, or such as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we vnderstand that your Regions byynge forth great plentie of Gossampine cotton, and hempe, with suche other, whereof we desyre yowe to gyue vs parte. When he harde these woordes, he prompled with cherefull countenaunce, to gyue hym as muche of these thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus dismissing his army, & sendinge messengers beefore, he hym selfe accompanied the Leauetenaunt and brought hym to his palaice, beinge distant (as we haue sayde). xxx. leagues. In al this tracte, they passed through the Jurisdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, some gaue them hempe, of no lesse goodnes to make tackelinges for Shippes then oore woodde. Other some, brought breade, and sum gossampyne cotton: And soo euery of them payde tribute with suche commodities as they countreys brought forth. At the lengthe they came to the kynges mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palaice, A greate multitude of the kynges seruantes and subiectes resorted to the courte, honorably (after their maner) to receaue their kyng *Beuchius Anacauchos*, with the strangers which he brought with hym to se the magnificence of his courte. But nowe shall yowe heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and syghtes, two are especially to bee noted. Fyrste there mette them a company of xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, singinge and dauncinge: They were all naked, saynge that theyr pryue partes were couered with breeches of gossampine cotton. But the virgins, hauynge theyr heare hangynge downe abowte their shulders, tyed abowte the forcheade with a fyllet, were vterly naked. They affirme that theyr faces, brestes, pappes handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were excedynge smoothe, and well proportioned: but somewhat inclyning to a louely browne. They supposed that they had seene those most beautifull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites speake so muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes w<sup>h</sup>e they

The wolfe  
entreateth.  
the sheepe.

hempe and  
gossampine  
cotton.

howe the  
Lieutenant  
was recea-  
ued at the  
kynges pa-  
laice.

The kynges  
wyues.

well fauered  
women.

*Dryades*.

they daunced, they delyuered to the Leauenenant with lowe curtesy and smyllynge countenance. Thus enteringe into the kynges howse, they solowde a delycate supper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refecthed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were broughyt by the kynges officers, euery man to his lodgyng, accordyng to his degree, in certeyne of theyr howses abowte the palaice, where they rested them in hangynge beddes after the maner of the cuntrye, wherof we haue spoken moze largely in another place.

**T**he daye folowynge they broughyt owtre men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue said before. Here, after many daunsynges, synginges, maskinges runnynges, wreatynges, and other tryng of mastres, soodenly there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armies of men of warre, whiche the kyng for his pastyme had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniardes vse the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Iuga de Canarias*. As the armies drew neere together, they assayled the one the other as fiercely, as if mortal enemies with theyr baners spicade, shulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr cuntrye, theyr wyues and theyr chyldren.

Soe that within the momente of an howre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue contynued longer, if the kyng had not at the request of owtre men, caused them to cease. The thyrde day, the Lienetenant conselynge the kyng to sowe moze plentie of gossampine vpon the bankes nere vnto the waters syde, that they myghte the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordyng to the multitude of theyr howses, he repayed to *Isabella* to vspite the sicke men whiche he had lefte there, and also to see howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his absence. xxx. of his men were consumed with diuersc diseases. Wherfore beinge soze troubled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he wozre best to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thynges necessarie as well to restore them to health whiche were yet accased, as also vitayles to mayntaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no shippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determyned to sende abzode the sicke men

A delycate supper.

hangynge beddes.

A common haule.

A prette pastyme.

foure men slayne in spore

provision for diseased men

## The fyrst decade.

The castels  
or towres of  
hispaniola.

The golden  
mountaynes  
of Cibaua.

Bonaum

Tribute.

The kynge  
rebelle.

Guarionexius  
capitane of  
the confira-  
cie.

An army of  
two thousande  
Barbarians.

here and there to sundrye Regions of the Ilande, and to the castelles which they had erected in the same. for directly from the cite of Isabella to saynt Dominikes towre, that is, from the north to the south, throught the Iland, they had buylded thus many castelles. *Spz. de. xxxvi. myles distante from Isabella,* they buylded the castell of *Sperantia.* from *Sperantia. xxv. myles,* was the castell of saynte Catharine. from saynte Catharines. *xx. myles,* was saynt James towre. Other. *xx. miles* from saynt James towre, was A stronger fortresse then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the stronger bicause it was situate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibaua, in the greate and large playne soo fruitefull and well inhabited as we haue before described. He buylded also another in the myde waye betwene the towre of Conception & saynt Dominikes towre. The which also was stronger then the towre of Conception, bycause it was within the lymittes of A great kynge, hauing vnder his dominion fine thousande men: whose chiefe Cite and heade of the Realme, beyng cauled *Bonaum,* he wylled that the castell shulde also bee cauled after the same name. Therfore leauynge the sicke men in these castels and other of the Ilande howses nere vnto the same, he hym selfe repayred to saynte Dominikes, exactinge tributes of all the kyngeges whiche were in his waye. When he had tarped there A fewe dayes, there was a rumor spredde, that all the kyngeges abowte the borders of the towre of Conception, had conspyred with desperate myndes to rebell agensse the Spaniardes. When the Lieutenante was certified hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng discouraged either by the lengthe of the waye, or feeblenesse of his souldyers, beyng in maner forweried with trauayle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertisement that kynge *Guarionexius* was chosen by the other pynces to bee the Capitayne of this rebellidn: And that he was enforced therto halfe vntwilling, beyng seduced by theyr perswasions and prouocations. The whiche is moze lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had experience of the powder and policie of othere men. They came together at a daye appoynted, accompanied with. *xv. thousande* men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre, Here the Lieutenante consultynge with the

the Capitayne of the fortreffe and the other souldiers of whō he had the conducte, determyned to sette vpon them vnwares in their owne howles before they coulde prepare theyr army. He sent forth the therfore to every kynge, a Centurion, that is, a capitaine of a hundred, which were commaunded vpon a sudden to inuade theyr howles in the night, and to take thē sleeping, before the people (beinge scattered here and there) might assemble to gyther. Thus secretly enteringe into their bylages, not fortrified with waules, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broke in vpon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away every man his prisoner according as they were commaunded. The Licutenant hym selfe with his hundred men, as sayed kynge *Guarionexius* as the woorthier personage, whom he tooke prisoner as dyd the other capitaynes theyr kynges, & at the same howre appoynted. Foureteene of theym were brought the same nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death twō of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of this newe reuolte, and had suborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the same: least the people for sorowe of theyr kynges shulde neglecte or forsake their countrey, which thinge myght haue byn greate incommodie to othere men, who by thincrase of theyr scedes and frutes were ostentymes ayded, he freely pardoned and dismissed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togyther abowte the towre, to the nūber of fyue thousande withoute weapons, with pytiful howling for the deliuerance of theyr kynges: The ayer thundered, & the earth trembeled through the vehemencie of theyr outcrye. The Licutenant warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynges, with rewardes, and with promyses, neuer hereafter to attempte any suche thyng. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the great powre of othere mē, of theyr clemencie towarde offenders, and liberalitie to suche as remaine faithfull: desyringe them to quiet theyr myndes: and from henseforth nother in deede noz thought to interpyse any thyng ageynst the Christians, but to obeye & serue them, excepte they wolde dayly bringe them selues into further calamities. When the oration was synysed, they tooke hym vp and set hym on theyr sholders, and soo carped hym home to his owne palaice. And by this meanes, this Region

The kynges  
are taken pri  
soners.

kyng *Guarionexius*  
is  
pardoned.

## The fyrst decade.

Lacke of Vy-  
sayles.

Beuchius A-  
nacauchoa,  
the kynge of  
Xaragua.

Queene Ana-  
caona, the  
wife of kynge  
Caunaboa.

xxii. kynges.

Serpentes  
eaten.

was pacified for a whyle. But oovre men, with heauy coun-  
tenaunce wandered vpp and downe, as desolate in a strange  
country, lacking vntayles, and woorne oovte of apparell,  
wheras. xv. moonethes were now passed sence the Admirals  
departure: duringe which tyme, they coulde heare nothyng  
oovte of Spayne. The Lieutenannt comforted them all that  
he coulde with fayre wordes and promyses. In the meane  
tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa* (the kynge of the Weste partes of the  
Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we spake befoze) sence messen-  
gers to the Lieutenannt to signifye vnto hym, that he hadde  
in a redynes the gossampine cotton and suche other thyn-  
ges as he wylled hym to prepare for the payment of his try-  
bute. Wherbyppon the Lieutenannt tooke his tozney thither,  
and was honorably receaved of the kynge and his syster, sū-  
tyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kynge of *Cibua*, beaving no leffe  
rule in the governaunce of her brothers kyngedome, then he  
hym selfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyfe woman, of good  
maners, and pleasaunt in company. Shee earnestly perswaded  
her brother by the example of her husbände, to loue and obeye  
the Christians. This woman was cauled *Anacanoa*. He sowlde  
in the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, xxii. kynges which hadde  
brought theyr tributes with them, and abode his comynge.  
They brought with them also besyde theyr trybute a signed  
them, further to demerite the fauour of oovre men, great plen-  
tie of vntayles: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnys, and fyl-  
thes, alreedy dyed bycause they shulde not putrifie: Serpen-  
tes also of that kynd which wee sayd to bee esteemed amonge  
them as most delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles sauing  
in byggenes. These serpentes they caule *Iuanas*, which oovre  
men learned sumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the  
Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durste adventure to  
taste of them by reason of theyr horrible deformitie and lothe-  
sumnes. Yet the Lieutenannt beinge entysed by the pleasan-  
nes of the kynges syster, determined to taste of the serpentes.  
But when he felte the fleshe therof to bee so delicate to his  
tonge, he sel too, amayne without al feare. The which thynge  
his coompanyons perceauinge, were not behynde hym in gree-  
dines: In soo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke  
then of the sweetenes of these serpentes: which they affirme  
to bee of moze pleasaunte taste, then eyther oovre phelantes

oz pertriches. But they lose theyz taste, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne fashon: as doo peacockes and pheasantes except they bee interlarded befoze they bee roasted.

They prepare them therefore after this maner. Fyrst takynge owte theyz bowels euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washe and rubbe theyz bodies very cleane bothe within and withoute. Then rouling them togyther on a cyrle, inuolued after the maner of a slepyng snake, they thrusse them into a potte of no bygger capacitee then to houlde them only. This doone, puttyng a lyttle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they seethe the with a soft fyre of sweete woodde, and suche as maketh no greate smoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus sodde, is made an exceedinge pleasaunte brothe oz potage. They say also, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of these serpentes, which they vse to seethe by them selues. They are good to bee eaten as sone as they are sodde: And may also bee reserued many dayes after. But hauinge sayde thus muche of theyz intertaynement and dainnie fare, let vs nowe speake of other matters. When the Aienetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howses with the gossampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynges promysed furthermoze to gyue hym as muche of theyz breade, as he wolde demaunde. He gaue them hartie thankes and gentely accepted their freendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in sundry Regions to bee brought to the palaice of *Beuchius Anacauchoa* kyng of *Xaragua*, he sent messengers to *Isabella* for one of the two cacauelles which were lately made there: intendinge to sende the same thither ageyne laden with breade. The maryners gladde of these tydynge, sayled abowte the Ilande, and in short space brought the shippe to the coastes of *Xaragua*. The wyfe of kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyfe and pleasaunt woman *Anacaonia*, (the wyfe sumtyme of *Caunaboa* the kyng of the golden howse of the mountaynes of *Cibao*, whose husbände dyed in the way when he shulde haue byn carryed into Spayne,) when she hadde saye that owte shippe was arryued on the shore of her natue countrey, perswaded the kyng her brother that they bothe myght goo togyther to see it. For the place where the shippe lay, was not passe .vi. myles distaunte from *Xaragua*. They rested all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne byllage

The dressing  
of serpentes  
to be eaten.

Serpentes  
egges eaten.

Gossampine  
cotton.

Queene *Anacaonia*.

## The fyrst decade.

in the which was the treasure or iewell holde of *Anacaona*.  
 Her treasure was nother goulde, syluer, or precious stones,  
 but only thynges necessary to bee vsed, as chypars, scooles,  
 settels, dysshes, potingers, portes, pannes, basons, treyes,  
 and suche other howe holde stuffe and instrumentes, worke  
 manly made of a certeyne blacke and harde spynninge woodde  
 which that excellent learned phisition *John baptiste Elsius*, as-  
 firmeth to bee hebene. What so euer portion of wytte nature  
 hath gyuen to the inhabitantes of these Ilandes, the same  
 doth most appeare in these kynde of woorkes, in whiche they  
 shewe great arte and cunningg. But those which this woman  
 had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, situate in the mouth  
 of the weste syde of *Hispaniola*. In these they graue the lyuely  
 Images of such phantasties as they suppose they see walke by  
 night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Also the Images of  
 men serpents, beastes, & what soo euer other thyng they haue  
 once seene. What wolde yowe thinke (moste noble prince)  
 that they coulde doo, if they had the vse of Iren and steele?  
 For they onely fyrste make these softe in the fyre, and after-  
 warde make them holowe & carue them with a certeyne stone  
 which they fynde in the ryuers. Of scooles and chapers, they  
 gaue the Lieutenannt. xiiii. And of bestelles perteynyng to  
 the table and kychen, they gaue hym thre scoze, sum of wood  
 and sume of earthe. Also of gossampine cotton ready spunne  
 foure great bottomes of excedinge weight. The day folowing  
 when they came to the sea syde, where was an other vylage  
 of the kynges, the Lieutenannt commaunded the shyppe boate  
 to bee brought to the shore. The kyng also had prepared two  
 canoas, paynted after theyr maner: one for hym selfe and cer-  
 teyne of his gentelmen: an other for his wyf *Anacaona* and  
 her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* despyred to bee caried  
 in the shyppe boate with the Lieutenannt. When they  
 nowe approached nere vnto the shyppe, certeyne great pieces  
 of ordinaunce were discharged of purpose. The sea was fyl-  
 led with thunder, and the ayer with smooke. They trembled  
 and quaked for feare, supposinge that the frame of the world  
 had byn in danger of faulng. But when they sawe the Lieue-  
 tenants ladsgh, and looke cherefully on them, they cauled  
 ageyne theyr spirittes. And when they yet drewe ncerer to the  
 shyppe, and harde the noyse of the flutes, shalmes, & drummes,  
 they

The treasure  
of Queene  
*Anacaona*.

hebene  
woodde.

The Ilande  
of *Guanabba*

Cunninge ar-  
tificers.

A stone in the  
Reede of Iren

Drummes.

Musical in-  
strumentes.

they were wonderfully astonysed at the sweete harmony ther-  
 of. Enterynge into the shyppe and beholdinge the foreshippe  
 and the sterne, the toppe castel, the masse, the hatches, the car-  
 bens, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother firinge his  
 eyes on the syster, and the syster on the brother, they were  
 bothe as it were dumme and amased, and wytte not what to  
 saye for to muche wonderynge. Whyle beholdinge these thyn-  
 ges they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieutenante  
 commaunded the ankers to bee loosed, and the sailes to be hop-  
 ped vp. Then were they further astonysed, when they sawe  
 soo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it selfe, without oyes  
 and without the force of man. For there arose from the earth  
 suche a wynde as a man wolde haue wyshed for of purpose.  
 Yet furthermoze, when they perceaued the shyppe to moue som-  
 tyme forwarde and sumtyme backwarde: sumtyme towarde  
 the ryght hande and sumtyme towarde the lefte, & that with  
 one wynde and in maner at one instante, they were at theyz  
 wyttres ende for to muche admiracion. These thyngez fynished  
 and the shyppes beinge laden with breade and suche other re-  
 wardes, they beinge also recompensed with other of olore  
 thyngez, he dismissed not onely the kynge <sup>Beuchius Anacauchoa,</sup>  
 and his syster, but lykewise all theyz seruauntes and women  
 replenyshed with ioye and woonderinge. After this, he hym  
 selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his souldiers to the citie  
 of *Isabella*: where he was aduertised that one <sup>Roldanus Ximenuz,</sup>  
 a nauoghty felowe, (whom befoze beinge his seruante, he had  
 preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and  
 after made hym a Judge in causes of controuersie) had vsed  
 hym selfe outrageously and was malyciously mynded agens  
 hym, and further, the cause of much myschiefe in his absēce.  
 For kynge <sup>Guarionexius</sup> (who a whyle befoze was pardoned of  
 his former rebellion, and persuaded the people to obeye the  
 Spanyardes) was by his nauoghty vslage, and suche other as  
 were conferthered with hym, so accensed to reuenge the iniu-  
 ries which they susteyned at his handes, by syde the abhomi-  
 nable actes which they folowynge onely the lawe of nature,  
 abhorred to admytte, that he with his famelic, famylers, &  
 ditionaries, of desperat mynd fledde to the mountaynes be-  
 syng distant from *Isabella* onely tenne leagues Westwarde, to-  
 ward the north syde of the sea, These mountaynes, and also

Ignorance  
 can'th admira-  
 tion.

Roldanus Xe-  
 minus.

The intempe-  
 rancie and  
 malice of a  
 seruile witte  
 aduanced.

Signalans,

## The fyrst decade.

Maiobanexius:  
us, the great  
kyng of the  
mountaynes

The inhaby-  
tantes of the  
mountaynes.

Guarionexi-  
us rebelleth  
ageyne.

Roldanus Xe-  
minus rebel-  
leth.

the inhabitantes of the same they caule by one name *Ciguatos*. The greate kyng of al the kynges and regions of these mountayne, is cauled *Maiobanexius*: and his courte or palaice is named *Capronus*. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and suche as no man can passe to the toppes therof. They are also benedynge: and haue theyz corners reachinge downe to the sea. Beruene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the sea. The people are verpe fierse and warlyke men, hauing theyz original of the *Canybales*. For when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyz boztherers, they eate all suche as they kyll. *Guarionexius* therfoze, synging to this kyng of these mountaynes, gaue hym many pzelentes of suche thynges as are wantinge in his countrey: therwith declaringe howe vplely, vblaynously, and violently, he had byn bled of oovre men: with who n he could nothinge preuayle nather by sayre meanes, nor by foule: nor ther by humilylie nor by stoutnes. And that to bee the cause of his resorthinge to hym at that tyme: moste humbly despyng hym to bee his defence ageynst thoppresions of suche mylcheuous people. *Maiobanexius* here vppon, made hym promette to ayde and helpe hym ageynst the Christians al that he myght. The Lieutenant therfoze made hast to the fortreffe of *Conception*: whyther as soone as he was coome, he sent for *Roldanus Xeninus*, who with suche as folowed hym, lay in certeyne of the *Islande* bylages, twelue miles distant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Leutenant asked hym what al these surres and tumultes ment. He answered without abashemēt: powre brother the Admirall hath to doo therwith, and shall answer for the same before the kyng. For we perceau that the kyng hath soo put hym in truste, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we peryshe for hunger whyle we folowe powre: and are dyuen to seeke oovre unhappy foode in the desertes. Powre brother also, assigned me assistant with powre in gouerninge the *Islande*. Wherefore syth powre haue no more respecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder powre obedience. When *Roldanus* had spoken these wordes & suche other, the Lieutenante wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he escaped his syngers, and fledde to the weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua*, hauinge with hym a trayne of three

threecore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy synke of rebels thus conspired, played their vages and lyued with loose byrdels in al kyndes of mylchefe robberyng the people, spoylinge the countrey, and rauyfyng bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle these thynges were doing in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde epyght shippes appoynted hym by the kyng: Of the whiche he sent two laden with vytayles, from *Cales* or *Gades* of Hercules pylers, directly to the Licuetaunt his brother. These shippes by chaunce arriued fyrst on that syde of the Ilande where *Roldanus Xemi-jus* ranged with his toompanyons. *Roldanus* in shorte tyme hadde seduced them: promysinge them in the steade of mattookes, wenches pappes: for labour, pleasure: for hunger, abundance: and for botarynes and watchyng, sleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, a Temblunge a powver of his freendes and confetherates, came of tentymes downe into the playne, and slewe as many of the Christian men, as he coulde meete conveniently, and also of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: wadyng theyr grounde, destroyng theyr seedes, and spoylinge theyr bylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowleage that the Admirall wolde shorly coome, yet feared they nothyng bycause they had seduced the newe menne which came in the fyrste shippes. Whyle the Licuetaunt was thus toyled in the middell of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the Admirall set forwarde fro the coastes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hispaniola*: For he turned more toward the southe. In the which wyage, what he dyd, what coastes both of the lande and sea he compassed, and what newe regions he discovered, wee wyl fyrst declare. For to what ende and conclusion the sayde tumultes and seditions came, wee wyl expyete in the ende of the booke folowynge. Thus fare ye well.

Licenciousnes in liberte

hercules pylers.

A violente persasion.

The furie of guarionexius

The thyrd wyage of Colonus the Admirall.

The fyfte booke of the fyfth decade, to  
*Lodowike Cardinal of Aragonie.*



**C**olonus the Admirall, the thyrd day of the Calendes of June, in the yeare of Christe. 1498. hoyled by his sayles in the hauch of the towne *Barrameda* *his*, not farre distante from *Cales*: and set forwarde  
on

## The fyrst decade.

French men  
pirats.

The Iland of  
Madera.

The Admiral  
saileth to the  
Equinoctiall.

iiii. Ilandes  
of hesperi-  
des, now cau-  
led Cabover-  
de.

healyng of  
the leper.

Contagious  
ayre and ex-  
treeme heate

The pole ele-  
uate. v. de-  
grees.

on his byage with eyght shippes laden with bytayles and o-  
ther necessaries. He diuerted from his accustomed rase which  
was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reason of certeyne frenche-  
men pirates and rouers on the sea, whiche laye in the ryght  
way to meete with hym. In the way frō *Cales* to the Ilandes  
of *Canarie*, aboute foure score and ten myles towarde the lefte  
hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more southwarde then the  
cittie of *Ciulle* by foure degrees. For the pole arryke is eleuate  
to *Ciulle*, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners  
saye) only. xxxii. He sayled therfore fyrste to *Madera*. And sen  
dinge from thense directly to *Hispaniola*, the resydue of the ship-  
pes laden with bytayles and other necessaries, he hym selfe  
with one shyppe with deckes, and two marchaunt carauelles  
coasted towarde the southe to coome to the *Equinoctiall* lyne, and  
so furth to folowe the tracte of the same towarde the West, to  
thintent to searche the natures of such places as he coulde  
fynde vnder or nere vnto the same, leauinge *Hispaniola* on the  
north syde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his rase, lye  
iiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in olde tyme  
cauled *Hesperides*: And are now cauled *Caput Viride*, or *Caboverde*.  
These are situate in the sea, ryght ouer agaynst the inner par-  
tes of *Ethiope*, Westwarde two dayes saylinge. One of these  
the Portugales caule *Bonauista*. With the snayles, or rather  
tortoyles of this Ilande, many leproous men are healed and  
cleansed of theyr leprositie. Departing sodainly from hense by  
reason of the contagiousnes of the ayre, he sayled, cccclxxx  
myles towarde the Weste southwest, which is the myddest be-  
twene the weste and the southe. There was he so bered with  
maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of June) that his  
shyppes were almoste sette on fyre. The hoopes of his barreles  
cracked and brake, and the freshe water ranne owte. The  
men also complayned that they were not able to abyde that  
extremite of heate. Here the north pole was eleuate only. v.  
degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of. viii. dayes in  
the which he suffered these extremities, only the fyrst day was  
fayre: but all the other, cloudy and rayny: yet neuerthelesse  
feruent hotte. Wherefore it oftentymes repented hym not a  
little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge tossed in these dan-  
gerous and veracions eyght contynuall dayes, at the lengthe  
an Eastsoutheaste wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste  
to

to his sayles. Which wynde folowinge directly towarde the weste, he founde the starres ouer that paralelle, placed in order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the Admirall hym selfe tolde me. And they al affirme, that within thre dayes saylinge, they founde mosse temperate and pleasaunte ayre. The Admirall also a firmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and unholsome ayer, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of July, the watchman lookyng forth of the toppcastell of the geatest shyppe, cryed owte aloude for ioy that he espyed thre exceedyng hygh mountaynes: Exhortyng his felowes to bee of good cheere, and put away all peniuenes. For they were very heauy and sorowfull, as well for the greefe which they susteyned by reason of thynollerable heate, as also that their frethe water sayled them, which canne owte at the ryftes of the bavel, caused by extreme heate as we haue sayde. Thus beinge wel comforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet at theyr fyrt approche, they coulde not arryue by reason of the shallownes of the sea nere the shore. Yet lookyng owte of theyr shippes, they might well perceane that the region was inhabited and well cultured. For they sawe very sayre gardens, and pleasaunte meadowes: frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the moonyng dewes beganne to rylle, there proceeded manye sweete sauours. Whentie myles distant from hencie, they chaunced into a haven, verie apte to harborowe shippes, but it had no ryuer runnyng into it. Saylinge on yet somewhat further, he founde at the lengthe a commodious haven wherin he might repayre his shippes and make prouision of freshe water and fuell. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Pura*. They founde no houses nere vnto the haven: but innumerable steppes of certein wilde beastes secte, of the which they founde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowynge, they sawe a Canoa comynge a farr of, hauinge in it. xiiii. younge men of godly corporature & high stature, al armed with targets, bowes & arrowes. The heare of theyr heds, was lōge & plaine, & cutte on the foreheade much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priue partes were couered with filletes of gossampyne cotton, of sundry coloures entrelaced: And were besyde al ouer naked.

.i. D

Here

The starres placed in order.

A sea ryfing lyke a moun-  
tayne.

heate causeth the bavel to breake.

Sweete sauours proceede  
dunze frome the lande.

The Island of Pura.

people of  
ly corporature  
& longe heare  
nere the  
quinoctial.

## The fyrst decade.

The higher  
the colder.

Difference be  
twene people  
of one clime.  
Ethiopia.

Note the  
cause of  
difference.

musical instru  
mentes.

Here the Admirall consideringe with hym selfe the corpora-  
ture of this people and nature of the lande, he beleaved the  
same to bee soo mucht he never heauen then other Regions of  
the same paralelle, and further remoued from the grosse va-  
pours of the vales and marishes, howe muche the hygheste  
toppes of the hyggest mountaynes are distant from the deepe  
vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that navigation,  
he neuer wente owte of the paralelles of Ethiopie: So greate  
Difference is there betwene the nature of the inhabitants and  
of the soyles of dyuers Regions all vnder one clyme or para-  
lelle: as is to see betwene the people and regions being in the  
firme lande of Ethiopie, and theym of the Ilandes vnder the  
same clime, hauinge the pole starre eleuate in the same degree.  
For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare culd  
more lyke wulle then heare. But these people of the Iland of  
Pitu (beinge as I haue sayde vnder the clyme of Ethiopie) are  
whyte, with longe heare, and of yelowe colour. Wherefore it  
is apparente, the cause of this soo greate difference, to bee  
rather by the disposition of the earth, then constitution of  
heauen. For we knowe, that snowe fauleth on the moun-  
taynes of the Equinoctiall or burnt lyne, and the same to en-  
dure there continually: We knowe lykewyse that the inhabi-  
tantes of the Regions farre distant frome that lyne towarde  
the nozth, are molested with greate heare.

The Admirall that he myght allure the younge men to him  
with gentelnes, shewed them lokynge glasses, sayre & bryght  
bestelles of copper, haukes belles, and suche other thynges  
vnnknown to them. But the more they were cauled, so much  
the more they suspected crafte and deceate, and fledde backe:  
watde. yet dyd they with greate admiration beholde owte  
men and theyr thynges, but styll hauinge their oyes in theyr  
handes redy to flye. When the Admirall sawe that he coulde  
by no meanes allure the by gyftes, he thought to proue what  
he coulde do with muscicall instrumentes: and therefore com-  
maunded that they which were in the greatest shippe, shulde  
play on theyr drummes and shalmes. But the younge men sup-  
posinge this to bee a token of battayle, left theyr oyes, and  
in the shyulpyng of an eye hadde put theyr arrowes in theyr  
bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus direct-  
tinge theyr arrowes towarde owte men, stood in expectacio

to

to knowe what this noyle myght meane. More men lykewile preparinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approached toward the by lyttle and lyttle. But they departinge from the Admirals shippe, and trustinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came soo neare one of the lesse shippes, that one of theym plucked the clooke from the gouernour of that shippe, and as wel as they coulde by signes, requyred hym to come alande, promysinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they sawe hym goo to the Admirals shippe whether he went to aske leaue that he might common with them, suspectinge hereby some further deceate, they lept immediately into the Canoa, and fledde as swyft as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherefore the Admirall thowght it not conuenient to bestowe any longe tyme there, at this byage. No greate space fronte this Islande, curr towarde the weste, the Admirall saith he founde so owtcragious a faule of water, runninge with such a violence from the Easte to the Weste, that it was nothyng inferioure to a mygghy streame saulyng from hyghe mountaynes. He also confessed, that since the fyrst daye that ever he knewe what the sea mente, he was neuer in suche feare. Proceedinge yet sumwhat further in this daungerous byage, he founde certeyne goulfes of viii. myles, as it had byn the craunce of some greate hauen, into the which, the sayde violent streames dyd faule. These goulfes or streyghtes, he cauled *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Island directly ouer ageynste the same, he named *Margarita*. Oure of these streyghtes, issued no lesse force of freshe water, whiche encounteringe with the faulte, dyd stryue to passe forth. So that betwene bothe the waters, was no smaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulfe, at the lengthe he founde the water therof very freshe and good to drynke. The Admirall hym selfe, and they which were his companions in this byage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in searchyng for these matters, tolde me yet of a greater thynge. That is, that for the space of xxvi. leaques, amountyng to a hundred and foure myles, he sayled euer by freshe water: In so muche, that the further he proceeded, especialy towarde the west, he affirmeth the water to bee the fresher. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely

B.ii.

with

The violent  
course of the  
water from  
the Easte to  
the weste.

The violent  
course of the  
water from  
the Easte to  
the weste.

The goulfe  
cauled *Os  
Draconis*.

The goulfe  
cauled *Os  
Draconis*.

A conflict be-  
twene the  
freshe water  
& the salte.

A sea of freshe  
water.

marmasets &  
monkeye.

## The fyrst decade.

With moonkeys or marmosets on that part toward the East. For that syde was rough with rocke and stony mountains: And therefore not inhabited with men. yet they that went a lande to searche the countrey, founde nere vnto the sea, many fayre fieldes well tilled and sowed: But noo people, nor yet houses or corages. Wharhappes they were gone further in to the countrey to sowe theyr cozne and applye theyr husbandry, as wee often see owre husbände men to leaue theyr statious and bylages for the same purpose. In the weste syde of that mountayne, they espyed a large playne, whither they made haste, and cast anker in the brode ryuer. As soone as the inhabitantes had knowleage that a strange nation was arrived in theyr coastes, they came flockinge withowte all feare to see owre men. We understode by theyr sygnes and poyntynges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very large: In so muche that the further it reacheth toward the weste, to be so muche the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therefore, takinge into his charge foure of the men of that lande, searched the weste partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the pleasauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they sawe dayly more and more as they sayled, they coniectured that these thynges portended sum great matter: As in deede their opinion sayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The soonne not yet risen, but beginninge euen now to rylse, beinge one day allured by the pleasauntnes of the place and swete saouours which byeathed from the land to the shippes, they went alarde. Here they founde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men approached toward them, there came certeine messengers from their *Cacis*, that is, the kynges of the countrey, to despye the Admirall in the name of theyr princes to coome to theyr palayces withowt feare, and that they and al theyr Gulde be at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuse for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the shippes: haupng for the most parte cheynes abowte theyr neckes, garlandes on theyr heades, and bracelets on theyr armes of pearles of *Judia*: And that so commonly, that owre women in playes and reynnynges haue not greater plentie of bones of glasse and crysfall in

The fayre & large region of paria.

Temperate ayer and fruitful grounde.

Sweete saouours proceede frome the lande.

Humayne people.

Cheynes and garlandes of gold & pearles

In theyr garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and fuche other tyemen-  
 mentes. Beinge asked where they gathered them, they poynt-  
 ed to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also by  
 certeyne scozeful gesticures which they made with theyr mou-  
 thes and handes, that they nothyng esteemed perles. Taking  
 also baskettes in their handes, they made signes that the  
 same might bee fylled with them in shorte space. But bycause  
 the corne wherwith his shippes were laden to bee carryed into  
 Hispaniola, had taken hurt by reason of the salte water, he de-  
 termined to deferre this matre to a more convenient tyme. Yet  
 he sent to lande two of the shippe boates laden with men, to  
 thintent to fetch sum garlandes of perles for erchange of one  
 thynge, and also somewhat to searche the nature of the Re-  
 glon and disposition of the people. They enterpeyned ovr me  
 gentelly: and came flockynge to them by heapes, as it hadde  
 byn to beholde sume straunge monsters. Fyrste there came to  
 meete ovr men, two men of grauitie, whome the multitude  
 folowed. One of these was well in age, and the other but  
 younge. They thinke it was the father with his soonne whi-  
 che shulde succede hym. When the one had saluted and embra-  
 sed the other, they brogght ovr men into a certeyne rownde  
 howse, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate court. Hether  
 were brogght many chapers and stooles made of a certeyne  
 blacke woodde, and very cunninggely wrogght. After that  
 ovr men, and theyr Princes were sette, theyr wayting men  
 came in laden, sume with sundry delicate dysches, and sume  
 with wyne. But theyr meate, was only frutes: and those of  
 dyuers kyndes and bitterly vnknewe to vs. Theyr wyne was  
 both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour  
 of dyuers frutes, and very pleasaunte in drynkynge. After  
 this banquette made in the owlde mans howse, the younge  
 man brogght them to his tabernacle or maucion place, where  
 was a greate company bothe of men and women, but they  
 stode decauered the one from the other. They are whyte, e-  
 nen as ovr men are, sayunge fuche as are much conuerfant  
 in the sonne. They are also very gentyll, and full of humani-  
 tie towarde strangers. They coouer theyr pryue partes with  
 godampine cotton wrogght with sundry coloures: and are  
 besyde all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not ey-  
 ther a collar, a cheyne, or a braselette of golde and pearles,

Baskettes ful  
 of pearles, I  
 knewe who  
 had bags ful.

howe the Ad-  
 mirals men  
 were enter-  
 peyned.

cheyers and  
 stoles of hes-  
 bene.

frutes and  
 wyne.

wyne of the  
 lycour of  
 frutes.

whyte men  
 nere the Equi-  
 noctial

## The fyrst decade.

mountaynes  
are the matri  
ces of Golde.

Cambales

Shalownes  
of the sea,

The vse of  
carenelles or  
buganines.

Cumana and  
Manacapan  
regions of the  
prouince of  
Paria.  
Curiana.

A ryuer of  
maruelous  
depth and  
breadth.  
A sea of wee-  
des.  
Lentiscus.  
Mastic.

and many had all. Beinge asked where they had that golde; they poynted to certeyne mountaynes, seemynge with theyr countenaunce to dissuade oovre men from goynge thither. For puttynge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynnyng as thowgh they bytte the same, theyllo popytynge to the mountaynes, they seemed to insynuate that men were eaten there. But whether they moute by the Cambales, or wyld beastes oovre men coulde not well perceaue. They rooke it exceedynge grecedullye, that they coulde nother vnderstande oovre men, nor oovre men them. When they which were sente to lande, were returned to the shippes aboute thre of the clocke at after noone the same daye, bringynge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of pearles, they loosed theyr ankers to departe, myndynge to come ageyne shortly, when all thynges were sette in good order in *Hispaniola*. But he was prevented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his traynaye. He was also hyndered at this tyme by realms of the shalownes of the sea & violent course of the water, which with continual tossing, broosed the greatest ship as often as any great gale of wynde arose. To auoyde the daungyours of suche hazardous places, and shelles, he ever sent one of the smallest carenelles before, to try the way with soundynge: and the best shippes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the space of *cccc* myles, are cauled of thynhabitantes, *Cumana*, and *Manacapan*: from these regions distant thre scoze leaques, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposynge theyllo that it had byn an Islande, & doubtyng that he might passe by the Weste to the Northe directlye to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of *xxx* cubettes depthe, & of such breadth as hath not lyghly byn harde of. For he affirmed it to bee *xxviii* leaques. A lytle further toward the Weste, yet sumwhat more southwarde as the bending of the shore requyred, he entered into a sea full of herbes or weedes. The seede of the herbes whiche swymme on the water, are muche lyke the berryes of the tree cauled *Lentiscus*, which beareth the sweete gumme cauled *Mastic*. They grewe soo thicke, that they sumetyme in maner stayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thowgh the oovre all the yeare muche longer or shorter than an other

other: And that the North pole is here eleuate onely fyue degrees as at *Paria*, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. Bee also declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the north pole: The which because they seeme contrarie to thoppinions of all the Astronomers, I wyll touche them but with a dype foote as sayth the proverbe. But it is wel known (mosse noble prince) that the starre which we caule the pole starre, or north starre, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very popnte of the pole Arctike vppon the whiche the ares or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thyng may well be proued, if when the starres fyrt appear, yow beeholde the pole starre throught any narrow hole. For soo, applyinge yowre instrument therto in the morninge somewhat before the day spryng haue blemysed theyr lyght, yf then yowre looke throught the same hole, yowre shall perceane it to bee moued from the place where yowre sawe it fyrt. But howe it cometh to passe, that at the begynnyng of the evening twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only fyue degrees in the moneth of June, and in the morninge twilight to bee eleuate. xv. degrees by the same quaadrante, I doo not vnderstande. For yet doo the reasons which he bringeth, in any poynt saylls me. For he sayth, that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectlye rownde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape reyled thereon, much hygher the other partes of the same. So that (as he saith) it is not rownde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thynke) but rather lyke a peare as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which possideth the supereminente or hyghest parte thereof nereffe vnto heauen. In soo muche that he earnestly contendeth, the earthly Paradise to bee situate in the toppes of those three hylles, which wee sayde before, that the watche man sawe owte of the toppe castell of the shippe: And that the outrageous streames of the freche waters whiche soo violentlye issewe owte of the sayde goulfes and stryue soo with the salte water, faule headlonge from the toppes of the sayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therfore returne to the historye from which we haue degressed. When he perceaued hym selfe to bee thus intorapped in soo greete a goulfe beyonde his expectacion, soo that he had now no hope

The eleuati-  
on of the pole  
at *paria*.

Note a se-  
create as con-  
cerning the  
pole starre.

An experiece

A marvelous  
secreate.

That the  
earth is not  
perfectly  
rownde.

paradise is in  
the moun-  
taynes of *pa-  
ria*.

Looke the  
ninth booke  
seconde de-  
cade.

## The fyfth decade.

Paria is part  
of the firme  
lande of india

Tyme reuea-  
leth al thyngs

paria more  
fouthwarde  
then hispani-  
ola

to fynde any passage towarde the northe wherby he myghe  
sayle directly to *Hispaniola*, he was enforced to turne backe the  
same way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *His-  
paniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the East.  
They which afterwarde searched this lande more curiouslye,  
wyl it to bee parte of the continente or firme lande of India,  
and not of *Cuba* as the Admirall supposed. For there are many  
which affirme that they haue sayled roound about *Cuba*. But  
whether it bee so or not, or whether enuyinge the good for-  
tune of this man, they seeke occasions of querelinge ageynste  
hym, I can not iudge: But tyme shall speake, which in tyme  
appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falschod. But whether  
*Paria* bee Continent or not, the Admirall dothe not muche con-  
tende. But he supposed it to bee Continent. He also affir-  
meth that *Paria* is more southwarde then *Hispaniola*, by eyght  
hundredeth fourescore and two myles. At the length he came to  
*Hispaniola* (to see his souldiers which he left with his brethren)  
the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the yeare  
1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,)  
amonge his soo many prosperons, pleasaunce, and luckye af-  
fayres, fortune menzeled some seedes of wormewoodde, and  
corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of coccle.

### The seventh booke of the fyfth decade, to the same Lodouike Cardinall &c.

The Spany-  
ardes rebell  
in the Admi-  
rals absence



When the Admirall was nowe come to the Is-  
lande of *Hispaniola*, he founde all thynges con-  
founded and oute of order. For *Roldanus* (of  
whom wee spake beefore) refused in his ab-  
sence to obey his brother, trustinge to the mul-  
titude of such as were confethered with him.  
And not onely behaued hym selfe proudly a-  
geynst the Admiralles brother and Lieutenaut sumtyme his  
maister, but also sente letters to his reproche to the kynge of  
Spayne, therein accusinge bothe the brethren, leying heynous  
matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, sent mes-  
sengers to the kynge, which myght informe hym of theyr re-  
bellion: Instantly desyringe his grace, to sende hym a newe  
supplie of men, wherby he myght suppress the licentiousnes  
and

and punyſhe them for theyr miſchuous actes. They accused the Admirall and his brother to bee vniuit men, cruell enemies and ſheaders of the Spanyſhe bludde: declaringe that vppon every lyght occaſion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleaſure therein. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wyld beaſtes reioyſinge in bludde, alſo the kynges enemies. A ſpyrmyng lykewyſe that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vſurpe The myre of the Flaundes: whiche thyng (they ſayde) they ſuſpected by a thouſand coniectures. And eſpecially in that they wolde permitte none to reſorte to the golde mynes, but only ſuche as were theyr familiers. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he deſpyed ayde of the kyng to infringe theyr inſolencie, auouched that al thoſe his accuſers, which had deuiled ſuche lyes ageynſt hym, were noughtye felowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruſſians aduouterers and raiſhers of women faulſe perjured bagabundes, and ſuche as had byn eyther conuict in pryſons, or fledde for feare of Iudgement: ſo eſcaping punyſhement, but not leauinge vice wherin they ſtill contynued and brought the ſame with them to the Flaunde, lyeinge there in lyke maner as before, in theſte, lechery, and all kynnes of myſcheefe: And ſoo gyuen to Idleness and ſlepe, that wheras they were brought thither for mynes, labourers, & ſcullians, they wolde not nowe goo one furlonge from theyr houſes except they were borne on mens backes, lyke vnto the whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miſerable Flaunde men, whom they handeled moſte cruelly. For leaſte theyr handes ſulde diſcontinewe from ſheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr ſtrength and manhod, they vſed nowe and then for theyr paſtyme to ſtryue amonge them ſelues and prou: who coulde moſt cleanly with his ſwoorde at one ſtroke ſtryke of the heade of an innocent. Soo that he which coulde with moſte agilitie make the heade of one of thoſe poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the grounde at one ſtroke, he was the beſt mā and counted moſte honorable. Theſe thynges and many ſuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kyng. Whyle theſe thynges were doinge, the Admirall ſente his brother the lieutenant with an army of foure ſcore and

The Spanyſh  
arden accuſe  
the Admirall.

The Admira  
les anſwere.

Inſolencie &  
idleness of li-  
bertie.

Theſe had  
the cuſtodies  
of the temples.

A cruel and  
deuelyſhe paſ-  
tyme.

## The fyrst decade.

kynges Guar-  
lionexius is ca-  
pitaine of. vi.  
thousand Ci-  
guauians.

¶ *Agathysfi.*

Naked men  
painted with  
the force of  
certē fruites.

heare made  
longe & black  
by arte.

The vse of  
targettes.

The Ciguai-  
ans are dyne  
to flyght.

tenne footemen, and a fewe horsemen, (with thre thousande of the Ilande men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguaua*, with kynges *Guarlionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myscheefe to oovre men and suche as fauoured theym. Therefore when the Lieutenannt had conducted his army to the bankes of a certeyne greate ryuer runnyng by the playne which we sayd be fore to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of *Ciguaua* and the sea, he forwnde two scoutes of his enemyes lurking in certeyne bushes: wherof the one, castyng hym selfe head longe into the sea, escaped: and by the mouth of the ryuer swamme ouer to his coompanyons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other side the ryuer, there lay in campe fyre thousande *Cyguauians* redy, vnwares to a Tayle oovre men passyng bye. Wherfoze the Lieutenannt fyndyng a shalowe place where he myght passe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thyng when the Ciguauians had espyed, they came runnyng oovre of the wooddes with a terrible crye and mosse horrible aspect, much lyke vnto the people cauled *Agathysfi* of whom the poete *Virgile* speaketh. For they were all paynted and spotted with sundry coloures, and especiall with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne fruites noozthed for the same purpose in theyr gardens, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them selues from the forheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wyethed and rowled after a thousande fashions. A man wold thinke them to bee deuylles incarnate newly broke oovre of hell, they are soo lyke vnto helhoundes. As oovre me waded ouer the ryuer, they shotte at them and hurled darteres soo thicke, that it almoste tooke the lyght of the sonne from oovre men. In so much that if they had not bozne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gonne wronge with them. per at the length, many beinge wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer, which thyng when the enemyes sawe, they fledde: whome oovre men persuinge, slewe sume in the chase: but not many, by reason of theyr swyftenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they shotte at oovre men more safely. for they being accustomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, passed thzough the bushes and shrubbes

as it had byn wyld bores or hartes: wheras owre men were hyndered by reason of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherefore, when he had rested there all that nyght in bayne, and the daye folowynge sawe none skeringe in the wodes, he went (by the counsel and conducte of the other Ilande men which were in his armye) immediatly from thense, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe mansion place in the bylage cauled *Capronum*, by the which name also, the kynges palaice was caled, beinge in the same bylage. Thus marchynge forward with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the bylage of an other kyng, which thynhabitantes had forsaken for feare of owre men. yet makynge dyligent search, they fownde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiobanexius* in his palaice of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thousand *Ciguanians*. At the Lieutenantes fyrst appoche, he durst not gyue them battayle vntyll he had somewhat better searched the Region: yet did he in the meane tyme skrymple with them twyse. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he sent furth scoutes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the countrey. Whom the *Ciguanians* espyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them selues to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their maner: but yet durst not coome owte of the wooddes, supposing that the Lieutenante with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowynge, whē he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owte of the wooddes, they twyse attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assayling owre men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye befoze they coulde coouer them with theyr targettes. yet owre men put them to flyght, slew many, and tooke many. The resydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them styll as in their moste safe houlde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, & with hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiobanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieutenante brought not hether his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynst yowre or yowre people: for he greatly despyeth yowre frendshipp. But his entent is, that *Guarionexius* who hath perswaded yowre to bee his ayde ageynste hym to the greate destruction of yowre pedple and vndoynge of

J.ii.

yowre

kynges wato:  
banexius.An army of  
viii. thousand  
*Ciguanians*.

A Larome.

The *Ciguani*  
ans out to  
flyght againeThe Lieute  
nante his am  
bassage to  
kynges wato:  
banexius.

## The fyrst decade.

your country, may haue bene correction aswell for his dis-  
 obedience toward him, as also for raising tumultes amonge  
 the people. Wherefore, he requyret you and crozeth you,  
 to deliuer *Guarionexius* into his handes. The whiche thyng if  
 you shall perforce, the Admirall his brother wyll not only  
 gladly admitte you to his frendshyppe, but also enlarge &  
 defende your dominion. And if herein you refuse to accom-  
 plysh his requeste, it wyll folowe, that you shall shortly  
 repent you thereof. For your kyngedome shall be wasted  
 with sword and syer, and you shall abyde the fortune of  
 warre wherof you haue had experience with fauour, as you  
 shall further know here after to your payne, if with sober-  
 nes you prouoke him to shewe the vttermoste of his poure.  
 When the messenger had thus doone his errante, *Maiobanexius*  
 answered, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with ma-  
 ny vertues as all men knowe: And therefore he thought him  
 worthy his ayde: especially in as muche as he fledde to him  
 for succoure, and that he had made him such promise, whan  
 also he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyne, that  
 they were nauoghty men, violent and cruell, desyringe other  
 mens gooddis, and suche as spared not to shede innocents  
 bludde: In syne, that he wolde not haue to doo with suche  
 myshenous men, nor yet enter into frendshyppe with them.  
 When these thynges came to the Lieutenantes eare, he com-  
 maunded the bylage to be burnt where he him selfe encam-  
 ped, with many other bylages there aboute. And when he  
 drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he sent mes-  
 sengers to him ageyne, to common the matter with him, and to  
 wyll him, to sende some one of his moste feyrful frendes to  
 entreate with him of peace. Where vpon the kyng sent vnto  
 him one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with him two other  
 to wayte on him. When he came to the Lieutenantes pre-  
 sence, he frendly requyred him to perswade his lord and mas-  
 ter in his name, and cruely to admonyshe him, not to suf-  
 fer his royaume kyngedome to bee spoyled, or him selfe to  
 abyde the hafarde of warre for *Guarionexius* sake: And further  
 to exhorte him to deliuer him, excepte he wolde procure the  
 destruction bothe of him selfe, his people, and his countrey.  
 When the messenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* assembled the  
 people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried  
obote

kyng Guarionexius.

Maiobanexius his answer.

Natural hatred of vice.

The Lieutenantes gentelnestoward Maiobanexius

obte on hym to deluyer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curse the  
 daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to disturbe theyr  
 quietnes. *Maiobanexius* answered them, that *Guarionexius* was a  
 good man, and had well deserued of him, giuinge hym many  
 princely presentes: And had also tauoght both his wyfe and  
 hym to syng and daunce, whiche thynge he dyd not lytle  
 esteeme. And was therfore fully resolued in no case to forlake  
 hym, or ageynste all humanite to betraye his frende whiche  
 fledde to hym for succoure: but rather to abyde al extremities  
 with hym, then to minister occasion of obloquye to slaunders  
 to reporte that he had betrayed his gesse whom he tooke into  
 his house with warrancies. Thus dismissinge the people sigh  
 inge and with sorowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* befoze  
 hym, promytinge hym ageyne, that he wolde bee partaker of  
 his fortune whyle lyfe lasted. In so muche that he thowght  
 it not beste to sende any further woorde to the Lieutenannt:  
 but appoynted hym whome befoze he sent to hym, to keepe  
 the way with a garryson of men, to thintent that if any mes-  
 sengers shulde be sent from the Lieutenannt, to kepe them by  
 the way, and admytte none to communication or further entre-  
 tie of peace. In the meane tyme, the Lieutenannt sent twoo,  
 wherof the one was a captiue Ciguavian, and the other an I-  
 lande man of them which were frendes to ovre men: They  
 were bothe taken and slayne. The Lieutenannt folowed the  
 onely with ten footemen and foure horsemen. Spydunge his  
 messengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to  
 wyathe, and determyned more extremely to deale with *Maioba-  
 nexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontinently with his  
 hole army to his cheefe palaice of *Capronum* where he yet laye  
 in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, euery man  
 his way, and forlooke theyr capitayne *Maiobanexius*: who alio  
 with all his famelye, fledde to the roogh mountaynes. Sum  
 of the Ciguavians, sologht for *Guarionexius* to sey hym, for  
 that he was the cause of all thes troubles. But his feete sa-  
 ued his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where  
 he lurked in maner alone amonge the desolate rockes.

Wherreas nowe the Lieutenanntes souldiers were forwe-  
 ryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunz-  
 ger, (for it was nowe three moonethes sence the warres be-  
 ganne) many despyed leaue to departe to the towne of Concep-  
 tion

A rare saythe  
 fulnes in a  
 barbarous  
 kyng.

The Lieute-  
 nantes mes-  
 sengers are  
 slayne.

All the kynges  
 are dryen to  
 flyght.

## The fyrst decade.

The Spany-  
ardes are  
peinful in the  
warres.

A desperate  
aduenture  
with .xx. men

A police,

Kynge Malo-  
banetius is  
taken.

Guarionexius  
is taken.

tion, where they had graneges and exercised tyllage. He gaue them theyr passeportes with allowance of bytayles, and soo that only thyrre remayned with hym. These three moonerches warre, they contynued very paynefull and myserabyle: Sod that durpng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only *Cazibi*: that is, suche rootes whercof they make theyr breade, and that but seldome to theyr fyll: Also *Vlias*, that is, lyttle beastes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke some with theyr houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, such as they fownde, sumtyme sweete, and sumtyme muddy sauerunge of the mayrshes. Amonge these delicates, that lyttle sleepe that they had, was euer for the mosse parte abroad vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchmen, and in contynual remouinge as the nature of warre requyret. With these fewe therfore, the Lieutenant determined to searche the mountaynes, dennes, & caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the steppes of *Maiobanexius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certeyne of his meene (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chanced vppon twoo of *Maiobanexius* familypers, whiche were sent to certeyne bylages of his, to make prouision of breade. These he enforced to declare where theyr lord lay hydde. And vsed the same also for guides to bringe oovre me to the place. Twelue of oovre men tooke this enterpryse in hand, painting them selues after the maner of the *Ciguanians*. Soo that by this stratageme or policie, they came sodenly vppon *Maiobanexius*, and tooke hym prisoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conuighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieutenant. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to coome oovte of the dennes: whome, certeyne of the people fearinge the Lieutenant, bewrayde to oovre hunters. The Lieutenant beinge certified hereof, sent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambuše vntyll suche tyme as *Guarionexius* wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then sodenly to intrappe hym. They wente as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and browght hym awaye with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere aboute, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to *Maiobanexius*, and wyfe to an other kynge whose dominion was yet vntouched, followed hym in al these aduer-

aduersities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayrest and moſte beweticfull that euer nature brought forth in the Iſlande. Whom, when the kynge her husbände who looued her moſte ardently (as her bewetic deſerued) harde ſaye that ſhee was taken priſoner he wandered vpp and downe the deſertes lyke a man owte of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or ſaye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieutenante, promyſinge moſte faythfully that he wold ſubmitte hym ſelſe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, ſoo that he wolde reſtoze hym his wyfe. The Lieutenante accepted the condition & reſtozed him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentelmen which he had taken priſoners befoze: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kynge, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieutenante, byngyng with hym fyue thouſande men without weapons, ſauyng onely ſuche instrumentes as they ble in tyllage of theyz grownde. He brought with hym alſo, ſeedes to ſowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he cauſed ſuche plentie of theyz corne and fruites to growe in ſundry places of the large vale whereof wee ſpake befoze, that ſhortely after, were ſcene manye fayre and fruitfull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieutenante with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguaniens, it moued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vppon they came togyther to the Lieutenante with humble ſubmiſſion and faythful promeſſe euer after to bee vnder his obedience: deſyryng hym to reſtoze vnto them theyz kynge, with his ſamylie. At theyz requeſte, the kynges wyfe and his houſholde was ſette at Libertie, but he kepte ſtyll as a priſoner. Theſe thynges dyd the Lieutenante in the Iſlande, not yet knowinge what his aduerſaries and accuſers had layde to his charge befoze the kynge of Spayne: who beinge diſquycted with theyz querelinges and accuſacions, and eſpecially for that by reaſon of theyz diſcention, of ſoo greate abundaunce of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lytle brought into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which ſhuld ſee a redreſſe in theſe thinges: And eyther to punyſhe ſuche as were faultie, or elles to ſende them to hym. What was ſolownde ageynſte the Admirall and

A Beweticfull woman.

A kynge ſendeth the lieutenante fyue thouſand men to tyll the grownde.

The kynges ſubmit them ſelues to the Lieutenante

A newe gouernour of the Iſlande.

## The fyrst decade.

An vnwoor-  
thy rewarde  
for soo greate  
paynes.

His brother, or ageynst his aduerclaries whiche accused hym,  
I doo not wel knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the  
brethrene are taken, broughe, and cast in prison, with their  
goodes confiscate. But as soone as the kynge vnderstoode  
that they were broughe bounde to Caes, he sent messengers  
in poste, with commaundemente that they shulde bee loosed  
and coome freely to his presence: wherby he declared that he  
tooke theyr troubles greenoulye. It is also sayde, that the  
newe gouernour sent letters to the kynge, wytten with the  
Admiralles hande in straunge and vnkowen sypherings, to  
his brother the Lieutenaut beinge absente, wyllynge hym  
to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to coome and  
ayde hym if the Gouernour shulde profer hym any violence.  
Wherof the gouernour hauinge knowleage (as he saythe) be-  
inge also aduertised that the Lieutenaut was gonne to his  
brother before the men which he had prepared were in a red-  
nes, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude  
came togyther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moste trewe and  
prudent Judge, wyl declare. Thus fare ye well.

### The eyghth booke of the fyrste Decade, to Cardinall Lodouike,

The Ocean  
seaheretofore  
vnkowen.



Shipmasters  
vnder the Ad-  
miral.

The fiftē por-  
tion dewe to  
the kynge.

The navigati-  
on of Petrus  
Alphonfus.

He greate ryche, and plentifull Ocean sea,  
heretofore vnkowen, and nowe founde by  
Christophorus Colonus the Admirall, by thauto-  
ritie and furtherance of the Catholyke kynge,  
I haue presented vnto your honoure (ryght  
noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnto your  
manly wrought. But your hall nowe re-  
ceiue a precious iewel to bee appendaunt thereto. Therefore ce-  
munge suche as were pplottes or gouernoures vnder the Ad-  
mirall, and had dyligently marked the courses and differen-  
ces of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the  
kynge to seeke further of theyr owne charges, vppon condici-  
on to pay hym faithfully his portion, which is the fyrst part.  
But bycause amonge all other, one Petrus Alphonfus cauled Nig-  
on by his surname) sayled towarde the South with more  
prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first  
to speake somewhat of his vyage. He therfore, with only one  
Shippe

Shippe, well furnyshed at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte with commaundement in no case to castle anker passe fyfte leaques distant from any place where the Admyrall hadde touched, sayled fyfte to *Paria* where the Admyrall founde bothe the men and women soo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and braselettes of pearles, as wec haue sayde before. Coastyng therfore alonge by the same shore accordinge to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapania*) he came to the Region which thynhabitantes thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he found a haven (as he saythe) muche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cades*. In to the which enteringe, he sawe a farre of certeyne howses on the shore, and perceaued when he drew nere, that it was a bylage of onely eyght howses. Proceadyng yet further for the space of thre myles, he espyed an other bylage well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyfte naked men on a company hauinge with them a certeyne ruler, who desired *Alphosus* to coome to theyr coastes. He brought with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pyntes, nedels, braselettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet stones and glasse, and such other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for. xv. vnces of theyr pearles which they wore aboute theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more earnestly desired him to sayle to theyr coastes: Promysyng hym that he shulde there haue as many pearles as he wolde desire. He condescended to their requeste: And the daye folowyng, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multitude of people resorted to hym, instantly requyringe hym to coome alande. But when he considered the innumerable multitude of people which was there assembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his company, he durste not comyt hym selfe to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderstand by signes and tokens that they shulde coome to the shippe with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Island caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the *Islandes*: yet more rude, and not soo artificially as theys are. These they caule *Gallitas*: They swarmed therfore to the shippe as faste as they myght, bringinge with them great plentie of pearles (which they caule *Tenorais*) exchaunginge the same for

*Paria**Cumana*  
*Manacapania*  
*Curiana*

pearles for tryfels.

Great plentie of pearles.

humayne people.

## The fyrst decade.

Shel fythea  
in which per-  
les are engen-  
ded.  
Beastes and  
fowles.

Hunters and  
archers.

Theyr maner  
of bargening

The vse of  
pynces,

Haukes bels  
in great esti-  
mation.

Roringe of  
Wylde beastes

Hartes and  
Wylde bores.

More marchaundies. He founde this people to bee of gentyl nature, simple and innocent, beinge conuersant with them in theyr houses, for the space of .xx. dayes. Theyr houses are made of woodde, couered with the leaues of date trees. Theyr meate for the moste parte, is the Welyfishes in the whi che pearles are engendred, wherof theyr sea coastes are ful. They haue also greate plentie of wylde beastes, as hartes, wylde bores, and conys lyke unto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke dones also, and turtle dones. Lykewyse geese and duckes which they nooythe in theyr houses as wee doo. Peacokes flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not distinct with sundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke unto the hennes. These people of *Curina*, are craftie hunters and exceding cunning archers, soo that they wyll not lyghtly mysse any beast or byrde that they shoote at. More men consumed certeyne dayes here very pleasauntely. Durynge which tyme, who soo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the same, foure pynces. He that brought a pheasant, had twoo: And for a stocke done or turtle done, one: And for a goose, a smaul lookyng glasse or a lyttle stone of glasse. Thus they bought and soulede with proferynge and byddyngge, denyngge and refusynge as it had byn in a greate market. When pynces were profered them, they asked what they shulde doo with them, beinge naked. But more men satisfified them with a craftie answer, declaring by tokens that they were very necessary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thoznes owte of theyr fleshe. But aboue al thynge haukes belles were most esteemed amonge them, for theyr sounde & faire coloure: And wolde therfore gyue much for one of the. More men lodgyng in theyr houses, harde in the nyght season hozryble noyses and rozynges of wylde beastes in the wooddes which are full of excedyng greate and hygh trees of sundry kyndes. But the beastes of these wooddes, are not noysome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with theyr bowes and arrowes: yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn slayne of any wylde beaste. As many hartes or wylde bores as more men wolde desyre them to bynngge, they wolde kyll in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to bynngge theim. They lacke kyne, goates, & sheepe, Theyr breade is made of rootes,

as is theyrs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare,  
grosse and sumwhat curlede, yet longe also. They keepe theyr  
teeth very whyte: And for that purpose vse to cary a certeine  
herbe betwene theyr lippes for the most parte of the day, and  
to walsh the theyr mouthes when they cast it away. The women  
doo all theyr busynes at home in theyr howses, and haue al-  
so the cure of ryllage of the grounde. But the men apply them  
selues to the warres and huntynge, to playe, singynge and  
daunsing. They haue sundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges,  
and drynkinge cuppes made of carthe in other places abowt  
theym and brought thether for exchange of other thynges:  
for they vse fayres and markettes for the same purpose: and  
are greatly despyous of such thynges, as are not brought forth  
or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a dispositi-  
on to al men to desyre and bee dellyted with newe and strange  
thynges. Many of them, had hangynge at theyr pearles, the  
Iimages of certeine beastes and birdes very artificiously made  
of golde, but not pure. These also are brought them from o-  
ther places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wher-  
of they are made, is native, and of much lyke finenes to that  
wherof the flozenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, in  
close theyr priuie members in a gourde, cutte after the fashion  
of a coddpiece: or els, couer the same with the shelle of a toz  
toyle, tyed abowt theyr loynes with laces of gossampine cot-  
ton. In other places of that tract, they thrust the synels with  
in the sheerthe therof, and bynde the skinne fast with a stringe.  
The greate wylde beastes wherof wee spake befoze, and many  
other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes,  
testifie that this regio is part of the continēt or firme land. But  
the chiefest obiection wherby they argue the same, is, that by  
the coastes of that lande, from *Paris* towarde the weste, they  
sayled aboute thre thousande myles, fyndynge no signe or  
token of any ende. These people of *Curiana* (whiche sum caule  
*Curiana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde suche plentie of  
golde, signified that it was brought them from a Region cau-  
led *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, being distant from them syxe soones,  
that is, syxe dayes iourney westwarde: And that theyr Ima-  
ges of goulde, were made in the same Region. Where vppon  
owre men directed theyr vyage thither immediatly: and arry-  
ued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the yere of Christ

A.ii.

a thia:

Blacke and  
curlede heare.  
White teethe.

Earthen Vessels.

Connyng and  
artificers.

Base golde.

A strange ma-  
ner of couer-  
ynge theyr pri-  
uities.

Tokes of the  
continent or  
firme lande.

The golden  
Regio of Can-  
chieta.

## The fyrst decade.

a thousande and fyue hundreth. The people of the countrey resorted to them without feare, bryngynge with them of the golde which we sayde to bee natyue in that Region. This people had also collers of pearles aboute theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frōme *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchange any of those thinges which they had owt of other countreys: as nother the *Curians* golde, nor the *Canchietans* pearles. yet amonge the *Canchietans*, they soloude but litle gold redy gathered. They toke with thē fro thense, certen very fayre marmasets or munkeys, & many poppingayes of sundry coloures. In the monethe of *November*, the ayer was there most temperate, & nothyng coulde. The gardens of the north pole, were owt of syght to bothe these people, they are soo nere to the *Equinoctial* lyne. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accompte. These people, are wel disposed men, of honest condicions, and nothyng suspicious. For all most all the nyght longe, they resorted to the shippe with theyr boates, and went aboarde ship withoute feare, as dyd the *Curians*. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are sumwhat icyous. For, when any straungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd thē. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the gossampine trees growe of them selues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and salowes. And therfore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherwith they coouer theyr pryue partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet sayled on forwarde by the same coastes, there came forth ageynste them aboute two thousande men, armed after theyr maner, forbydding them to coome aland. These people were soo rude and saluage, that owtre men coulde by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Owtre men therfore, contentred only with their pearles, returned hacke the same way they came: where they remayned with the *Curians* continually for the space of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellies wel with good meate. And here it seemeth to me, not farre from my purpose, to declare what chanced vnto them in theyr returne, when they came nowe within the syght of the coaste of *Paria*. They happened therfore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee spake before) to meete with a nauie of .xviii. Canoes of *Canibales* which went a rouyng to hunt for mē. Who  
as soone

Temperate  
ayer in *Novem-*  
*ber*.  
The *Equino-*  
*ctial* lyne.

Humane peo-  
ple.

Gossampine  
trees.

Chollyshe  
people

*Alphōsus* re-  
turneth to  
*Paria*.

*Canibales* in  
the goulfes  
of *Paria*.

Soone as they had espied ovr men, assailed theyr shippe fiercely and without feare enclosed the same, disturbing ovr men on euery syde with theyr arrowes. But ovr men so feared them with theyr gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom ovr menne folowinge with the shippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with hym, an other man bolwnde: Who, with teares runninge downe his cheekes, and with gesture of his handes, eyes, and heade, signified that syre of his companions had byn cruelly cutte in pieces and eaten of that mylchuous nation: and that he schulde haue byn lykewyse handled the day folowynge. Wherfore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the Canibales owne clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dyue with hande and foote, grinninge and frettinge as it had byn a wyld boze: Thinkynge that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companions, when he had beaten ovr his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what sorte the Canibales were woont to inuade other countries, he answered that they euer vsed to carpe with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where soo euer they lande, they pitche in the grownde, and encampe them selues within the compasse of the same, to lye the moze safely in the nyght season. In *Curiana*, they fownde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales, nailed ouer the dooze of a certeyne gouernoure, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the standerde or helmette taken from the enemye in battayle. In these coastes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Harida*, in the whiche, greate plentie of salte is gathered after a strange sorte. For the sea beinge there tossed with the poure of the wyndes, dryueth the salte waters into a large playne by the sea syde: where: afterward when the sea waxeth calme, and the soonne begynnethe to shyne, the water is congeled into mosse pure and whyte salte, wherewith innumerable Gyppes might bee laden, if men doo resorte thither for the same beefore there faule any rayne. For the rayne melte the it, and caueth it to synke into the sande, and soo by the pores of the earthe, to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other say, that the playne is not fylled from the sea, but of certeyne springes whose water is moze sharpe and salt than the water

Death for  
death.

howe the canibales fortifie their campe

*Harida.*  
Salte engendred of the water of the sea.

Sprynge of  
of salt water.

## The fyrst decade.

The bodies  
of princes dy  
ed & reserved

Threescore &  
xvi. poundes  
weight of per  
les for .v. spil  
lynges.  
The course of  
the sea to  
ward the  
weste.

perles as co:  
mo as chaffe  
petrus Alpho  
sus in prison

Orient perles  
as bygge as  
hasell nuttes.

water of the sea. The inhabitants doo greatlye esteeme this  
bay of salte. Which they vse, not only for theyr owne commo  
ditie, but also woorkinge the same into a square forme lyke  
unto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other  
thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they stretche  
and dnye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, lay  
inge the same vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vn  
to a huddle or grediven, with a gentell fyze vnder the same,  
thus by lpytle and lpytle consuminge the fleshe and keepinge  
the skynne hole with the bones inclosed therein. These dnyed  
carcales, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for  
theyr household and famplier goddes. They say that in this  
place they sawe a man, and in an other place a woman, thus  
dnyed and reserved. When they departed from *Curiana*, the viii  
day of the Ides of february to returne to Spayne, they had  
thzee scoze and .xvi. poundes weight (after .viii. unces to the  
pounde) of perles, whiche they bought for exchange of othere  
thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue thyllinges. Depar  
tinge therfore, they consumed thzee scoze dayes in theyr iour  
ney (althowgh it were shorter then frome *Hispaniola*) by reason  
of the contynuall course of the sea into the weste, whiche dyd  
not only greatlye stepe the shippe, but also sumtymes dnyue it  
backe. But at the length they came home soo laden with per  
les, that they were with euery maryner, in maner as common  
as chaffe. But the master of the shippe, *Petrus Alphonsus*, beinge  
accused of his coompanyons that he had stowlen a great mul  
titude of precious perles, and defrauded the kynge of his por  
tion whiche was the fyueyth parte, was taken of *Fernando de Va  
ga*, a man of greate learninge and experiance and gofernouer of  
*Gallecia*, where they arryued, and was there kepte in pryson a  
longe tyme. But he styll denyethe that euer he deteyned anye  
partre of the perles. Many of these perles were as bygge as  
hasell nuttes, and oriente, (as we caule it) that is, lyke vnto  
them of the East partes. yet not of soo greate pryce, by rea  
son that the holes therof are not soo perfecte. When *Jmy*  
selfe was presente with the ryght honozable duke of *Meibyns*,  
and was bidden to dnyer with hym, in the citie of *Liulle*, they  
bryowght to hym aboue a hundreth and twentie unces of per  
les to be soulede: whiche surely did greatlye delyte me with their  
fayrenes and brightnes, Sum saye, that *Alphonsus* hadde nog  
these

these perles in *Curiana* being distante from *Os Draconis* moze the a hundredth and twentie leagues, but that he had them in the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapaná*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is any perles folowde in *Curiana*. But sicke the matter is yet in controuersie, we wyll passe to other matters. Thus muche yowe haue wherby yowe maye conjecture what commoditie in tyme to come may bee looked for from these newe landes of the west Ocean, wheras at the fyrst discoveringe, they shewe such tokens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

*Curiana*  
*Os Draconis.*  
*Cumana.*  
*Manacapaná.*  
The Ilande of  
*Margarita.*

The .ix. booke of the fyrst Decade  
to Cardynall Lodouike,



*V*nceniagnes *Pinxonus*, and also *Aries Pinxonus*, his newie, by his brothers syde, which accompanied the Admirall *Colonus* in his fyrste vyage, and were by him appoynted to bee masters of twoo of the smaule shippes which the Spaniards caule *Carauelas*, beinge mooued by the greate ryches and amplytude of the newe landes, furnished of theyr owne charges, foure carauels in the haven of theyr owne countrey which the Spaniards caule *Palos*, boztheringe on the weste Ocean. Hauynge therfore the kynges licence and passeporte to departe, they loosed fro the haven, aboute the Calendes of December, in the yeare 1499. This haven of *Palos* is thre scoze and twelue myles distant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cales*: and thre scoze and foure myles from *Liule*. All thynhabitantes of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly gyuen to searchinge of the sea, and continually exercised in sayling. They also directed their vyage fyrst to the Ilandes of *Canarie* by the Ilandes of *Hesperides*, now cauled *Caboverde*, which sum caule *Gorgodes Meducius*. Saylinge therfore directly towarde the southe frome that Ilande of the *Hesperides* which the Portugales (being possessers of the same) caule *Sancti Iacobi*, and departinge frome thense at the Ides of January, they solowed the southwest wynde, beinge in the myddest betwene the south and the weste. When they supposed that they had sayled aboute thre hundred the leagues by the same wynde, they say that they losse the syght  
of

The nauigaton of *Vinceniagus* and *Aries Pinxonus*.

Licence and passeporte.

*Cales. Ciulle.*

The Ilandes of *Canarie Caboverde.*

*S. James Ilande.*

## The fyrst decade.

The North  
pole owre of  
syght.

Habitable Re-  
gions vnder  
the Equinoctial  
lynne.

An other or-  
der of starres  
A thicke mist

A ryfinge in  
the myddest  
of the earth.

of the North starre : and were shortlye after, tossed with  
exceedinge tempestes bothe of wynde and sea, and bered with  
intollerable heate. yet sayled they on further (not without  
greate daunger) for the space of twoo hundrethe and fortie  
leagues, folowing yet the same wynde by the lost pole. Wher-  
fore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall  
lynne or not, let these men and the owlde wyrters, aswel phi-  
losophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these  
men, ascrue it to bee habitable, and maruelously replenished  
with people : and they, that it is uninhabitable by reason of  
the soone beames dependinge perpendicularly or directlye or  
uer the same. yet were there many of the oulde wyrters, whi-  
che attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners beinge  
demaunded, if they sawe the south pole, they answered that  
they knewe no starre there lyke vnto this pole, that myght be  
decerned aboute the poynte. But that they sawe an other or-  
der of starres, and a certeyne thicke myst rylonge from the ho-  
rizontall lynne, which greatly hyndered theyr syght. They con-  
tende also, that there is a great heape or rylonge in the myd-  
dest of the earth, which taketh away the syght of the southe  
pole, vntyll they haue vterly passed ouer the same. But they  
verely beleue that they sawe other images of starres, muche  
differinge from the situation of the starres of oure hemispher-  
re or halfe circle of heauen. Howe soo euer the matter bee, as  
they informe vs, wee certifie youe. At the lengthe, the se-  
uenth day of the calendes of Februarye, they espied lande a  
farrre of. And seinge the water of the sea to bee troubelous,  
foundinge with theyr plummet, they founde it to bee .xvi. fa-  
thames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarienge there for the  
space of twoo dayes, they departed bycause they sawe no peo-  
ple serringe, althoughe they founde certeyne stappes of men  
by the sea syde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the stones  
nere vnto the shore, the kynges name and theyrs, and the  
tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farrre frō  
this station, folowynge the spers on the lande by nyght, they  
founde a nation lynge vnder the open firmamente after the  
manner of warre. Oure men thought it not beste to trouble  
them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the rylonge of the  
moone, fortie of oure men well armed, wente toward them :  
ageynst whom came furth, .xxxii. of them, with bowes, ringes  
and

and dartes, enen redy to the feyght. The other coompanye folowed them, armed after the same maner. Oure men affirme that they were of hygher stature then eyther the Almaynes or Spannonians. They behelde oure men with feawynge and threatenynge countenance. But oure men thoughte it not good to faule to bickeringe wylth them, vncerteyn whether it were for feare, or bycause they wolde not dyne the to alyght. Wherfore they went aboute to allure them by faue meanes & rewarde. But they refused all kynde of gentelnes, & stood euer in a redynes to feyght, declaringe the same by signes and tokens. Thus oure men resorted to theyz shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further busynes. The same nyght aboute mydnyght; they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Oure men suppose them to bee a vagabunde and wanderyng nation lyke vnto the Scythians, withoute houses or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the frutes of the earth; hauing theyz wyues and chyldren folowinge them. Such as measured their footestepes in the sande, affirme with greate othes, that one of theyz feete is almost as longe as thoo feete of oure men of the meane sorte. Saylinge dyper further, they founde a ryuer, but not of deapth sufficient to beare the carauels. They sent therfore the foure shippe boates to land; full of armed men to search the countrey. They espyed vppon a hygh hylle nere vnto the sea syde, a greate multitude of people, to whom oure companye sent furthe one man with certeyne of oure thynges to allure them to cerryunge. And when he had cast a hawks bell towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubere longe. The which as he stouped to take vppe, they suddenlye inlosed hym, and carped hym awaye. But he was shortly after released by his coompanyons; to sum of their paynes: for they shote eyght of oure men, and wounded many a farrre of, with theyz arrowes; and dartes made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they entoomparfed oure shippe boates within the ryuer, and came vnto the mouth of the ryuer, where they were thrust thowgh and broken in peeces as it had byn steepe; by reason they were naked. For wolde they not for al this; gyue ouer; but tooke from oure men one of their boates, hauing nod men in it. For the generous they

people of  
hygh stature.

A vagabunde  
kynde of men

signes.

bus of hys  
boates

desperate  
boldenes

## The fyrst decade.

A sea of fre-  
the water.

many fruite-  
full Ilandes.

humane  
people.

Maratāball.  
Camomorus.  
Paricora.

Regions of  
Paria.

Golde and  
perles.

Os Draconis.

Cumana.  
Manacapanā.  
Curiana

The hole  
earth largely  
taken, maye  
bee cauled  
an Ilande.  
Maragonus  
a ryuer of ex-  
ceedinge  
breadth and  
full of Ilands  
looke Decade  
liber. ij.

of being slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they lefte this fierce and warlike people, saylinge toward the northweste alonge by the same coastes, with forrowfull hartes for the death of theyr companions. When they had sayled abowte .xl. leaques, they chanced into a sea of suche frethe water; that they fylled theyr banelles and hogges heades therewith. Searching the cause hereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of ryuers descended with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greete hylles. They say also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitefull Ilandes, and well inhabited: And that the inhabitants of this tracte are men of meeke nature and suche as doo not refuse strangers: yet lyttle profitable to them, bycause they had noo marchandyses for their purpose, as golde or pryecious stones. For lacke wherof, they brought from thence thyrrie captiues to sell for slaues. The inhabitants caule this Region *Maratāball*. The Region of the easse parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weste parte, *Paricora*: in the midlande wherof, the inhabitants signified that there is greete plenty of golde: For folowynge this ryuer directly toward the North (as the heedynge of the shoie requyred) they recovered ageyne the sight of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, perteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrst founde by *Colonus* hym selfe, and hath in maner in euery place, greete abundaunce of pearles. They saye that these coastes are adioynnge vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also ho: theynge vppon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapanā*, *Curiana*, *Cauchiana*, and *Quechubocā*: Wherfore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India: beyonge the ryuer of *Ganges*: For the greete and large compasse therof, dothe not permitte that it shoulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, maye bee cauled an Ilande. From the poynte of that land wher they lost the sight of the north pole, saylynge by a continuall tracke abowte thre hundredeth leaques toward the weste syde of *Paria*: they say that almoste in the mydde way, they chanced into a ryuer cauled *Marignonum*, which they affirme to bee of such exceedinge breadth, that it myght seeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not salte water where it diuided the lande, they answered, that the wa-  
ter

ter therof was very fresche and sweete : And that the further  
it ranne, to bee soo muche the fresher : Also full of Ilandes &  
homsome fyre. They dare auouche the breadth therof, to bee  
more then thirrie leagues. Yet if wee well weighe and consy-  
der the largenes and wydenes of *Borisstomea* and *Spiriostomea*, the  
mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Yler* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) &  
howe farre they violare or corrupte the salte water with their  
freshenes, wee shall cease to maruelle; althowgh this other ry-  
uer bee greater. For, who can dimynyshe the poure of nature,  
but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other  
bygger then this. And I suppose this to bee the ryuer wher-  
of *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the discription of his  
vyage in these coastes. But wee shall hereafter haue further  
knowleage hereof. Let vs nowe therfore returne to the com-  
modities of these Regions. They founde in many Ilandes a  
kynde of *Paria*, great wooddes of brasile trees : And brought a-  
waye with them, thre thousande poundes weight thereof.  
They say that the brasile of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then  
this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. Fro  
hence, folowynge the wynde (whiche the Spanyarde caule  
*Nordwest*, and the Italians *Graco*) they passed by many Ilandes  
very fructifull, yet lesse desolate and wasted by reason of the  
crueltie of the *Tamballes*. For they wente alande in many pla-  
ces, and founde the ruines of many destroyed howses. Yet in  
sum places, they founde men, but those excreadinge fearefull,  
fyinge to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the sight  
of euery straunger or shippe, and wanderinge without howses  
or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the *Tamballes* lay-  
inge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde those  
great trees which of the selues in dyuers places bringe furth  
the fruite or spice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Cassia fistula* :  
And that of noo lesse goodnes then that whiche the phisitians  
minister to such as bee diseased with the ague. But it was not  
ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of  
suche byggenes, that xvi. men ioyninge handes togyther and  
standinge in coompasse, can scarcely embrace sum of them. Be-  
monge these trees is founde that monstrous beaste with a  
snout lyke a fore, a tayle lyke a marmasette, eares lyke a  
batte, handes lyke a man, and fecte lyke an ape, bearing her  
whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye muche lyke

I.ii.

vnto

*Borisstomea*,  
and *Spirio-  
stomea*, mou-  
thes of the  
ryuer of *Da-  
nubius*,

The commo-  
dities of the  
Regions and  
Ilandes a-  
bout *paria*.  
*Brasile*.

many fructifull  
Ilandes lesse  
desolate.

*Canibales*.

Trees of *Cas-  
sia fistula*.

Trees of mar-  
uelous bygge-  
nes.  
A monstrous  
beaste.

The fyrst decade.

into a greate bagge or purse. The deade carcas of this beaste,  
you sawe with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yolore  
owne handes, marueplynge at that newe belly and wonderz  
full prouision of nature. They say it is knowen by experience,  
that shee neuer letteth her whelpes goo owte of that purse, ex  
cept it bee epyther to play, or to sucke, vntyl suche tyme that  
they bee able to gette theyr lyuing by them selues. They tooke  
this beaste with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyed shortly  
after in the shypes, yet the damme liued certeyne moonerthes.  
But at the length, not beinge able to abyde soo greate altera  
tion of aper, and chaunge of meate, shee dyed also in the way.  
But of this beaste, wee haue sayde enowgh. Let vs now the  
fore returne to the autoures of these thynges. These twoo *Pis  
xpm*, the vnckle and the neue, susceyned manye great troubles  
and horrible tempestes and perilles in this navigation. For  
when they had nowe sayled by the coastes of *Papie* abowte, vii  
hundredeth leagues, and (as they supposed) beyonde the cite  
of *Cathay* and the coastes of *Easte India* beyonde the ryuer of  
*Ganges*, there rose suddenly soo fierce a tempeste in the moone  
neth of *July*, that, of the foure carauels which they had with  
them, twoo were broken euery befoze they eyes: and the  
thyrde lyege at anker, with lyke goodennes carped owte of  
theyr syght throught the violence of the tempeste: The fourth  
also lyege at anker, was soo shaken and broosed, that al the  
feames therof were almost loosed, yet came they to lande owte  
of this laste shyppe, but wterlye despayrre of the shyppe.  
Wherfoze consulyngge with them selues what was best to bee  
doone in soo extreme a case, and how to prouide them a safe  
dwellinge place in those Regions beinge owte of al hope how  
to departre from thense, they determined to slep all the inhabi  
tantes of the contrey nere abowte them, leasse they with the  
other shulde conspire togyther to kyl them, but theyr fortune  
was better. For the carauell which the tempeste had carped a  
way, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it, xviii. men:  
And the other that remayned, was saued and repayred. With  
these twoo therfoze, they tooke theyr wyage directly to *Spaine*.  
And thus beinge toiled with tempestes and hered with aduer  
sities, they returned to theyr native contrey of *Pylos*, to theyr  
wyues and children, the day befoze the Calendes of *October*,  
with the losse of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours.  
They

Alteracion of  
aper & chage  
of meate

*Cathay* in *In  
dia* beyonde  
the ryuer of  
*Ganges*  
A shipwreake  
by tempest.

Extreme re-  
medie in a  
desperat case

they brought with them Cinamome and gynger: but not be-  
 ry good, bycause they were not there fully seasoned with the  
 heate of the soone before they brought them frō thense. They  
 brought also, certeyne precious stones, whiche *Baptista Elysus.*  
 that excellent philolopher and yowre lordeshippes phisician,  
 affirmeth to bee trewe Topases. After these mens returne, or  
 ther of theyz neighbours beinge moued thereto by a certeyne  
 emulation, to proue yf theyz fortune wolde bee anye better,  
 lyke men of good corage, beinge nothing discomforted by the  
 harde fortune of theyz neighbours, knowinge that it often  
 tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an  
 other mans makynge, attempted a newe vyage towarde the  
 solythe by the coastes of *Pavia*, folowynge the steppes of *Colo-*  
*nus* the Admiral, who had fyrst discovered the same. They also  
 brought with them greate plentie of *Cassa fistula*: And folownde  
 that precious medecine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Anima album*,  
 whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the veumes,  
 murrres, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage,  
 as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to  
 certifie yow of. Wherefore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this  
 booke, bycause yow put me so often in remembrance of your  
 departure. yet to accomplyshe the Decade, I wyll declare  
 sumwhat of the superstitions of *Hispaniola*. yow shall nowe  
 therfore vnderstand the illusions wherwith the people of the  
 Ilande haue byn seduced after the errours of the owlde gen-  
 tilitic, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndenes of hu-  
 mane nature corrupted by the disobedience of ovr fyrst paren-  
 tes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the  
 earth, except where it hath pleased god by the lyght of his sp-  
 rite by his woorde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of re-  
 nouation, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenes recea-  
 uerh some clearenes as in a glasse, vnyll imperfection shalbe  
 abolyshed. Ovr men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of  
*Hispaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede  
 any other thyng the the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other  
 Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuersante  
 with them, and by vnderstandyng their language, drew to a  
 further familiaritie, they had knowleage that they vsed dy-  
 uers ryles and superstitions. I haue therefore gathered these  
 fewe thynges folowynge, owte of a booke wyrtten by one  
 Ramo:

Cinamome  
and gynger

Topases.

men of noble  
corage.

A nother  
vyage

*Anima album*.

The supersti-  
tions of His-  
paniola.  
The errours  
of the owlde  
gentilitie.

The grace of  
renouation.

## The fyrst decade.

**Ramenus an heremyte.** *Ramonus* an heremyte, whom *Colonus* had lefte with certeyne kynges of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian fayth, And bycause in maner their hole religion is none other thing then *I*dolatry, I wyll begynne at theyr *I*doles. It is therfoze apparente by the *I*mages which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte seasons certeyne phantasies and illusions of euyll spirites, seducinge them into many sonde and folye errors. For they make certeyne *I*mages of gossampine cotton foulded or wretted after theyr maner, and harde stopped within. These *I*mages they make sytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of spyttes and deuelles which our paynters are accustomed to paine bypon wauls. But forasmuch as I my selfe sent yowre fauour of these *I*mages, yowre may better presently signifie vnto the kyng yowre vncke, what maner of thynges they are, & howe lyke vnto paynted deuelles, then I can expresse the same by wyrtynge. These *I*mages, thynhabitanter caule *Zemes*: wher of the leaste, made to the lyknes of younge deuels, they bind to theyr forheades when they goo to the warres ageynst their enemies: And for that purpose haue they those strynges hangyng at them which yowre see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyle saye wether. For they thinke that these *Zemes* are the mediatours and messengers of the greate god, whom they acknowledge to be only one, eternall, withowte ende, omnipotent and inuisible. Thus euery kyng hath his particuler *Zemes* which he honourereth. They caule the eternall god, by these twoo names, *Iocanna*, and *Guamonocon*, as theyr predicatours taught them. As touching that he hath a father cauled by these fyue names: that is, *Attabeira*, *Mamona*, *Guacarapita*, *Liella*, *Guimaxoa*. Howe shall yowre heare what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled *Caunani*, wher they saye that mankynde came fyrst owte of twoo caues of a mountayne: and that the byggest sorte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggest caue, and the least sorte owte of the leaste caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they caule *Caita*. The greatest denne, they name *Cazibaxagua*, and the leste *Amadama*. They say, that befoze it was lawfull for men to come forth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kepte and watched nyghtly by a man whose name was *Michochoael*, This *Ma-*  
*chochoael*

**Ramenus an heremyte.**

**I**dolatry and Idoles.

**I**llusions of euyl spirites.

**I**mages of gossampine cotton.

**Zemes,**  
younge deuyls.

**M**ediatours.

**O**nly one god eternall.  
The names of god.

**T**he father of god.

**T**he originall of man kynde

**F**ables much lyke Coude his transformatious.

*Isachael*, departinge sumwhat farre from the caue to thintente to see what thynges were abrode, was soodcnly taken of the soonne (whose sight he was forbydden) and was turned into a stone. They sayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went forth in the nyghte season a fyfthynge, so farre from the caue that they coulde not returne befoze the rylsynge of the soone (the which it was not lawfull for them to behold) they were transformed into myzobalane trees, which of them selues growe plentifully in the Ilande. They saye further: more, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, sent one furth of the caue to goo a fyfthynge, who by lyke chaunce was turned into a nyghtyngale bycause the soonne was rysen befoze he came ageyne to the caue: And that yeaerlye abovte the same tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moozynyng longe bewaile his mylfortune, and caule for the helpe of his maister *Vagoniona*. And this they thynke to bee the cause why that byrde singeth in the nyght season. But *Vagoniona*, beinge sore troubled in his mynd for the losse of his famillier frende whom he loued soo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought forth onely the women with theyr sutchynge chyldren, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that tracte, cauled *Matuino*, and carped the chyldren awaye with hym: which pooze wretches oppressed with famine, faimted and remained on the bank of a certeyne ryuer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed *toa, toa*, that is, *mama, mama*, as chyldren are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they say it cometh that frogges vse to crye so pytifully in the sprynge tyme of the yeare: And that men were scattered abrode in the caues of *Hispaniola* withowte the compayne of women. They say also, that whereas *Vagoniona* hym selfe, was accustomed to wander in dyuers places, and yet by a speciall grace, neuer transformed, descended to a certeyne fayze woman whom he sawe in the bottome of the sea, and receaued of her certeyne pibble stones of marble (whiche they caule *Cibas*) and also certeyne yelowe and bright plates of laron, whiche they caule *Guaminos*. These thynges to this daye are had in greate estimation amonge the kynges, as goodly iewels and most holy reliques. These men whiche we sayde befoze were lefte in the caues withowte women, went furth in the nyght (as they say) to walke them selues in a ponde of raine water and sawe

The original  
of *Mitobalane*  
trees.

The nightingale.

The Iland of  
*Matuino*.

Children turned  
into frogges.

A speciall  
grace.

poly reliques

## The fyrst decade.

women are  
slippery cat-  
tayle.  
Al wise dome  
Sothe not by  
age.

here nedeth  
sum tropolo-  
gicall inter-  
pretour.

Myrmidones  
preachers  
for the deuyll.

A vengeable  
greate gourd.

The originall  
of the sea.

and salbe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certein  
beastes in shape sumwhat lyke vnto women, creping as thicke  
as antes aboute the myzobalane trees: And that as they at-  
tempted to take these beastes, they slipped ower of their han-  
des as they had byn yeles. Where vppon they consulted, and  
determined byrhaduice of the elders, that al suche shulde bee  
sought foorth amonge them, as were scabbyd and leprous,  
to thincence that with theyr rologhe and harde handes, they  
myght theselyer take holde of them. These men, they caule  
*Caracacoles*: And sente them foorth a huntinge to take these  
beastes. But of many which they tooke, they coulde keepe but  
only foure: The whiche as they wolde haue vsed for women,  
they founde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore  
caulunge thelders ageyne to counsaile, to consult what were  
beste to bee done in this case, theyr aduice was that the byrde  
which wee caule the *Dyc*, shuld bee admitted with his byll to  
open a place for that purpose, whyle in the meane tyme these  
men cauled *Caracacoles*, shulde hold fast the womens thighes  
abrode with theyr rologh handes. Full wplye therfore was  
the ppe put to this office, and opened the womens priuities,  
and hereof the women of the Flannde haue theyr original and  
offspringe. But nowe doo I cease to marueyle that the olde  
Brekes dyd fable and wyte to manye bookes of the people  
cauled *Myrmidones*, which they sayned to bee engendred of an-  
tes or pisseners. These and suche lyke, the sagest and wplyest  
of the people, preache continually to the simple sorte, and re-  
herse the same as moste holy oracles. But it is yet more chyl-  
dylle that they fable as touchinge the originall of the sea. For  
they saye that there was once in the Flannde, a man of greate  
power, whose name was *Lala*: whose only soonne being dead,  
he burped hym within a greate gourd. This *Lala*, greuouslye  
takyng the death of his soonne, after a fewe moonthes, came  
ageyne to the gourd: The whiche when he had opened, there  
issued forth many great whales and other monsters of the  
sea: where vppon he declared to suche as dwelt aboute hym,  
that the sea was enclosed in that gourd. By which report,  
foure brethren (bozne of one woman who dyed in her traual)  
being moued, came to the gourd in hope to haue many syl-  
ues. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and  
espied *Lala* comming, (who oftentymes resorted to the gourd

to viset the boones of his loonne, fearing least he shulde suspecte them of thefte and sacrileage, sodaynly let the gourde faule owte of theyr handes: which beinge broken in the faule the sea furthwith brake owte at the ryftes therof, and so fylled the bales, & ouerflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche now conteyne the Islandes which are seene in those coastes. And this is the oppinion of theyr wyse men as concernynge thoriginall of the sea. But nowe (most noble prince) you shall heare a moze pleasaunt fable. There is a certeyne caue cauled *Iouanaboia*, in the territorye of a certeyne kynge whose name is *Machinnech*. This caue they honour moze religiously then dyd the Grekes in tyme paste, *Cozynth*, *Cyrrha*, or *Myra*: And haue adourned it with pictures of a thousand fashions. In thenterance of this caue they haue two grauen *Zemes*, wherof the one is cauled *Bintath*, and the other *Murobu*. Beinge demaunded why they had this caue in soo greate reuerence, they answered earnestly, because the Soonne and the Moone came fyrst owte of the same to gyue lyght to the worlde. They haue religious concourse to these caues, as wee are accustomed to goo on *Pygramage* to *Rome* or *Vaticane*, *Compossele*, or *Hierusalem*, and most holye and heade places of owre Religion. They are also subiect to an other kynde of superstition. For they thinke that deade folkes walke in the nyght, and eate of the fruite cauled *Quarababa*, vnknewen vnto vs, and sumwhat lyke vnto a quynse. Affirmyng also that they are conuersant with lyuing people, euen in theyr beddes, and to deceaue women in rakyng vpon them the shape of men, shewynge them selues as though they wold haue to doo with them: But when the matter cometh to actual deede, soodenly to vanysh away. If any doo suspecte that a deade body lyeth by hym when he feeleth anye straunge thynge in the bedde, they say hee shall be owte of dout by feelyng of the belly therof: affirmyng that the spirites of deade men may take vpon them al the members of mans body, sauynge only the nauell. If therfoze by lacke of the nauell he doo perceaue that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelyng is immediarly resolued. They helue verely, that in the nyght, and often tymes in theyr iourneys, and especially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meete with the lyuynge. Ageynste whome, if any man bee stout and owte of

M.i.

feate

The originall  
of Islandes.

A holy caue.

Images.

The originall  
of the soone  
and moone.  
pygramage.walkynge  
spytes.

Incubi.

A remedye  
ageynst wal-  
kyng spytes.

The fyrst decade.

Phantasies  
proceedynge  
of feare.

Al is not good  
that is owlde

Syngynge &  
playynge

Prestes and  
diuines.  
Phisicians.

Ignorance is  
poyshed  
with super-  
stition.

Fastyng and  
outward clen-  
lynnes.

A powder of  
maruelous  
effecte.

Juggelynge.

A strange ma-  
ner of curing

feare, the phantasye banysbeth incontinentely. But yf anye feare, the phantasye or vylion doth soo assaunte hym and stryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby astonysht and haue the tymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Thinhabyrantes beinge demaunded of whom they had those bayne superstitions, they answered that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers as by discent of inheritance: And that they haue had the same (befoze the memozy of man) composed in certeine rymes and songes, which it was lawfull for none to lerne but onely the kynges soones, who commytted the same to memozye, bycause they hadde neuer any knowleage of letters. A herte they syng befoze the people on certeyne solemne and festiuall dayes, as moste religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeyne instrumente made of one hole peece of woodde somewhat holowe lyke a tymbrill. These prestes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) instructe them in these superstitions. These prestes, are also phisicians, diuisinge a thousande craftes and subtylties howe to deceaue the simple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they persuaude them that the *Zemes* vse to speake with theym familiarlye, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin sicke & are recovered, they make them beleue that they obtayned theyr healthe of the *Zemes*. These *Boitii*, bynde them selues to muche fastynge and outwarde clenlynnes and pouzginges: Especially when they take vppon them the cure of any pynce. For then they drynke the powder of a certeyne herbe, by whose qualitie they are dryuen into a furye: At whiche tyme (as they say) they lerne many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttyng secretly in theyr mouches, eyther a stone, or a bone, or a picce of fleshe, they comme to the sicke person, commaunding al to departe owte of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it shall please the sicke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym thre or foure tymes, greatly deforminge theyr faces, lippes, and nosethryls with sundry fylthy gicures: blotynge, breachinge, and suckynge the foreheade, temples, and necke of the patient, wherby (they say) they drawe the euill ayer from hym, and sucke the disease owte of his veynes. Then rubbinge hym about the shoul- ders, thyghes, and legges, and drawynge downe theyr handes close by his scete, holdinge them yet faste together, they runne

runne to the doze beinge open, where they vnclouse and shake theyr handes, affirminge that they haue dyuen away the disease, and that the pacient shall shortly bee perfectly restored to health. After this, commynge behynde hym, he conueygheth the piece of fleshe owte of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and sheweth it to the sicke man, sayinge, behoulde what you haue eaten to muche: you shall now be hole, bycause I haue taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue the pacient, he perswadeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, either bycause he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not honoured hym religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it soo chaunce that the sicke person dye, his kinfolkes by wytchecrafte enforce the deade to confesse whether he dyed by naturall deskenye, or by the neglygence of the *Boisius*, in that he had not fasted as he shulde haue doone, or not mynistred a conuenient medicine for the disease. Soo that yf this phisitian bee founde faultie, they take reuenge of hym. Of the stones or bones which these *Boisii* carpe in theyr mouthes, yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiously beleauinge them to bee greatly effectuell to helpe women whiche trauayle with chylde. And therfore honour them as they doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of thinhabitantes, honour *Zemes* of dyuers fashions. Summe make them of woodde, as they were admonysht by certeyne visions apperinge vnto them in the wooddes. Other, whiche haue receaued answer of them amonge the rockes, make the of stone and marble. Sum they make of rootes to the similitude of suche as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes cauled *Ages*, wherof they make theyr breade, as we haue sayde before. These *Zemes*, they beleue to send plentie and frutefulnes of those rootes, as the antiquitie beleued suche fayries or spirites as they cauled *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Palmes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and prouidence of the sea, wooddes, sprynges and fountaynes, assigninge to euery thynge, theyr peculier goddes. Euen soo doo thinhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to euery thynge, supposinge the same to gyue care to theyr inuocations. Wherfore, as often as the kynge aske counsaile of their *Zemes* as concerning their warres, increase of fruites or scarcenes, or health and sickenes, they enter into the house dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, snuffinge by into theyr nosethyls the

Angery gods

They make the deade to speake.

Diuers Idols of sundry shape.

Fayries or spirites of the gentyles.

peculier goddes.

They aske counsaile of Idols.

## The fyft decade.

The powder  
of the herbe  
Cohobba.

Secreate mi-  
series.

Reuelations.

The spirite of  
Apollo.  
The Sibilles

I haue harde  
the lyke of o-  
ther in Eng-  
lande.

hungery and  
lecherous  
gods.

Childre with  
two crownes

pouder of the herbe cauled *Cohobba* (wherewith the *Boiiti* are dry-  
uen into a furre) they say that immediately they see the houses  
turne topsy turvey, and men to walke with theyr heeles vp-  
warde: of suche force is this pouder utterly to take away all  
sense. As soone as this maddenes ceaseth, he embraceth his  
knees with his armes, holdynge downe his heade. And whē  
he hath remayned thus a whyle astonysht, he lyftrēth vp his  
heade as one that came newe out of sleepe: And thus loking  
vp towarde heauen, fyrst he fumbleth certeyne confounded  
woordes with hym selfe. Then certeyne of the nobilitie or  
chiefe gentelmen that are about him (for none of the common  
people are admittēd to these myseries) with lowde voyces  
gyue tokens of reioysing that he is returned to them from the  
speache of the *Zemes*, demaundyng of hym what he hath  
seene. Then hee openinge his mouthe, doateth that the *Zemes*  
spake to hym durynge the tyme of his traunce: declaring that  
he had reuelations eyther concerninge victorie or destruction:  
famine or plentie: health or syknes, or what soo euer hap-  
peneth fyrst on his toonge. Nowe (moste noble Prince) what  
neede you hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of *Apollo* soo shā  
kyng his *Sibylles* with extreme furie? Nowe had thowght  
that the superstitious antiquitie hadde percyphed. But nowe  
wheras I haue declared thus much of the *Zemes* in generall,  
I thowght it not good to lette passe what is sayde of them in  
particuler. They saye therefore, that a certeyne kyng cauled  
*Guamaretus*, had a *Zemes* whose name was *Corochotum*: who (they  
say) was often tymes woonte to descende from the hygheste  
place of the house where *Guamaretus* kepte hym faste bounde.  
They affirme, that the cause of this his breakynge of his ban-  
des and departure, was eyther to hyde hym selfe, or to goo  
seeke for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that  
sumtymes beinge offended, that the kyng *Guamaretus* had byn  
negligent and slacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye  
hyd for certeyne dayes. They say also that in the kynges by-  
lage there are sumtyme chyldren bozne havinge two crownes  
whych they suppose to bee the chyldren of *Corochotum* the *Zemes*.  
They saye lykewyse, that *Guamaretus* beinge ouercome of his  
enemies in the battayle, and his bylage with the palaice con-  
sumed with fyre, *Corochotus* brake his bandes and was after-  
warde founde a furlonge of, safe and withowt hurte. He  
hath

hath also an other *Zemes* cauled *Epilleguanta*, made of woodde, in shape lyke a foure footed beaste: who also is sayde, often tymes to haue gonne from the place where he is honoured, in to the wooddes. As soone as they perceauie him to bee gonne, a great multitude of them gather togyther to seeke hym with deuoute prayers: And when they haue founde hym, bynge hym home religiously on theyr sholders to the chapell dedicated vnto hym. But they coomplayne that sence the commynge of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulde neuer sence bee founde, wherby they diuined the destruction of theyr countrey. They honoured an other *Zemes* in the lyknes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed thoffice of a mediatur to the other *Zemes* which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayse wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundemente a messenger to the other *Zemes* whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleyes, that beinge loosed, they may with force burst owte into greate fluddes and ouerflowe the countrey if the people doo not gyue due honour to her Image. There remaineth yet one thyng woorthy to be noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thyng well knowen, and yet freshe in memozy amonge the inhabitantes of the Ilande, that there was sumetyme twoo kynges (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius* of whō we made menzion befoze) which were woont to absteyne fyue dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe sumwhat of theyr *Zemes* of thynges to coome: And that for this fastynge beinge acceptable to theyr *Zemes*, they receaued answere of them, that within fewe yeaeres, there shuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which shulde destroye al the customes and cerymonyes of the Iland, and cyther slei all theyr chylidren, or bynge them into seruitude. The common sort of the people, vnderstoode this oracle to bee mente of the *Sambales*. And therefore when they had any knowlege of theyr commynge, they euer fledde, and were fully determyned neuer moze thaduenture the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the *Spanyarde*s had entered into the Ilande, consultinge amonge them selues of the mar:

wanderinge  
Images.

Mediatours.

A woman zes  
mes of great  
poure.

Fyue dayes  
fastinge.

A maruelous  
iulusion of the  
deuyll.

The deuyll  
sumtyme tcla  
letch truth.

## The fyrst decade.

The Idols  
abolished.

ter, they concluded that this was the nation which was mee  
by thozacle. Wherin, they opinion deceaued them not. For  
they are nowe all subiecte to the Christians, all suche beinge  
Rayne as toobernelly resisted. For yet remaineth there anye  
memory of theyz *Zemes*: for they are al brought into Spayne,  
that we myght bee certificd of theyz illusions of euyl spirites  
and Idoles, the which yowre yowre selte (most noble Prince)  
haue seene and felte when I was presente with yowre. I let  
passe many thynges bycause yow put me in remembrance that  
to mozo we yowre take yowre iozney towarde yowre countrey,  
to byzngre home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowre accomz  
panyed hether at the commaundemente of kynge Frederyke  
yowre vncl. Wherfoze I byd yowre farewell for this tyme, de  
syrzngre yowre to remember yowre *Martyr*, whome yowre haue  
compelled in the name of the kynge yowre vncl, to gather  
these fewe thynges owte of a large feelde of hystozyes.

**C**The tenth and laste booke of the fyrst decade, as a conz  
clusion of the former bookes: Wrytten to *Inacus*

*Lopez Mendocius*, countie of *Tendilla*, and vice:

roye of *Granata*.



The Lawe of  
nature.

Asylayne in  
the hands of  
the frenchme

**I**n the fyrst begynnynge and newe attempte,  
when *Colonus* had taken vppon hym thence  
pyle to search the Ocean sea, I was earnestz  
ly moued and requyred by the letters of cert  
teyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome  
to wryte suche thynges as shoulde happen.  
For they whyspered with greate admiraciz  
on, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and  
nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they  
coulede here noo certentie thereof, beinge greatly desyrous of  
the same. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Ascani*  
*us* (his brother *Lodouike* beinge cast owte of *Asylayne* by the  
frenchmen) whose autozitic wold not suffer me to bee idle, but  
euer to haue my pen in hande. So hym I wryte the twoo fyrst  
bookes of this decade, belyde many other of my byd commen  
taries whiche yowre shall see shortly. Fortune dyd noo lesse  
withdrazwe my mynde frome wrypyngre, then disturbe *Ascani*  
frome power. As he was tossed with contrary sozmes and cea  
sed

sed to perswade me, euen soo slacked my feruentnes to enquire any further, vntyl the yeare of Chryste. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowre are viceroie: At which time Lodowike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neise to kynge Frederike by his brothers syde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopea* the syster of owre catholike kynge) browght me kynge Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to fynyshe the other bookes whiche folowed the twoo epystell bookes, which I wypte to *Ascanius*. For they both acknowleaged that they hadde the copie of all that I wypte to cardinall *Ascanius*. And albeit that euen then I was sicke (as yowre knowe) yet tooke I the burden vppon me, and applyed my selfe to wyptynge. I haue therfoze chosen these fewe thynges, owte of a greate heape of suche as seemed to me most woorty to bee noted amonge the large wyptynges of the autoures and scarcers of the same. Wherfoze, forasmuch as yowre haue endeuoured to wrytte owte of my hardes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the same to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thowght it good nowe to make a bryefe rehearsal of those thynges which were done from that yeare of a thousande and fyue hundreth, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wypte moze largelye of these thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it selfe of the superstitions of the people of the *Ilande*, supposinge therwith to haue accomplished the hole Decade consistyng of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenth as a perpendicular lync, and as it were a backe gyde or reuerwarde to the other: So that yowre may knytte the fyrst tenth, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenth to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, lest I shulde bee compelled often times to wypte ouer the hole woork, or sende yowre the same defaced with blottes and interlynyng. But nowe let vs come to owre purpose. The shippe masters and maryners ranne ouer many coastes durynge these tenne yeares: But euer folowed suche as were fyrst fownde by *Colonus*, for vasinge continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of easte India, some of them chanced vppon certeyne newe landes towarde the east, and some towarde the weste, in which they fownde bothe goulde and

Epystell books

The historye following, containeth the actes of ten yeare.

*Paria*, part of the firme land of East India

## The fyrst decade.

**Golde & frankensence.**

**The fiercesnes of the naked people.**

**Innumerable beastes vnto lyke vnto owies.**

**Nothing hurtfull in the Ilandes.**

**Battes as bygge as turtle doves.**

**A man deuoured of a monster of the sea**

**The Spanyardes profered them selues to subdue the newe landes.**

**Note the largenes of the newe landes.**

**Commendacion of the Spaniardes.**

and frankensence. For they brought from thence many iebels and ouches of golde, and greate plenty of frankensence, whiche they had of the people of those countreys, partly for exchange of sume of owre thynges, and partly by force, ouercommynge them by warre. Yet in sume places, althowgh they bee naked, they ouercame owre men, and slewe hole armyes. For they are exceedinge fierce, and vse venemous arrowes, and longe stauces lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyer. They folwde many beastes, both creepinge and foure footed, muche differinge from owres, variable and of sundrye shapies innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in sundry Regions of that greate lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: For not soo much as one. For all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and withoute hurte, except men which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes deuourers of mans flesh. There are also dyuers kyndes of foules. And in many places battes of such bygnes, that they are equall with turtle doves. These battes, haue often tymes assauted men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, and soo byrten them with theyr venemous teethe, that they haue byn therby almoste dyuen to madnes, in soo much that they haue byn compelled to fye from such places, as from rauenous harpies. In an other place, where certeyne of them slepte in the nyght season on the landes by the sea syde, a monster commynge owre of the sea, came vppon one of them secretly and carped hym away by the myddeste owre of the sight of his felowes to whome he cryed in bayne for helpe vntyll the beaste lepte into the sea with her praye. It was the kynges pleasure that they shulde remayne in these landes, and buylde towones and forresses. Where vnto they were soo wel wyllynge, that dyuers profered them selues to take vppon them the subduing of the lande, makynge great sute to the kyng that they might bee appoynted therto. The coaste of this tracte is exceedynge greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of these Regions with the Ilandes abowte the same, to bee thysle as bygge as al Europe, belyde those landes that the Portugales haue folwde southwarde, whiche are also exceedynge large. Therfore doubtleffe Spayne hathe deserued greate prayse in these owre dayes, in that it hath made knowne vnto vs soo many

many thousandes of *Antipodes* which lepe hyd befoze and byr  
 knowen to owre foze fathers : And hath thereby mynyfired so  
 large matter to wypte of, to suche lerned wyetes as are desy-  
 rous to sette furthe knowlege to the commoditie of men : to  
 whom I opened away when I gathered these thynges rudely  
 to gyther as yowe see : The which, neuerthelesse I trust yowe  
 wyll take in good parte, aswell for that I can not adourne  
 my rudenes with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke  
 penne in hande to wypte lyke an historiographer, but only by  
 epistels scribeled in haste, to satisfie theym, from whose com-  
 maundementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now  
 I haue digressed enowghe. Let vs nowe therefoze retorne to  
*Hispaniola*. Dvve men haue founde by experience, that the  
 breade of the Island is of smaule strenght to such as haue byn  
 bred to ovr breade made of wheate: And that theyz strenghtes  
 were much decayed by vsynge of the same. Wherefoze the king  
 hath of lare commaunded that wheate shulde bee sowen there  
 in diuers places and at sundry tymes of the yeare. It groweth  
 into holowe reedes, with fewe eares, but those verpe bygge  
 and frutefull. They fynde the lyke softenes oz delicatenes to  
 bee in herbes, which growe there to the height of corne. Neat  
 oz cattall, becoome of bygger stature and exceedynge fat, but  
 theyz fleshe is more vnslauery, and theyz bones (as they say)  
 cyther withowte marpe, oz the same to bee verpe wateryllthe.  
 But of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrarpe, that  
 they are more holsoome and of better taste, by reason of cer-  
 teyne wylde stures whiche they cate, beinge of muche better  
 noozymment then masse. There is almost none other kynd of  
 fleshe commonly sould in the market. The multitude of hog-  
 ges, are exceedingly encreased, and becoome wylde as soone  
 as they are owte of the swyneheardes keepynge. They haue  
 suche plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall heereafter  
 haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Whyn  
 crease of all beastes, growe bygger then the breade they came  
 of, by reason of the rankenes of the pasture, althowgh theyz  
 feadynge bee only of grasse, withowte cyther barley oz other  
 grapne. But wee haue sayde enowgh of *Hispaniola*. They haue  
 nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thowghe  
 to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Is-  
 lande, yet is it noo maruell that thynhabitantes them selues  
 D. i. tolde

*Antipodes*

The autours  
 excuse.

*Hispaniola*

The nature of  
 the place, al-  
 tereth the for-  
 mes and qual-  
 ities of  
 thynges.  
 wheate.  
 herbes.  
 Catayle,

hogges.

Plentie of  
 beastes and  
 foule.

Cuba, is an  
 Islande.

## The fyrst decade.

The description of Cuba.

to tolde obove men when they searched the length thereof, that it was withoute ende. For this nacion being naked and contented with a litle, and with the limittes of theyr owne contentrey, is not greatly curpous to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr Dominion. For yet knowe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, besyde that whiche they walked on with theyr feete. Cuba, is frome the Easte into the Weste, muche longer then Hispaniola: And in breadthe from the Northe to the Southe, much lesse then they supposed at the fyrst: for it is very narowe in respecte to the length: And is for the moste parte, very feurefull and pleasaunt. Eastwarde not farre from Hispaniola, there lye the an Ilande, lesse

The Iland of Burichema or S. Iohannis. Solde mynes

then Hispaniola more then by the halfe, which obove men cauled Sancti Iohannis, beinge in maner square. In this they fownde exceedinge vche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of Hispaniola, they haue not yet sent labourers in to that Iland. But the plentie and reueneue of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to Hispaniola, where they gyue theim selues in maner to none other thynge then to gather golde, of

The order of woorkynge in the golde mynes.

which woorkke this order is appoynted. To every such wyttie and skylfull man as is put in truste to bee a suruoier or ouerscer of these woorkes, there is assigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with theyr subiectes. These kynges accordyng to theyr league, coome with theyr people at certeyne tymes of the yeare, and resozte euery of them to the golde myne to the which he is assigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or mynyng tooles deliuered them: And euery kyng with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde allowed them for theyr labour.

The kynges bynge theyr subiectes to woork in the golde mynes.

Tyllage.

For when they departe from the mynes to sowynge of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addict at certeyne other tymes, leaste theyr foode shulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a terryken, or a dublet, an other a sherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleasure in these thynge, and goo no more naked as they were wont soo doo. And thus they vse the helpe and labour of the inhabitantes both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as thowghe they were theyr seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of seruitude with an euill wyll: but yet they beare it. They caule these hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kyng doth not suffer that they shulde bee vsed as bondemen:

And

And onely at his pleasure they are sette at libertie or appoynted to woork. At suche tyme as they are cauled together of theyr kynges to woork (as souldiers or pioners are assembled of theyr centurians) many of them siele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lye lurkynge, beinge content for that tyme to lye with wyld frutes, rather then take the paynes to labour. They are docible and apte to lerne, and haue nowe bitterly forgotten theyr owlde supersticions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memozy suche thynges as they haue lerned of owre faith. Theyr kynges chyldren are brought up with the chiefest of owre men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they sende them home to theyr countreys to bee exemple to other, and especially to gouerne the people if theyr fathers bee dead that they maye the better set foorthe the Christian Religion, and keepe theyr subiectes in loue and obedience. By reason whercof, they coome nowe by fayze meanes and gentell persuasions to the mynes which lye in twoo Regions of the Ilande aboute thirtie myles distante frome the citie of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *sancti Christophori*: And the other beinge distante aboute foure scoze and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibao*, not farre from the cheefe haueu cauled *Portus Regalis*. These regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are sownd sumtyme euen in the vpper crust of the earth and sumtyme amonge the stones, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, sumtyme of smaule quantitie, and in sum places of great weyght: In so muche that there hath byn found rounde pieces of thre hundreth pounce weyght, and one of thre thousande, thre hundreth and tenne pounce weyght: The whiche (as youe harde) was sente hole to the kyng in that shyppe in the which the gouernour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the shyppe with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reason it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thousande persons whiche sawe and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I speake of a pounce, I doo not meane the common pounce, but the summe of the ducate of golde, with the copen cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrde parce of a pounce, whiche they caule *Pesus*. The sum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyarde caule *Castellanum Aureum*. Al the golde that

They abhorre  
laboure

They are docible.

The kynges  
chyldren.

The two  
chiefe golde  
mynes of hispaniola.

Golde founde  
in the vpper  
part of the  
earth.

A piece of  
golde weigh-  
inge thre  
thousande  
thre hundreth  
& ten pounds.  
A coastly ship  
wike.

*Pesus*.

## The fyrst decade.

The fyringe  
and distributi  
on of golde.

Three hun-  
dred thousand  
weight of  
gold molten  
perely in his-  
paniola.  
Controuerses

The newe  
landes.

The Spany-  
ardes noble  
enterpryses,  
are not inferi-  
our to the  
actes of her-  
cules or Sa-  
turnus, &c.

Enlarging of  
the Christian  
Religion.  
The originall  
of trewe nobi-  
lite.

that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibara* and *Horze* Re-  
gale, is carped to the towre of *Conception*, where shoppes  
with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnyshed to fyne it,  
melte it, and cast it into wedges. That doone, they take the  
kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfte parte, and soo re-  
soze to euerie man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour.  
But the golde whiche is fownde in saynt *Christophers* myne  
and the Region there aboute, is carped to the shoppes whiche  
are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In these twoo shoppes, is  
molten perely, aboute thre hundred thousand pounce weight  
of golde. If any man bee knowen deceatefully to keepe backe  
any portion of golde, whereof he hath not made the kyngeas  
officers pryue, he forfitteth the same for a fyne. There chaunce  
amonge them often tymes many contentions and controuer-  
sies, the whiche onlesse the magistrates of the *Islande* doo sy-  
mplyse, the case is remoued by appellation to the hygge coun-  
sayle of the courte, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to  
appele in all the dominions of *Castyle*. But lette vs nowe re-  
turne to the newe landes frome whence wee haue digressed.  
They are innumerable, dyuers, and excecadyng fortunate.  
Wherfoze the *Spanyardes* in these owre dayes, and theyr no-  
ble enterpryses, doo not gyue place eyther to the factes of *Sa-  
turnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient prynces of famous  
memozie which were canonized amonge the goddes cauled *He-  
roes* for theyr searchinge of newe landes and regions, & byrin-  
ginge the same to better culture and ciuilitie. Oh *God*: howe  
large and farre shal owre posteritie see the *Christian Religion*  
extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in,  
whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or moued by  
vertue, wyl attempte eyther to deserue lyke prayse amonge  
men, or reputation of well doinge befoze god. What I con-  
ceaued in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse  
with penne or tonge. I wyl nowe therfoze soo make an ende  
of this perpendicular conclusion of the hole *Decade*, as myn-  
dinge hereafter to searche and gather euery thyng particular  
lye, that I maye at further leasure wyte the same moze at  
large. For *Colonus* the *Admiral* with foure shippes, and a hun-  
dred threescore and tenne men appoynted by the kynge, dis-  
couered in the yeare of *Christe*. 1520. the lande ouer ageynste  
the weste corner of *Cuba*, distant from the same aboute a hun-  
dred

breth and thirtie leagues: In the myddest of which tracte, ly-  
eth an Ilande cauled *Guanassa*. From hense he directed his vy-  
age backwarde towarde the Easte by the shoze of that coast,  
supposinge that he shulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*:  
but it chaunced otherwyle. It is sayd also that *Vincentius Agries*

The Ilande  
of *Guanassa*

(of whom we haue spoken befoze) and one *Iohannes Diaz*

(with dyuers other of whose vyages I haue as

yet no certeyne knowlege) haue ouer

runne those coastes. But if God

graunt me life, I trust to

know the

truthe hereof and to aduertise yowre

of the same. Thus

fare ye well.

The vyage  
of *Iohannes  
Diaz*.

The seconde Decade foloweth,

THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE  
Decade, to *Leo* byshop of Rome, the tenth  
of that name, of the supposed Con-  
tinent of firme lande.



INSE the tyme that *Caletius Butrigarius* of *Bor-*  
*nonie*, and *Iohannes Cursius* of *Florence* (moste  
holye father) came to the catholyke kynge of  
*Spayne*, the one, of yowre holynes ambalage,  
and thother for thaffaires of his comon welth,  
I was cur for the moste parte in theyz coom-

panie, and for theyz vertues and wysedoom, had theym in  
greate reuerence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to au-  
dye, and continuall reuoluinge of dyuers aurouts, they chaun-  
ced bypon certeyne bookes negligently let flyppe owt of my  
handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions herher:  
to lpyng hyd, and almost west *Antipodes*, fownde of late by the  
*Spanyarde*s. yet beinge allured and delited with the newe-  
nes and strangenes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned,  
they commended the same: Therwith earnestly desyringe me

west *Antipos*  
*des*,

## The seconde decade.

The increase  
of the Christi-  
an congrega-  
tion.

Christophorus  
Colonus.

Of landes di-  
stante frō the  
Equinoctiall  
from fyue de-  
grees to ten.  
The death of  
Colonus.

A generall  
lycence.

The navigati-  
on of Alphonsus  
fogeda.

in theyr owne names, and requyring me in the name of yowre  
holynes, to adde here vnto all suche thynges as were fownde  
after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to sende to  
yowre holynes, that yowe myght thereby vnderstande, bothe  
howe greate comoditie is chaunced to the progenye of man-  
kynde, as also increase of the militante congregation in these  
owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kynges of  
Spayne. For lyke as rased or vnpaynted tables, are apte to  
receaue what formes soo euer are fyrst drawen thereon by the  
hande of the paynter, euen soo these naked and simple peo-  
ple, doo soone receaue the customes of owre Religion, and by  
conuersation with owre men, shake of theyr fierce and natiue  
barbarousnes. I haue thought it good therefore to satisfie  
the request of these wyse men, especially vsinge thautozitie of  
yowre name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I shulde esteeme  
my selfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I  
wyl nowe brefely reherse in order, what hyd coastes the Spa-  
nyardes ouerranne, who were the autours therof, where they  
rested, what further hope they browght, and fynallye what  
great thynges those tractes of landes doo promesse in tyme to  
coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which  
is nowe prynced and disperfed throughtowte Christendome  
vnto uares to me, I described howe Christophorus Colonus fownde  
those Ilandes wherof we haue spoken, and that turnynge  
from thense towarde the lefte hande southwarde, he chaun-  
ced into greate regions of landes, and large seas, distant frō  
the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where  
he fownde brode ryuers and exceedinge hygh mounctaynes co-  
uered with snowe and harde by the sea bankes, where were  
many commodious and quyet hauens. But Colonus beinge now  
deparred owte of this lyfe, the kynges beganne to take care,  
howe those landes myght be inhabited with Christian men to  
thincrease of owre sayth: Where vppon he gaue lycence by his  
letters parentes to al such as wolde take the matter in hand,  
and especially to twoo, wherof Diego Nicuesa was one, and the  
other was Alphonsus Fogeda. Wherefore aboute the Ides of Dec-  
ember, Alphonsus departinge fyrst with thre hundredth sould-  
ers from the Ilande of Hispaniola (in the which wee sayde the  
Spanyardes had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitaci-  
on) and saylynge in maner full southe, he came to one of the  
hauens

Hauenis founde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginis*, bothe bycause of the Ilande standynge ageynste the course of the streame, & also that by reason of the largenes of the place and bendynge sydes, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine cauled *Carthago*. The inhabitants caule the Ilande *Codego*, as the Spanyardes caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Seombria*.

This Region is cauled of the inhabitants *Caramari*. In the which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The men haue theyr heave cutte rounde by theyr eares, but the women were it longer. Bothe the men and women are very good archers. Dvve men folowde certen trees in this prouince, which bore greate plentie of swete apples, but hurteful, for they turne into woymes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree, is contagious, for suche as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes swolie and lose theyr sight. But if they sleepe but a whyle, theyr syght cometh ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is distant foure hundredth fyftie and syxe myles from that parte of *Hispaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which also they furnyshe them selues when they prepare anye vyage to seeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the hauen, he invaded, stole, and spoyled the people, whome he founde naked and scattered. For they were gyuen hym for a praye, by the kynges letters patentes bycause they hadde bin before tyme cruell ageynst the Christians, and coulde neuer bee allured to permytte them quietly to coome within theyr dominions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor yet that pyre. They make of it, certeyne brest plates and brooches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not content with these spoyles, vsinge certeyne captiues whiche he had taken before, for guydes, entered into a byllage twelue myles distante frome the sea syde further into the lande, into the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrst invaded. Here he founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were armed with targettes, shields, longe swoordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with fyre. As soone as they had espyed ovr men, they with their gasses whom they had receaued, assayled them with desperare myndes, beinge therto more earnestly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of these whiche fledde vnto them, by the violence

doone

*Portus Carthaginis.*

The Region of *Caramari*.

people of goodly stature

Apples whiche turne into woymes. A tree whose shadowe is hurtfull.

*Fogeda* his autouie confirmed by the kynges letters patents.

warilyke people.

The seconde decade.

The Spany  
ardes haue  
the ouer  
throwe.

Arrowes in-  
fected with  
poyson.

The nauigati  
on of Diego  
Nicuesa.

The regions  
of vraba and  
Beragua.

The Spany  
ardes reuēge  
the death of  
theyr compa-  
nyons.

A greate  
slawghter.

Cambales.

The hunger  
of golde.

doone to theyr women and chyldre, in the spoyle and slawgh-  
ter. In this conflictre ovr men had the otherthrowe: In the  
which, one *Iohannes de Lacossa* (beinge in autozitie nexte vnto *Fo-  
geda* the capitayne, and also the fyrste that gathered golde in  
the sandes of *Vraba*) was slayne with fyftrie souldiers. For  
these people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyson of  
a certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* be-  
inge discomfited, fledde to the shyppes. Whyle they remayned  
thus in the haven of *Carthago* sorowfull and pensyue for the  
losse of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicuesa*,  
(whom they leste in *Hispaniola*, preparyng hym selfe towards  
the vyage in the haven *Besta*) came to them with fyue ship-  
pes and seuen hundred the foure scoze and fyftee menne.  
For the greater number of souldyers, folowed *Nicuesa*,  
both bycause free libertie was gyuen them to choose which of  
the capptaynes them lyst, and also that by reason of his age,  
he was of greater autozitie: But especially bycause the ru-  
mour was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commission ap-  
poynted to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assigned to  
*Alphonfus Fogeda*. Therfore, at the arryual of *Nicuesa*, they con-  
sulted what was beste to bee doone: And determyned fyrste to  
reuenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, settinge  
theyr battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towarde  
them whiche *Aewe Cossa* with his coompanyons. Thus stea-  
lynge on them vntowards in the last warche of the nyght, and  
encoompasinge the byllage where they laye, consitaynge of a  
hundredth howses and more, haunng also in it thysle as ma-  
ny of theyr neyghbours as of them selues, they set it on fyre,  
with diligent watche that none myght escape. And thus in  
shorte tyme they browght theym and theyr howses to ashes,  
and made them pay the raunsome of bludde with bludde. For  
of a greate multitude of men and women, they spared onc-  
ly fyfye chyldren, al other being destroyed with fyre or sword  
except fewe which escaped priuylie. They lerned by the reser-  
ued chyldren, that *Cossa* and his felowes were cutte in peeces  
and eaten of them that slewe them. By reason wherof, they  
suppose that these people of *Cambales* tooke theyr originall of  
the *Caribes* otherwylse cauled *Cambales*. Here they founde some  
golde amonge the ashes. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo  
lesse encozage ovr men to aduicature these percls and labours  
then

then dyd the possessyng of the landes. These thynges thus  
 fynylshed, and the death of *Coffe* and his felowes reuenged,  
 they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came  
 fyrst, fyrst lykewyse departinge with his army to seeke *Vraba*,  
 commytted to his gouernaunce, sayled by an Ilande cauled  
*Fortis*, lyinge in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the hauen of  
*Caribago*. In to the which descendyng, he founde it to bee an  
 Ilande of the *Canybales*, bynginge with hym frome thense  
 two men and seuen women: for the residue escaped. Here he  
 founde in the cotages of them that sedde, a hundrethe foure  
 scoze and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dy-  
 uers formes. Saylunge forwarde from hense, he came to the  
 Easte coastes of *Vraba*, whiche thynhabitanes caule *Caribana*,  
 from whense the *Caribes* or *Canibales* of the Ilandes are  
 sayde to haue theyr name and originall. Here he beganne to  
 buylde a fortrese, and a byllage nere vnto the same, therein  
 Intendynge to place theyr fyrst habitacion. Shortly after, be-  
 inge instructed by certeyne captiues that there was aboute  
 twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne byllage cau-  
 led *Tirusi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to  
 destroye the byllage. To the which when he came, he founde  
 thynhabitanes redye to defende theyr ryght: And that soo  
 stoutly, that encounteryng with them, he was repulled with  
 shame and domage. For these people also, vse bowes and ve-  
 nemous arrowes. within a fewe dayes after, beinge enfor-  
 sed for lacke of bytales to inuade an other byllage, he hym  
 selfe was stryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Some of his  
 felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of thynhaby-  
 tantes whose wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue befoze. They  
 say also that he had first frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for re-  
 demyng of his wyfe, & had appoynted a day to byng a por-  
 tion of golde for her raunsome: And that he came at the daye  
 assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and  
 arrowes, with epyght other confederate with hym, whiche  
 had bin befoze partetakers of the iniuries doone to them first  
 at the hauen of *Caribago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the  
 byllage. In reuenge wherof they had desperately consecrated  
 them selues to death. But the matter beinge knowen, the cap-  
 tayne of this conspiracie was slayne of *Fogeda* his company-  
 ons, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuitie. *Fogeda* also through

The Ilande  
 Fortis.

wrought gold

*Caribana*

A gold myne.

The Spany-  
 ardes are res-  
 pulled.

*Fogeda* is  
 wounded.

Raunsome.

The seconde decade.

Fogeda cons  
sumeth by  
force of the  
Beragua and  
Uraba.

Nicuesa.

The goulfe  
Coiba.

Dyuers lan-  
guages.

Bergantines  
or bygantines.

Barnardino de  
Cahuera.

Ancisus.

the maliciousnes of the venemie, consumed and was dyed by  
by litle & litle. Whyle these thynges chaunced thus, they  
espyed Nicuesa the other capitayne to whom *Beragua* the region  
of the weste syde of *Uraba*, was assigned to inhabite. He gaue  
wynde to his sayles to take his vyage towarde *Beragua*, the  
day after that *Fogeda* departed owte of the haven of *Carthago*.  
He with his army which he browght with hym, coasted euer  
alonge by the shore vntyll he came to the goulfe *Coiba*, whose  
kynge's name is *Careta*. Here he founde theyr language to bee  
in maner nothyng like vnto that of *Hispaniola* or of the haven  
of *Carthago*: wherby he perceaued that in this tracte there are  
many languages differinge from theyr owne boztherers. *Nicue-  
sa* departinge frome *Coiba*, wente to the prouince of *Licuetes*:  
naunte shippe of *Fogeda* his companion. Within a fewe dayes  
after he hym selfe entrecinge into one of those marchaunt ship-  
pes whiche the Spanyardes caule *Carauelas*, commaunded that  
the bygger vessels, shulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke  
with hym twoo smaule shippes commonly cauled bergantines  
or bygantynes. I haue thowght it good in all the discourse  
of these bookes, to vse the common names of thynges, bicause  
I had rather bee playne then curious: especially forasmuche  
as there doo dayly arylse manye newe thynges vnknewen to  
the antiquitie, wherof they haue leste noo trewe names. Af-  
ter the departure of *Nicuesa*, there came a shippe from *Hispanio-  
la* to *Fogeda*, the capitayne wherof, was one *Barnardino de Cahuera*  
*ra*, who had stolne the same from *Hispaniola* with thre score  
men, withowte leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other  
gouernours. With the vytayles whiche this shippe browght  
they refreshed theym selues and somewhat recouered theyr  
strengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, *Fogeda* his  
companionys whyspered and mutered ageynste hym daylye  
more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope.  
For he had tolde them that he leste *Ancisus* in *Hispaniola* (whō  
he chofe by the kynge's commission to bee a Iudge in causes,  
bycause he was lerned in the lawe) to coome shortly after him  
with a shippe laden with vytayles: And that he marueyled  
that he was not coome many dayes sence. And herein he said  
nothyng but trewth. For when he departed, he leste *Ancisus*  
halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes supposinge that  
all that he sayde of *Ancisus* had byn fayned, sume of them de-  
termined



## The seconde decade.

the capitayne Fogeda looked for soo longe. He loosed anker  
 from Hispaniola in the Ides of September: And the fourth day  
 after his departure, he espyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes,  
 the whiche for the abundance of snowe which lyceth continu-  
 ally in the toppes thereof, the Spanyardes cauled *Serra Neuata*,  
 when Colonus the fyrst fynder of those Regions passed by the  
 same. The fyfte daye, he sayled by *Os Draconis*. They whiche  
 were in the brigantyne, towolde Ancifus that Fogeda was retur-  
 ned to Hispaniola. But Ancifus supposing that they had sayned  
 that tale, commaunded them by thautozitie of his commission  
 to turne backe ageyne. The brigantyners obeyed and folowed  
 hym: yet made they humble sute vnto hym that he wolde  
 graunte them that with his fauour they myght eyther goo a-  
 geyne to Hispaniola, or that he hym selfe wolde bynge theim  
 to Nicusa: And that they wolde for his gentelnes declared  
 towarde them in this beihalse, rewarde hym with twoo thou-  
 sande drammes of golde. For they were ryche in golde, but  
 pooze in breade. But Ancifus assented to neyther of theyr re-  
 questes: affirmpnge that he myght by no meanes goo anye or  
 ther way then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to Fogeda. Where  
 vppon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his byage directly toward  
*Vraba*. But nowe let it not seme tedious to powre hollynes to  
 heare of one thynge worthy to bee remembred, which chaunced  
 to this Licutenant Ancifus as he came thether. For he also  
 cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramauri* whiche wee  
 sayde to bee famous by reason of the hauen of *Caribago*: and of  
 the goodly stature, strength, and beawty of both men and wo-  
 men beinge in the same. Here he sent certeyne to goo alande  
 on the wyre, both to fetch the freshe water, and also to repaire  
 the shippe boate which was sore brooked. In this meane tyme  
 A greate multitude of the people of the countrey armed after  
 theyr maner, came aboute oovre men as they were occupied a-  
 bowte theyr busynes, and stode in a redynes to feight, for  
 the space of thre dayes contynually: durynge whiche tyme,  
 neyther durst they set vppon oovre men, noz oovre men assaile  
 them. Thus bothe parties keepynge theyr arraye, stode styl  
 thre hole dayes the one galynge on the other. per all this  
 tyme oovre men applyed theyr woork, placinge the shippez  
 wyghtes in the myddeste of theyr armye. As they stode thus  
 amased, twoo of oovre companie wente to fyll theyr water  
 portes

Mountaynes  
covered with  
snowe.

*Serra Neuata.*

*Os Draconis.*

Riche in gold  
and poze in  
breaide.

The Region  
of *Caramauri*

Feare on  
both partes.

Ship wygh-  
tes.

pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where  
 suddenly there came furthe ageynste them a capitayne of the  
 barbarians with ten armed men which inclosed them, & with  
 terrible countenaunce bent theyr arrowes ageynste them, but  
 shotte theym not of. One of oovre men fledde: but the other  
 remayned, caulynge his felowe ageyns and rebukynge hym  
 for his fearefulnes. Then he spake to the barbarians in their  
 owne language which he had lerned beinge conuersant with  
 the captiues that were carryed from thense longe befoze. They  
 marueylng to here a straunger speake in their natie tonge,  
 put of theyr fiercenes and fell to frendly communication, de-  
 maunding who were the capitaynes of that coompanie whi-  
 che were arryued in theyr lande. He answered that they were  
 strangers passyng by: And that he marueyled why they wold  
 attempte to dyue them from theyr coastes and disturbe theyr  
 shypes: arguinge them of follye and crueltie, and further  
 threatinge their ruine and destruction, except they woold vse  
 them selues moze frendely towarde them. For hee aduertised  
 them that there wolde shortly coome into theyr lande armed  
 men, in nobr lyke to the sandes of the sea: And that to theyr  
 destruction, not only if they resysted them not, but also ex-  
 cepte they receaued them and enterteyned them honorably. In  
 the meane tyme *Ancifus* was enformed that his men were de-  
 reyned. Wherefoze suspectinge sune deceare, he browght  
 furth al his target men for feare of theyr venemous arrowes:  
 And settinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde to-  
 warde them which steyed his men. But he which communed  
 with the barbarians, gyuinge him a signe with his hande to  
 procede noo further, he steyed. And caulng to hym the other,  
 he knewe that all was safe. For the barbarians profered him  
 peace, bycause they were not they whom they suspected them  
 to haue byn: meanyng by *Fogeda* and *Nicusa*, who had spoy-  
 led the byllage standinge there by the sea syde, and carryed a-  
 way many captiues, and also burnt an other byllage further  
 within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of  
 theyr comminge thether, was to reuenge those iniuries, if by  
 any meanes they coulde. per that they woold not exercise  
 theyr weapons ageynste the innocente. For they sayde it was  
 vngodly to scyght ageynst any, not beinge prouoked.  
 Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they  
 entere:

The vse of  
 targettes a-  
 genst vena-  
 mous ar-  
 rowes.

The barbari-  
 ans haue res-  
 pect to iustice

## The seconde decade.

Salted fishe. of salted fyshe and breade of theyr contrey: And fylled theyr  
 vessels with syder made of theyr contrey frutes and seedes,  
 wyne of frutes and seedes. not inferiour to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Ancifus* hauinge en-  
 tered into frendshyp and made a league of peace with thinha-  
 bitantes of *Canamairi* whiche were before soze prouoked by o-  
 ther capitaynes, he lanched from that lande, and directed his  
 course to *Vraba* by the *Flande Fortis*, hauinge in his shippe a  
 hundred and fyrtie freshe men whiche were substitute in the  
 place of suche as were deade. Also twelue mares, and manye  
 swine, and other beastes both males and females for increase.  
 Artillerie. Lykewyle, fyrtie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multy-  
 tude of targettes, swoozdes, iauelyns, and suche other wea-  
 pons for the warres. But all this with euyl speede and in an  
 euyl houre. For as they were euen nowe enteringe into the  
 hauen, the gouernour of the shippe which sarte at the helme,  
 stroke the shippe vppon the landes, where it was soo fast en-  
 closed, and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened  
 in the myddeste, and al lost that was therein. A chyngc surely  
 miserable to beholde. For of all the vytayles that they had,  
 they saued onely twelue baryls of meale, with a fewe chieffes,  
 and a lytle bysket byeade. For al the beastes were drowned:  
 And they them selues scaped hardly and halfe naked by helpe  
 of the bygantine ship boate, carryng with them only a fewe  
 weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitie into an other, be-  
 inge nowe more carefull for theyr lyues then for golde. yet  
 beinge brought alpyc and in health to that land which they  
 soo greatly desyzed, they coulde doo noo lesse then to prouide  
 for the susteynyng of theyr bodyes, bycause they coulde not  
 lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne sayled, they must  
 needes lyue by other mens. yet amonge these soo many aduer-  
 sities, one good chaunce offered it selfe vnto them. For they  
 founde, not farre from the sea syde, a groue of date trees, a-  
 monge the which, & also amonge the reke or weedes of the ma-  
 ryshes, they espyed a multitude of wylde bores, with whose  
 fleshe they fed the selues wel certeine dayes. These they say to  
 bee lesse then owores: And with soo thozre tayles, that they  
 thought they had byn cutte of. They dyffer also from owores  
 in theyr secte: for theyr hynder feere are hole vndiuided, and  
 also withowte any house. But they affirme that they haue  
 proued

proued by experience theyr fleshe to bee of better taste & more  
 holloome then owtres. Durynge this tyme, they fedde also of  
 dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate like  
 wyle in *Giule* and *Granata* where they caule them *Palmitos*, of  
 the leaues wherof they make biesomes in Rome. Sumertymes  
 also, they eate of the appels of that Region, whiche haue the  
 taste of prunes, and haue also stones in them, and are but lyt-  
 tle and of redde coloure. I suppose them to bee of that kynde  
 wherof I eate in the cite of *Alexandria* in Egypt in the moneth  
 of Aprill: The trees wherof, the Jewes that dwel there, be  
 inge lerned in the lawe of Moyses, affirme to bee the Ceders  
 of Libane, which beare owlde frutes and nelwe all the yeare  
 as dothe the orange tree. These apples are good to bee eaten,  
 and haue a certeyne sweetnes myrte with a gentell sharpnes,  
 as haue the frutes cauled *Sorbes*. Thinhabitantes plant these  
 trees in theyr orchardes and garedens, and noozye theym  
 with greate diligence as wee doo cherries, peaches, and quyn-  
 ses. This tree in leaues, heyght, and trunk, is verye lyke  
 unto the tree that beareth the frute cauled *Zizipha*, which the  
 Apothecaries caule *ruinba*. But wheras now the wylde bozes  
 beganne to faile them, they were ageyne enforced to consulte  
 and proude for the tyme to coome. Where vpon with theyr  
 hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales  
 of this prouince, are moste experte archers. *Anofus* had in his  
 company, a hundzeth men. They mette by the way with only  
 thre men of thinhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes  
 and venemous arrowes, who without al feare, assayled ovr  
 men fiercely, wounded manye, and slewe manye: And when  
 they had emptied theyr quyners, fledde as swyftely as the  
 wynde: For (as we haue sayde) they are excedynge swyfte of  
 foote by reason of theyr loose goinge frome theyr chyldes age  
 They affirme that they lette slyppe no arrowe owte of theyr  
 bowes in bayne. Ovre men therfoze returned the same waye  
 that they came, much moze infortunate then they were before  
 and consulted amonge them selues to leaue that lande: espe-  
 cially because thinhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortreffe  
 which *Fogeda* buylde, and had burnce thirtie houses of the  
 byllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*,  
 had forsaken the lande. By this occasion therfore, beinge  
 dzyuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the weste  
 syde

Apples of a  
strange kynd

Ceders of  
Libane.

Sorbes are  
cauled in  
french Comi  
er they grow  
not in Eng-  
lande.

The frute  
cauled ziz-  
pha or ruinba  
Candales.

men of des-  
perat bold-  
nes.

## The seconde decade.

The goulfe  
of uraba.

The great ry  
uer of Dariē,  
fauleth into  
the goulfe of  
uraba.

Prayer and  
powes.

The souldi-  
ers make an  
othe.

The barba-  
rians are dri-  
uen to flight.

syde of that goulfe of *uraba*, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherefore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men this ther with the bygantine, and lefte the other nere to the sea syde on the easse part. This goulfe, is .xxiiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is soo muche the narrower. Into the goulfe of *uraba*, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they say) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in *Egypte*. This ryuer is cauled *Darien*, vpon the bankes whercof, beinge verpe frutefull of trees and grasse, they entended to playnre their newe colonie or habitacion. But th inhabitants maruelynge at the bygantine beinge bygger then theyr canoas, and specially at the sayles therof, first sente away theyr chyldren and weakest sorte of theyr people with theyr baggage and houholde stuffe, and assembled all suche togyther bothe men and women, as were meete for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and desperate myndes, they stooode in a redynes to feight, and tarped the comminge of owre men vpon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take thaduantage of the grounde. Owre men iudged them to bee aboute fyue hundred in nomber. Then *Ancisus* the capitayne of owre men, and Licutenant in the see of *Fogeda*, settinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole company kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayrs to god for the victorie, and a bowe to the Image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in *Liule*, by the name of *sancta Maria Antiqua*, promysinge to sende her manye golden gyftes and a straunger of that contrey: also to name the byllage *sancta Maria Antiqua* after her name: lyke wyse to serecte a temple cauled by the same name: or at the leaste to dedicate the king of that prouince his palaice to that vble, if it shulde please her to assiste them in this daungercous enterpryse. This done, al the souldiers tooke an othe, that noo man shulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redynes with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumpeter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assailed theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owre men, were putte to flight, with theyr kynge and capitayne *Cemaccus*. Owre men entered into the byllage, where they founde plentie of meate suche as the people of the contrey vble, sufficeinte to assuage theyr

they present hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certaine  
 frutes vnylike vnto others, whiche they reserue for store as  
 wee doo chestnuttes. Of these people, the men are vterely na-  
 ked: but the women from the nauell downeward, are couer-  
 red with a fyne clothe made of gossampine cotton. This Re-  
 gion is vterely withowte any Harpenes of wynter. For the  
 mouthe of this ryuer of *Darien*, is onlye eyght degrees distant  
 from the Equinoctiall lyne: So that the common sort of othere  
 men, scarcely perceauie anye difference in lengerth betwene the  
 day and nyght all the hole yeare. But bycause they are igno-  
 rant in astronomie, they can perceauie noo smaule difference.  
 Therfore wee neede not much passe if the degree do differ sum-  
 what from theyr opinion, for asmuche as the difference can  
 not bee greate. The day after that they arriued at the lande,  
 they sayled alonge by the ryuer, where they founde a greate  
 thicket of reedes continuinge for the space of a myle in lengerth  
 supposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the boztherers there  
 aboute which had fledde, had eyther lyne luckynge there, or  
 els to haue hyd theyr stuffe amonge those reedes: Where by-  
 upon, armpynge them selues with theyr targettes, for feare of  
 the people lpyng in ambush, they searched the thicket dily-  
 gently, and founde it withowte men, but replenished with  
 household stuffe and golde. They founde also a great multy-  
 tude of sheetes, made of the lylac or cotton of the gossampine  
 tree. Lyke wyse dyuers kyndes of vessels and tooles made of  
 woodde, and many of earth: Also many beste plates of gold  
 and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the sum of a hun-  
 dredth and twoo pounce weight. For they also take pleasure  
 in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although  
 it bee not the price of thynges amonge them as with vs. They  
 haue it owte of other Regions for exchannge of such thynges  
 as theyr contrey byingerh furthe. For suche Regions as haue  
 plentie of breade and gossampine, lacke golde: And suche as  
 byynge furth golde, are for the most part wrought with mon-  
 taynes and rockes, and therfore baren. And thus they exer-  
 cise marchandies withowte the vse of money, Reioysing ther-  
 fore with double gladdenes, aswell in that they sawe greate  
 lyknes of golde, as also that fortune hadde offered them soo  
 fayre and frutefull a contrey, they sent for theyr felowes whō  
 they hadde left before in the easte syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*,

Chestnuttes.

The ryuer of  
*Darien*, but  
 viii. degrees  
 from the E-  
 quinoctiall.

Golde founde  
 in a thicket of  
 reedes.

Sheetes of  
 gossampine.

Beste plates  
 of golde.

The golden  
 Regions are  
 for the moste  
 parte baren.

## The seconde decade.

yet sume saye that the ayer is there inhollsome, bycause that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley environed with mowntaynes and maryshes.

### The seconde booke of the seconde decade, of the supposed continente.



Fogeda, the  
Lieutenant  
of Uraba.  
Nicuesa the  
Lieutenant  
of Beragua.

Nicuesa losse  
his felowes  
in the nyght.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de vmbria

The capitay-  
nes confu-  
re where to find  
theyr lost go-  
uernour.

Haue described to yowre holynes whete Fogeda with his coompany (to whome the large tractes of *Vraba* was assigned to inhabite) intended to fasten there foote. Lette vs nowe therfoze leaue them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and retorne ageyne to *Nicuesa* to whom the gouernance and Lieutenante shippe of the mosse large prouince of *Beragua* (beinge the weste syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicuesa* departinge with one carauell and twoo brigantine frome *Vraba* the iurisdiction of his frende and companyon *Fogeda*, directed his course westwarde to *Beragua*, leauinge the bygger shippes sune what behynde hym, to folowe hym a farte of. But he tooke this diuise in an euyl honore. For he bothe losse his felowes in the nyght, and went past the mouth of the ryuer of *Beragua*, which he chiefly sought. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernour of one of the greate shippes, had the conducre of one of the brigantines. He commynge behynde, lerned of thynhabitantes which was the waye Eastwarde to the goulfe of *Beragua* ouer passed and lefte behynde of *Nicuesa* *Olanus* therfoze directinge his course towarde the East, mette with the other brigantine which had also wandered owt of the way by reason of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they consulted what was best to bee doone, and which way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken his byage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicuesa* could no more lacke sun to put him in remembrance of *Beragua*, then they them selues were myndful thereof, hopynge also to fynde hym there. They sayled therfoze towarde *Beragua*: where they founde within xvi. myles distant, a ryuer which *Colonus* named *Lapirus*, bycause it noo: ryhethe greate yslandes whiche in the Spanysh tongue are cauled

cauled *Lagartos*. These lycertes are hurtfull bothe to man and beaste, and in shape muche lyke vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte. In this ryuer, they founde theyr companions and felowes of theyr erreure lyinge at anker with the greate shippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole assemble beinge carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours erreure, after consultation, by thaduise of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had rased nere vnto the coastes of *Beragua*, they sayled directly therher. *Beragua*, in the language of thynhabitanes of the same prouince, is as much to saye, as the golden ryuer. The region it selfe is also cauled by the same name, takynge name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vessels cast anker, and conueighed al theyr bytailes and other necessaries to lande with theyr shippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the steele of *Nicusa* whom they had losse. By thaduise therfore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the souldiers which they had nowe brought thether, and to make them the moze wyllinge to inhabite that land, they venterly forsooke and caste of those shippes beinge nowe rotten for age, and suffered them to bee shaken and brooked of the surges of the sea. yet of theyr soundeste planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they say to be exceedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauel shortly after, whiche they myght vse to serue for theyr necessitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfortunate destenie of *Petrus de Umbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwarde to attempte thynges (in whiche sumetyme fortune wyll beare a stroke notwithstandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym thadventure to searche the shore to thintent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beste coome alande. For this purpose, he chose hym twelue maryners, and wente aboorde the shippe boate whiche serued the greateste shippes. The rowlinge of the sea, raged and rozed there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the dangerous place of *Scylla* in the sea of Scicilie, by reason of the houghe and ragged rocks reachyng into the sea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noyse and rowghnes on the water, whiche rowghnes or rowlinge, the Spanyarde caule

D.ii.

Bellacca

The ryuer  
*Lagartos*.The golden  
ryuer of *Beragua*.The enter-  
pise & death  
of *Petrus de Umbria*.The daungerous  
place of  
*Scylla* in the  
sea of Scilie.

The seconde decade.

Swymminge

*Resaca.* In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wrestled a while. But in shorte space, a waue of the sea almoste as hygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, overwhelmed the boate and deuoured the same with the men, euen in the sight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reason he was expecte in stopmyng. For gettinge holde of the corner of a rocke, and susteynyng the rage of the sea vntill the nexte daye when it waxed calme, and the shore was drye by the faule of the water, he escaped and resorted to his companye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vtterlye cast away. The resydue of the company, durst not committe them selues to the shippe boates, but went alande with theyr bygantines. Where remaynyng a fewe dayes, and saylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne byllages of thynhabitantes, which they caule *Mumu*. Here they beganne to build a fortreffe, and to sowe seedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutesfull grownde, bicause in other places the region is barren. As these thynges were thus dooinge in *Beragus*, one of their companye standyng vppon the toppe of a hygge rocke of especiall, and lpytynge his eyes towarde the Weste, beganne to crye, *Lynnyu sayles*, *lynnyu sayles*. And the nexte it drewe towarde hym, he perceaued it to bee a shyppe boate commyng with a lpytle sayle. yet receaued they it with muche reioyng: for it was the fyfther boate of *Nicuesu* his caraucle, and of capacite to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but thre in it, which had stoune it from *Nicuesa* bycause he refused to gyue credit to them that he had passed *Beragus*, and left it behynde hym Eastwarde. For they sayinge *Nicuesu* and his felowes to consume dayely by fampyne, thowght they woold proue fortune with that boate, if their chaunce myght bee to fynde *Beragus*, as in deede it was. Debaryng therefoze with theyr felowes, of these matters, they declared howe *Nicuesu* erred and losse the caraucle by tempest, and that he was nowe wanderyng amonge the myrtyshes of vnkowen coastes, full of myserie and in extream penurie of all thynges, hauyng nowe lpyed for the space of thre score and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and slydome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes saylyng, bycause he was instant to trauaile westwarde by foote, supposyng by that meanes to come

The fyfther boate of *Nicuesa* his caraucle.

The miserable case of *Nicuesa*.

to *Beragus*. *Colonus* the fysic fynder of this mapne lande, had coasted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitantes caule it *Cerabaro*. Throgh this Region, there runneth a ryuer which oore men named *Sancti Martini*, distant from the weste syde of *Beragus* aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles. Here I lette passe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which thynhabitates vse, by cause oore men are ignozant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductoz of one of the shippes of *Nicuesa*, and nowe also vice Reauctenaunt in his seede, after that he hadde receaued this information of the maryners, sente thither a brigantine vnder theyr guydyng, these maryners therfore, which came in the fylsher boate, founde *Nicuesa*, and browghe hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whome at his conuynge he caste in pryson, and accused hym of treason bycause he vsurped thauroritie of the Reauctenauntshippe, and that for the desyre he had to beate rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: also that he behaued hym selfe negligently: demaunding further more of hym, what was the cause of his so longe delay. Atkewyle he spake to at the vnder officers sharye and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to rulle vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They despyed hym to quere hym selfe, and to forbear them a while vntill they had reaped the coine that they had sowne, which wolde shortly bee ripe. For all kynde of coine waretly ripe there euery fourth moone the after it is sowne. But he bitterly denyed to tarye any whyle: but that he wolde forthwith departe from that vnforsunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that euer was browghe into the goulfe of *Beragus*, and commaunded them to directe theyr course towarde the East. After they had sayled aboute the space of .xvi. myles, a certepne younge man whose name was *Bregozie*, a Venues borne, and of a chylde browghe vp with *Colonus*, cauled to remembrance that there was a haven not farre frome thense: And to proue his sayinge trewe, he gaue his felowes these tokens: that is, that they shoulde fynde vpon the shoze, an anker of a losse shyppe halfe covered with sande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the haven, a sprynge of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the sprynge, and commended the wytte and memozie of the

The Region of *Gratia Dei* or *Cerabaro*.  
The ryuer of *Sancti Martini*.

The rigorousnes of *Nicuesa*.

Come waretly ripe euery fourth moone

The commendation of a younge man browghe vp with *Colonus*.

The seconde decade.

young man, that he only amonge many of the marynes whiche  
 he had searched those coastes with *Colonus*, bore the thyng  
 soo well in mynde. This haven, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus*.  
 Wheras in this byage for lacke of bytayles they were sumer  
 tymes enforced to goo alande, they were cruel entreated of the  
 inhabitantes: By reason wherof, theyz strengthes were soo  
 weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre  
 ageynst naked men, or scarcely to beare theyz harnes on their  
 backes. And therfore oovre men losse twentie of theyz coomz  
 panic, which were slayne with venemous arrowes. They con-  
 sulted to leaue the one halfe of theyz felowes in the haven of  
*Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicusus* tooke with hym to  
 ward the East: where abowte twentie and epyght myles fro  
*Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortresse harde by the sea  
 syde bypon the poynte or cape which in tyme paste *Colonus* naz-  
 med *Martior*. But they were soo feeble by reason of longe hun-  
 ger, that theyz strength serued them not to susteyne suche laz-  
 houre. Per he erected a lyttle towre able to resyst the fyzt at-  
 saute of the inhabitantes. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei*.  
 From the tyme that he left *Beragus*, what in the tozney amonge  
 the sandie playnes, then also for hunger whyle he buylded  
 the towre, of the fewe which remayned a lyue, he losse twoo  
 hundreth. And thus by lyttle and lyttle, the multitude of se-  
 uen hundreth foure score and fyue men, was nowe broughe  
 to scarcely one hundreth. Whyle *Nicusus* lyued with these fewe  
 miserable men, there arose a contetion amonge them of *Uraba*,  
 as concerninge the Lieutenaneshippe. For one *Vaschus Nunnex*,  
 by the iudgemente of all men, crutynge moze to his strengthe  
 then wytte, floured by certeyne lyght felowes ageynst *Ancisus*,  
 sayinge that *Ancisus* had not the kynges letters patentes for  
 that office: And that it was not sufficient that he was auto-  
 rised by *Fogeda*. And therfore forbodde that he shoulde execute  
 the office of the Lieutenaneshippe: And wyllled theym to  
 chuse certeyne of theyz owne coompanye, by whose coun-  
 sayle and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.  
 Thus beynge diuided into factions by reason that *Fogeda*, their  
 capitayne came not ageyne, whom they supposed to bee nowe  
 deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whether it  
 were beste to substitute *Nicusus* in his place. The wyfesse forte  
 suche as were famplier with *Nicusus*, and coulde not beare that  
 solencie

Portus Bellus

weakenes of  
hunger.

Cap. Marmor.

Nomen Dei.

Nicusus his  
men consumed

Contencion a  
bout the lieue-  
tenaneship  
of Uraba.

Vaschus Nun-  
nex moner by  
lection.  
Ancisus lieue-  
tenant for  
Fogeda.

Colentie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, throught it good that *Nicuesa* should bee, fowght out throught out all those coastes: For they had knoweledge that he departed from *Beragua* bycause of the barrennes of the grounde: And that by the temple of *Ancifus*, and such other as had made shippwzacke, it were possible that he might wander in some secrete place: And that they could not be quiete in their myndes vntill they knewe the certētie, whether he with his felowes were alvye or deade. But *Vaschus Nunnez*, feareinge leaste at the commyng of *Nicuesa* he shulde not bee had in autoritie emonge his felowes, sayde they were mad men to thinke that *Nicuesa* lyued: And although he were alvye, yet that they hadde noo neade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meete to rule as *Nicuesa*. While they were thus reasonyng too and froo, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* arriued in those coastes with two greate shippes hauinge in theym thre score freshe men, with greate plentie of vitayles and appavel. Of the nauigation of this *Colmenaris*, I intende to speake sumwhat more. He therfore departed from the haven of *Hispaniola* cauled *Beata* (where they prepare and furnyshe theym selues whiche make any viage into these landes) aboute the Ides of *December* in the yeare. 1510: And landed the ix. of *November* in a Region in the large prouince of *Paria* founde by *Colonus* betwene the haven *Cartbago* and the Region of *Cuchibacou*. In this viage what by the roughnes of the sea & fiercenes of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities. For when his freshe water fayled, he sayled to the mouth of a certeyne riuer which thin habitantes caule *Gaira*, beinge apte to receaue shippes. This ryuer had his course from the toppe of an erreasinge hyghe mountayne couered with snowe, hygher then the which, all the companyons of this capitayne *Rodericus*, saye that they neuer sawe. And that by good reason, yf it were couered wpth snowe in that Region which is not past ten degrees distant from the *Equinoctial* lync. As they beganne to drawe water out of their shippeboate, a certeyne Ryng made towarde theym appareled with vestures of goldampine cotton, hauinge thertie noble men in his companye appareled also. Whiche thinge seemed straunge to oovre men, and not setne before in those parries. The Rynges appavel, hunge loose from his shoulders to his elbowes: And from the gerdle downward,

*Nicuesa**Rodericus Colmenaris*,The nauigation of *Rodericus Colmenaris*.*Cuchibacou*,The ryuer *Gaira*.  
An exceeding hygh mountayne couered with snowe.

Appareled men.

The seconde decade.

it was muche like a womans kerle, teachinge euen to his hee-  
les. As he drewe uerre towarde owre men, he seemed frendly  
to admonyshe them to take none of the water of that ryuer,  
affirminge it to bee unholysome for men: And shewed them  
that not farre from thense, there was a ryuer of good water.  
They came to the ryuer. And endeuouringe to come nere the  
shore, they were dysuen backe by tempeste. Also the burbulinge  
of the sande, declared the sea to bee but shalowe there. They  
were therefore enforced to returne to the fyrste ryuer where  
they myght safely caste anker. This kynge layde wayte for  
owre men. For as they were fyllyng their barrells, he set  
on them with abowt seven hundred men (as owre men iud-  
ged) armed after their maner, although they were naked.  
For only the kynge and his noble men were appareled. They  
tooke away the shippeboare, and brooke it in maner to chips:  
soo fiercelly assaylyng owre menne with theyr venemous ar-  
rowes, that they flew of them fortie and seven befoze they  
coude couer them selues with theyr targettes. For that pay-  
son is of such force, that albeit the woundes were not great,  
yet they dyed therof immediatly. For they yet knewe no re-  
medie ageynste this kynde of payson, as they after lerned of  
the inhabitants of Hispaniola. For this Ilande bringeth foorth  
an herbe which quengeth and mortifieth the violent payson  
of the herbe wherewith theyr arrowes are infected, soo that  
it bee ministred in tyme. Yet of owre company whiche went  
for water, seven escaped that condicte, and hyd them selues  
in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there vntyll nyght. Yet escaped  
they not the handes of theyr enemyes. For the shippe depar-  
ted from thense in the nyght season and lefte them there, sup-  
posinge that they had byn slayne. Thus by manye such pe-  
rels and daungers (which I lyghtly outpasse because I wyl  
not bee tedious to powre holynes) he arriued at the length at  
the haue of *Uraba*, and cast anker at the easte syde therof, frō  
whense not longe befoze, owre men departed to the west syde  
by reason of the barrennes of that soyle. When he had com-  
mued a whyle in the haue, and sawe noo man durynge mar-  
nyng at the silence of the places (for he supposed there to  
haue founde his felowes) he coude not coniecture what  
this shulde meane: and there vpon beganne to suspecte that  
eether they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place

Seven and  
fory Spany-  
ardes are  
slaine with  
Venemous  
arrowes.  
*Ierna.*  
A remedy a-  
genste Vene-  
mous arrowes

Seven men  
left behynde.

The haue  
of *Uraba*.

of theyr habitacion. To knowe the certentie hercof, he commaunded all the greate ordinaunce and other smaule gunnes which he had in his shippes, to bee charged: And fyers to bee made in the nyght vppon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyers beinge kyndeled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee shotte of at one instante: by the horrible noyse whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was shaken, althowghe it worre .xxiiii. myles distant: for soo bryde is the goulfe. This noyse was harde of theyr felowes in *Dariena*: And they aunswered them ageyne with mutual fyers. Wherefore, by the folowynge of these fyers, *Colmenaris* broughit his shippes to the Weste syde. Here those wretched and miserable men of *Dariena* which nowe theyr toogh famen and feeblenes helde theyr wery sowles in theyr teethe redy to departe from theyr bodies by reason of the calamities which befall vnto them after *Ancifus* shippwracke, yf tynge by theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnyng downe theyr cheekes bothe for ioye and sorowe, embraced *Rodericus* and his felowes with such kynde of reioysinge as their presente necessitie seemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withowte byrtales and almoste naked, he broughit them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. He resteth nowe (moste holy father) to declare what came of the dissention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernynge the gouernance after the losse of theyr capitaynes.

The goulfe of *Uraba*.

*Dariena*.

*Famen*.

what became of the contention of *Uraba*

The thyrde booke of the seconde Decade  
of the supposed continent.



All the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and such as were most politike in counsaile, determyned that *Nicuesa* shulde bee sought oute: by any meanes he could be founde. Where vppon they tooke from *Ancifus* the gouernoure refusinge the commynge of *Nicuesa*, a byrganyne whiche he made of his owne charges:

*Beragua*.

And agreed, ageynst bothe the wyll of *Ancifus*, and the master of fence *Vaschus Nunnez*, that *Nicuesa* shulde bee sought forth he to take away the styfe as touchinge the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllynge hym to make diligent search

*Nicuesa* is sought forth

D.1.

for

The seconde decade.

for *Nicuesa* in those coastes where they supposed he erred. For they harde that he had forsaken *Berigua*, the region of an vnt frutefull ground. They gaue hym therefore commaundement to bypge *Nicuesa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he shulde doo ryght good service to coome thether, in takinge away the occasion of theyr seditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the chynge vppon hym the more gladly bycause *Nicuesa* was his very frende: Supposinge that his commynge with byraples shulde bee nos lesse thankefull to *Nicuesa* and his compahie, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Fyrst thynge therefore one of his owne shippes whiche he byowght with hym and also the bygautyne taken frome *Ancisus*, he scapghred the same with part of the byraples and other necessaries whiche he byowght with hym befoze from *Hispaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus courspynge at longe by all the coastes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynce cauled *Mimor*, he founde *Nicuesa*, of all bypynge men most infortunate, in maner dreyed vppon with extreme hunger, fylthye and horrible to beholde, with onely thre score men in his company, leste alyue of seuen hundreth. They all seemed to hym soo miserable, that he nos lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had founde them deade. But *Colmenaris* comforted his frende *Nicuesa* and embzalynge hym with teares and cherefull woordes, relyued his spirites, and further encouraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declaringe also that his commynge was looked for and greatlye desyred of all the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his auctoritie, theyr discorde and contention shulde bee fynished. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after such sorte as his calamitic requyred. Thus they tooke shyppe to gyther, and sayled directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vncoustant is the nature of man, that he soone groweth oute of hys benygnitie, commeth insolente and vnyndful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicuesa*, after thus many teares and weppynge after dyuers bewaylinges of his infortunate destiny, after so many thankes geuyng yf affect that he had faulen done to the grounde and kyssed the feete of *Colmenaris* his sauoure, he beganne to quarrel with hym befoze he came yet at *Vraba*, reprovinge hym and them all for the alteration of the state of theyr ges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirming that none of them shoulde haue layde hande of any golde with

*Nicuesa* is  
founde in a  
miserable  
case.

Colmenaris  
comforted  
his frende  
*Nicuesa*

In solencie of  
to much felicitie.

of the aduice of hym or of *Fogeda* his coompanion. When these sayinges and suche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they soo floured vp the myndes of *Ancifus* Lieutenante for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaschus Nunnex*, of the contrary parte, & geinke *Nicuesa*, that shortly after his arryuall with his three score men, they commaunded hym with threacyngge to departe fro theise. But this pleased not the better sort. Yet fearyngge least tumult shulde bee amonge the people whom *Vaschus Nunnex* had stered to factious, the best parte was fayne to giue place to the greatest. This wretched man therfore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseries, was thurst into the brigantyne whiche he hym selfe brough: and with hym only seuentene men, of his three score which remayned alpye. He tooke wypppe in the Calendes of Marche in the yeare 1511. intendyngge to goo to *Hispaniola* to coomplayne of the ralthenes of *Vaschus Nunnex*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Ancifus*. But he entered into the brigantine in an vnfortunate houre: for he was neuer seene after. They suppose that the brigantine was drowned with all the men therein. And thus unhappie *Nicuesa* faulynge headlonge owte of one miserye into an other, ended his lyfe moze myserablye then he lyued. *Nicuesa* beinge thus vylely reiected, & al theyr vytayles consumed which *Colmenaris* brought them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woodnes leakyngge theyr praye, to invade suche as dwelce abowte theyr confynes. *Vaschus Nunnex* therfore, theyr newe capitayne of theyr owne election, a Rembling togyther a hundreth and thirtie men, and settinge them in order of battell after his swoordeplayers fashon, puffed wypppe with pryde, placed his souldiers as pleased hym in the forwarde and reerward, and sume as perisens abowt his owne person. Thus associatinge with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to spoyle the kynges whiche were bartherers there abowte, and came fyrst to a Region abowte that coaste, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mention before) imperiously and with cruel countenance commaundinge the kyng of the region whose name was *Careta*, (of whome they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to giue them vytayles. But *Careta* denyed that he coulde gyue them any at that tyme: alleagynng that he had oftentimes ayded the Christians as they passed by those coastes: by reason wherof his store was nowe

*Nicuesa* faulseth from one miserie into another.

The greatest part ouercometh the best

The death of *Nicuesa*.

Famen enforced them to faule to spoyle.

*Vaschus* vserpeth thauroritie of the Lieutenants shippe.

*Careta*, kynge of *Coiba*.

The seconde decade.

kyng Careta  
is taken and  
spoyled.

hunger is the  
best sauce.

wyne & thine  
the seedes of  
all mischefe.

Ancifus, lieue  
tenaunt for  
Fogeda is  
cast in pylson.

Ancifus taketh  
his wyage to  
Milpa  
niola.

consumed: Also that by the meanes of the contynuall warre which he kepte cunct from his chyldes age with a kyng whose name is *Poncha*, boztheringe vppon his dominion, he and his famelie were in greate scarfenes of all thynges. But *Vasbus* woolde admytte none of these excuses: And therbyppon tooke *Careta* prisoner, spoyled his byllage, and brought hym bozond with his twoo wyues and chyldren and all his famelie to *Dariens*. With this kyng *Careta*, they founde thre of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the whiche when *Nicuesa* passed by those coastes to seeke *Berigus*, fearynge punishment for theyr euyl desertes stoule away from the shippes linge at anker: And when the name departed, comyrted them selues to the mercie of *Careta*, who entercenyed them very frendely. They had nowe bynne there .xviii. moonethes, and were theretozc as vterly naked as the people of the contrey. Duringe this tyme, the meate of thynhabitances seemed vnto them delicate dishes and princely fare: especially bycause they enioyed the same withoute any stryfe for myne and thyne, which twoo thynges moue and enforce men to such harde shyftes and miseries, that in luyng they seeme not to lye. yet despyred they to returne to theyr owlde cares, of such force is education and natural affection towarde them with whom we haue byn brought vp. The bytayles whiche *Vasbus* brought from the byllage of *Careta* to his felowes leste in *Dariens*, was rather sumewhat to assuage theyr present hunger, and vterly to take away theyr necessitie. But as touchinge *Ancifus* beinge Licuetenaunt for *Fogeda* whether it were befoze these thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am sure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicuesa*, many occasions were sought agens *Ancifus* by *Vasbus* and his factionaries. Howe soo cunct it was, *Ancifus* was taken, and cast in pylson, and his goodes confiscate. The cause hereof was, (as *Vasbus* alleaged) that *Ancifus* hadde his commission of the Licuetenauntshypp, of *Fogeda* onely whome they sayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kyng. Sayinge that he woolde not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym selfe by his letters patentes. yet at the request of the graueste sorte, he was sumwhat pacified, and delt moze genelly with hym, hauinge sum compassion of his calamities. And therbyppon commaunded hym to bee loosed. *Ancifus* beinge at libertie, tooke shyppe to departe from thense to *Hispaniola*. But befoze he

he had hoped by his sayle, all the worst sorte resorted to hym, humbly desyringe hym to returne ageyne: promysynge that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vaschus* beinge recou- ciled, he myght bee restored to his full aurozitie of the *Aene*: tenauntshippe. But *Ancifus* refused to consent to theyr request and soo departed. yet some there were that murmured that god and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon *Ancifus*, by cause *Nicuesa* was reiectred throught his counsaile. Howe soo euer it bee, the searchers of the newe landes, faule headlonge in: to ruine by theyr owne follye, consuminge them selues with ciuile discorde, not weighinge soo greate a matter, nor employinge theyr beste endeouure aboute the same as the woort- thynes of the thynge requyret. In this meane tyme, they de- termined all with one agreemente, to sende messengers into *Hispaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, Sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fynder of these landes, and to the o- ther gouernoures of the *Flaunde* (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to signifie vnto the what state they stood in, and in what necessitie they lyued: also what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater thin- ges if they were furnyshed with plentie of bytayles and other necessaries. For this purpose they elected at the assignement of *Vaschus*, one *Valdiuia*, beinge one of his faction, and instruc- ted by hym ageinst *Ancifus*. And to bee assistant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a *Cantabrian*: So that commaunde- ment was gyuen to *Valdiuia* to returne from *Hispaniola* with by- tayles: And *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his vyage into *Spayne* to the kynge. They tooke shippe both togyther with *Ancifus*, hauinge in mynde to certifie the kynge home thynges were handeled there, muche otherwysse then *Zamudius* informa- tion. I my selfe spake with both *Ancifus* and *Zamudius* at their commynge to the court. Whyle they were occupied aboute these matters, those wretched men of *Dariens* loosed *Careta* the kynge of *Coiba* vppon condition that he shulde ayde theym in theyr wartes ageynst his enemy and theyrs, kynge *Poncha* bo- theringe vpon his dominions. *Careta* made a league with the, promysynge that as they passed by his kyngedome, he woold geue them all thynges necessarie, and meere them with an ar- mie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agens- *Poncha*. Theyr weapons are nother bowes nor benemed ar-

The reueng  
of Sod.

The inconue-  
niences of  
discorde.

The sonne &  
heyr of Colo-  
nus, is Admi-  
rall and vices-  
roy of *Hispani-  
ola*.

*Valdiuia*.

*Zamudius* &  
*Ancifus*, take  
their vyage  
to *Spayne*.

kinge *Poncha*.

## The seconde decade.

Swoordes of  
woodde.

kynges Careta  
conspireth  
with the Spa  
nyardes a-  
genst kynges  
Poncha.

wrought gold

The region  
of Comogra,  
distant frome  
Darien. xxx.  
leagues.

kynges Come-  
grus.

The kynges  
palace.

rowes, as we sayde thinhabitantes to haue which dwel east-  
warde beyonde the goulfe. They feight therfore at hande,  
with longe woordes (which they caule *Machus*) made of wood  
bycause they haue noo Iren. They vse also longe staues lyke  
ia. ielens hardened at the endes with syer, or tpyte with bone.  
Also certeyne aynges and dartes. Thus after the league made  
with *Careta*, bothe he and owre men had certeyne dayes ap-  
pointed them to ryll theyr grounde and sowe theyr seedes.  
This doone, by the ayde of *Careta* and by his conduction, they  
marched towarde the palace of *Poncha*, who fledde at theyr co-  
mynge. They spoyled his byllage and mpygated theyr hun-  
ger with such bytayles as they founde there, yet coulde they  
not helpe their felowes therwith by reaso of the farre distance  
of the place, althowghe they had greete plentie. For the byl-  
lage of *Poncha*, was more then a hundreth myles distant from  
*Darien*. Wheras was also none other remedy but that the same  
shalde haue byn carryed on mens backes to the sea syde beinge  
farre of, where they left theyr shypes in the which they came  
to the byllage of *Carita*. Here they founde certeyne poundes  
weyght of gold, grauen & wrought into sundrye ouches. Af-  
ter the sacking of this byllage they resorted toward the ships  
intendyng to leaue the kynges of the inland vntouched at this  
tyme, & to invade onely them which dwelt by the sea coastes.  
Not farre from *Coiba*, in the same tracte, there is a Region nar-  
med *Comogra*, and the Kyng thereof, cauled *Comogrus* after the  
same name. To this Kyng they came fyrst next after the sub-  
uertion of *Poncha*. And founde his palace situate in a tretefull  
playne of twelue leagues in bredthe, at the rootes of the sur-  
ther syde of the nere mountaynes. *Comogrus* had in his courte  
a certeyne noble man of nere consanguinitie to *Kynges Careta*,  
whiche had fledde to *Comogrus* by reason of certeyne dissenti-  
on whiche was betwene *Careta* and hym. These noble men, they  
caule *Irra*. This *Irra* therfore of *Coiba*, mette owre men by the  
way, and conciled *Comogrus* to them, bycause he was well kno-  
wen to owre me from the tyme that *Nicuesa* passed fyrst by those  
coastes. Owre men therfore went quietlye to the palace of  
*Comogrus* beinge distante from *Darien* thirtie leagues by a plaine  
waye aboote the mountaynes. This Kyng *Comogrus*, had se-  
uen sonnes, younge men of comelye forme and stature, whiche  
he had by sundry wyues. His palace was framed of postes

or proppes made of trees fastened togepyther after a straunge  
 sorte, and of soo stronge bylding, that it is of no lesse strength  
 then waules of stone. They which measured the length of the  
 floure thereof, founde it to bee a hundreth and fyftie paces,  
 and in breadthe, foure score foote: beinge roofed and paved  
 with maruelous arte. They founde his store house, furnyshed  
 with abundance of delicate vitayles after the maner of theyr  
 countrey: And his wyne celler replenished with great vessels  
 of earth and also of woodde fylled with theyr kynde of wyne  
 and syder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make  
 theyr breade of those thre kyndes of rootes cauled *Iucca*, *agis*,  
 and *Naizium*, (whereof we spake in the fyrste decade) soo  
 make they theyr wyne of the frutes of date trees, and syder  
 of oher frutes and seedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynge  
 Englyshe men, and oore Spanyardes whych inhabite the  
 mountaynes, as the Wascons and Asturians: likewise in the  
 mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Suenians, and Hel-  
 uetians, make certeyne drynkes of barley, wheat, hoppes, and  
 apples. They say also that with *Comogrus*, they dronke wyne  
 of sundry tastes, both whyte and blacke. But nowe yow shall  
 heare of a thyng more monstrous too behoulde. Enterynge  
 therfor into the inner partes of the palaice, they were browght  
 into a chamber hanged aboure with the carkeles of men, tyed  
 with ropes of gossampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what  
 they ment by that superstition, they answered that those were  
 the carkeles of the father, graunde father, and great graunde-  
 father with the other auncestours of theyr Kyng *Comogrus*. De-  
 claringe that they had the same in greate reuerence, and that  
 they tooke it for a godly thyng to honoure them religiously:  
 And therfore appaveled euery of the same sumptuouslye with  
 golde and precious stones accordyng to theyr estate. After  
 this sorte dyd the antiquitie honoure theyr *Penttes*, whych  
 they thowght had the gouernaunce of their lyues. Howe they  
 dreye these carkeles vppon certeyne instrumetes made of wood,  
 like vnto huddels, with a losse tyer vnder the same, so that  
 onely the skynne remaineth to houlde the bones together, we  
 haue described in the former decade. Of *Comogrus* his seven  
 sonnnes, the eldest had an exceliente naturall wyte. Whether-  
 soze thowght it good to flatter and please thys wandryng  
 kynde of men (our men 3 meane) lyuyng oncly by wifes and  
 spoyle

wyne &amp; syder

Blacke wine.

The bodies  
of deade kyn-  
ges, religioni-  
ly honoured.*Penttes*.The carcases  
of men dreyedThe kynges  
sonne a yonge  
man of excel-  
lent wyte.

## The seconde decade.

fourē thou-  
sande vnces  
of wrought  
golde.

The distribu-  
tion of golde.

young Come-  
grus his ora-  
tion.

The hunger  
of golde.

A region flo-  
winge wyth  
golde.

kyngē Tuma-  
nans.

Canibales.

spoyle, least beinge offended and seekynge occasions ageynste hym and his familie, they shuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche sowght noo meanes howe to gratifie theym. Wherefoze, he gaue *Vasibus* and *Colmenaris* foure thousande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fyfte slaues wyche he had taken in the warres. For suche, cyther they sell for exchaunce of other thynges, or otherwise vse them as theym lyketh. For they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in an other place, owte men wayed in the porche of *Comogrus* his palaice to separate the fyfte parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the Kynges elcheker. For it is decreed that the fyfte parte of both golde, perles, and precious stones, shulde be assigned to the Kynges treasourers: And the resydue, to bee diuided emonge theym selues by composition. Here as brabblynge and contention arose emonge owte men abowt the diuidinge of gold, this eldeste sonne of Kyngē *Comogrus* beinge presente, whome we praysed for his wylfdomē, commynge sūme what wyth an angery countenance towarde hym whiche helde the balences, he strooke theym wyth his fyfte, and scattered all the golde that was therein, abowt the porche, sharply rebukynge theym with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Christian men, that yow soo greatly esteeme soo litle a portion of golde more then yowr owne quietnes, whiche neuerthelesse yow entend to deface from these fayre ouches and to melte the same into a rude masse. If yowre hunger of goulde bee soo insatiable that onely for the desyre yowe haue thereto, yowe disquiete soo many nations, and yow yowre selues also suffryne soo many calamities and incommodities, lpying like banished men owte of yowre owne countrey, I wyl shewe yowe a Region floweing with goulde, where yowe may satisfie yowr vaueringe appetites. But yowe must attempte the thyng with a greater pouer: For it standeth yow in hande by force of armes to ouercome kynges of greate puilliance, and rigozous defenders of theyr dominions. For bysye other, the greate kyngē *Tumanans* will coome foorth ageynste yowe, whose kengdome is moſte ryche with golde, and distaunte from hense onely fyr soones: that is, fyr dayes: for they number the dayes by the sonne. Furthermoze, or euer yowe canne coome thither, yow must passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell *Canibales*

hales a fierce kynde of men, deuourers of mans flesh, lying  
 withoute lawes, wanderinge, and withoute empire. For  
 they also, beinge despyous of golde, haue subdewed them un-  
 der theyr dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes  
 of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vsing their  
 labour in dygginge and workyng theyr golde in plates and  
 sundry Images lyke vnto these whiche yow see here. For  
 wee doo no more esteeme rude golde brought, then we doo  
 cloddes of carthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the  
 workeman to the similitude eyther of some vessell needefull  
 for owre vse, or some ouche bewerifull to be worn. These  
 thynges doo wee receaue of them for exchange of other of  
 owre thynges, as of prisoners taken in warre, whiche they  
 bye to eat, or for speetes and other thynges perceyvinge to  
 the furnyture of householde, suche as they lacke which inha-  
 bite the mountaynes: And especially for vitayles wherof they  
 stande in greate neede by reason of the barrennes of the moun-  
 taynes. This iorney therfore, must bee made open by force of  
 men. And when yowe are passinge ouer these mountaynes  
 (poyntinge with his synger towarde the southe mountaynes)  
 yowe shal see an other sea, where they sayle with shippes as  
 bygge as yowres (meanyng the carauces) vsing both say-  
 les and ores as yowe doo, althowghe the men bee naked as  
 wee are. All the waye that the water runne he frome the  
 mountaynes, and all that syde lyinge towarde the Southe,  
 byngeth forth golde abundantly. As he sayde these wordes,  
 he poynted to the vesselles in whiche they vse to serue  
 theyr meate, affirmyng that kynge *Tumimus*, and all the o-  
 ther kyniges beyonde the mountaynes, had suche and al their  
 other householde stuffe of golde: And that there was noo lesse  
 plentie of golde amonge those people of the Southe, then of  
 Fren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wher-  
 of owre swordes and other weapons were made. Owre cap-  
 itaynes marueplyng at the oration of the naked younge man  
 (for they had for interpretours those three men whiche had  
 byn before a yere and a halfe conuersant in the court of kynge  
*Careta*) pondered in theyr myndes, & earnestly considered his say-  
 ynges. Soo that his rashenes in scatteringe the golde oute  
 of the balances, they turned to myrth and vrbannie, commen-  
 dyng his dooinge and sayinge therein. When they asked hym  
 friendly

The golde  
 mynes of the  
 mountaynes.

Unwrought  
 Golde not este-  
 med.

Exchange.

Abundance  
 of golde.

householde  
 stuffe of gold

The seconde decade.

friendely, bypon what certeyne knoweledge he spake those  
thynges: Or what he thowght beste herein to bee doone yf  
they shulde bynge a greater supplie of men. To this, younge  
*Comogrus*, staynge a whyle with hym selfe as it were an ora-  
tour preparinge him selfe to speake of some graue matter, and  
dispoynge his bodye to a giesture meete to perswade, spake  
thus in his mother tonge. Wyue care vnto me o yowe Chry-  
stians. Albeit that the greedie hunger of golde haue not yet  
hered vs naked men, yet doo we destroy one an other by reaz-  
son of ambition and desyre to rule. Hereof springerth moztall  
hatred amonge vs, and hereof commethe oovre destruction.  
Oovre predicefouls kepte warres, and soo dyd *Comogrus* my  
father with princes beinge boztherers abowte hym. In the  
which warres, as wee haue ouercoome, so haue wee byn ouer-  
coome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge  
vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of oovre enemyes, of  
the whiche I haue gyuen yowe fittie. Lykewyse at an other  
tyme, oovre aduerclaries hauinge thupper hande agenste vs,  
ledde away manye of vs captiue. For suche is the chaunce of  
warre. Also, amonge oovre familiers (wherof a great number  
haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of  
longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the poke  
of that kynge beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome  
is suche abundance of golde. Of hym, and suche other innum-  
merable, and lykewyse by the resort of free men on theyr syde  
comminge to vs, and ageyne of oovre men reloztinge to theim  
by safe conduct, these thynges haue byn euer as well knowen  
vnto vs, as oovre owne possessions. But that yowe maye bee  
the better assured hereof, and bee oovte of all suspicion that  
yowe shal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this biage,  
byndynge me fast and keepynge me in safe custodie to bee han-  
ged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my sayinges in any point  
vntrew. Folothe my countayle therfore, and send for a thou-  
sande Christian men apte for the warres, by whose power we  
may with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed  
after oovre maner, inuade the dominions of oovre enemyes:  
where, bothe yowe may bee satifsyed with golde, and we for  
oovre conductinge and apdynge yowe in this enterpyse, shall  
thynke oovre selues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe shall  
helpe to delyuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of  
oovre

Naked peo-  
ple tormeted  
with ambitio

A vehement  
persuasion.

more enemies. After these woordes, this prudente younge Comogrus helde his peace. And othere men moued with greate hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to swalowe downe theyr sperite.

A token of hunger.

The fourth booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed Continent.



After that they had tarped here a fewe dayes and baptised Comogrus with all his famelic, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kynge of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thousande souldyers, which his sonne requyzed to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea.

kyng Comogrus is baptised with his famely.

Thus enteringe into the byllage which they had chosen to inhabite, they had knowleage that *Valdiuis* was returned, within syre moonethes after his departure: but with noo great plentie of vytayles, bycause he brought but a smaule shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there shulde bee sent them abundance of vytayles with a newe supply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admirall and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the *Ilands*, acknowledged that hethereto they had noo respecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycause they supposed that *Ancifus* the Licutenant had safely arriued there with his shippe laden with vytayles: wyllynge them from hencforth to bee of good cheere, and that they shulde lacke nothyng hereafter: But that at this present tyme, they had noo bygger shippe wherby they myght sende them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuis*. The vytayles therfore which he brought, serued rather sumwhat to mytigate theyr present neede, then to satisfie theyr lacke. Wherfore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuis* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke scarcenes: especially for asmuch as a great storme and tempest whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lychtynge in the mooneth of November, brought with it suche a fludde, that it partely carryed away and partely drowned all the corne and seedes whiche they had sowne in the moonethe of September in a fruitfull grounde before they went to kyng Comogrus. The seedes which

*Valdiuis* returned from *Hispaniola*.

horrible thunder and lychtynge in the mooneth of November.

The seconde decade.

**Bread of Maizius & Hobba** they of *Hispaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Urahi* caule *Hobba*: Wherof they make theyr breade, which also wee sayde to be cype thysle every yeaere, because those Regions are not bytter with the sharpnes of wynter by reason of theyr nearnes to the Equinoctiall lync. It is also agreeable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, shulde bee moze holsome for thynhabitantes of those countreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easyer digestion. For wheras coude is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dzyuen frome the outward partes into the inward partes and pzeordials, whereby digestion is much strengthened. Beinge therfore thus frustrate of the increace of theyr seedes, and the kynges nere aboute them spoiled of both byrtayles and golde, they were enforced to seeke theyr meate further of: And therwith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great nece Titie they were oppressed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernynge the Regions toward the Southe: wyllynge them in consideration thereof to aduertise the kyng to sende them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye throughe the mountaynes diuidynge the sea on bothe sydes, if they coude not bypnye the same to passe quietly. The same *Valdiuis* was also sent on this message, carpyng with hym to the kynges treasurers (hauinge theyr office of receite in *Hispaniola*) three hundred poundes weyght of golde after eght ounces to the pounce, for the fyfte portion due to the kynges chcheker. This pounce of .viii. unces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weyght amounteth to fyfte pieces of golde cauled *Castellani*. But the Castilians, caule a pound *Pesum*. We conclude therfore, that the sume hereof, was .xv. thousande of those peeces of golde cauled *Castellani*. And thus is it apparente by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thousande and fyue hundred poundes of eght ounces to the pounce. All the whiche they founde redy brought in sundry handes of ouches, as cheynes, braselets, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr breastes, and also at theyr eares, and noses. *Valdiuis* therfore tooke shypinge in the same carauell in the whiche he came last, and returned also befoze the thyrde day of the Ides of January, in the yeaere of Christ M, D, XL. What chaunced to hym in this vyage, wee wyll declare

Digestion  
strengthened  
by outward  
coide.

hunger.

A newe supply  
of a thousande  
souldiers.

Marcha.

Pesum.

A thousande  
and fyue hundred  
poundes  
weyght of  
brought gold

The seconde decade.

7

declare in place conuenient. But let vs now returne to them  
 which remayned in *Vraba*. After the dismissing of *Valdiuit*, be-  
 inge pucked forward with outrageous hunger, they deter-  
 mined to searche the inner partes of that goulfe in sundry pla-  
 ces. The extreme angle or poynt of the same goulfe is distant  
 from the enterance therof, aboute foure score myles. This an-  
 gle or corner, the Spanyarde caule *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe  
 came to this poynte with a hundred men, coastynge alonge  
 by the goulfe with one byrgantine and certeyne of the  
 boates of those regions, which the Arabians caule *Vru*, lyke  
 vnto them whiche thynhabitantes of *Hispaniola* caule *Canois*.  
 From this poynt, there fauleth a ryuer from the East into the  
 goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariens* which al-  
 so fauleth into the same. Saylyng alonge by the ryuer about  
 the space of thirte myles (for they caule it nyne leaques) and  
 somewhat inclynge towarde the ryght hande southwarde,  
 they founde certeyne byllages of thynhabitantes, the kyng  
 wherof, was cauled *Dabaiba*. Oure men also were certifyed  
 before, that *Cemacchus* the kyng of *Dariens* whom they put to  
 kyght in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*. But at the com-  
 myng of oure men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thowght that  
 he was admonyshed by *Cemacchus*, that he shulde not abyde  
 the bzunte of oure men. He folowed his counsaile: forsooke  
 his byllages, and lefte all thynges desolate. yet oure men  
 founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Also much houshold  
 stuffe and many fythyng boates. But those marythe groundes  
 were neyther apte for sowinge of seedes or planting of trees.  
 By reason wherof, they founde there fewe luche thynges as  
 they desire that is, plentie of byracles. For thynhabitantes  
 of this Region, haue noo breade but such as they get in other  
 contreys nere aboure them by crchunge for they fythe, on-  
 ly to serue theyz owne necessitie. yet founde they in the hou-  
 ses of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amoun-  
 tyng to the sume of seuen thousande of those pierces whiche  
 we saye to be cauled *Castellans*: Also certeyne cardas: of the  
 which they brought away twoo with them, and great plentie  
 of theyz hou holde stuffe, with certeyne bundels of bowes and  
 arrowes. They saye, that from the marythes of that ryuer,  
 there coome certeyne hartes in the nyght season, as bygge as  
 turtle dooues, inuadyng men and byringe them with a deadly  
 wounde

The goulfe  
 of *Uraba*.  
*Culata*.

*Vaschus* sear-  
 cheth the  
 goulfe of *Ura-  
 ba*.

A marvelous  
 great ryuer-  
 faulyng into  
 the goulfe of  
*Uraba*.

kyng: *Daba-  
 iba* and *Che-  
 macchus*, are  
 dyscuen to  
 flyght.

marythe  
 grounde

wrought gold  
 wherhyng  
 vii. thousand  
*Castellans*.

Hartes as  
 bygge as tur-  
 tle doues,

## The seconde decade.

**Ancifus byt-  
ten of a batte**

**Remedies a  
geynst Ven-  
mousarrows**

**A tempest.**

**Colmenaris  
taketh his vy-  
age towarde  
the mountains**

**kyng Turui.**

**The Iland of  
Cannastula.**

wounde, as some of them testifie whiche haue byn bytten of the same. In my selfe communing with *Ancifus* the *Aleutecian* whom they reiected, and amonge other thynges askynge him of the venemous bytyng of these battes, he toulde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote bynge vncouered in the nyght by reason of the heate in sommer season: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaste not venemous. Other saye, that the bytyng of some of them is venemous: yet that the same is healed inconrinently, if it be washed with water of the sea. *Ancifus* toulde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the *Tanibales* arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by washinge with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with hotte Irens: And that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therfore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraba*, not well contented bycause they were not laden with vitailles. In this their returne, there arose soo greate a tempest in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to cast into the sea, all the household stuffe whiche they tooke from the poore *Wretches* whiche dyed onely by fishynge. The sea also swallowed vpp the two boates that they tooke from theym, wherewith the men were likewise drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnex* attempted to searche the poynte of the goulfe towarde the southe, euen then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the east, with threescore men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles distant from the mouth of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leagues) he founde certeyne vilages situate vppon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui*, (that is,) kinge, they caule *Turui*. With this kinge dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaschus* after his returne to *Dariens*, sayling by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refresynge theyr hole company with the vitailles of this *Turui*, they departed from thense togyther. Other fortie myles from hense, the ryuer encoompaleth an Iland inhabited with fysshermen. In this, bycause they sawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannastula*. They found in it, threescore villages of tenne cotages apiece. On the right syde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whose channell is of depty sufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer

ryuer they cauled *Riuum Nigrum*: from the mouthe wherof about xv. myles distance they founde a towne of fyue hundred hou-  
 ses seuered: whose *Chebi*, (that is,) kinge, was cauled *Abenamachei*. They all forsooke theyr houses as soone as they harde  
 of owre mennes commyng. But when they sawe that owre  
 men persued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vppon them  
 with desperate mindes, as men driuen from their owne posselli-  
 ons. Theyr wepons, are swozdes of wod, and long staves like  
 sauelens, hardened at the ende with sfer: But they vse ney-  
 ther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of thynhabitan-  
 tes of the weste syde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were  
 easely driuen to flight with owre weapons. As owre men fol-  
 lowed them in the chase, they tooke the kinge *Abenamachei* and  
 certeine of his noble men. A common souldier of owres whom  
 the kyng had wounded, comminge to hym when he was tak-  
 en, cutte of his arme at one stroke with his swozde. But  
 this was doone vntwares to the capitaynes. The number of  
 the Christian men which were here, was aboute a hundrede  
 and fiftie: the one halfe wherof, the capytaynes lefte here,  
 and they with the resydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with  
 twelue of the boates of those Regions, whiche they caul. *Vru*,  
 as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canooas*, as we haue sayde. From  
 the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Island of *Cannafistula*, for the space  
 of threescore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande &  
 on the lefte many riuers faulinge into it bigger then it selfe,  
 they entred into one by the conductyng of one of the naked  
 inhabitanes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpose.  
 Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouthe of the  
 same, there was a kyng cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycause the  
 Region was full of maryshes, had his palatce buylde in the  
 toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldyng and seldome  
 seene. But that lande beareth trees of suche exceding heigth,  
 that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houses:  
 As wee reede the like in diuers autoures howe in many Regi-  
 ons where the ocean sea vssethe and ouerfloweth the lande,  
 the people were accustomed to syle to the high trees, and after  
 the faule of the water, to take the syle lefte on the lande.  
 This maner of buyldinge, is to laye beames crosse ouer the  
 branches of the trees, faste bownde togyther, and there vpp-  
 on to raple theyr frame, strongly made ageynste wynde and  
 trees

The ryuer or  
*Riuus Niger*.  
 A towne of  
 v. hundred  
 houses.

The inhabitan-  
 tes of the  
 west syde of  
 the goulfe.

kyng *Abena-  
 machei*, is ta-  
 ken and his  
 arme cut of.

many other  
 ryuers fau-  
 ling into *Ri-  
 uus Niger*.

kyng *abibeiba*  
 dwelleth  
 in a tree.

Abundance  
 of moyster &  
 heat is cause  
 of byggenes.

The rysyng  
 of the Ocean  
 sea.

The seconde decade.

whether. More men suppose that they buylde theyz houses in trees, by reason of the greate suddes and ouerflowinge of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in those Regions. These trees are of suche heighth, that the strength of no manes arme is able to hurle a stone to the houles buylde therein. And therfore doo I gyue the better credit to Blime and other authors whiche wyrite that the trees in some places in *India* are soo high by reason of the feutefulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to shute ouer theym with an arrowde. And by iudgemente of all men, it is thowght that there is noo feutfuller grounde vnder the soonne, then this is whercof wee nowe entreate. More men measuringe manye of these trees, founde theym to bee of suche biggnes, that seuen men, y<sup>e</sup> sumetymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyz armes streached furthe, were scarcely able too fathyme them aboute. yet haue they theyz cellers in the grounde, well replenshed with such wyne wher of wee haue spoken befoze. For albeit that the vehemencie of the wynde, is not of poure to caste downe those houles, or to brecke the branches of the trees, yet are they tolled therez with, and swaye sumwhat from syde to syde, by reason wherof, the wyne shulde bee muche troubeled with mooninge. All other necessarye thinges, they haue with theym in the trees. When the kynge or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyz wyne are brought theym from the cellers by theyz seruantes, whiche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with noo lesse celeritie to runne vpp and downe the steares adherente to the tree, then doo othere maytynge boyes vppon the playne grounde, ferche vs what wote tagle for from the cobbarde bysyde ower dyninge table. More men therfoze, came to the tree of kynge *Abibeiba*, and by thinterpretoures cauled hym foorth to communication, gyuinge hym signes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denyed that he woolde coomme owere of his house: Desyringe them to suffer hym to lyue after his fashion. But owere men fell from fayre wordes to threatheninge, that excepte he wolde descende with all his famelic, they wolde eyther ouerthrowe the tree, or elles set it on fyre. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to helvinge the tree with theyz axes. *Abibeiba* seeinge the chippes faule from the tree on euery syde, chaun-

Trees of marvelous height

Plinie.

Fruitfull grounde.

Cellers in the grounde.

Abibeiba, the kynge of the tree, yeldeth the to Maschus.

changed his purpose, and came doone with only two of his  
 soones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they commu-  
 ned of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* answered that he had noo  
 golde, and that he neuer had any neede therof, nor yet regar-  
 ded it any moze then stones. But when they were instance  
 vppon hym, he sayde vnto them. If yowe soo greatly desyre  
 golde, I will seeke for some in the nexte mountaynes, and  
 bringe it vnto yowe. For it is plentifully engendred in thise  
 mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe  
 this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the  
 daye appoynted. They departed therfoze from thense well re-  
 freshed with his vitailles and wyne, but not with goulde as  
 they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and  
 his ditionaries as concerninge the golde mynes and the *Can-*  
*bales*, as they harde befoze of kinge *Comogrus*. Saylinge yet  
 further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vppon certeyne  
 cotages of the *Canibales*: But viterly boyde with owte men  
 or stuffe. For when they had knowleage that owte men wait-  
 dered in the prouinces nere aboute theym they resorted to the  
 mountaynes, caryinge al theyr goodes and stuffe wyth them.

Sold no more  
 esteemed then  
 stones.

*Canibales.*

The fyfte booke of the seconde Decade  
 of the supposed continent.



In the meane tyme whyle these thynges were  
 doone alonge by the shores or bankes of the  
 ryuer, a certeyne *Decurian*, that is a cappy-  
 tayne ouer renne, of the coompanye of those  
 which *Vasus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a gar-  
 ryson in *Riuo Negro* in the dominion of kynge  
*Abinamachei*.

Whether it were that he was com-  
 pelled throught hunger, or that his fatale dayes was nowe  
 coome, he attempted with his souldiers to searche the coun-  
 treys nere there about, and entered into the byllage of a king  
 cauled *Abraiiba*. This capitaynes name was *Rata*: whom *Abrai-*  
*ba* knewe, with twoo of his felowes: but the resydue fledde.  
 Within a fewe dayes after, *Abraiiba* hauinge compassion of the  
 calamitie of his kynseman and neyghbour *Abenamacheus* being  
 dyruen from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd  
 befoze that one of the souldiers cut of at the ryuer of *Riuo Negro*

kyng *Abraiiba*

S. I. and

The seconde decade.

and nowe remaynyng with *Abraba* to whome he fledde by  
 felth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* thynhabitour of the  
 tree, who had nowe lykewyse forsaken his contrey for feare  
 of owre men, and wandered in the desolate mountaynes and  
 wooddes. When he had therfore founde him, he spake to him  
 in this effecte. What thyng is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*?  
 or what nation is this that soo tormenterly vs that wee can  
 not enioye owre quyet lybertie? Howe longe, howe longe I  
 say shall wee suffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for  
 vs to die, then to abide such iniuries and oppressions as yow,  
 as *Abinamacheius* owre kynsman, as *Cemachus*, as *Careta*, as *Pon-*  
*cha*, as I and other princes of ovr order doo susteyne? Canne  
 any thyng bee more intollerable then to see owre wyues,  
 owre chyldren, and owre subiectes, to bee ledde awaye cap-  
 tines, and owre goodes to be spoyled euen befoze owre faces.

I take the goddes to wyynes, that I speake not soo much  
 for myne owne part as I doo for yowe whose case I lament.  
 For albeit they haue not yet touched me, neuerthelesse, by the  
 example of other, I woght to thynke that my destruction is  
 not farre of. Let vs therfore (yf wee bee men) tye owre streng-  
 ths and proue owre fortune ageynst them whiche haue delte  
 cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owte of his  
 contrey. Let vs set on them with all owre poure, and vterly  
 destroy them. And yf wee can not sleve them al, yet shall wee  
 make them afrayde eyther to assaile vs ageyne, or at the least  
 dimynyshe theyr poure. For what soo euer shall befaule, no-  
 thyng can chaunce woorse vnto vs then that which we now  
 suffer. When *Abibeiba* harde these wordes and such other like,  
 he condecended to doo in al thinges as *Abraba* wolde requyre:  
 Where vppon they appoynted a day to byngne theyr conspira-  
 cie to passe. But the thyng chaunced not accordyng to thete  
 desyre. For of those whiche wee sayde to haue passed to the  
*Canibales*, there returned by chaunce to *Riuus Niger* the nyght  
 befoze the day appoynted to woork thete feate, thirtie men  
 to the ayde of theym whiche were lefte there yf anye sedition  
 shulde ryse as they suspected. Therfore at the daunyng of the  
 day, the confetherate kynges with fyue hundred of theyr di-  
 tionaries armed after theyr maner, beleaged the byllage with  
 a terrible alarome, knowyng nothyng of the newe menne  
 which came thether the same nyght. Here owre target men  
 cam

*Abraba* cau-  
 seth the kyn-  
 ges to rebell.

men good  
 enough yf  
 they had iren

The kynges  
 are dryuen to  
 flyght.

came forth ageynst them, and first assailed them a farre of  
with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and laste with  
theyr swoordes: But the naked seely folmes, perceauinge a  
greater number of theyr aduersaries thē they looked for, were  
soone dryuen to flyght, and slayne for the most parte lyke sca-  
terynge sheepe. The kynges escaped, they slewe manye, and  
tooke many captiues whiche they sente to *Dariens* where they  
vse them for labourers to ryll and sowe theyr grounde. These  
thynges thus happely atchpyed, and that prouince quyeted,  
they returned by the ryuer to *Dariens*, leauinge theyr thyrte  
men for a garyson vnder the gouernance of one *Furstado* a ca-  
pitayne. This *Furstado* therfore, sente from *Riuo Nigro* where  
he was appoynted gouernoure, twentie of his felowes & one  
woman, with .xxiiii. captiues to *Vaschus* and his company, in  
one of the byggest *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed  
downe by the ryuer, there came forth suddenly ouerthwarte  
the ryuer ageynst them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew  
theyr boate and slewe as many of them as they coulde coome  
by, because they were vnprepared suspecting noo such thinge.  
More men were all drowned and slayne excepte two, which  
hyd them selues amonge certeyne fagottes that swaume on  
the water, in the whiche they laye luckynge, and soo escaped  
to theyr felowes in *Dariens*: who by them beinge aduertysed  
hercof, beganne to caste theyr wyttes what this thyng might  
meane: beinge no lesse sollicitate for them selues, then medita-  
tyng in what daunger theyr felowes had byn in *Riuo Nigro*,  
excepte by good fortune, those thirtie newe men which were  
sente to them, had coome to the byllage the nyght before the  
conspiracie shulde haue byn wrought. Consultinge therefore  
what was best to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dyl-  
gent searchynge they had intelligence that foue kynges, that  
is to wytte, *Abibeiba* the inhabitoure of the tree, and *Cemacabus*  
dryuen from his byllage whiche owne menne nowe possessed,  
*Abraba* also and *Abenamscheius*, kynsmen, with *Dababa* the king  
of the syber men inhabytyng the corner of the goulfe whiche  
we cauled *Culata*, were all assembled to conspire the Christian  
mens destruction at a day assigned. Which thyng had surely  
coome to passe, if it had not byn otherwyle hyndered by gods  
prouidence. It is therfore ascribed to a myracle: And truly  
not without hely if wee weye howe chaunce detected and be-

Captiues.

A garyson of  
xxx. men.xxiii. Spanys  
ardes slayne  
and drownedThe kinges  
which conspi-  
red the death  
of the Christi-  
ans.A strange  
chaunce.

The seconde decade.

Wrayed the counsaile of these kynges. And bycause it is too  
 thy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe woordes. *Vaschus*  
*Nunex* therefore, who rather by poure then by election, blur-  
 ped the gouernance in *Dariens*, beinge a master of fence, and  
 rather a valthe royster then policlike capitayne (althowgh for-  
 tune sumtyme fauoureth tooles) amonge many women which  
 in dyuers of these regions he had taken captiue, had one whi-  
 che in fauoure and belotic excelled all other. To this woman  
 her owne brother often tymes resorted, who was also dyuen  
 owte of his contrey with kyng *Cemacchus*, with whom he was  
 very familiar and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amonge other  
 communication which he had with his syster whom he loued  
 entierly, he vttered these woordes. My deare and welbeloued  
 syster, gyue care to my saynges, and keepe mosse secreatelye  
 that whiche I wyll declare vnto youe, yf youe desyre youre  
 owne wealch and myne, and the prosperitie of owre contrey  
 and kynsefolkes. The insolencie and crueltie of these menne  
 whiche haue dyuen vs owre of owre possessions, is soo intol-  
 lerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo lon-  
 ger to susseyne theyr oppressions.

*Vaschus.*

Women can  
 keepe no  
 counsaile.

An army of C  
 canoas and  
 fyue. 20. men.

Tryumphe  
 before victory

Affection cor-  
 rupteth trew  
 iudgement.

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kynges (whiche he named  
 in order) they haue prepared a hundredth create *Cinoas*, with  
 fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with vitai-  
 les also in the village of *Tichiri*, sufficient to maintayne such an  
 army. Declaringe further, that the kynges by agreemente, had  
 diuided amonge theym the goodes and headdes of owre men:  
 And therfore admonyhed her, at the daye appoynted by su-  
 ne occasion to conuicigh her selfe owte of the way, lest she shuld  
 bee slayne in the confusion of the bataille. For the soldier  
 victourer, is not woonte to spare any that commethe in his  
 rase. And thus shewinge his syster the daye assigned to the  
 slawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the  
 sword that women feare and obserue more then the grauitie  
 of *Cato*.) whether it were for the loue or feare that shee had to  
*Vaschus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynnsfolkes, her countrey  
 and all her frendes, yf and all the kynges into whose throttes  
*Vaschus*, had thruste his sword, shee opened all the matter vnto  
 hym, and conceled none of those thinges whiche her vndis-  
 crete broother had declared to her. When *Vaschus* therfore had  
 hard the matter, he caused *Fuluis*, (for soo had they named her)

to sende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumstances of the matter. Where vpon, he playnely confessed that kinge *Cemacchus* hys lord and master, sente those foure canoas to the destruction of oovre men, and that these newe conspiraces were attempted by his counsaile. Likewise that *Cemacchus* soughte the destruction of *Vaschus* hym selfe when he sent hym fortie men vnder presence of frendshipp to kyl and solue his goodnd after the maner of the contrey, gyuinge them in commaundement to slepe *Vaschus* at *Marris*, whyther he resorted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good husbannes. yet durste they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes commaundement vpon hym, because *Vaschus* came neuer emonge them afoote or vnarmed, but was accustomed to ryde to theym in harnes with a sauelen in his hande and a swoorde by his syde. Wherefore *Cemacchus* beinge frustrate of his particuler counsaile, tooke this laste thing in hande to his owne destruction and his neighbours. For the conspiracie beinge detected, *Vaschus* cauled threescore and tenne souldiers, commaundinge them to folow him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee intended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyrste towarde *Cemacchus* which ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowlege that he was fledde to *Dabaiba* the kinge of the marishes of *Culata*. yet seachinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and also his kinde man, whom he tooke prisoner with many ocher of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The same houre that he sette forwarde to seeke for *Cemacchus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed by the ryuer with foure of the biggeste canoas and threescore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who brought hym to the village of *Tschiri*, in the which we sayd all their vitayles to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armye. *Colmenaris* therfore, sacked the village, and possessed all their vitayles and wyne of sundry colours: likewise tooke the gouernoure thereof prisoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym selfe, commaundinge hym too bee shotte throwgh with arrowes in the sight of thynhabitantes, and with hym foure ocher rulers to bee hanged on iebettes to the exemple of other rebellles. This punishment thus executed vpon the conspiracours, strooke the hartes of all thynhabitantes of the prouince wyth feare

The conspiracie of the kynge is detected.

kinge *Cemacchus*, conspyreth the death of *Vaschus*.

*Vaschus* purseweth the kynge with threescore & ten men.

*Colmenaris* sacketh the village of *Tschiri*.

Foure rulers hanged and shot throwgh with arrowes.

## The seconde 'decade.

fearc, that there is not nowe a man that dare stoore his fingers ageynst the wrath of odre men. They lyue nowe therefore quietly: And the other kinges by theyr exemple doo the gladlyer line in subiection, with lesse offence bearinge the yoke, whych they can by noo meanes shake of.

### The fyrte booke of the seconde decade of the supposed continete.



The golden  
regions on  
the south side  
the moun-  
taynes.

The death of  
Valdiuis and  
Zamudius.

Johannes  
Quicedus is  
sent to Spain

These things, thus fynylshed, assemblinge all their company togither they determined with one consente, that a messynger shulde forthwith bee sente to Hispaniola (from whense they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all these affayres, fyrste to the admirall and gouernoure of the Flande, and afterwarde to the Kinge of Spayne, and to perswade hym to sende those thousand men which younge Comogrus said to bee expediente to passe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. *Vasbus* him selfe dyd greatly affecte this embalage: But nyether wolde the resydente of his felowes electe hym therto, nor his factionaries suffer hym to departe: Aswell for that thereby they thought they shulde bee left desolate, as also that they murmured that if *Vasbus* shulde once goo from them, he wolde neuer retorne to suche turmoyles and calamities, by theremple of *Valdiuis* and *Zamudius*, who had byn nowe absente sence the mooneth of January, in soo muche that they thowght they wolde neuer coomme ageine. But the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I wyl shewe in his place. For they were perished. At the lengeth after many scrutynies, they elected one *John Quicedus*, a graue man well in yeares, & treasurer of the kings eschequer in those prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this *Quicedus* that all thynges shulde bee well browghe to passe by his meanes, aswell for his wylsome, as also that they were in good hop of his retorne, because he had brought his wiffe with hym to those regions, whome he lefte with his felowes for a pledge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected *Quicedus*, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioyne with hym for assistance: Affirminge that

that it were a dangerous thinge to committe soo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they mistrusted *Quicedus*. but bycause the life of man is frayle, and the chaunge of the ayer perelous, especially to theym hauynge nowe of longe tyme byn accustomed to the temperature nere vnto the Equinoz *shall*, if they shulde bee compelled to returne to the North with alteration of ayer & dyet. They thought it therefore good to appoint a companie to *Quicedus*, that if by chance the one shuld fayle the other might remaine: And that if they both escaped, the king shuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both: After longe consultation therfore, they chose *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experience, of whō we haue often tymes made mention. For from his youth, he had trauallyed ouer al Europe by land and by sea, and was present at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynst the Frenchemen: Of whose returne also, they had noo small hope bycause he had many sermes and hadde tilled and sowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by thincrease wher of he might get much gold by sellynge the same to his felows. He left therfore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonsus Nunnez*, a Judge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue byn chosen procuratoure of this voyage before *Colmenaris* if one had not put theim in remembraunce that he had a wyfe at *Marrinis*: fearyng least beinge ouercoome with her teares, he wooulde no more returne. *Colmenaris* therfore, a free man and at libertie beinge associate assistant with *Quicedus* they tooke shyping together in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of Christ. 1512. In this voyage, beinge tossed with sundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the wynde, cast vpon the Weste coastes of that large Ilande whiche in the fyrste Decade we called *Cuba*, supposed to haue byn fyrste lande. They were sore oppressed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes sence they departed from theyr felows. By reason wherof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gete amonge the inhabitantes. Theyr chaunce therfore, was to arriue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuis* was bynuen alande by tempest. But oh howe wretched men of *Dariena*? Wary for *Valdiuis* whom youe sent to prouide to helpe youe necessities? Howe youe selues rather and trust not to them whose fortune youe knowe not, For when he arriued

Change of  
the ayer is  
dangerous.

Rodericus  
Colmenaris,  
assistant with  
Quicedus.

A wyfe is a  
hynderance

*Cuba*,

Three mo-  
nethes from  
*Dariena* to  
*Cuba*, by rea-  
son of tempests

The death of  
*Valdiuis*.

## The seconde decade.

ryued in *Cuba*, th inhabitants Awe him with al his felowes,  
 and lefte the carauell wherin they were caried, to me in pieces  
 and halfe couered with sande on the shore: where *Quicedus* and  
*Columenaris* fyndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their fe-  
 lowes mylfortune. But they founde none of theyr carkeles:  
 Supposyng that they were eyther drowned, or deuoured of  
 the Canibals, which oftentymes make incurfions into that I-  
 lande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the I-  
 lande men which they had taken, they had knowlege of *Val-  
 diuis* his destruction: And that th inhabitants the more gree-  
 dely attempted the same, for that they had harde by the bab-  
 lunge of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold.  
 For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, which they  
 forme artificially into sundry ouches. Thus othere men stry-  
 ken with penyuenes for the cruell destenie of theyr felowes,  
 and in vayne seckynge reuenge for theyr iniuries, determyned  
 to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departynge from those co-  
 uetous naked barbarians with more sorowe and necessitie  
 then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South  
 syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousande mylfortunes: and had  
 intellygence that *Fogeda* arryued thereaboute, leadynge a my-  
 serable lyfe, tossed and turnoyled with tempestes and bered  
 with a thousand perplexities: Soo that departing from thense  
 almost alone, his felowes beinge for the most parte all confuz-  
 med with maladies and fampyr, he came with much difficultie  
 to *Hispaniola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his vene-  
 rous wound which he had receaued in *Vraba* as we haue said  
 before. But *Ancifus* elected Lieutenannt, sayled by all those  
 coastes with much better fortune. For as he hym selfe woulde  
 me, he founde prosperous wyndes in those parties, and was  
 well enterteyned of th inhabitants of *Cuba*. But this special-  
 ly in the dominion of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Com-  
 mendator*. For wheras he desyred of the Christian men whiche  
 passed by, to bee baptised, demaundyng the name of the go-  
 uernour of the Ilande next vnto *Hispaniola*, beinge a noble man  
 and a knyght of the order of *Calatrava* of which order al are cau-  
 led *Commendatores*, this kynge desyre was to bee named after  
 hym. Kynge *Commendator* therfore, frendely receaued *Ancifus*,  
 and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges necessarie. But  
 what *Ancifus* lerned of theyr religion durynge the tyme of his  
 remainynge

part of la-  
 wysenes of  
 the tongue.

The calami-  
 tie & death of  
 Fogeda.

Maladies &  
 famen.

The prosper-  
 ous vyage  
 of Ancifus.

A kyng of Cu-  
 ba baptised  
 by the name  
 of Commen-  
 dator.

*Ancifus*

remaynyng there, I haue thowght good to aduertise yowre holynes. yowre shall therefore vnderstande, that certeyne of oure men saylinge by the coastes of *Cuba*, lefte with kynge *Commendator* a certeyne poore maryner beinge diseased. Who in shorte space recoueringe his health, and hauynge nothe sum: what lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great estimation with the kynge and his subiectes, in soo muche that he was oftentimes the kynges Lieutenante in his warres against other princes his boztherers. This mans fortune was soo good, that all thynges prospered well that he tooke in hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanyng man accordyng to his knowlage; and dyd religiously honoure the blessed virgin, bearyng euer about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper & shod in his apparell nere vnto his breste: Signifyinge vnto the kyng, that this holynes was the cause of al his victories: perswadyng hym to doo the lyke, and to cast away all his *Zemes* which were none other then the similitudes of euill spirites; mooste cruell enemyes and deuouers of shere sowles: And to take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his patronesse if he desyred all his affayres aswell in warre as in peate to succede prosperously. Also that the blessed virgin wolde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him and his, if they wolde with deuoute hartes caule vppon her name. The maryner had soone perswaded the naked nation: And there vppon gaue the kynge (who demaunded the same) his picture of the virgin, to whom he buylded and dedicate a chapell and an altare, euer after contemnyng and reiectyng his *Zemes*. Of these *Zemes* made of gossampine cotton to the similitudes of spytes walkyng in the nyght which they oftentimes see, and speake with them familiarly, wee haue spoken sufficiently in the nyth booke of the fyrst Decade. Furthermore, accordyng to the institution of this maryner, when the soonne draweth towarde the faule, this kynge *Commendator* with all his familye bot he men and women, relozte daylye to the sayde chapell of the virgin *Marie*, where kneelyng on theyr knees and reuerently bowyng downe theyr heades, holdyng theyr handes ioyned together, they salute thimage of the virgin with these woordes: *Aue Maria, Aue Maria*. For fewe of them can rehearse any more woordes of this prayer. At

A marvelous  
histoure howe  
God wrought  
miracles by  
the simple  
fayth of a  
maryner.

Be not rashe  
in iudgement

*Zemes*.

A chapel build  
ded to the pic  
ture of the  
virgin Mary.

God respect  
eth the infan  
cie of sa:the  
for zeles sake

## The seconde deade.

*Andrus* his betinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioysinge, sayinge that they wolde shewe thern maruelous thynges.

One Religion turned into another, hol-  
deth styl ma-  
ny thynges of  
the first.

A strange fan-  
tasy.

The effect of  
godly zeale.

A miracle in  
the tyme of  
the battayle

The virgin  
Mary, is pre-  
sent at the  
battayle.

When they were entered, they poynted with theyr fyngers to the Image of the virgin alcobeset and hanged aboute with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled sum with sundry meates, and sume with water, rownde aboute all the tabernacle. For these thynges they offer to the image in the steede of sacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde supersticion towarde theyr *Zemes*. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, leaste the image shulde lacke meate if perhaps it shuld be a hungerd. For they most certainly beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eate and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confesse that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thyng woorthy to be harde, and most assuredly to be taken for a trueth. For by the report of olore men, there is such feruent godly loue & zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynst theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may soo terme it) com- pel her to descende from heauen to helpe them in theyr need- lities. For such is the goodnes of god, that he hath lefte vn- ro men in maner a pryce wherby wee may purchase hym with his holy angels and sayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie & zeale. Howe therfore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent fro the which cal for her helpe with pure faith & feruent loue? *Comend* for him selfe, with al his noble me and gentelmen, doo testifie with one voyce, that in a fought bat- taylor in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin *Marie*, the *Zemes* of theyr ene- mies turned their backes and trembeled in the presence of the virgins Image and in the syght of them all. For euery of the dynging theyr *Zemes* to the battayle, hoppyng by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they say further, that duryng the tyme of the battayle, they sawe not only an Image, but a liue- ly woman clothed in sayre and whyte apparel, apdyng them ageynst theyr enemies: whiche thyng also the enemyes them selues acknowleged, confestyng that on the contrary parte shee appeared to them, shakynge a septer in her hande with threatenyng countenaunce, whiche caused theyr hartes to shake

Wake and faynt for feare. But after that this maryner departed from them, beinge taken into a shyppe of certeyne Churians passynge by those coastes, *Commendator* declared that he with all his subiectes, continually obserued his institutions: In soo muche that beinge at contention with an other prince, which of they *Zemes* were moste holy and of greateste poure, the matter grewe to suche extremitie that they tryed it with hande strokes: And that in all these attemptes, the blessed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer presente in the byrute of the battayle, and gaue hym ealpe victorie with a smaule poure of men, ageynst a mayne armye of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vpon the virgin *Mary* when they assailed theyr enemies, they answered that they had lerneed noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*: That is, holy *Mary* helpe vs, holy *Mary* helpe vs: And this also in the Spanish tongue. For he had left these woordes in the mowthes of all men. Whyle they murthered and destroyed them selues thus on bothe sydes, they fell to entreatie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne chosyn for bothe parties as the maner was amonge the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any syght or policie, but that twoo younge men shulde bee chosyn, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde fast beynde them in the playne fielde, bothe parties beinge sworne to acknowledge that *Zemes* to bee the better, which fyrst loosed the bandes of the younge man whiche stode bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidinge them selues, and placeringe the sayde younge men befoze them in the syght of them al, with theyr handes fast bounde by theyr enemyes, the contrary parte cauled fyrst on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyl to whole similitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lyknes aboute the younge man that stode bounde in the defence of *Sathans* kyngedome.

But as soone as *Commendator* with his companye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a sayde virgin clothed in whyte, at whose presence the deuell banquished immediatly. But the virgin hauinge a longe rod in her hande, & putting the same on the bandes of the younge man that stode for *Commendator*, his handes were loosed imme-

A marvelous  
experience of  
faith

muche lyke  
vnto this, is  
redde iii. Reg.  
xvii.  
The deuill ap-  
peareth in  
his lyknes

The seconde decade.

An other miracle.

Math. 14.

The deuyl ap-  
preth agem.

The virgin  
Mary ouer-  
cometh the  
deuyl.

Infidels con-  
uerted by mi-  
racle, and  
baptised.

diatly in the syght of them all, and his bandes founde about  
the handes of hym that stode for the other partie, in somuch  
that they them selues founde hym double bounde. But for  
all this, were not the enemies satisfied: querelinge that this  
thyng was doone by sum wyght or diuise of man, and not by  
the pouer of the better *Zemes*. And thet vppon requyred for  
theaduoydyng of all suspencion, that there myght bee eyght  
graue and sage men appoynted, for eche syde foure, whiche  
shulde bynde the men in the syght of them all, and also gyue  
iudgemente whether the thyng were doone withowte craft  
or gyle. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: Oh golden  
and blessed confidente. *Commendator* and his familliers, doubred  
not to graunte theyr enemies theyr requeste with lyke faythe  
wherwith the diseased woman obreynded health of the cure  
of her blidde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the  
sea at the syght of his master Christe. These younge men ther  
fore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and  
were placed within theyr lystes in the syght of bothe parties.  
Thus vppon a signe gyuen, when they cauled vppon theyr  
*Zemes*, there appered in the syght of them all, a deuyl with a  
longe tayle, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hoznes, resem-  
blyng the similitude of the Image which the kynge beinge ene-  
mye to *Commendator*, honoured for his *Zemes*. As this deuyl at-  
tempted to loose the bandes of his cliente, the blessed virgin  
was immediatly presente as befoze at the caule of *Commendator*  
and his subiectes, and with her rodde loosed the bandes of  
her suppliant, which were agayne lykewyse founde fast tyed  
about the handes of hym that stode for the contrary parte.  
The enemies therfore of *Commendator*, beinge stryken with  
greate feare and amaled by reason of this greate miracle, con-  
fessed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better the their *Zemes*,  
for the better profe wherof, these pagans beinge botherers  
to *Commendator*, which had euer befoze byn at continuall warre  
and enmitie with hym, when they had knowleage that *Ancifus*  
was arryued in those coastes, they sente ambatadoures vnto  
hym, to desyre hym to send them preestes of whom they might  
bee baptised: Where vppon he sent them twoo which hee had  
with hym there at that present. They baptised in one day a  
hundredth and thirte of thynhabitanes, sumtyme enemyes to  
*Commendator* but now his frendes & ioynd with him in aliance.

All

All suche as came to bee baptised, gaue the pices of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yet skyl how to carue theyr cocke chykes to make them capons. Also certeyne salted fyshes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewise certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the pices resorted to the shippes, tyre of these newe baptised men accompanied theym laden with vitayles, wherewith they ledde a ioyfull Easter. For on the Sunday two dayes before saynte Lazarus day, they departed from Dariena, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of Cuba nere vnto the East syde of Hispaniola. At the requeste of Commendator, Ancifus lefte with hym one of his companye, to thintente too teache hym and his subiectes wyth or ther his boztherers, the salutacion of the angell whiche we caule the *Aue Maria*. For they thinke them selues to be soo much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can reherse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus Ancifus takinge his leaue of kynge Commendator, directed his course to Hispaniola, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to Valladoletto to the kynge, to whom he made greuous complaint of the insolencie of *V. felus N. n. nes*, in so muche that by his procuremente, the kynge gaue sentence agaynst hym. Thus muche haue I thowgh good (moste holy father) wherof to aduertise your holynes as concernyng the religio of these nations, not only as I haue byn instructed of Ancifus (wyth whom I was dayly couersante in the court and vsed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate auzoritie, to thintente that your excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilitie they may bee allured to embrace our religion. But this can not bee done soodenlye, yet we haue greate cause to hope that in shorte tyme they wilbe all drawn by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Chryste, to the great increase of his stocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernynge the affayres of Dariena.

The pices  
rewarde.

*Aue Maria*,

Ancifus vyz  
age to Spain

Ancifus com  
playneth of  
Vaichus.

The harvest  
is great, but  
the labourers  
are fewe.

## The seconde decade.

### The seuench booke of the seconde decade of the supposedd continente.

From Dariena to Hispaniola viii. dayes sayiing.



The procura-  
tors of Dari-  
ena, are hono-  
rably recea-  
ued at the  
courte.

Their cōplex-  
ion is altered

Of whom the  
autour had  
information

From Dariena to Hispaniola is eynghete dayes say-  
linge and sumtymes leste with a prosperous  
wynde. yet *Quicedus* and *Colmeuaris* the procu-  
rators of Dariena, by reason of tempestes and  
contrary wyndes, could scarcely saile it in a  
hundredthe dayes. When they had tarped a  
fewe dayes in Hispaniola, and had declared the  
cause of the comminge to the admirall and the other gouer-  
nours, they tooke shippinge in two marchante shippes beinge  
redye furnyshed, which were also accustomed to saile too and  
froo betwene Spayne and the Ilande of Hispaniola. They  
departed from Dariena (as we sayde befoze) the fourthe day of  
the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Christ. 1512, and came  
not to the courte befoze the calendes of May in the yeare fo-  
lowinge beinge the yeare of Christ. 1513. At thyr commynge  
to the courte, *Iohannes Fonseca* (to whom at the begynnyng the  
charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for hys  
faithful seruice towarde the kinge, yowre holynes created ge-  
nerall committarie in the warres agaynst the moozes) recea-  
ued them honozably, as men comminge from the newe world,  
from naked nations, and laudes vnknowne to other menne.

By the prefermente therfore of the byshoppe of Burges,  
*Quicedus* and *Colmeuaris* were brought befoze the kinge, and decla-  
red theyr legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes  
as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble  
men, for the newnes and straungnes therof. They also iuior-  
ned with me often tymes. Theyr countenaunces doo declare  
the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of Dariena. For they  
are yelowe lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe gaundies:  
And also swolne. But they ascrybe the cause hereof, to the  
hunger which they susteyned in tyme past. I haue byn aduert-  
ised of thaffayres of this newe woorld, not onely by these  
procuratours of Dariena, and *Ancisus*, and *Zanadius*, but also by  
conference with *Baeis* the lawier, who raune ouer a greate  
parte of those coastes. Likewyle by relation of *Vincentius Amex*  
the patrone of the shippes, and *Alfonfus Nignus*, both being men  
of greate experience and wel traauypled in those parties, beside  
many

many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places  
 For there came neuer any from thence to the court, but tooke  
 greate pleasure to certifie mee of al thynges eyther by woorde  
 of mouth or by wyrtynge. Of many thynges therfore which  
 I lerned of them, I haue gathered suche as to my Judgemēt  
 seeme moſte woorthy to ſatiffie them that take delyte in hysto-  
 ries. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the com-  
 ming of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therfoze, before they  
 arryual there was a rumoure ſpreade in the court, that the  
 chiefe gouernours and Lieutenantes *Nicueſa* and *Fogeda*, al-  
 ſo *Iohannes De la Coſſa* (a man of ſuch reputacion that by the kyn-  
 ges letters patentes he was named the greate maſter of the  
 kynges ſhippes) were all perſhed by miſchaunce: And that  
 thoſe ſewe which yet remayned aloue in *Dariena*, were at con-  
 tencion and diſcorde amonge them ſelues: So that they ney-  
 ther endeoured theyr diligence to allure thoſe ſimple natiōs  
 to owe ſaythe, nor yet had regarde to ſearch the natures of  
 thoſe Regions. In conſideration wherof, the kyng was de-  
 termyned to ſende a newe capitayne thither whiche ſhulde re-  
 ſtoze and ſet all thynges in good order, and put them owte of  
 autozitie whiche hadde vſurped thempire of thoſe prouinces  
 withoute the kynges ſpeciall commaundement. To this of-  
 fice, was one *Petrus Arias* aſſigned, a man of greate prowde  
 and a citiſen of *Segouia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena*  
 had publiſhed in the court howe greate a matter it was, and  
 of what moment, many laboured earnestly to the kyng, to take  
 the office owte of his handes. But the byſhop of *Burges* be-  
 inge the kynges chiefe chaplayne, and one of the commiſſio-  
 ners appointed by hym in theſe matters, beinge aduertised  
 hereof, came immediatly to the kyng, and ſpake to hym in  
 this effect. May it pleaſe your hyghnes to vnderſtand (moſt  
 catholyke prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente  
 corage and greate ſeruiſe, hath offered hym ſelfe to aduenture  
 his lyfe in your maiesties affayres, vnder vnccerteyne hope of  
 gayne and moſte certeyne perels, yet that notwithstandinge  
 ſum other haue ambitiously maliced his felicitie and prefermēt  
 labouringe for thoffice whereto he is elected: It maye pleaſe  
 your grace herein ſoo to ſhewe hym your fauour and permit  
 hym to enioye his ſayde office, as your maiestie doo knowe  
 hym to bee a woorthy and meete man for the ſame, haung in  
 tyme

The greate  
 maſter of the  
 kynges ſhips

*Petrus Arias*  
 is elected go-  
 uernour of  
*Dariena*.

The action of  
 the byſhop  
 of *Burges* in  
 the defence  
 of *Petrus Arias*.

The seconde deca'e.

The warres  
of Aphyca.

ryme passe had greate experience of his prowesse and valiant  
nesse, aswell in behauinge hym selfe as orderinge his souldi-  
ers, as yowre hyghnes may the better consyder if it shal please  
yowre to callye to remembrance his doinges in the warres of A-  
phyca, where he shewed hym selfe bothe a wyle Capitayne,  
and valient souldier. As concerninge his maners and blages  
other wayes, they are not vnknowen to yowre maiestie, un-  
der whose wyng he hath of a chylde byn brought vp in the  
courte, and euer founde faythfull towarde yowre hyghnesse.  
Wherefore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour  
(whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a commissioner in these  
affayres) I thinke it were vngodly that he shuld bee put from  
his office at the sute of any other, especially beinge thereto  
moued by ambition and couetousnes: who perchauce woold  
proue them selues to be the same men in the office if they shuld  
obteyne it, as they nowe serue them selues in the ambitious  
desyringe of the same. When the byshoppe had sayde these  
woordes, the kynge confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias* in  
moze ample maner then befoze: wyllynge the byshoppe to ap-  
poynt hym a thousande and twoo hundred souldiers at his  
charges, makynge hym a warrant to thofficers of his elche-  
ker to deliuer hym money in prestre for the same purpose. *Pe-  
trus Arias* therfoze beinge thus put in office and authorysed by  
the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode seale, chose a  
greate number of his souldiers in the court, and soo departed  
frome *Valladoletto* aboute the calend. s of October in the yeare  
1513: And sayled fyrst to *Liulle* beinge a verye ryche citie and  
well replenyshed with people: where by the kynges magistra-  
tes he was furnyshed with men and wytayles and other neces-  
saries perteynyng to soo greate a matter. For the king hath  
in this citie erected a house seruinge only for thaffayres of the  
Ocean, to the which al they that goo or coome from the newe  
landes and Ilandes, resorte to gyue accomptes aswell what  
they cary thither as what they bringe from thense, that the  
kyng may bee truly answered of his custome of the fyfte part  
bothe of golde and other thynges as wee haue sayde befoze.  
This house, they callye the house of the *Contractes of Indis*.  
*Petrus Arias* founde in *Liulle* aboute twoo thousand pounges men  
which made great sute to goo with hym: lykewyle noo small  
number of concious owlde men: of the which, many offered  
them

*Petrus Arias*  
Lieutenante  
of *Dariena*.

*Petrus Arias*  
hath a thou-  
sand & twoo  
hundred men  
appoynted at  
the kynges  
charges.

A house in *Li-  
ulle* appoin-  
ted to the af-  
fayres of  
*India*.

*Perulans*.

them selues to goo wth him of theyr owne charges wthout the kynges stipende. But lest the shippes shulde bee pestered wth to great a multitude, or least by rayles shulde fayle them, the libertie of free passage was restraynt. It was also decreed that noo stranger might passe wthout the kynges licence. Wherefore I doo not a lytle maruaile at *Aloisius Cadamustus* a Venetian and wyter of the Portugales byages, that he was not ashamed to wyte thus of the Spanyardes navigations: We went: we sawe: we dyd. Whereas he neuer went, not any Venetian sawe. But he shoulde certeyne annotations obte of the three first bookes of my fyrst Decade wytten to Cardinal *Ascanius* and *Arcimboldus*, supposinge that I wooulde neuer haue published the same. It myght also happen that he came by the copie therof at the hande of sum ambasadoure of Venice. For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not daungerous to forbyd them to communicate the same to other. Howe to erer it bee, this honeste man *Aloisius Cadamustus* feared not to challenge vnto hym the frute of an other mans labour. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (which surely are woonderfull) whether he haue wytten that whiche he hath seene (as he sayth) or lykewyse bercaued other men of the iuste commendacions of theyr trauayles, I wyl not iudge, but am content to let hym lyue after his maner. Amonge the company of these souldiers, there were none embarked but suche as were licenced by the kyng, except a fewe Italians, Venues, who by frendshippe and sure were admitted for the Admirals sake younge *Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of those landes. *Petrus Arius* therefore tooke shippyng in the ryuer *Betis* (nowe cauled *Guadalqueuir*) runnyng by the cite of *Seuille*, aboute the begynnyng of the yeare of *Criste*. 1514. But he loosed anker in an euylle houre. For suche a tempeste folowed shortly after his departure, that it rent in peeces two of his shippes, and soo tolled the other that they were enforced to heaue ouer boorde parte of theyr bytayles to lyghten them. All such as escaped, sayled backe ageyne to the coastes of Spayne: where, beinge newly furnished and refreshed, by the kynges officers, they went forwarde on theyr viage. The master pylot of the gouernours shyppe, was *Iohannes Vesputius* a Florentine, the neuie of *Americus Vesputius*, who lest hym as it were by discent of inheritance, the experience of the mariners

many profer them selues to goe of theyr owne charges.

*Aloisius Cadamustus* is reioiced.

The Portugales inuentions.

The navigatio of *Petrus Arius*.

A shipwacke

*Americus Vesputius*.

The seconde decade.

facultie, and knowleage of the sea, carde and compasse. But wee were aduertised of late by certeyne which came from *Hispaniola*, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous voynde. For this marchaunt Gyppe commynge from *Hispaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboute. But in the meane tyme whyle my impozunate caulers on, *Gelasceus Butrigarius* and *Iohannes Cursius*, men studious by al meanes to gratifie yowre holynes, ceased not to put me in remembrance that they had onc in a redines to depart into Italy, and tarped onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes these my fayre *Nereides* althowgh rudely decked, leaue I shulde bestow muche tyme in bayne, I haue let passe many thynges, & will reherse onely such as seeme in my iudgement mosse woorthye memory, althowgh sumwhat disozdered as occasion hath serued. So it is therfore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Helisabeth a Boadilla*, beinge wiese by the broothers syde to the marques of *Boadilla*, which rendered the citie of *Segouia* to *Fernando* and *Helisabeth* princes of Spayne at such tyme as the Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Castile: by reason wherof they were encoraged fyrste to resyste, and then with open warre to assaile and expulse the Portugales for the great tresure which kynge Henry brother to queene *Helisabeth* hadde gathered togyther there. This marquette whyle she lyued, dyd euer shewe a manly and stoute mynde, bothe in peate and warre, so that by her counsaile manye noble thynges were broughyt to good effecte in Castile: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was niece by her broothers syde. Shee folowynge the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceauinge her husbande nowe furnysshynge hym seife to depart to the vnknowen coastes of the newe woorld, and those large tractes of lande and sea, spake these wordes vnto hym. My mosse deare and welbeloued husbande, we owghe not nowe to forget that firste yore younge yeares we haue byn ioynded, togyther with the yoke of holy matrimonie to thintente that wee shulde soo lyue togyther and not a sunder durynge the tyme of owre naruall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection herein, yowe shall vnderstande, that whither so euer yowe fatal destinye shall dzyue yowe, cyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoulde and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll surely beare yowe company, There can no

A notable example of a valient woman.

kynge Henry.

The wyfe of Petrus Arias

perell chaunce to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruell, that shal not bee much easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre seperate from youe. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to bee cast into the sea to bee deuoured of the fyshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall all mournynge and bewaylinge, to lyue in deache and dye lyuynge, whyle I consume in lookyng rather for my husbandes letters then for hym selfe. This is my full determinacion, not rashely nor presentely excogitate, nor conceaued by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberatis and good aduilement. Nowe therfore choose to whether of these twoo youe wyll assente: Eyther to thruste youre swoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeste. As for the chyl dren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of our inseperable loue, (for they had foure sonnes and as many dowghters) shal not stay me a moment. Let vs leaue vnto them suche gooddes and possessiones as haue byn left vs by oure parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amonge the woorthypful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fynished these woordes, her husbände seinge the constant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accorpyng to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louynge petition: but embrasinge her in his armes, commended her intente and consented to her requeste. Shee folowed hym therfore as dyd *Ipsicrates* her *Mithridates* with her heare hanginge loose aboute her shulders, for shee loueth her husbände as dyd *Halgynassa* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Arsenisia* her *Mausolus*: We haue also had aduertisemēt sence their departure that she (being brought vp as it were amonge soft fetters) hath with noo lesse stout corage susteyned the rozynges and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her husband or any of the maryners brought vp euen amonge the scourges of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hereof, this shal suffice. Let vs nowe speake of other thynges no lesse woorthy memorie. Therfore, whereas in the fyrste Decade we haue made mention of *Vincētius Annex Pinzonus*, ye shal vnderstande that he accompanyed *Christophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyrst vyage, and afterwarde made an other vyage of his owne charges with onely one shyppe. Ageyne, the fyrste yeare after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer

## The seconde decade.

The thyde  
nauigation of  
Vincentius  
Pinzonus.

*Cuba.*

*Beragua,*

*Vraba.*

*Cuchibacoa.*

*Paria.*

*Os Draconis*

*Curiana,*

*Cumana.*

*Manacapana.*

plentie of  
pearles.

*Monoxyla.*

The Barbari  
ans assaile  
owre men be  
inge in theyr  
shyppes.

The vie of  
gunnes.

those coastes from *Hispaniola*, and searched all the southe syde of *Cuba* from the Easte to the weste, and sayled rownde about that *Ilande* which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, al though some other say that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Anz* therefore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an *Ilande*, sayled on further, and found other landes westward from *Cuba*, but such as the Admirall had fyrst touched. Where fore, beinge in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turninge his course towarde the lefte hande, and raising the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpasseinge also the mouthes of the goulfes of *Beragua*, *Vraba*, and *Cuchibacoa*, he arriued at the Region which in the fyrst Decade we cauled *Paria* and *Os Draconis*: And entered into the greate goulfe of fresh water, which *Colonus* discovered, beinge replenished with great abundance of fysh, and famous by reason of the multitude of *I*landes lyinge in the same, beinge distant Eastward from *Curiana* aboute a hundreth and thirtie myles, in the which trace are the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, whiche also in the fyrst booke of the fyrst Decade we sayde to bee Regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affirme to bee the gretteste plentie of the beste pearles, and not in *Curiana*.

The kinges of these regions (whom they caul *Chicores*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Cacici*) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, sente certeyne spyes to enquire what newe nation was arriued in theyr coastes, what they broght, and what they wolde haue: and in the meane tyme furnished a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they caule *Chichos*) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle astonished to beholde owre shippes with the sayles spreade, wheras they vse no sayles, nor can vse but smaule ones if they wolde, by reason of the narrownes of theyr *Canoas*. Swampinge therefore aboute the shippe with theyr *Canoas* (whiche we may well caule *Monoxyla*, by cause they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to shute at our men beinge yet within their ships and keepinge them selues vnder the hatches as safely as yf they had byn defended with stone waules. But when owre men had shotte of certeyne pieces of ordnance agaynst them they were soo discomforted with the noyse and slaughter therof that they done them selues to agh: Beinge thus disperced

led, othere men chased them with the shippe boote, rooke many, and slew many. When the kynges harde the noyse of the gunnes, and were certyfyed of the losse of their men, they sent ambasadours to *Vincentius Agnes* to entreate of peace, feainge the spoyle of theyr goodes and destruction of theyr people, if othere men shulde coomme alande in theyr wrathe and furye. They despyred peace therfore, as could bee coniectured by their signes and poyntinges: For othere men vnderstoode not one woorde of theyr language. And for the better prooffe that they desyred peace, they presented othere men with thre thousand of those weights of gold that the Spanyardes caule *cellanum Aureum*, which they commonly caule *Pesum*. Also a greate barell of woodde full of moste excellente masculine frankensence, weighing about two thousande and syre hundred pounde weight after eight ounces to the pounde: Wherby they knewe that that lande browghe furthe greate plentie of frankensence. For there is noo entercourse of marchaundies betwene inhabitants of *Paria* and the Sabeans bringe soo farre distant, wheras also the of *Paria* knowe nothyng with othere theyr owne coastes. With the golde and frankensence whiche they presented to othere men, they gaue them also a greate multitude of theyr peacocks, bothe cockes and hennes, brade and alpye, aswell to satisfie theyr present necessitie, as also to cary with them into Spayne for increase. Lyke wyse certeyne carpettes, coouerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of gossampine silke fynelye wrought after a straunge diuise with pleasant & variable colours, hauing golden bellies & such other spangles and pendants as the Italians caule *songhos*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaules*, hanging at the purlles therof. They gaue them furthermore speakinge popingais of sundry colours as many as they wolde aske. For in *Paria*, there is no lesse plentie of popingais, then with vs of dooues or sparous, inhabitants of these Regions both men and women are appareled with vestures made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The fashion of theyr apparell, is simple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes: But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vse in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autowric is noo lesse emonge the people both in peace and warre, then

Great abundance of gold and frankensence.

*Olibanum.*

*Sabea*, is a contrey in Arabia, which bringeth forth frankensence *Paria*.

Peacocks which wee caule Turkye cockes.

Carpettes and coouerlettes fynely wrought.

Popingayes.

The apparell of the inhabitants of *Paria*

Rulers for one yeare.

## The seconde decade.

The greate  
goulfe of pa-  
ria.

Baia Natiui-  
tatis the gret  
goulfe of Pa-  
ria.

Vincencius  
maketh a  
league with  
v. princes  
of paria.

Mount Atlas  
in aphyrike.

The great I-  
land atlantike

is thantozittie of other kynges in those Regions. Theyr villa-  
ges are buylded in coompasse, along by the banks of all that  
greate goulfe. Some of theyr princes came to owne men woth  
theyr presentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put  
in this historie in rememberance of soo notable a thinge *Chiaconus*  
*Chiauccha*, (that is the prince of *Chiauccha*, for they caule prin-  
ces or kinges *Chiaconos*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus* *Chamailaba*,  
*Chiaconus Polonus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The goulfe beinge fyrste  
founde of the admirall *Colonus*, they caule *Baia Natiuitatis*, bycause  
he entered into the same in the day of the natiuitie of *Christe*:  
But at that tyme he only passed by it withowte anye further  
searching, and *Baia* in the Spanyshe tong, signifieth a goulfe.  
When *Vincencius* had thus made a league with these Princes,  
folowinge his appoynted course, he founde many regions to-  
warde the East, desolate by reason of diuers fluddes and ouer  
flowynges of waters: also many standynge pooles in dyuers  
places, and those of exceedynge largenes. He ceased not to fo-  
lowe this tracte vnyll he came to the poynte or cape of that  
mosse longe lande. This poynte semethe as though it wolde  
innade the monte *Atlas* in *Aphyrike*. For it prospecteth towarde  
that parte of *Aphyrike*, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bone*  
*Sperantie*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough  
and saluage nere vnto the sea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, ga-  
thereth the thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled  
the pole antarrike: But that poynte, onely seuen degrees. I  
suppose this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wy-  
ters of *Cosmographie* to bee cauled the greate Iland *Atlantike*,  
withowt any further declaringe eyther of the syuation,  
or of the nature therof.

### The eight booke of the seconde decade of the supposed continente.

Contention  
betwene the  
Castilians &  
portugales  
for the newe  
landes



When *Johan* the king of portugale lyued which  
was predicelloure to hym that nowe reigneth,  
there arose a great contention betwene the *Casti-*  
*lians* and *Portugales* as concerninge the do-  
minion of these newe founde landes. The *Portu-*  
*gales*, bycause they were the fyrste that durst  
attempte to searche the *Dean* sea sente the memo-  
rie of man, affirmed

affirmed that all the navigations of the Ocean, ought to per-  
 teyne to theym onely. The Castilians, argued on the contrarie  
 parte, that what so euer god by the ministratio of nature hath  
 created on the earth, was at the begynnynge common among  
 men: And that it is therfore lawfull to every man to possesse  
 suche landes as are boyd of Christian inhabitours. Whyle  
 the matter was thus vncerteynly debated, bothe parties agre-  
 ed that the controuersie shulde bee decerned by the byshoppe of  
 Rome, and plighted faith to stande to his arbitrimente. The  
 kyngedome of Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that  
 great Ducene *Helisabeth* with her hulbande: for the roialme of  
 Castile was her dowerye. Shee also and the kyng of *Portu-  
 gale*, were colyn germaynes of two sisters: by reason wher-  
 of the dissention was moze easely pacified. By thassent ther-  
 fore of both parties, Alexander the byshop Rome, the .vi. of  
 that name, by thautozite of his leaden bull, drew a right line  
 from the North to the South a hundredth leaques westwarde  
 w<sup>it</sup>houte the paralelles of those *Flandes* whiche are cauled  
*Caput Viride* or *Cabouerde*, Within the compase of this lyne (al-  
 thoughh soonime denye it) faulethe the popne of this lande  
 wherof we haue spoken, which they caule *Caput Sancti Augustini*,  
 otherwyle cauled *Promontorium Sancti Augustini*, that is, saynt Au-  
 gustines cape or popnce. And therfore it is not lawfull for the  
 Castilians to fasten foote in the begynnynge of that lande. *Vin-  
 centius* Annex therfore, departed from thence, beinge aduertised  
 of th inhabitantes, that on the ocher syde of the hyghe moun-  
 taynes towarde the South, lyinge before his eyes, there was  
 a Region cauled *Giamba*, which brought forth greate plentie  
 of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goulfe  
 of *Paria* (whiche certenly perteyneth to the dominion of Castile)  
 he brought some with hym to *Hispaniola*, and lefte them with  
 the younge Admirall to lerne othere language. But he hym  
 selfe, repayed to the courte to make earnest sute to the kyng  
 that by his fauoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Island of  
*Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyle cauled *Burichena*, beinge distant from  
*Hispaniola* onely .xxv. leaques) because he was the spylt fonder  
 of golde in that Islande. Befoze *Vincentius* made sute for this  
 office, one Don *Christopher* a *Portugale*, the soonne of the  
 countie of *Camigna*, was gouernour of the Islande: whom the  
*Tanibales* of the other *Flandes* serue, with all the Christian  
 men

The byshop  
 of Rome diui-  
 deth the land

Cabouerde  
 loke decade  
 i. lib. iii

The golden  
 region of *Gi-  
 amba*.

The Island of  
*S. Iohannes*

## The seconde deca le.

fyue byshop-  
pes of the I-  
land made by  
the byshop  
of Rome.

The Caniba-  
les of the I-  
land of Sanc-  
ta Crux.

men that were in the same, excepte the byshop and his famill-  
ers, which fledde and sought for them selues, forsakynge the  
church and all the oznaientes thereof. For yowre holynes  
hath consecrated fyue byshoppes in these Ilandes at the re-  
quest of the most catholyke kynge. In *Sancto Dominico* being the  
chiefe cite of *Hispaniola*, *Gaspar de Padilla*, a regular fryer of the or-  
der of saynt *Fraunces*, is byshop. In the towne of *Concepti-*  
on, doctoꝝ *Petrus Xuarez* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of saynte  
*John* or *Burichena*, *Alfonso Mansus* a licenciate, beinge bothe ob-  
leruantes of thinstitution of saynt *Peter*. The fourth, is fryer  
*Barnarde* of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*,  
a preacher, and byshop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfte is *Io-*  
*hannes Cabedus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes annoynt-  
ed mynister of *Christ*, to teache the *Christian* faith amonge  
the inhabitantes of *Dariena*. The *Canibales* shall shortly re-  
pent them, and the bludde of owre men shalbe reuenged: And  
that the sooner, bycause that shortly after they had committed  
this abhominable slaughte of owre men, they came ageyne  
from theyꝝ owne Ilande of *Sancti Crux* (otherwyle cauled *AyAy*)  
to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, and setwe a kynge whiche was  
a frende to owre men, and eate hym and all his famely, bre-  
erly subuerringe his byllage, vppon this occasion that viola-  
tinge the lawe of hostage, he had sayne seuen *Canibales* whi-  
che were lefte with hym by composition to make certeyne ca-  
noas, bicause the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees  
and apter for that purpose, then doth the Ilande of *Sancti Crux*  
the chiefe habitacion of the *Canibales*. These *Canibales* yet  
remaynyng in the Ilande, certeyne of owre men sayling from  
*Hispaniola*, chaunced vppon them. The thyng beinge vnderstode  
by thinterpretourcs, owre men quarelyng with theym and  
caulyng them to accompte for that mischecuous deede, they  
immediatly directed theyꝝ bowes and venymous arrowes a-  
geynst them, and with cruell countenaunces threathened the  
to bee quyet, least it shulde repent them of theyꝝ commyng thy-  
ther. Owre men fearyng theyꝝ venemous arrowes (for they  
were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Being  
demanded why they destroyed the byllage, and where the  
kynge was with his famelye, they answered that they raised  
the byllage and curte the kynge with his famelie in peeces &  
eate them in the reuenge of theyꝝ seuen woorkemen: And that  
they

they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary theim to the wyues and chyldren of theyr sayne woozkemen, in wyckedne that the bodyes of theyr husbandes and parentes lay not buried: and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to othere men: who beinge astonysed at theyr fiercenes and crueltye, were enforced to dissimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelynge noo further with them at that tyme. These and suche other thynges doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let passe least I shulde offende the eares of your holynes with suche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee sufficiently digressed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefeste foundations of oovre purpose. Wee wyll nowe therefore create somewhat of the largenes and depthe of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Also declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo bringe forth: lykewise of the greatnes of the lande from the East to the West, and of the bredth thereof from the South to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynges yet unknowen in the same. Wee wyll therefore beginne at the newe names wherwith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces sence they were vnder the dominions of the Chyistians.

*Beragua* and  
*Uraba*.

The ryuers  
of *Uraba*.

The nynthe booke of the seconde Decade,  
of the supposed Continent.



*Beragua* therfore, they cauled *Castella Aurea*, that is golden Castile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andalusia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they subdued, they choole *Hispaniola* for the chiefe place of theyr habitation, soo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr coloune or bydyng place in the twoo regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all suche as attempte any byages in those coastes, may resorte to them as to safe portes to bee refreshed when they are weyry or dyuynen to necessitie. All oovre seedes, and plantes, do nowe maruelously encrease in *Vraba*. Lykewyse blades, fettes, Appes, grasses, sugar canes, and suche other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules as we haue sayde befoze, doo maruelously frutefulnes. Twentie dayes after

*Beragua*, cauled *Castella aurifera*, and *Uraba*, *Andalusia noua*. Sunn caule *Peru*, *Noua Castilia*.

*Beragua* and *Uraba*, regions of *paria*.

The frutefulnes of *Uraba*

## The seconde decade.

after the seede is sowne, they gather vnye cucumers, and such lyke. But colwortes, beetes, Letuse, Borage are vnye within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pompones, within the space of .xxviii. dayes. *Dariens* hath many natie trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with sundry tastes, & hol- some for the vse of mē: of the which I haue thought it good to describē certeyne of the best. They noo<sup>r</sup>the a tree which they caule *Guakina*, that beareth a frute much resemblinge the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taste somewhat sharpe myr with swetenes. They haue also abundance of nutres of pynctrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knowen to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theyz to much so- wernes. Wylde and baren date trees, growe of them selues in sundry places, the branches wherof they vse for biesommes, and eare also the buddes of the same. *Guarausna*, being hig ger and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as some citrons.

There is an other tree much lyke to a chestnut tree whose frute is lyke to the bygger sort of fygs, beinge holsome & of pleasant taste. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth forth the frute as bygge as an orange, in taste nothyng inferioure to the beste kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, beareth a frute lesse then any of the other, but of sweete sauoure lyke spice, and of delectable taste. *Houos*, is an other tree whose frute bothe in shape and taste, is much lyke to prunes, but somewhat bygger. They are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe soo abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with masse amonge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of feadyng soo well, that when these frutes waxe ripe, the swyncherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of these trees: by reason wherof, a greate mul- titude of them are becoome wylde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola*, swynes fleshe is of much better taste and moze hol- some then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dy- uers kyndes of meates do engender sundry tastes and quali- ties in suche as are noyrded therwith. The moste pitifaulste prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute broughe from those landes, beinge full of scales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and coloure, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taste exceedyng al garden frutes.

The fruitful-  
nes of Dari-  
ena.

Dyuers hol-  
somy frutes  
of trees.  
*Guakina*,

Pine trees.  
Date trees.

*Guarausna*

*Mameis*,

*Guananala*.

*Houos*.

*Mirobalani*,  
hogges fed  
with *miroba-*  
*lanes*

Swynes  
fleshe of bet-  
ter tast and  
more holsom  
then mutton.

For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke, or *Acantho*. The kynge hym selfe, gaue the cheefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these frutes. For of a great number which they brought from thense, only one remayned vncorrupted, the other being putrified by reason of the longe wyage. All suche as haue eaten of them newly gathered in theyr natyue soyle, doo maruelously commende theyr sweetnesses and pleasaunt taste. They dygge also owte of the ground certeyne rootes growynge of them selues, whiche they caule *Betates*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of *Malayne*, or the greate pusses or musheroms of the earth. Howe soo euer they bee dycted, epyther fryed or sodde, they gyue place to noo such kynde of meate in pleasaunt tendernes. The skyn is sumwhat towgher then epyther of nauies or musheroms, and of earthy colour: But the inner meate therof, is verpe whyte. These are nooylhed in gardens, as we sayde of *Iucca* in the fyrste Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe chesnutres, but are sumwhat sweeter. Wee haue spoken sufficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. Wee wyll nowe therefore entreate of thynges sencitiue. The laundes and desolate pastures of these regions, are inhabited and deuoured of wild and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and such other monstres as we nowe knowe, and haue byn descrybed of owlde autoures in some past. But there is especially one beast engendered here, in which nature hath endeuoured to shewe her cunningg. This beaste is as hygge as an ore, armed with a longe snoure lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the colour of an ore and yet noo ore. With the houle of a horse, and yet noo horse. With eares also much lyke vnto an Elephant, but not soo open nor soo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder she the eares of any other beaste. Of the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her seconde belly as in a purse (beinge knowen to none of the owlde wyters) I haue spoken in the fyrst Decade which I doubt not to haue coome to the handes of yowre holynes. Let vs nowe therefore declare what resteth of the ridders and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Darien* fauleth into the goulfe of *Vraba* with a narrowe chanel, scarcely able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that prouince, and runneth by the byllage where they chose theyr dwellynge place. But the ryuer in the corner of the goulfe which we sayde that

Frutes putrified on the sea.

*Betates*.

Lions and Tygers.

A straunge beast.

The ryuers of *Uraba*.

The ryuer of *Darien* fauleth into the goulfe of *Uraba*.

## The secondedecade.

A league is  
Nini furlonges

Danubius.

Grandis or  
Rio grandis.  
A crocodile is  
much lyke an  
ente, but of  
excedyng big  
nes.

The autoure  
of this booke  
was in Egypt  
The riuer Ni  
lus in Egypte  
Montes,  
Luna.

The Portuga  
les nauigaci  
ons.

The ryuer  
Senega, is o  
ther chanell  
of the ryuer  
of Nilus.

Crocodiles.  
The thyde  
fourth Nilus.  
Delagartos.

Vaschus passed by, they found to bee .xxiii. furlonges in bredth (which they caule a league) and of excedyng depthe, as of twoo hundred cubettes, faulnge into the goulfe by dyuers mouthes. They say that this ryuer fauleth into the goulfe of Vraba, lyke as the ryuer *Ister* (otherwyse, cauled *Danubius*, and *Danowe*) fauleth into the sea. *Portrike*, and *Nilus* into the sea of Egypte: wherfore they named it *Grandis*, that is great: whiche also they affirme to noo wyse many and great Crocodyles, as the owld wyters testifie of *Nilus*, and especially as I haue lerned by experience, hauinge sayled by and downe the ryuer of *Nilus* when I was sent ambasadoure to the Soldane of Al capz at the commaundement of the moste carly olyke kynge. What I may therfore gather owte of the wytynges of so many lerned autours as concernyng the ryuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not. For they say that nature hath gyuen twoo riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to sprynge owte of the mountaynes of the moone or the soonne, or owte of the toppes of the rowgh mountaines of *Ethiopia*: Affirming one of the same to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the North, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee saye in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypte, there is noo doubt. The Portugales also whiche sayle by the coastes of the *Ethiopians* cauled *Nigrita*, and by the kyngedome of *Melinda* passyng vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, amonge theyr marvelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and earnestly affirme the same to bee also deriued fro the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other chanell of *Nilus*, bycause it byngeth forth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before yme that any other ryuer noo wythed Crocodyles sauynge onely *Nilus*. This ryuer, the Portugales caule *Senega*. It runneth through the Region of the *Nigritis*, beinge very frutefull towarde the north Hoze: but on the southe syde sandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall wee then say of this thyde: ye I may wel say the fourth. For I suppose them also to bee Crocodiles which *Colonus* with his company founde armed with leales as hard as shelles in the ryuer cauled *Delagartos*, wherof wee haue made mention befoze. Shall wee say that these ryuers also of *Danow* and *Vraba*, haue theyr originall frome the mountaynes of the moone, whereas they sprynge owte of the nexte mountaynes, and

and can by noo meanes haue the same originall with Nilus in Egypte, or that in *Nigrita*, or els that in the kyngedome of *Melinda*, from whence soo euer they are deriued. Whereas these other (as we haue sayde) springe out of the nere mountaines whiche decyde an other southe sea with noo greate distaunce from the North Ocean. Wherefore it appeareth by experyence of such as haue traueled the worlde in omyr tyme, that other waters besyde the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, maye lykelyselye byynge forth Crocodiles. In the marylles also and fennes of the Regions of *Darien*, are founde greate plentie of shee sauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foules bylyke vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as also to delite the eares of menne with pleasaunt noyse. But olore Spanyades, bycause they are ignorant in soulynge, take but fewe. Also innumerable poppingayes of sundry kyndes are found chartering in the groues of those fenny places. Of these there are some equall to Carpons in byggenes, and some as lyttle as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of poppingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the first Decade. For in the case of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe brought and sent to the court, a greate number of euery kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to be holde, and are yet dayly brought in lyke maner. There remaineth yet one thyng moste woorthy to be put in hystoie: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicero* or *Luie*, then into myne. For the thyng is soo maruylous in my estimation, that I fynde my wytte more entangled in the description hereof, then is sayde of the henne when shee seeth her younge chekyn inwrapped in towe or dare. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the South sea is only syre dayes iourney by relation of thynhabitantes. The multitude therfore and greatenes of the ryuers on the one side and on the other syde the narrowenes of the lande, byynge me into suche doubtte howe it can come to passe, that in soo little a space of three dayes iourney, measuryng from the hygh topes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe soo many and soo great ryuers, may haue recourse into this north sea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe towarde thynhabitantes of the southe, These ryuers of *Araba* are but small, in comparison of many other in those coastes. For the

The ryuers  
springe out  
of the mount  
taines

Crocodiles en  
gendred in o  
ther ryuers  
besyde Nilus  
in Egypte.

Byrdes and  
foules.

poppingayes.

A philosophi  
cal discourse  
as concerning  
the originall of  
springes and  
ryuers.

The breadth  
of the lande  
at *Araba*, frō  
the North O  
cean to the  
South sea.

## The seconde decade.

A ryuer of  
maruelous  
hyggenes  
like the first  
decade the  
ix. boke.

The great ry  
uer Maragno  
nus. liber. ix.  
decade. ii.  
Mariatambal.  
Camamorus.  
Paricora.

Paradise.  
Looke. vi. boke  
first decade.

The sea.

The land en-  
closed with  
two seas.

Spanyardees say, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and passed by an other ryuer after this, whose goulfe faulynge in to the sea, they affirme to bee lytle lesse then a hundredth myles in the fyrste coastes of *Paria*, as wee haue sayde elsewhere, For they saye that it fauleth from the toppes of hygge mountaynes with soo swyfte and furious a course, that by the violence and grearnes therof, it dyueth backe the sea althowgh it bee rologhe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykewyse, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo sower or salte water, but that all the water was freshe, swete, and apte to bee dyoonke. Thinhabitantes caule this ryuer *Maragnonum*: And the regions adiacent to the same, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Welyde those ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dababa*, *Beragua*, *Sancti Martini*, *Boius gati*, *Delagartos*, & *Gaira*, they whiche of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberatinge therefoze with my selfe, from whense these mountaynes beinge soo narowe and nere vnto the sea on bothe sydes, haue such great holowe caues or denues of suche capacite, and from whense they are fylled to cast forth such abundance of water, hereof also askynge them the opinions of the inhabitantes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgementes herein: Alleagynge fyrst the greatnes of the mountaynes to bee the cause, whiche they say to bee very hygh, which thynge also *Colonus* the first fynder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Adding there vnto that the Paradise of pleasure is in the toppes of those mountaines whiche appeare from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Ora Draconis*, as he is fully perswaded. They agree therfoze that there is greete caues within these mountaynes: but it resteth o consyder fro whense they are fylled. If therfoze all the ryuers of freshe waters by thoppinion of manye, do soo flowe owt of the sea as dyuen and compelled thwroghe the passages or pyses of the earth by the ponderous weyght of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake furth of the sprynges and directe their course to the sea ageyne, then the thynge is leste to bee marueyled at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo such seas haue enuironed any lande with soo narowe lymytes. For it hath on the right syde, the great Ocean where the sonne goeth downe on the lefte hande: And an other on the other syde where the sonne ryseth, nothynge inferioure

inferioure to the fyre in greatenes, for they suppose it to bee myrre and topned as all one with the sea of East India.

This lande therefore being burdened with so great a weight on the one syde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to swalowe by such deuoured waters, and ageyne to cast forth the same in open springes and streames. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humours of the sea, and agree that all fountaynes or springes are engendered of the conuersion or turnynge of ayer into water distilling within the holowe places of the mountaynes (as the most part thinke) we will gyue place rather to thauroritic of them whiche sycke to those reasons, then that owre sense is satisfiied of the full truth therof. yet doo I not repugne that in some caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my selfe haue scene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner howers of rayne doo faule continually: And that the water gathered by this meanes, doth send furth certeyne ryuers by the sydes of the mountaynes, wherewith all suche trees as are planted on the siepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Olive trees, and suche other, are watered. And this especially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moste obsequious to yovre holynes, and thoo other byshoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Siluius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebysshop (whose name and tyle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For whē wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately deliuered from the domination of the Moores, and walked for owre pastyme to certeine pleasaunte hylles (by the whiche there ranne a fayre ryuer) Whyls Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym selfe in shurynge at byrdes whiche were in the bushes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other thoo byshops determined to clyme the mountaynes to searche thoriginall and springe of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowynge therefore the course of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was a continuall faule of water as it had byn a howse of rayne: the water wherof, faulng into a trenche made with mans hand, encreaseth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the sydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is also scene in this famous towne of *Villadoleta* (where we nowe liuiozne) in a certeyne greene cloze, not past a furlonge distant from the waules of the towne. I

Conuersion of  
ayer into wa-  
ter in the ca-  
ues of mount-  
taynes.

Showers of  
rayne in the  
caues of mon-  
taynes

grants

The seconde deca de.

The often fall  
of the sea and  
continuall  
sprynge tyme.

The Equinoctiall.

The pores of  
the sea & the  
South wynde.

Nothinge im-  
possible to  
the poure of  
nature.

The cause of  
the greatnes  
and force of  
the goulfe.

Bygh and  
steepe hylles.

graunte therfore that in certeyne places. by conuersion of the  
ayrie dewe into water within the caues of suche mountaynes,  
many sprynges and ryuers are engendred. But I suppose that  
nature was not solliciteate to byynge such the suche great fluds  
by this so swaule industry. Twoo reasons therfore, do sound  
beste to my iudgement: wherof the one is, the often faule of  
rayne: The other, the continuall autumnne or sprynge tyme  
which is in those regions beinge soo nere vnto the Equinoctiall  
that the common people can perceane no difference betwene  
the length of the day and the night through out al the yeare  
whereas these twoo seasons are more apte to engender abun-  
dance of rayne then eyther extreme wynter or feruent summer.  
An other reason in effect much lyke vnto the first, is this: If  
the sea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge  
opened by the Southe wyndes, wee shal consent that vapours  
are lyfted by wherof the watery cloudes are engendred, this  
lande must needes bee moysted with moor houres then anye o-  
ther: yf it bee as narrowe as they saye, and enuironed with  
twoo mayne seas collaterally beatinge on the same. Howe so  
euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of such wor-  
thy men as haue recourse to those regions: And can noo leste  
then declare the same albeit it may seeme incredible to sume ig-  
norant persons not knowynge the poure of nature to whome  
Plinie was perswaded that nothyng was impossible. Wee  
haue therfore thought it good to make this discourse by the  
way of argument, least on the one syde, men of good lernyng  
and iudgement, and on the other syde, suche as are studious  
to fynde occasions of quarelyng in other mens wyrynges,  
shulde iudge vs to bee so vndercreete lyghtly to gyue creditte  
to euery tale not beinge consonant to reason. But of the force  
and greate violence of those freshe waters, which repulunge  
the sea make so greate a goulfe (as wee haue sayde) I thinke  
the cause therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ry-  
uers, which beinge gathered together, make so great a poole:  
and not one ryuer as they suppose. And for as muche as the  
mountaynes are excedyng bygh and steepe, I thinke the vi-  
olence of the faule of the waters to be of such force, that this  
conduite betwene the waters, is caused by thimpulsion of the  
poole that the salte water can not enter into the goulfe. But  
here perchappes sume wyl marueyle at me why I shulde mar-  
ueyle

people soo muche hereat, speakyng vnto me scornefully after this maner. Why dothe he soo marueyle at the greate ryuers of these Regions? Hath not Italye his *Eridanus*, named the kyng of ryuers of the owlde wyters? Haue not other regions also the lyke? as wee recede of *Tanis*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are sayde soo to ouercoome the sea, that freshe water may bee drawne fortie myles within the same. These menne I wolde satisfie with this answer. The famous ryuer of *Padus* in Italye (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Breckes cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuindinge Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie from Italye, lpyng at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moysture: And with a longe tracte receauinge *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, fauleth into the sea *Adriatique*. The lyke is also to bee vnderstode of the other. But these ryuers (as olde men were enformed by the kynges) faul into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller chanelles nere hand. And sume there are which firme this lande to bee very large in other places althowgh it bee but narrowe here. There cometh also to my remembrance an other cause: the whiche althowgh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wyte it. Verhappes therfore the length of the lande reachyng far from the Easte to the weste, if it bee narrowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* passeth through the holowe places vnder the sea from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponeso*, and breaketh forth at the fountayne or spryng *Arëthuse* in the Iland of *Sicillia*, so is it possible that these mountaynes may haue suche longe caues perceyning vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passyng through the landes beinge farre distaunte: And that the same waters commyng by soo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greatly encreased by the conuersion of ayer into water, as wee haue sayde. Thus muche haue I spoken freely, permittynge bothe to them whiche doo frendly enterprete other mens doings, and also to the malicious scorners, to take the thyng euen as them lysteth. For hether to I can make no further declaration hereof. But why the truch shalbe better knowen, I wyl do my diligence to commit the same to wyryng. Nowe therfore, for as muche as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we entred to describe the length & forme of the same.

The fludde *Eridanus*.

*Tanis*.

*Ganges*.

*Danubius*.

*Padus*.

*Alpes*.

*Ticinum*.

The sea *Adriatique*, sume caule the goulfe of *Venes*.

An other reason.

The ryuer *Alpheus*.

*Arëthuse*.

Longe caues in the mountaynes.

## The seconde decade.

### The tenth booke of the seconde Decade, of the supposed Continent.

The length  
and forme of  
the Iland.  
Cap. 8. August.



Eyght tymes  
bygger then  
Italy be yde  
that part whi  
che the por-  
tugales por-  
tesse. Italy is  
in length a  
thousand and  
two hundred  
myles, and in  
breadth foure  
hundred and  
ten.  
Cardes of  
the sea.

The carde of  
Americus  
Vesputius.

The carde of  
Colonus.

The carde of  
Johannes de  
la Costa.

That lande reacheth forth into the sea even  
as doth Italy, althowgh not like the legge  
of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a  
Dugmean or a dwarfe to a giant. For that  
part therof which the Spaniards haue ouer-  
runne from the sayde Eastre point which reacheth  
towards the sea Atlantike (the ende  
not beinge yet founde towards the Weste) is more then eyght  
tymes longer then Italye. And by what reason I am moued  
to say eyght tymes, yowre holynes shall vnderstande. From  
the tyme therefore that I fyrste determined to obeye their re-  
questes who wylled me fyrste in yowre name to wyte these  
thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeouere that al thin-  
ges myght coome forth with dewe tpyall and experience.  
Wherupon I repayred to the byhoppe of Burges beinge the  
chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therfore secret-  
ly togyther in one chamber, we had many instrumentes pertey-  
nyng to these affayres as globes and manye of those mappes  
which are commonly cauled the shipmans cardes, or cardes of  
the sea. Of the which, one was drawen by the Portugales,  
wherunto Americus Vesputius is sayde to haue put to his hande,  
beinge a man moste experte in this facultie and a florentyne  
borne: who also vnder the stipende of the Portugales, hadde  
sayled towards the south pole many degrees beyond the Equi-  
noctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrst front of this land  
to bee broader then the kynges of Vraba had perswaded o-  
uere men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, Colonus the Admiral  
whyle he yet lyued and searched those places had gyuen the  
begynnyng with his owne handes: wherunto Bartholomeus Co-  
lonus his brother and Lieutenaut had addid his iudgement,  
for he also, had sayled aboute those coastes. Of the Spany-  
ardes lykewyse, as many as thought them selues to haue any  
knowleage whar perteyned to measure the lande and the sea,  
drew certeyne cardes in parchment as concernyng these nau-  
igations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which Iohan-  
nes de la Costa the companion of Fogeda (whom wee sayde to bee  
Rayne of the people of Caranari in the haueu Caribago,) and an  
other

other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had set forth. And this as well for the greate experience which they bothe hadde (to whom these tracteres were as wel knowne as the chambers of theyr owne houses) as also that they were thought to bee cunninger in that parte of Cosmographie which teacheth the description and measuringe of the sea. Conferringe therefore all these cardes togyther, in euery of the whiche was drawen a lyne expredinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyarden, we tooke owere compases and beganne to measure the sea coastes after this order. From that poynt or fronte which we sayde to bee included within the lyne perteynyng to the Portugales iurisdiction, beinge drawen by the paralleles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundredeth leagues further towarde the weste (which they haue nowe also learned on euery syde) we founde thre hundredeth leagues to the entrance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thense to *Os Draconis*, seuen hundredeth leagues: but somewhat lesse in the description of lume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisite-ly. The Spanyarden wyll that a league conteyne foure myles by sea and but thre by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, which beinge passed, there is a goulfe on the lefte hande, we measured thre hundredeth leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the haueu *Carthago* (which lumen caule *Carthagena*) we found about a hundredeth and seuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues, from thense to the goulfes of *Vraba* amonge the which is the byllage cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua* where the Spanyarden haue apoynted theyr habitacion, only xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena* to the ryuer of *Beragua* where *Nicuesa* hadde intended to haue fastened his foote if god hadde not otherwyse decreed, we measured a hundredeth and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer which we sayde of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Mathei*, in the which also *Nicuesa* loosinge his carauell, wandered in greate calamities, we founde in owere cardes, onely a hundredeth and fortie leagues: yet many other which of late tyme haue come from these partes, haue descrybed many moe leagues in this tracte fro the ryuer of *Sancti Mathei*: In which also, they place byuers ryuers, as *Aburua* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cartha*

P. II,

lyng

The carde of  
Andreas mor-  
alis.

The maner  
of measuring  
the cardes.

Loke decade  
i. liber. lii.

The Iland of  
Cabouerde.

*Maragnonum*  
*Os Draconis*

A league.

*Cuchibacoa*.

*Caramairi*.

*Carthago*.

The Iland  
*Fortis*.

*Vraba*.

*Beragua*.

R. *Sancti Mat-*  
*thei*.

R. *Aburema*  
*Scutum Cartha*.

The seconde decade.

R. Zobroba.  
Vrida.  
Duraba.  
Corabaro.  
Hiebra.

Note.

R. d. los perdidos

The navigati  
on of Johan  
nes Dias.

The eleuati  
on of the pole.

The iurisdic  
tion of the  
portugales.

Paria.

Darlena.

Beragua.

Hercules pyl  
lers.

lyinge before it, whose kynges name is *Faciés Combusta*. Lyke  
wise an other rynde cauled *Zobroba*: after that, *Vrida*: and the  
*Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Further north, many good  
ly hauens, as *Corabaro* and *Hiebra*, soo cauled of their inhabitant  
tes. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conferre these numbers  
together, yowre shall fynde in this accompte, a thousand fure  
hundredth twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fure  
thousande and seuen hundredth myles from the paynt of *Sancti*  
*Mathei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of  
the losse men. But we may not leane here. For after this, one  
*Asher Ouetensis*, otherwyle named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, bozne in *Ne*  
*brissa* (which bringe h fourth many lerned men) saylinge frome  
this rynde towarde the weste, ouer ranne manye coastes & lea  
gues: But the myddeste of that shore, bendethe towarde the  
North: And is not therefore directly placed in order with the  
other. yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about  
thre hundredth leagues. Wherby maye yowre gather what is  
the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perchappes wee  
shall hereafter haue further knowleage. Let vs nowe speake  
sumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the eleuation of the  
pole starres. This lande therefore, althowgh it reache fourth  
from the East into the Weste, yet is it crooked and hath the  
paynt bendynge so toward the South, that it loseth the sight  
of the North pole, and is extendend beyonde the Equinoctial  
lyne seuen degrees towarde the South pole. But the paynt  
herof, perteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales as we  
haue sayde. Leauinge this paynt and saylinge toward *Paria*  
the north starre is seene ageyne, and is so much the more lyf  
ted vp, in howe much the region enclpnyeth more toward the  
Weste. The Spanyardes therefore, haue dyuers degrees of ele  
uations, vntyl they come to *Darlena* beinge their chiefe station  
and dwellynge place in those landes. For they haue forsaken  
*Beragua*, where they founde the North pole eleuate. viii. degrees  
But from hence the lande doth soo muche bende toward the  
North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of  
the strayghtes of *Hercules pylers*: especially yf wee measure  
certeyne landes founde by them toward the North syde of  
*Hispaniola*. Amonge the which, there is an Ilande, about thre  
hundredth and. xxb. leagues from *Hispaniola*, as they say whiche  
haue searched the same, named *Boiux* or *Agnatio*, in the which

is a continual springe of runnyng water of such maruelous  
 vertue, that the water thereof beinge drunk, perchappes w<sup>th</sup>  
 some dyete, maketh old men younge ageyne. And here must  
 I make protestacion to yowre holynes, not to thinke this to  
 bee sayde lightly, or rashely. For they haue soo spredde this  
 rumour for a truth throug<sup>h</sup>out all the coure, that not onely  
 all the people, but also many of them whom wisdom or for-  
 tune hath diuided from the common sort, thinke it to be true.  
 But if yowre shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere that  
 I wyl not attribute so greate pouer to nature: but that god  
 hath noo lesse reserued this prerogatiue to hym selfe, then to  
 searche the hartes of men, or to geue substance to p<sup>er</sup>uasion,  
 (that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we shall beleue the fa-  
 ble of Colchis of Esou renouate, to bee as true as the w<sup>o</sup>rtin-  
 ges of *Sibylla Erythraea*. Albeit perchappes the scoles of phisicians  
 and naturall philosophers wyl not muche aspyre to affirme  
 that by thuse of certeyne secrete medecines and dyete, the ac-  
 cidentes of age (as they caule them) may be longe hydden and  
 deferred, which they wyl to bee vnderstoode, by the renoua-  
 tion of age. And to haue sayde thus much of the length and  
 breadthe of these Regions, and of the towghe and hugiours  
 mountaynes with theyr watery cautes, also of the dyuers de-  
 grees of that lande, I thinke is sufficient. But I thowghe it  
 not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men a-  
 monge theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I  
 was a chyld, mee thowghe my bewelles graued and that my  
 spirites were marueloulye troubled for verbe p<sup>er</sup>ie, when I  
 readde in the poe: *Virgyl* howe *Achomenides* was ledde of *Vlysses*  
 vpon the sea bankes amonge the giantes cauled *Cyclopes*: where  
 for the space of many dayes from the deparringe of *Vl<sup>l</sup>s* vntill  
 the comynge of *Eneas* he eate none other meate but only  
 beryes and hatues. But owre vnforsunate *Spanyades* whi-  
 che folowed *Nicolsa* to inhabite *Berugia*, wolde haue eate  
 hatues and beryes for greate delicates. What shulde I here  
 speake of the heade of an alle bowghe for a greate p<sup>er</sup>ce, and  
 of such other extremities as men haue suffered in toynes be-  
 seaged? After that *Nicolsa* hadde determyned to leaue *Berugia*  
 for the barrennes of the soyle, he attempted to searche  
*Bellum*, and then the coastes of the poynt cauled *Marmor*, if he  
 myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this  
 meane

The Glande  
 Bouca or  
 Agnaneo.

A water of  
 maruelous  
 veruic.

The renoua-  
 tion of age.

The accidens  
 tes of age  
 may bee hyd-  
 den.

*Achomenides*,  
*Vlysses*,  
*Eneas*.

Extreme hur-  
 ger.

This was at  
 the sieg of  
 iherusalem.  
*Portus Belus*  
*Marmor*.

## The seconde decade.

**Mangy doggs  
eaten.**

**A mangy dog  
were sold.**

**Roath of a  
mangy doggs  
skynne.**

**Toades eate**

**A deade man  
eaten.**

meane tyme, so greuous famen oppressed his souldiers, that they neyther absteyned from eatinge of mangie dogges which they had with them as well for theyr defence as for huntyng (for in the warre ageynst the naked people, dogges stode the in greare steade) nor yet sumtymes from the slayne inhabitantes. For they founde not there any fructfull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariens*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the souldiers made a bargaine with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who also was almoste deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of those pieces of golde which they caule *Pesos* or golden Castellans. Thus agreinge of the price, they sleid the dogge to bee eaten, and caste his mangie skynne with the bones of the heade hangynge therro, amonge the bushes. The day folowynge, a certeyne footman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the skynne beinge nowe full of maggottes and synkynge. He broughte it home with hym, sodde it, and eate it. Many resorted to hym with theyr dysshes for the brothe of the sodde skynne, proferinge hym for euerye dysshfull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo roades and sodde them which a sicke man bought of hym for twoo fyne Hertes curiously brought of lyncen intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderynge abowte to seeke for bytayles, founde in a patheway in the myddest of a fælde, a deade man of thynhabitantes whiche had byn slayne of his owne coompanye and was nowe rotten and synkynge. They drewe hym a syde, dismembred hym secreatly, rosted hym and eate hym, therewithal swagynge theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheasantes. One also, which departinge from his companions in the nyght season, went a fytching amonge the reedes of the maryshes, lyued only with slyme or mudde for the space of certeyne dayes, vntyll at the lengthe creepynge and almoste deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of *Beragua* bred with these and suche other aduertions, were broughte from the number of seuen hundredeth thre scoze & ten souldiers, scarcely to fortye, beinge nowe also added to the coompany of them in *Dariens*. Fewe were slayne of thynhabitantes. But the resydewe consumed by famen, breached out theyr werry bowles, openynge a waye to the newe landes for such as shal coome after them, appeasynge the fury of

of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. To **Note.**  
 syderinge therfore after these stormes, with what ease other  
 men shall oucrumne and inhabite these landes, in respecte to  
 the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme  
 to goo to byrde feastes where all thynges are redy prepared a  
 geynst their commynge. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with

the kynges nauie and newe supply of men, to this houre  
 I knowe no certentie. What shall chaunce hereafter

I wyll make diligente inquisition if I shall vnder  
 stande this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes.

Thus I byd yowre hartely fareuwell from the  
 courte of the mooste Catholyke kyng,

the daye beefore the nones of  
 December, in the yeare of  
 Christe, M. D.

XIIII.

The fyrst booke of the thyrde Decade, to the  
 byshoppe of Rome Leo the tenth.



Was decremynd (mooste holye father) to haue  
 closed by the gates to this newe worlde, sup  
 posinge that I had wandered farre enowgh  
 in the coastes therof, while in the meane time  
 newe letters were brought me from thence,  
 which caused me ageyne to take my penne in  
 hande. For I receaued letters not only from

certeyne of myne acquaintaunce there, but also from *Vaschus*  
*Nunnez* whome we sayde by the confidence of his owne poure  
 with his confetherates, to haue vsurped the gouernaunce of  
*Dariens* after the reiecting of *Nicusus* and *Ancus*, Lieutenantes.  
 By his letter wyrtten after his warlyke maner, wee vnder  
 stand that he hath passed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the  
 Ocean knowen to vs, from the other mayne sea on the south  
 syde of this lande hether to vnknownen. His epistell is greater  
 then that cauled *Capreensis de Seiano*. But wee haue gathered out  
 of that and other, onely suche thynges as we thowght mooste  
 woorthy to bee noted. *Vaschus* soo behaued hym selfe in these  
 affayres, that he dyd not onely pacifie the kynges displeasur  
 conceaued

*Petrus Arias*  
 whom the  
 Spanyardes  
 caule *pediar*  
 89.

*Vaschus Nun*  
*nez*, gouernour  
 of *Dariens*.

The newe  
 south Ocean.

concealed ageynst hym, but also made hym so favorable and gracious good lord towarde hym, that he rewarded him and his companions with many honorable gyftes and privileges for theyr attemptes. Wherefore I desyre youre holynes to in chyne youre attentive eares, and to consyder with a ioyfull mynde what they haue brought to passe in these great enterpryses. For this valiant nation (the Spaniards I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers subdued to the Christian empire, infinite hundredes and legions, but also myriades of men. *Vaschus Nuñez* therfore, wherether it were that he was impatient of Idleness (for a valiente mynde can not rest in one place or bee vncoccupied) or leasse any other shulde prevent hym in so great a matter (suspecting the newe gouernour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both these causes, and especially for that the kynge had taken displeasure with hym for such thynges as he had doone before, toke thadventure vppon hym with a fewe men to bynge that to passe which the soune of kynge *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue hym done with the ayde of a thousande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the same purpose. Assemblynge therfore certeyne of the owlde souldiers of *Dariens*, and many of those whiche came lately from *Hispiniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armie of a hundredeth fourescore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnished and redie to take his bypage by sea, whyle the wynde serued hym, he departed from *Dariens* with one bygantyne and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule *Capoas* as wee haue sayde. First therfore arryvinge in the dominion of *Careta* kynge of *Coiba* and frende to the Christians, and leauinge his shyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therewith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he first entered into the region of kynge *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng as he had doone before. But *Vaschus* sent messengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promysinge hym friendship and defence ageynst his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entyled with the fayre speache and frendely proffers bothe of ower men and of the *Careta*ns, came to ower men gladly and wyllyngely made kynge a league of friendship with them. *Vaschus* conuersynged hym very frendely, and periuaded him

Commendation of the Spaniards.

A valient mynde can not be idle.

A desperate aduventure

Vaschus his viage toward the golden mountaynes.

Careta kynge of Coiba

kyng Poncha

hym neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioynd  
 handes, embrased, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the o-  
 ther to knytte by the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue  
*Vaschus* a hundred and ten poundes weyght of golde, of that  
 pounce which the Spanyardes caule *Pesum*. He had no grea-  
 ter plentie of golde at this tyme, by reason he was spoyled  
 the yeaere befoze as we haue sayde. *Vaschus* to recompence one  
 benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of oovre thynges,  
 as coniterfet rynges, Chrystal stones, copper cheynes & brase  
 lettres, haukes belles, lokyng glasse, and suche other fyne  
 stuffe. These thynges they set much by and greatly esteeme.  
 For suche thynges as are straunge, are euery where counted  
 precious. He gaue also to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees:  
 which he accepted as a princely gyfte, bycause they lacke Ir-  
 ren and all other metals except golde: by reason wherof they  
 are enforced with greate labour to cut theyz trees to buylde  
 theyz houses, and especially to make theyz boates holowe  
 withowte instrumentes of Iren, with certeyne sharpe stones  
 whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus *Vaschus* leauynge all  
 thynges in safetic behynde hym, marched forwarde with his  
 armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conducte of certeyne  
 gypdes and labourers which *Poncha* had gyuen hym, as well  
 to leade hym the way, as also to cary his baggages and open  
 the straighes through the desolate places and craggy rockes  
 full of the dennes of wylde beastes. For there is seldoome en-  
 tercourse or bynge and sellynge betwene these naked people,  
 bycause they stand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the  
 vble of money. But yf at any tyme they exercise any bartering  
 they doo it but nere hande, exchangynge golde for household  
 stuffe with theyz conuines whiche somewhat esteeme the same  
 for oznamente when it is brought. Other superfluties they  
 utterly contemne, as hynderances of theyz sweere libertie, for  
 asmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for  
 this cause, the high wayes which lye betwene theyz regions  
 are not much woyn with many iorneyes. Yet haue theyz scou-  
 tes certeyne priuie markes wheroby they knowe the waye the  
 one to inuade the others dominions, and spoyle and infeste  
 them selues on bothe sydes with mutual incurfions priuie in  
 the nyght season. By the helpe therfoze of theyz gypdes and  
 labourers, with oovre carpenters, he passed ouer the horrible  
 mountaynes

A hundred &  
 r. poundes  
 weyght of  
 golde.

Strange thin-  
 ges are coun-  
 ted precious.

Lacke of Iren

A stone in the  
 steele of Ire.

Superfluti-  
 ties hynder  
 libertie.

Carpenters,

The thyrde decade.

**Bydges.** mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyeinge in the way, ouer  
 the which he made bydges eyther with pylles or trunkes of  
 trees. And here doo I let passe manye thynges whiche they  
 suffered for lacke of necessaries, beinge also in maner ouer:  
 come with extreme labour, leaste I shulde bee tedious in re:  
 herlinge thynges of smaule value. But I haue thought it  
 good not to omitte suche doinges as he had with the kynges  
 by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the  
**The region** hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled *Quarequa*,  
**of Quarequa.** and mette with the kyng thereof cauled by the same name,  
 with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with  
 bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed swordes  
 made of woodde, longe staues hardened at the endes with fyer,  
 dartes also and spynges. He came proudly and cruelly ag:  
 geynst owre men, and sent messengers to them to byd theym  
 stande and procede no further: demaundynge whyther they  
 went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came  
**kyng Quare-** forth and shewed hym selfe beinge appareled with al his no:  
**qua is dyuen** bilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approachinge to:  
**to flyght.** warde owre men, he thzetened the with a lions countenance  
 to depart from thense except they woolde bee slayne euery mo:  
 thers sonne. When owre men denyed that they woolde goo  
**hargabusties.** backe, he assayled them fiercely. But the battayle was soone  
**Crossebowes** spynished. For as soone as they harde the noyse of the har:  
 gabusties, they beleued that owre menne carped thunder and  
 lyghtenynge about with them. Many also beinge slayne and  
 soze wounded with quarels of crossebowes, they turned their  
 hackes and fledde. Owre men folowynge them in the chase,  
 helmed them in pielses as the butchers doo slethe in the thame:  
 welles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym  
**W.C. Barbari** a buttocke, from an other a shulder, and from sume the necke  
**aus are slaine** from the bodye at one stroke. Thus, fyre hundred of them  
 with theyr kyng, were slayne lyke brute besties. *Vaschus*  
**unnatural le-** founde the house of this kyng infected with most abhominable  
**chery.** and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges bro:  
 ther and many other younge men in womens apparell, smoth  
 & effeminately decked, which by the report of such as dwelte  
 aboute hym, he abused with preposterous Venus. Of these  
 aboute the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyue for  
 a pray to his dogges, for (as we haue sayd) the Spaniardes  
 use

Use he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynst the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngely as yf they were wyld boares or hartes. In soo muche that owtre Sparyardes haue founde theyr dogges noo lesse faythful to them in all daungious and enterpyles, then dyd the Colophonians or Castabalenes which instituted hole armies of dogges soo made to serue in the warres, that beinge accustomed to place them in the foze froonte of the battayles, they neuer shrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the seruere punishment which owtre men had executed vpon that fylthy kynde of men, they resorted to them as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence byngyng with them al such as they knewe to bee infected with that pestilence, spetrynge in theyr faces and crynginge owtre to owtre men to take reuenge of them and rydde them owtre of the worlde from amonge me as contagious beastes. This synkyng abomination hadde not yet entered amonge the people, but was exercised onely by the noble men and gentelmen. But the people lyfyinge by theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuouly offended with such vyle deedes. Affirmynge this to bee the cause of theyr soo many thunderinges, lyghtnyng, and tempestes wherwith they are soo often troublede: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which doo wne theyr sets and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers diseases insue, as they simple and faythfully beleue, although they knowe none other god then the soonne, whom onely they honoure, thynkyng that it dooth bothe geue and take awaye as it is pleased or offended. Yet are they very docible, and easye to bee allured to owtre customes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothyng vnpleasaunte to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr wordes may bee wyrtten with latin letters as wee sayde of thynhabitantes of *Hispaniola*. It is a warlyke nation, & hath byn euer hetherto molestous to theyr borderers. But the religion is not fortunat with fruitful ground or plentie of gold. Yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge somewhat colde by reason of theyr heyght. And therfoze the noble men and gentelmen are apparelled. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from *Quarequa*, in which

The vse of dogges in the warre agens the naked Barbarians.

Natural hatred of vnnatural sinne.

Palatine.

I wolde all men were of this opinion.

The harvest is great & the woorkemen but fewe.

warrelyke people.

The bysher the couider.

The seconde decade.

A region of  
black moories

Diseases of  
change of  
ayer & dyet.

The south  
sea.

Vaschus is  
coome to the  
syght of the  
newe south  
sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth  
the poore fro  
the dungehell

they founde only blacke Moories: and those exceedinge fierce  
and cruell. They suppose that in tyme paste certeyne  
blacke mores sayled thither out of Aethiopia to robbe: & that  
by shipwracke or some other chaunce, they were dryuen to  
those mountaynes. The inhabitantes of Quarequa lyue in con-  
tinuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Here Vaschus  
leuinge in Quarequa many of his souldiers (which by reason  
they were not yet accustomed to such cruauyles and hunger,  
fell into dyuers diseases) tooke with hym certeyne guydes of  
the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the moun-  
taynes. From the palaice of kynge Poncha, to the prospect of  
the other south sea, is only syre dayes iorney: the which he  
uerthelesse by reason of many hynderances and chaunces, and  
especially for lacke of bytayles, he coulde accomplysh in noo-  
le lesse then xxx. dayes. But at the length, the seuench daye of  
the calendes of October, he behelde with woonderinge eyes  
the toppes of the hygh mountaynes shewed vnto hym by the  
guydes of Quarequa, from the whiche he myght see the other  
sea soo longe looked for, and neuer seene before of any man  
comynge oute of ooure worlde. Approchinge therefore to  
the toppes of the mountaynes, he commaunded his armye to  
sley, and went him selfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take  
the fyrst possession thereof. Where, faulynge prostrate vppon  
the grounde, and rayfynge hym selfe ageyne vpon his knees  
as is the maner of the Christians to pray, lpytynge vppon his  
eyes and handes towarde heauen, and directinge his face to  
warde the newe founde south sea, he prayed forth his hum-  
ble and deuout prayers before almyghtie God as a spirituall  
sacrifice with thanks gnyng, that it had pleased his diuine  
maiestie to reserue vnto that day the victorie and praisse of so  
greate a thyng vnto hym, beinge a man but of smaule witte  
and knowleage, of lytle experyence and base parentage.  
When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner  
he beckened with his hande to his companions to coome to  
hym, shewynge them the greate mayne sea heretofore vnkno-  
wen to the inhabitantes of Europe, Aphyke, and Asia. Here  
ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: desyryng almyghtie  
God and the blessed virgyn to fauour his begynnynges, and to  
gyue hym good successe to subdue those landes to the glorie  
of his holy name and encrease of his crewes religion. All his  
companions

accompanions dyd lyke wyse, and prayled god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaschus*, with no lesse manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage bewed his souldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft up their hartes, and to behoulde the lande euen nowe vnder theyr feete, and the sea befoze theyr eyes, whiche shulde bee vnto them a full and iust rewarde of theyr great laboures and traualles nowe ouerpassed. When he had sayde these wordes, he commaunded them to raise certeine heapes of stones in the neede of alters for a token of possession. Then descendyng from the toppes of the mountaynes, leass such as might come after hym shulde argue hym of lyeinge or falschod, he wrote the kynge of Castelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the lefte: and rayled heapes of stones all the way that he went, vntyll he came to the region of the nexte kynge towarde the south whose name was *Chiapas*. This kynge came foorth agaynst hym with a greate multitude of men: threatheninge and forbyddyng him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goo no further. Herevppon, *Vaschus* set his bartayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge nowe but fewe) fiercely to assaile theyr enemies, and to esteeme theym noo better then dogges meate as they shulde bee worthly. Placinge therfore the harbagabuliers and masties in the forefront, they saluted kynge *Chiapas* and his men with such a salome, that when they hard the noyse of the gunnes, sawe the flames of fyer, and smelte the saunour of byrnstone (for the wynde blew towards them) they droue them selues to fyght with suche feare leasse thurderboltes and lychtenynges folowed them, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom oovre men pursuunge, with keepinge theyr order, and after breakyng theyr array, slewe but fewe and tooke many captiue. For they determined to use no extremitee, but to pacifie those Regions as quietly as they myght. Enteringe therfore into the palaice of kynge *Chiapas*, *Vaschus* commaunded many of the captiues to bee loosed: wyllynge them to search oovre theyr kynge, and to exhorte hym to coome thither: And that in soo doinge, he wolde bee his frende and prefer hym peace, besyde many other benefites. But if he refused to coome, it shulde turne to the destruction of hym and his, and vnto subuersion of his country. And thus

Hanniball of Carthage.

*Vaschus* taketh possession of the mountaynes

kynge *Chiapas*.

A bartayle.

*Chiapas* is droyen to fyght.

*Vaschus* sendeth for kynge *Chiapas*.

thus

## The thyrde decade.

that they myght the more assuredly do this message to Chiapes he sent with them certeyne of the gnydes whiche came with hym from *Quaregas*.

Chiapes submitteth hym selfe to Vascbus.

liti. C. pounds weyght of wrought gold

Vascbus addiceth the newe land & sea, to the dominion of Castile.

kyng Coquer is dyuen to flyght.

Vascbus vseth both gentelnes and rigour.

Thus Chiapes beinge perswaded aswel by the Quaregans who coulde coniecture to what ende the matter wooulde coome by the experience whiche they had scene in them selues and theyr kyng, as also by the reasons of his owne men to whome Vascbus hadde made soo frendely promyses in his behalfe, came forth of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and submytted hym selfe to Vascbus, who accepted hym frendely. They ioyned handes, embrased the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendeshippe, and gaue greate rewardes on bothe sydes. Chiapes gaue Vascbus foure hundred poundes weyght of wrought golde of those poundes whiche they caule *Pesos*: And Vascbus recompensed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thynge. Thus beinge made frendes, they remayned together a fewe dayes butyll Vascbus souldiers were coome whiche he lefte behynde hym in *Quaregas*. Then caulinge vnto hym the gnydes and labourers whiche came with hym from thence he rewarded them liberallye and dismissed theym with thankes. Shortly after, by the conduct of Chiapes hym selfe, and certeyne of his men, departinge from the toppes of the mountaynes, he came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where assemblynge al his men together with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicered al that maine sea with all the landes adiacent there vnto to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his souldiers with Chiapes that he myght theseler searche those coastes. And takinge with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hote tree (whiche they caule *Culobas* as thynhabitantes of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canoas*) and also a bande of fourescore men with certeyne of Chiapes men, he passed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kyng whose name was *Coquera*. He attempted to velyse owre men as byd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was overcoome and put to flyght. But Vascbus who entended to wyne hym with gentelnes, sente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe inuincible they were: howe mercifull to such as submit them selues, also cruell and seuerer to such as obstinatly withstande them, promysinge hym furthermoze, that by the freed

hym

Shippe of owre men, he myght bee well assured by the example of other, not onely to lyue in peace and quietnes hym selfe, but also to bee reuenged of thiniuries of his enemies. Wyllyng hym in conclusion soo to weighe the matter, that if he refused this gentelnes profered vnto hym by soo greate a victourer, he shulde or it were longe, lerne by feelynge to repent him to late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing.

*Coquera* with these woordes and exemples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, byngyng with him fyre hundreth & l. *Pesos* of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto owre men. *Vaschus* rewarded hym lykewise as we sayd before of *Poncha*, *Coquera* beinge thus pacified, they returned to the palaice of *Chiapes*. Where, visitinge theyr companions, and restinge there a whyle, *Vaschus* determyned to search the nexte greate goulfe, the which, from the furthest reachyng the of

into the lande of theyr countreys, from the enterauce of the mayne sea, they saye to bee threescore myles. This they named saynt Mychaeld goulfe, which they say to bee full of inhabited *Flandes* and hugions rockes. Enteringe therefore into the nyne boates or *Culchas* wherwith he passed ouer the ryuer before, hauinge also with hym the same companye of fourescore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpose, although he were greatly dissuaded by *Chiapes*, who earnestly desyred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming the goulfe to be soo tempestious and stormy three moonethes in the yeare, that the sea was there by noo meanes nauigable: And that he had scene many *Culchas* deuoured of whirlepoles euen beefore his eyes. But inuincible *Vaschus*, impaciente of idleness, and boyde of all feare in goddes cause, answered that god and his holy sayntes woold prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God and the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenaunce wherof it shulde bee necessarie to haue great abundance of ryches & treasure as the synewes of war ageynste the enemies of the faythe. Thus vsinge also thoffice boch of an oratoure and preacher, and hauinge perswaded his companyons, he lanchted from the lande. But *Chiapes*, least *Vaschus* shulde any thyng doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered him selfe to goo with hym whither soo euer he went: And wolde by noo meanes assent that *Vaschus* shulde depart from his pa-

vi. C. and l.  
poundes  
weyght of  
wrought gold

A goulfe of  
threescore  
myles.

Saynt Mycha  
els go ulfe

The manly  
corage and  
godly zeale of  
*Vaschus*

Rychesare  
the synewes  
of warre

The faythful  
nes of kynge  
*Chiapes*.

A tempest  
on the sea.

arose

## The seconde decade.

laice, but that he wolde bynge hym on the waue and take part of his fortune. Therefore as soone as they were nowe entered into the maine sea, such surges and conductes of water arose ageynst them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or where to rest. Thus beinge tolled and amased with feare, the one looked on the other with pale and vnherefull countenances. But especially *Chispes* and his company, who had befoze tyme with theyr eyes scene their perience of those redberdies, were greatly discomforted. yet (as god wolde) they escaped all, and landed at the nexte Ilande: Where makynge faste theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water soo encreased, that it almost ouerdrowed the Iland. They say also that that south sea doth soo in maner boyle and swelle, that when it is at the hyghest it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule thereof, are scene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all such as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that hit scarcely riseth at any tyme a cubit aboue the bankes as they also confesse which inhabite the Ilande of Hispaniola and other Ilandes situate in the same. The Ilande therefore beinge nowe dzye by the faule of the water, they resorted to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of sande, and some soze brused, with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken. Such as were brused, they tyed fast with theyr gyrdels, with stippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe stalkes of certein herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chynkes with graffe accordynge to the presente necessitie. Thus were they enforced to retorne backe ageyne lyke vnto men that came frome shipperwacke, beinge almost consumed with hunger, bycause theyr bytayles were bitterly destroyed by tempest. The inhabitants declared that there is harde all the yeare horrible rorynge of the sea amonge those Ilandes as ofren as it rysethe or fauleth. But this most especially in those three monethes in the which it is moste boystious as *Chispes* tolde *Vaschus* befoze: Meanynge (as they coulde coniecture by his wordes) October, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone and the twoo moones folowynge, countynge the monethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreshynge hym selfe and his souldiers a  
whyle

The increas-  
ing of the  
South sea.

The North  
Ocean.

Hard shyft in  
necessitie.

whyle, and passynge by one vnprofitable kynge, he came to an other whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge situate on that syde of the goulfe. This *Tumaccus* came forth ageynste oovre men as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune. For he was ouercoome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men slayne. He hym selfe was also soze wounded, but yet escaped. *Vaschus* sent certeyne messengers of the Chiapeans to hym to returne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nerher by promysces nor threathenings. Yet when the messengers were instant, & ceased not to threathen death to him and his famely, with the vtter desolation of his kyngedome if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length he sent his soonne with them: whom *Vaschus* honorably enterteinyng, appavelinge hym gorgeously and gyuing hym many gyftes, sent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to perswade hym of the puaunce, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of oovre men. *Tumaccus* beinge moued by this gentelnes declared toward his sonne, came with him the thyrde day, bringynge nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that oovre men desyred goulde and pearles, he sent for syre hundreth and .xiiii. Pesos of golde, and two hundreth and fortie of the biggest and sayrest perles helyde a great number of the smaulest sorte. Oovre men marueyled at the byggenes and sayrenes of these perles although they were not perfectly whyre bycause they take them not wyte of the sea musculls excepte they fyrt rost them, that they may theseluer open them selfe, and also that the fyrt maye haue the better taste, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dyshe, and set moze thereby then by the perles them selues. Of these thynges I was enformed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaschus* coompanions whom he sent to the kyng with manye perles and certeyne of those sea musculls. But when *Tumaccus* sawe that oovre men soo greatly regarded the beuotie of the perles, he commaunded certeyne of his men to prepare them selues to goo a fyrtynge for perles. Who departinge, came ageyne within foure dayes, bringynge with them twelue pounde weight of orient perles after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioysinge on bothe parties, they embraced and made a league of continual frendshyppe. *Tumaccus* thought him selfe happie that he had presented oovre men

The Region  
Tumacca.

kyng *Tumaccus* is dryuen to flyght.

Golde and  
perles,

musculls of  
the sea.

Fyrtynge for  
perles.  
iti pounde  
weyght of  
perles.

## The thyrde decade.

The thyrst  
of golde.

Ambition a-  
monge naked  
men.

This Ilande  
is cauled  
Margarites  
Diues, or Di-  
tes.  
A kynge of  
greate poure.

Biggeperles.

Cleopatra,  
queene of E-  
gypti resolved  
a pearle in  
vineger and  
dunke it;  
pnce. v. thou-  
sande pounce  
of owe many  
thes cresnes  
of Vascus.

With such thankfull gyftes and was admitted to theyr frend  
shippe: and owre men thinkynge them selues happie and blef-  
sed that they had founde suche tokens of great ryches, swa-  
lowed downe theyr spetele for thyrste. At all these doinges,  
kynge *Chiapes* was present as a byrnes and coompanion. He  
also reioysed not a lyttle, aswell that by his conductinge he  
sawe that owre men shulde bee satisfiied of theyr desyre, as al-  
so that by this meanes he had declared to the next kynge his  
boztherer and enemye, what frendes he had of owre men, by  
whose ayde he myght lyue in quyetnes and bee reuenged of  
his aduersarie if neede shulde soo requyre. For (as wec haue  
sayde) these naked kynes infeste theim selues with greuous  
warres onely for ambition and desyre to rule. *Vaschus* boisterh  
in his epistell, that he lerned certeyne maruclous seccreates of  
*Tumiacus* him selfe as concernynge the greate ryches of this  
lande: wherof (as he sayth) he woold vter nothyng at this  
presente, for asmuche as *Tumiacus* toulde it him in his eare.  
But he was enformed of bothe the kynes, that there is an  
Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, haung  
in it but onely one kynge, and hys of soo great poure, that at  
suche tymes of the yeare as the sea is caulme, he inuaderthe  
theyr dominions with a greate nauie of *Culchus*, spoyling and  
carpyng a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Iland  
is distant from these coastes, onely twentie myles: Soo that  
the promontories or poyntes therof rechyng into the sea, may  
bee scene from the hylles of this Continent. In the sea nere  
about this Ilande, sea musculls are engendred of such quanti-  
tie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers, In these  
are perles founde (beinge the hartes of those shell fyshes) of-  
ten tymes as bygge as beanes, sumtymes bygger then olyues  
and such as sumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue desyred. Al-  
though the this Ilande bee soo nere to the wyre of this firme  
lande, yet is the begynnynge therof in the mayne sea without  
the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaschus* beinge ioyfull and mery with  
this rych communication, fantasinge nowe in maner nothing  
but princes treasures, beganne to speake fierce and cruell  
woordes ageynst the tyranne of that Ilande, meanyng here-  
by too woonte the myndes of the other kynes, and bynde  
them to hym with a neater bonde of frendship. Yet therfore  
rapynge further on hym with spytfull and opprobrious  
woordes

woordes, he swore great othes that he wolde furthwith inuade the Ilandes, spoylyng, destroyinge, burnynge, drownyng, and hangynge, sparinge neyther swoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iniuries: And therewith commaunded his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the twoo kynges *Chiapos* and *Tumaceus*, exhorted hym frendly to deferre this enterpryse vntyll a moze quiete season, bycause that sea was not nauigable withoute greate daunger, beinge nowe the begynnynge of Nouember. Wherin the kynges seemed to sape trewe. For as *Vaschus* hym selfe wytyeth, great rotyng of the sea was harde amonge the Ilandes of the goulfe by reasō of the raginge and conflicte of the water. Great ryuers also descending from the toppes of the mountaynes the same time of the yeare, & ouerflowynge theyr bankes, drownyng downe with theyr vyolence greate rockes and trees, make a marueylous noyse. Lykewise the furie of the South and Northcast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghtnyng at the same season, dyd greatly moleste them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were bered in the night with cold and in the day time, the heate of the sonne troubled them: wherof it is noo maruaile, forasmuche as they were neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, although they make noo mention of the elevation of the pole. For in such regions, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the soone and other hote planettes, doo chiefly exercise theyr influence: Althowghe the antiquitie were of an other opinion, supposinge th Equinoctiall circle to bee inhabitable and desolate by reason of the heate of the soonne hauinge his course perpendicularly or directly ouer the same: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience proued to bee trewe. For they saile yearly to th inhabitantes of the south pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercise marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuch as I am not ignozant that there hath byn men of singular witte and great lernyng, which haue denyed that there is *Antipodes*: that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is most certepne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For euen they llo were men: whose proprietie is to erre and bee deceaued in many thynges. Nevertheless, the

A ii,

Portugales

Great ryuers  
fallyng from  
mountaynes.

Thunder and  
lyghtnyngem  
Nouember.

Colde in the  
nyght nere  
the Equinoctiall.

habitable regions  
vnder  
the Equinoctiall  
all lyne.

The natiuitations  
of the  
portugales  
towards the  
southe pole.  
*Antipodes*.  
Ye meaneth  
S. Augustine  
and Lectans  
tus.

## The seconde decade.

The starres  
about the  
fourthe pole.

*Lactea via.*

A similitude  
reclarynge  
Antipodes.

Portingales of oloure tyme, haue sayled to the fyne and fyfthe degree of the south pole: Where, coompassinge abouthe the poynthe thereof, they myght see througheoute al the heauen about the same, certeyne thynnyng whyte cloudes here & there amonge the starres, lyke vnto theym whiche are seene in the tracte of heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They say, there is noo notable starre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of oloures whiche the comon people thynke to bee the pole it selfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontani*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the same fauleth benethe the Decan. When the sonne descendeth from the myddeste of the crutree of the woorld from vs, it ryseth to them, as a payze of balances whose weyghte inclynge from the equall poyle in the myddest towarde eyther of the sydes, causeth the one ende to ryse as much as the other fauleth. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is sprynge tyme with the: And summer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it sufficeth to haue sayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therfore retorne to the historie and to oloure men.

## The seconde booke of the thyrde Decade.



*Vaschus* by the aduice of kynge *Chilipes* and *Tamarcus*, determyued to deferre his vyage to the sayde Ilande vntyll the nexte sprynge or summer, at which tyme *Chilipes* offered hym selfe to accompanie oloure men and appoynted the therein all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vaschus* had knowleage that these kyn

The maner  
of fysshynge  
for perles.

The Kindes  
of perles.

ges had nettes and fysshynge places in certeyne stations of that sea nere vnto the shore, where they were accustomed to fythe for sea muscels in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purpose they had certeyne dyuers or fyfthers exercised from theyr yowthe in swymynge vnder the water. But they doo this onely at certeyne tymes when the sea is calme, that they may theselyer come to the place where these shell fythes are woonte to lye. For the bygger that they are, soo much ly they the deaper and nerer to the bottome. But the lesser, as it were dowghters to the other, are nerer the byme

of

of the water. Lykewyse the leaste of all, as it were their nieces, are yet nearer to the superficiall parte therof. Too them of the byggeste sorte whiche lye loweste, the fylshers descende the depthe of thre mens heygth, and sumtyme foure. But to the doughters or nieces as their succession, they descend one lye to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes also, after that the sea hath byn disqueted with vehemente tempestes, they fynde a greate multitude of these fylshes on the sandes, beyng dyrenen to the shoze by the byolence of the water. The perles of these whiche are founde on the sande, are but lytle. The filthe it selfe, is moze pleasaunte in eatynge then are owre oysters as owre men report. But perhappes hunger the swete cause of all meates, caused owre men soo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of sea musculls (as Aristotell supposed) or the byrthe or spaune of there intrals (as *Plinye* thought) Or whether they cleave conynnually to the rockes, or wander by coompanies in the sea by the gypdinge of theldesse: Whether euerye fylshe byynge foorth the one perle or moze, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Also whether theye bee fylled frome the rockes wherunto theye cleaue, or maye bee easylly pulled awaye, or otherwyse faule of by them selues when theye are coomme to there full growth: Lykewyse whether perles bee harde within the shelle or softe, owre men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truste or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owre men are euen nowe in hande with the matter. Also, as soone as I shall bee aduertysed of the acryuall of *Petrus Arias* the capytayne of owre navy, I wyll desyre hym by my letters to make diligent searche for these thynges, and certifie me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee slacke or omittie any thyng herein. For he is my herpe frende: and one that taketh greate pleasure in consydryng the woorkes of nature. And surelye it seeme h vnto me vndercente, that wee shoulde with sylence, ouerslyppe so greate a thyng whiche as well in the owlde tyme as in owre dayes, hath, & yet doothe, drawe bothe men and women to enuaderate desyre of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shal be able hereafter with perles to satisfie the gredye appetite of suche as in wanton pleasures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* & *Alopus*. So that frome hensforth we shal neyther enuye nor reuerence the nyse truefulnes of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde sea.

Dyuers questios as cocer. nyng perles

Petrus. arias

Wanton and superfluous pleasures. Cleopatra. Alopus. Stoidum. Taprobana.

A, a, v,

But

## The thyrde decade.

But lette vs nowe retorne to oovre purpose. *Vaschus* therfore determined with the fyfthers of *Chiapes* to proue what myghe bee doone in his fythe pooles oz stations of sea muscules.

*Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obediente to *Vaschus* his requeste, although the sea were boyfytious, coommaunded thirtpe of his fyfthers to prepare them selves and to resoꝛte to the fyfthinge places. *Vaschus* sente onelye fyve of his men with them to bee holde them frome the sea bankes, but not to coommitte them selues to the daunger of the sea. The fyfthinge place was distante frome the palayce of *Chiapes* aboute tenne myles. They durste not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reason of the furpe of the sea. yet of the muscules whiche lye hygher, and of suche as were dyuen to the shoꝛe by the vyolence of the water, theye broughte fyve greate farthels in the space of a fewe dayes. The perles of these were bat lytle, aboute the bygnes of smaule fyrches: yet verpe fayre and bewtyfull, by reason theye were taken newlye owte of the fyfthe, beinge yet rawe. And that they shulde not bee reproued of lyinge as concerninge the bygnes of these sea muscules, theye sente many of them into Spayne to the kyng with the perles, the fyfthe beinge taken owte. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. These shelle fyfthes therfore beinge thus founde here in soo manye places in that sea, and gold in maner in euerye house, doo argue the ryche treasure of nature too bee hyd in those coastes, forasmuche as suche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle fynger of a gigantes hande. What then maye wee thynke of the whole hande of the gyante (foꝛ hetherto theye haue onely bynne in hande with the conynges of *Vraba*) when theye shall haue thozowly searched all the coastes and secreates of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaschus* contented with these sygnes & ioyfull of his good successe in these enterpryses, determined by an other waye to retorne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where also, they haue golde mynes aboute tenne myles from the vilage. He gaue therfore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym noo further: Consaillyng hym to continue faythfull to the christian kyng his lorde & maister. Thus embrasinge the one the other, & ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he boze to oovre men. *Vaschus* leaning his sicke maie with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourneye

The fyfthing  
place of king  
*Chiapes*.

Golde in ma-  
ner in euery  
house.  
The ryche  
treasure of  
nature.

The golde  
mynes of  
*Dariena*.

journey with the resydue, hauinge also with him for guydes  
 thre of *Chiapas* maryners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a  
 greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeine kynge cauled *Tea*  
*ocha*: who beinge aduertised of the coomynge of owtre men, of  
 whose famous actes he had harde muche before, was verye  
 gladdde therof and enterprened them honorably: So that for  
 a token of his frendely affection towarde them, he gaue *Vas-*  
*chus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eyghte  
 ounces to the pounde: Also twoo hundred bigge perles: but  
 not fayre, by reason they were taken owt of the muscals after  
 they had byn sodden. After they had ioyned handes, *Vaschus*  
 recompensed hym with certeyne of owtre thynges. lykewise  
 rewardynge his guydes the seruantes of *Chiapas*, he dismissed  
 them with commendations to theyr lord. Kynge *Teaocha* at the  
 departure of owtre men from his palace, dyd not onely appoint  
 them guydes to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them  
 certeyne slaues in the scede of besties to cary theyr bytrayles,  
 bycause they shulde passe through many desertes, baren and  
 rough mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and  
 Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, la-  
 dyngge them with salted and dyed fysh, and breade of those  
 regions, made of the rootes of *Muzium* and *Iucca*. He also  
 commaunded his soune not to depart from owtre men butyl he  
 were licenced by *Vaschus*. By theyr conductinge therfore, *Vas-*  
*chus* came to the dominion of an other kynge whose name was  
*Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bor-  
 therers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyrant,  
 whether it were that his giltie conscience for his mischuous  
 actes, put him in feare that owtre menne wolde reuenge the  
 same, or that he thought hym selfe inferior to resist them, Aed  
 at theyr coomynge. *Vaschus* wyrteth that in these regions in  
 the moneth of November he was soze afflicted with greate  
 heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that syde of the moun-  
 taynes hath lytle water: In soo muche that they were in  
 daunger to haue perished but that certeyne of thynhabitants  
 shewed them of a springe which was in the secceate place of  
 a woodde, whither *Vaschus* with all thecade sent twoo guyche  
 and stronge younge men of his coompanions with theyr gour-  
 des and suche water vessels as *Teaocha* his men broughte  
 with them. Of thynhabitantes, there durst none depart from  
 theyr

Kynge *Teaocha*  
 enterprey-  
 neth *Vaschus*  
 frendelye.

Twentye  
 pounde  
 weight of  
 wrought  
 golde.

Desertes full  
 of wyde  
 besties.

Dyed by the

Kynge *Pacra*  
 a tyranne.

Greate heate  
 in the mo-  
 nethe of No-  
 uember.

## The seconde decade,

there company because the wylde beastes doo soone inuade naked men. For in those mountaynes, and especially in the wooddes neare vnto the springe, they saye that they are sumtymes taken owte of there houses in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doozes bee well sparde. It shall not bee frome my purpose hereto declare a particular chaunce before I enter any further in this matter. Theye saye therfore that the lasse yeare the regyon of *Dariens* was nooleffe infested and troubeled with a fierse tyger, then was *Calidonia* in tyme paste with a wylde boze, and *Nemea* with a horrible lyon. For they affirme that for the space of fyre hole moonethes there passed not one nyghte withoute summe hurte doone: soo that it kylled nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, sumtimes euen in the highe wayes of the village. For owte men haue nowe greatchardes of cattayle in those regions. They say also that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght safelye goo furthe of his doozes, because thee spared not men if thee mette fyrste with them. But at the length, necessitye enforced them to inuente a pollicye howe they myght bee reuenged of suche bludshed. Searchynge therfore dilygently her footesteppes, and folowynge the pathe wherbye thee was accustomed in the nyght season to wander owte of her denne to seeke her praye, theye made a greate trencher or pytte in her walke, coueringe the same with hurdels wherbypon theye caste parte of the earthe and disperled the residue. The dogge tyger chaunled fyrste into this pitfaul, and fel bypon the popytes of sharpe stakes and suche other ingens as were of purpose fyred in the bottome of the trencher. Beinge thus wounded, he rored soo terribly, that it grated the bowels of suche as harde hym, and the wooddes and mountaynes neare aboute, rebounded the noyse of the horrible crye. When they perceaued that he was layde faste, theye resorted to the trencher and slewe hym with stones, darteres, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the darteres into a thousande chyppes. Beinge yet deade, he was fearefull to all suche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he wolde haue doone beinge alyue and loofe. One *Iobannes Ledismus* of *Smile*, a nere frende to *Vaschus* and one of the companyons of his traauayles, toulde me that he hym selfe had eate of the fleshe of that tyger: and that it was nothyng inferroz to biefe

hurte by  
wylde bea:  
stes.

A tyger.  
*Calidonia* is  
a foeste in  
*Scotlande*.  
*Nemea* is a  
wodde in  
*Greece*.

Tigers whel:  
pes.

Thus the *E:*  
*Egyptians* take  
*Crocodiles*.

The dogge  
tyger taken.  
The royng  
of the tyger.

Tigers fle:  
taken.

in goodnes. Beyng demaunded howe they knewe hit to bee a tyger forasmuche as none of them had euer scene a tyger, they answered that they knewe hit by the spottes, fiercenes, agilite, and suche other markes and token wherby the anciente wyters haue described the riger. For sum of them, had before tyme scene other spotted wilde beastes, as lybarde & panthers. The dogge tyger beyng thus kylled, theye folowynge the trace of his steppes towarde the mountaines, came to the denne where the bytche remayned with her twoo younge suckynge whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at there coomynge. Theye fyrste carped awaye the whelpes with them. But afterwarde fearyng leasse they shulde dye bycause theye were very younge, encendynge when they were bygger to sende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren aboute there neckes, and carped them agayne to there denne: whither returnynge within a fewe dayes after, theye founde the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there place. Theye suppose that the damme in her furye toze them in pyeces and carped them awaye, lestie anye shulde haue the fruition of them. For theye playnely asseme that it was not possible that they shulde bee loosed frome the chaynes aloue. The skynne of the deade tyger stuffed with dyve herbes and strawe, theye sente to *Hispaniola* to the admyrall and other of the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there labes and succoure. It shall at this tyme suffice to haue wrytten thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte of them whiche bothe susteyned damage by there rauenyng, and also handeled the skynne of that whiche was slayne. Let vs nowe therfore returne to kynge *Pacra* frome whome wee haue digressed. When *Vaschus* had entered into the houses for: taken of *Pacra*, he sente messengers to reconyle hym as he had doone the other kynges. At the first he refused to coomme. But after threatennges, he came with thre other kynges in his coompanye. *Vaschus* wryteth that he neuer sawe a more monstrous and deformed creature: And that nature hath ouerly given hym humane shape, and otherwyle to bee worse the a brute beaste, with maners accorдынge to the linyamentes of his bodye. He abused with mosse abhominable lycherye the daughters of foure kynges his brotheres frome whome hee had taken them by violence. Of the fylthy behauioure of

The bytche tyger.

Tigers whelpes.

A strange thyng.

Kynge Pacra.

The seconde decade.

Naturall ha-  
stred of vyce.

*Patria* of his crueltie and iniuries doone by hym, many of the  
other kynges made greuous coomplayntes to *Vasbus* as vnto  
a hygh Judge and iuste reuenger: Moste humblye besechyng  
hym to seee suche thynges purysshed, forasmuche as theye  
tooke hym for a man sente of god for that purpose. Hereby  
in *Vasbus* aswell to wyne their good wylls, as also too  
shewe an exemple of terroure to suche as vsed lyke fashions,  
coommanded that this monstrous beste with the other  
thre kynges whiche were subiecte to hym and of lyke condi-  
tions, shulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghtinge dogges,  
and their tozue carkeses to bee burned. Of these dogges whi-  
che theye vse in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynges,  
For theye saye that theye runne vppon thinhabitantes ar-  
med after there maner, with noo lesse fiercenes then if theye  
were hartes or wylde bozes, if the Spaniards doo but ones  
ly poynthe towarde them with their fyngers: In soo muche  
that oftentymes theye haue had no nede too dyue their ene-  
myes too flyght with swoordes or arrowes: But haue  
doone the same onely with dogges placcd in the forefronte of  
their battayle, and lettynge them slyppe with their warche  
woorde and pryue token. Wheruppon the barbarians sty-  
ken with feare by reason of the cruell countenauces of the  
masties, with their desperate bouldenes and vnaccustomed  
honlyng and backynge, haue disparcled at the fyrste onfette  
and broke their arraye. yet it chaunselth oherwyse when  
theye haue anye conficte agaynst the Canibales and the peo-  
ple of *Caramani*. For these are fyrter, and moze warrellyke  
men: Also so experte arches, that theye can moste certenlye  
dyrect their venemous arrowes agaynst the dogges with su-  
che celeritye as if theye were thunderboltes. By reason wher-  
of, theye sumtymes kyl many of the. Thinhabitantes of these  
montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes:  
But vse onelye *Mechanis*, that is certayne longe and broude  
swoordes made of woodde: Also spynges, longe pykes and  
dartes hardened at the endes with fyre. Whyle kyng *Patria*  
yet lyued, noo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by sayre  
meanes nor by foule, where he had the golde whiche was  
founde in his house. For othere men founde in his iewel house  
fyfthe poundes weyghe of golde. Beyng therfore demaun-  
ded where he had it, he answered that they whiche gathered  
the

Four kynges  
deuoured of  
dogges.

The vse of  
dogges in  
warre a-  
geinst naked  
men.

The Cany-  
bales are ex-  
perts ar-  
chers.

Swoordes of  
woodde.

Fyffe pounde  
weyghe of  
golde.

The same in the montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all  
 deade: And that sence he was a chylde, he neuer esteemed  
 golde more then stonnes. More then this, theye could not  
 gette of hym. By this seuerer punishment erected vppon Pa-  
 cna, Vascus conuylced vnto hym the myndes of all the other  
 kynges of that prouince. And by this meanes it came too  
 passe, that when he sente for the lykke men whiche he lefte  
 behynde hym with kyng Chipes, an other kyng whiche  
 was in the mydde waye (whose name was Bononiana) enter-  
 reyned them gentellye, and gaue them. xx. pounce weyght  
 of pure wrought golde, besyde great plentye of byttayles.  
 And not this onely, but also accompanyed them hym selfe  
 vntyll he had brought them safelye from his palaice into the  
 domynyon of Pacna: Where takynge eche of them by the  
 ryghte handes, he deliuered them to Vascus hym selfe, as  
 a faythfull pledge commytted too his charge, and there-  
 with spake to Vascus in this effecte. Goodste myghte and  
 valyaunte byttourer, beholde I here deliuer vnto yowre  
 yowre coompanions in suche plight as I receaued them: wil-  
 linge that I had byn aswell able to gyue them healthe, as  
 they were hertely welcoume to suche yowre enterreynement as  
 I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentelnesse  
 whiche I haue founde bothe in yowre and them, he shall re-  
 warde yowre whiche sendeth thundersyng and lyghtelyng to  
 the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye gi-  
 ueth vnto good men plentye of Iucca and Maximus in delwe sea  
 son. As he spake these woordes, he lysted vpp his handes  
 and eyes towarde the sonne whome they honoure for god.  
 Then he spake further to Vascus, sayinge: In that yowre  
 haue destroyed and slaine owre vyolent and proude enemies,  
 yowre haue brought peace and quyetnesse to vs and owre fa-  
 milyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye yowre.  
 yowre haue soo ouercome and tamed wyld monstres, that  
 wee thynke yowre to bee sente from heauen for the punish-  
 ment of euell men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the  
 protection of yowre myghte sward, wee maye hereafter  
 leade owre lyues withowte feare, and with more quiernesse  
 gyue thanks to the giuer of all good thynges for hys mercie  
 shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When thinterpretour had  
 coude Vascus that kyng Bononiana had sayde the. c. woordes,  
 and

kyng Bononiana, frende to the christians.  
 wroughte golde.

The oration of kyng Bononiana

The sparke of the lawe of nature, is the lawe witten in the hartes of men.

The thyrde decade.

and suche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thankes for his  
 humanyte declared towarde owze men, and rewarded hym  
 as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentillneite.  
*Vaschus* wyreth that he learned manye thynges of this kynge  
 as concernynge the greate rycheite of these regions: But  
 that he woolde at this present speake nothyng thereof: And  
 rehersethe the same as thynges lyke to have good successe.  
 What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or aduancement meaneth, I  
 doo not well vnderstande. But he playnely seemeth hereby to  
 promyse many greate thynges. And surely it is to be thoughte  
 that accordynge to his hope, great riches maye bee looked  
 for. For they came in maner into none of thynhabytantes  
 houses, but that they found in them, eyther byescraples or  
 curretes of golde, or elles golden ouches, tewels, or gar-  
 landes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I  
 coniecture therfore thus by a synilitude of owze houses: If  
 amonge vs any man of great poure were mowed with the de-  
 syre to haue great plentye of Iron, and woolde enter into I-  
 talye with a mayne force as dyd the *Bothes* in tyme paste,  
 what abundaunce of Iron shoulde he haue in their houses:  
 where as he shulde fynde in one place a scyngpan, in an o-  
 ther a chauldron, here a tryet, and there a spyre, and these  
 in maner in every pore mannes house, with suche other inus-  
 merable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iron is  
 plentifully engendryed in suche regions where they haue soo  
 greate vse therof. Owze men also perceaued that thynhaby-  
 tantes of these regions do no more esteeme golde, then we do  
 Iron: noy yet soo muche after they sawe to what vse Iron  
 serued vs. Thus muche haue I thoughte good to write too  
 powre holpnesse of suche thynges as I haue gathered owze  
 of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of  
 mouth of such as were his cōpanyons in these affayres. As  
 wee receyue them, so wee gyue them vnto youe. Tyme which  
 reueleth all secretes, shall hereafter mynster larger argu-  
 ment of wyrtynge. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate  
 thyng in searchynge the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a  
 hundredth fourescore and tenne men whiche *Vaschus* broughte  
 with hym from *Dariens*, there remainned onely threescore and  
 ten, or at the most fourescore, whose ayde he nowe bled in  
 these dangerous aduentures, leauynge euer the crafed men  
 behynde

*Hiperbole*,

Great plenty  
of golde.

A synilitude  
for the profe  
of plentye of  
golde.

Iron more  
esteemed then  
golde.

behynnd hym in the kinges houses all the waye that he went. But they mooste especially fell into sundrye diseases, whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*. For they were not able to abyde such e calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade of those regions, and wylde herbes without salte, drynkinge none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lacke kinge or unhollome, where as before their stomakes had byn bled to good meates. But the owlde souldiours of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all sorowes, and excedyng tallerable of labour, heate, hunger, and watchyng: In so muche that merilye they make their booste that they haue obserued a longer and sharper lent then euer yowre holynesse intoynd. For they saye that for the space of foure hole yeares, they eat none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and then perhappes fysh, and verie seldoome fleshe: yea, and that sumtime for lacke of al these, they haue not abhorred fro mangye dogges and fylt hye roades as wee haue sayde before. The owlde souldiers of *Dariena*, I caule those whiche fyrste folowed the capytaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda* to inhabyte the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were luyng. But lette vs nowe omytte these thynges, and retourne to *Vaschus* the victourer of the montaynes.

Change of  
dyet is daun-  
gerous.

Owlde souls  
diers.

A longe lent.

The thyrde booke of the  
thyrde Decade.

**W**hen *Vaschus* had remained thirtye dayes in the palayce of kynge *Pacra*, councilynge vnto hym the myddes of thynhabitantes and prouidinge thynges necessarype for his coompanions, he departed frome thense by the conducte of certayne of kynge *Tesocha* his men, and came to the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king therof, are named by the same name. He founde the sydes of these montaynes so rude and baren, that there was noching apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vnpleasante frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhabytet this infortunate region, whiche *Vaschus* overpalled with all speede for feare of hunger. One of these poore kynges was named *Cotochus*, and the other *Churiza*. He tooke them bathe

*Comogrus*,

Two poore  
kynges.

W b, ii

with

## The seconde decade,

**Desertes.**

with hym to guyde hym in the waye, and dismyssed *Tesscha* his men with vytayles and rewarde. Thus for the space of thre dapes, he wandered throughe many deserte wooddes, craggyc mountaynes, & muddy marsthes full of suche quazmyzes that men are ofrentymes swalowed bp in them if they looke not the moze warelpe to their fiete. Also throughe places not frequented with resozte of men, and suche as nature had not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as thinhabitantes haue seldome entercouise betwene them, but onely by sundrye incurtions, the one to spoyle and destroye the other: Beyng eotherwise contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withowte worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures.

**kyng Beche  
buca submyt-  
teth hym selfe**

Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territore of another kyng whose name was *Bechebuc*, they founde all thynges voyde and in silence: for the kyng and his subiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaschus* sente messengers to ferche hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrste submyt hym selfe, but also promysse his ayde with all that he myghte make: for tofyringe furthermoze, thit he fledde not for feare that owze men wolde doo hym any iniurie, but that he hyd hym selfe for verye shame and grieffe of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honozablye accoꝝdyng vnto their dignytye, bycause his stoze of vytayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedienze and frendshyppe, he sente owze men many vesselles of golde, desyring them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whose good will wanted not in greater thynges if his abilytpe were greater. By whiche woꝝdes the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwise cruelly handled of his boꝝtherers. By reason wherof, owze men were enforced to departe from thense moze hungerly then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfoze, they espied certein naked men coominge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaschus* coommaunded his armye to staye, and sente his interpretours to them to knowe what they wold haue. Then one of the to whom the other seemed to gye reuerence, spake in this effect. Owze lord & kyng *Chiorisus*, greeteth yow well: Wyllyng vs to declare that he hath harde of yowze puissaunce and verue wherby yowe haue subdued euill men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes, for the whiche yowze noblye facies and iustyce,

**kyng Chioris-  
sus sendeth  
Vaschus xxx.  
vsshes of  
pure golde.**

as

as he doothe honour yowre fame, soo woold he thinke him selfe moſt happye if he myght receiue yowre into his palaice. But, forasmuche as his fortune hath byn so euell (as he imputeth it) that beyng owte of yowre waye, yowre haue oꝛ uerpast hym, he hath sent yowre this golde in token of his good wyll and frendshyppe towarde yowre. And with these woordes he deliuered to *Vaschus* thirty dishes of pure golde. Addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shulde please him to take the paynes to comme to their kyng, he shulde receyue greater gyftes. He declared further, that a kyng whiche was their boztherer and mortall enemye, was very ryche in golde: And that in subduyng of hym they shulde bot he obtaine greate rycheſſe, and also delyuer them from daylye vexations: whiche thinge myght easilye be doone by their helpe because they knewe the countrey. *Vaschus* put them in good comfozte, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they moze esteemed then greate heapes of golde. For they haue lptell neede of golde, hauyng not thise of pestiferous mony. But he that maye get but one axe oꝛ hatchet, thynketh hym selfe ryche then euer was *crissus*. For euen these naked men doo perceyue that an axe is necessarye for a thousande vles: And confesse that golde is desyred onely for certayne vaine and exteminate pleasures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withowte any inconueniense. For owre gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them: By reason wherof they take it for noo shame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pryde and wantonnes of owre tyme dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignomye to bee withowte that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men may leade a free and happy life withowt tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyns, and towels, with suche other innumerable wherof they haue no vſe, excepte perhappes the kynges furniſhe their tables with a fewe golden vessels. But the common people dyue awaye hunger with a ppece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broylde fyſhe oꝛ summe kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleshe but seildome. When their fingers are imbued with any ounctuous meates, they wype them epyther on the soules of their feete, oꝛ on their thyghes, ye & sumtymes

Axes of Iren  
more esteemed  
then any gold

Superfluous  
and effemy-  
nate pleasures

An exemple  
of the lyfe of  
owre first pa-  
rentes.

## The thyrde decade.

Plentye of  
gold & scarce  
nesse of  
meare.

knig pccchor  
rosa ub nys  
ecch hym  
Telfe.  
xv. pounce  
weyghte of  
wroughte  
golde.  
kynz Tuma-  
nama, looke  
decad. ii. lib.  
all

A good po-  
licye.

summes on the skynnes of their prynces members in the  
herde of a nappcayne. And for this cause doo they often  
tymes washe them selues in the ryuers. Dwoze men therfore  
wente forwarde laden with golde, but soze afflicted with  
hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of  
kynge *Pocchorrosa* who fledde at their commynge. Here for  
the space of thirte dayes they fylled their empye bellies  
with breade of the rootes of *Maiziun*. In the meane tyme  
*Vaschus* sente for *Pocchorrosa*: who beyng allured with pro-  
misses and saye woordes, came and submytted hym selfe  
bynginge with hym for a present. xv. poundes weighte of  
wroughte golde, and a fewe slaues. *Vaschus* rewarded hym as  
he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart,  
he was aduertised that he shulde passe through the dominion  
of a certayne kynge whose name was *Tumanama*. This is hee  
whome the soonne of kynge *Comogrus* declared to bee of so  
great poure and fearefull to all his boztherers, & with whom  
many of *Comogrus* familjers had byn capryue. But dwoze men  
nowe perceined that they measured his poure by their owne.  
For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes,  
in respecte to the poure and pollicye of dwoze men. Dwoze  
men were also enformed by suche as dwelte neare aboute *Tu-  
manama*, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as  
they suppoled: For yet so ryche in golde as younge *Como-  
grus* had declared. yet consulted they of his subduyng: whi-  
che they thoughte they myght theadlyer bynginge to passe by:  
cause *Pocchorrosa* was his mortall enemye, who moste gladly  
promysed them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaschus* therfore,  
leauynge his speke men in the byllage of *Pocchorrosa*, tooke  
with hym thre score of his moste valiante souldiers, and de-  
clared vnto them howe kynge *Tumanama* had oftentymes spo-  
ken proude and threarnyng woordes agaynst them: Lyke-  
wise that it nowe stode them in hande of necessitee to passe  
through his dominion: And that he thought it beste to sette  
bypon hym bywares. The souldiers consented to his aduice,  
and exhorted hym to gyue thaduenture, promysinge that they  
woolde folowe hym whether so euer he wente. They deter-  
mined therefore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that *Tu-  
manama* not knowynge of their sodden commynge, myght haue  
no leasure to assemble an armye. The thyng came to passe  
euen

euē as they had deuyced. For in the fyrste watche of the nyght, owze men with the *Pocchorrosians*, inuaded the byllage and palaice of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym prisoner in respectyng nothyng lesse. He had with hym two younge men whiche he abused vnnaturally: Also fourescore women whiche he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykelike a greate number of his gentelmen and subiectes were taken stragelyng in other byllages neare aboute his palaice. For their houles are not adherent togither as owzes bee, bycause they are oftentimes troubeled with vehement whylewyndes by reason of the suddē chaunges and motions of the ayre caused by the inuāuence of the planetes in the equalitie of the daye and nyght beyng there in maner bothe of one lengthe throughtoūt all the yere, forasmuche as they are neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne as we haue sayde before. Their houles are made of trees, couered and after their maner therched with the stalkes of certayne tologhe herbes. To the palayce of *Tumanama*, was onely one houle adherent, and that euē as bygge as the palayce it selfe. Eyrther of these houles were in length a hundzeth and twentie pases, and in bredth fyfte pases as owze men measured them. In these two houles the kyng was accustomed to muster his men as often as he prepared an armye. When *Tumanama* therfore, was thus taken captiue with all his *Sardanapaneall* famelye, the *Pocchorrosians* bragged and threatened hym beyng nowe bounde, that he shulde shortly bee hanged. The other kynges also his boztherers, reioyced at his mylfortune. Wherby owze men perceaued that *Tumanama* was nolesse troublesome to his neyghbours, then was *Pacra* to the kinges of the southe syde of the montaynes. *Vaschus* also the better to please them, threarded hym greuouly: But in dedde entended no euell toward hym. He spake therfore sharply vnto hym with these woordes: Thou shalt nowe suffer punishment thou cruell tyranne, for thy pryde and abhominations. Thou shalt knowe of what poure the chryistians are whom thou haste soo contemned and threared to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte eyer and there to drowne them as thou haste often tymes made thy haunte emonge thy naked slanes. But thou thy selfe shalt fyrste feele that whiche thou haste prepared for o- ther. And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vpp.

kyng Tuma  
nama is take  
prisoner.

The cause of  
vehemente  
wyndes nere  
he Equinoes  
ial.

kyng Tuma  
nama his  
palaice.

Vaschus his  
woordes to  
kyng Tuma  
nama.

## The thyrde lecade.

Neuertheleſſe gyyng a priuie token of pardon to them  
 whiche layde handes on him. Thus unhappye *Tumans*, feaz  
 ryng and beleuyng that *Vaschus* had mence in erneste as he  
 commanded, fell prostrate at his feete and with teares de-  
 ſyred pardon: Whotestynge that he neuer spake any ſuche  
 wordes. But that perhappes his noble men in their dzoon:  
 kenneſſe had ſo abuſed their toonges whiche he coulde not  
 rule. For their wynges although they bee not made of grapes  
 yet are they of force to make men dzoonken. He declared fur-  
 thermore that the other kynges his boztherers had of mal-  
 lice ſumpled ſuche lyes of hym enuyng his fortune bycauſe  
 he was of greater poure then they. Whiſte humbly deſyryng  
*Vaschus* that as he tooke hym to bee a wiſe byctowrer, ſoo to  
 gyyue no credytre vnto their vniuſſe and malycious complain-  
 tes. Addyng herevnto that if it woolde pleaſe hym to par-  
 don hym not haunge offended, he woolde bringe him great  
 plentie of gold. Thus layinge his ryght hande on his breaſt,  
 he ſwoze by the ſonne, that he euer loued and feared the  
 chryſtians ſence he kyſſe harde of their fame and byctoyzes:  
 Eſpecially when he harde ſape that they had *Michanus*, that  
 is, ſwoozdes ſharper then thearle, and ſuch as cutte in pier-  
 ces al thyngeſ that coomme in their waye. Then directyng  
 his eyes towarde *Vaschus* who had his ſwoorde in his hand,  
 he ſpake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytt)  
 dare lyfte vpye his hande ageynſte this ſwoorde of yowres  
 wherwith yowe are able with one ſtrooke to cleaue a man  
 from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therfore perſwade  
 yowe (o moſte myghtye victowrer) that euer ſuche wordes  
 proceeded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumans* with trembling  
 ſpake theſe wordes, therewith ſwalowynge downe the knot  
 of deathe, *Vaschus* ſeemed by his teares to bee moued to com-  
 paſſion: And ſpeakyng to hym with chearefull countenance  
 commaunded hym to bee loofed. This doone, he ſente imme-  
 diarly to his palatſe for. xxx. poundes weyght of pure gold  
 artifycially wrought into ſundry ouches whiche his wynges  
 and concubynes vied to weare. Also the thyrde daye ſolo-  
 wyng, his noble men and gentylmen ſent threſcoze pound-  
 des weight of golde for their ſyne and raiuſumnie. *Tumans*  
 beyng demaſided wher they had that gold, answered that it  
 was not gathered in his dominions But that it was broughte  
 his

O derunt quem  
 metuunt.

kyng *Tuma-*  
*nana* his  
 woordes.

*Tumans*  
 is pardoned.  
 xxx. pounde  
 weyghte of  
 wroughte  
 golde.  
 It. poundes  
 weyght of  
 golde.

his auncestours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the southe. But the *Pocchorrosians* & other his enemies, sayd that he lyed: Affirmpnge that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he neuer knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. Yet denyed not but that there hath sumtimes byn found certayne smaule graines of golde, to the gatherynge wherof, he neuer had any regard, bycause they coulde not gette it without great & longe labour. Whyle these thynges were dooinge, the sycke men whiche *Vaschus* had lefte in the village of *Pocchorrosa*, came to hym the. viii. day of the Calendes of January in the yecare of Christe. M. D. XXXI. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the southe with sundye instrumentes to dygge the grounde and gather golde. Thus passynge ouer the day of the natiuite of Christ without bodely labour, vppon saince Steuens daye he brought certeyne myners to the syde of a hyll not farre dystance from the palaice of *Tumanama*, wherre (as he saith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to bynge furthe golde. When they had dygged a pytte not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and syfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne smaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell seedes, amountynge to the weyght of twelue graynes as they prouyd with their balances of assaye before a notarie and wyrtelle that the better credytte myghte bee gyuen therto. Wherby they argued that the rychenesse of that lande was agreable to the report of the bozherers, although *Vaschus* coulde by noo meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the same. They suppose that he noz thyngesteemed so smaule a portion. But other saye that he denyed his countrey to bee frutefull of golde, leasse by reason therof the desyre of golde, myght intyse owre men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in dedde the seely kyng was a prophet in soo thinkynge. For they chose that and the region of *Pocchorrosa* to inhabyte, and determyned to buylde towncs in them bothe, if it shulde so please the kyng of Castyle: Aswell that they myghte bee baytinge places and byrailyng houses for such as shulde iozney toward the southe, as also that both the regions were frutfull and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intendynge nowe therfore to departe from

They ab.  
hoire labour.

The coloure  
of the golden  
earthe and  
tryall of the  
same.

The thyrde decade.

thence, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the grounde with certayne shyninge stones, seemed to bee a token of golde. where causyuge a smaule pitte to bee dygged lycell beneath thupper cruste of the earthe, he founde somuche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniardes caule *Castellatum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Pesus*, but not in one grayne. Keiopynge at these tokens in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumana* to be of good comforte, promysyng hym that he woold bee his frende and defender, soo that he troubeled not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Chyistians. He also perswadedd hym to gather plentye of golde. Summe saye that he ledde awaye all *Tumana* his women, and spoyled him leaste he shuld rebell. yet he deliuered his soonne to *Vaschus* to bee broughte byppe with oovre men, to learne their language and relygion, that he myght thereafter the better vse his helpe as well in all thynges that he shulde haue to doo with oovre men, as also moze polypkely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a behement feuer by reason of excelle of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger. In somuche that departinge from thence, he was sayne to bee borne vppone mennes backes in shires of goldeampyne cottoun. Lykewyse also many of his souldiers whiche were soo weake that they coulde nother go nor stoude. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of thynhabytantes, who shewed the felues in althynges wyllyng and obedyente. Also summe of them whiche were somewhat feeble and not able to trauayle, although not greuously sycke, were ledde by the armes vntyll they came to the domynion of kyng *Comogrus* a greate frende to the Chyistians, of whom wee haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* commyng therher, he founde that the owlde kyng was deade, and his soonne (whome we so praysed for his wisdom) to raygne in his steade: And that he was baptised by the name of Charles. The palayce of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a steepe hylle well cultured. Hauyng towarde the southe a playne of twelue leages in breadth and beary frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyond this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde th: two seas wherof we haue spoken before. Ovre of the steepe hylles, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth

Tokens of  
great plentye  
of golde.

Vaschus fau-  
leth sicke.

Feeblenes of  
hunger and  
watchyng.

kyng Como-  
grus frende  
to the Chy-  
stians.

The large &  
frutefull plain  
of zauana.

The ryuer  
Comogrus.

neth throught the sayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, re-  
 ceauynge into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ry-  
 uers, & so fauleth into the south sea. It is distaunte from *Dari-  
 ena*, aboute threescore and tenne leages towarde the weste.  
 As owere men therfore came to these parties, kynge *Comogrus*  
 (otherwyse cauled *Charles* by his christian name) mette the  
 ioyfully and enterpayned them honorably, gouynge them  
 their fyll of pleasaunte meares and drynkes. He gaue also to  
*Vaschus*, twenty pounde weyght of wrought golde. *Vaschus* re-  
 compensated him with thinges which he esteemed muche more:  
 As axes and sundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Also a souls  
 diours cloke, and a faure herte wrought with needle woork  
 By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to bee halfe a  
 god amonge his boztherers. *Vaschus* at his departynge from  
 hense, earnestly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to re-  
 mayne faithfull and obedient to the christian king of Castile,  
 if they desyred to lyue in peace and quietnesse: And that they  
 shulde hereafter more diligently applye them selues to the gar-  
 theringe of golde to bee sente to the great christian *Tibac* (that  
 is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they shuld  
 bothe gette them and their posterity a parrone and defender  
 agens their enemyes, and also obtayne great abundaunce of  
 store thinges. These affayres thus happely achined, he went  
 forwarde on his vyage to the palace of kyng *Ponchas*, where  
 he founde foure younge men whiche were come from *Dariena*  
 to certify hym that there were certayne shippes comynge from  
*Hispaniola* laden with vyttayles and other necessaries. Where-  
 fore takynge with him euentie of his moste lusty souldiers, he  
 made haste to *Dariena* with longe iorneyes: leauynge the respy-  
 due behynd him to solow at their leasure. He writeth that he  
 came to *Dariena* the. xiiii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his  
 letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiii. day of march. He writeth in  
 the same letter, that he had many sore conflicts, & that he  
 was yet neyther wounded, or losse any of his men in the bat-  
 taile. And therfore in al his large letter, there is not one leafe  
 without thankes gouynge to almyghty god for his deliue-  
 ryng and preseruacion from so many imminent perils. He attempt-  
 ed no enterpryse or tooke in hande any viage without thur-  
 uocation of god and his holy saintes. Thus was *Vaschus* *Bah-  
 boa* of a byolute *Boliath*, tourned into *Hebseus*: And frome

xx. pounde  
 weyght of  
 wrought gold

*Vaschus* re-  
 turneth to  
*Dariena*

The good  
 fortune of  
*Vaschus*

*Vaschus* was  
 turned from  
 Solath to  
 Elieus.

## The thyrde decade.

*Anteus* too *Hercules* the conquerour of monsters. *Beynge* therefore thus tourned from a ralshe royster to a polypke and discrete capitayne, he was iudged woorthy to bee aduanced to greate honoure. By reason whercof, he was bothe receaued into the kynges fauour, and therevppon created the generall or Lieutenannt of the kynges army in those Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythefull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and also by woorde of mouth of suche as came lately from thense. It powre holynes desyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by suche thynges as I haue seene, I helcuc these thynges to bee trewe, euen so thorder and agreinge of *Vaschus* and his companions warrelyke letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyarde therefore shall not neede hereafter with vndermynnyng the earth with intollerable labour to bpeake the bones of owre mother. and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in sunder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the court of infernall *Pluto*, to bynng from thense wycked golde the seede of innumerable mischeues, withowt the whiche notwithstandinge we may nowr scarcely leade a happy lyfe sithe iniquitie hath so preuayled and made vs slaues to that wherof we are lordes by nature: The Spanyarde (I say) shall not neede with such trauayles & difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shall fynde it plentifully in maner in the vpper crust of the earth, or in the sandes of ryuers dyed vppe by the heate of sommer, onely washynge the earth softly from the same: And shall with lyke facilitate gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquitie (by al the Cosmographers a lene obteyned not soo greate a benefyte of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowleage hereof, bycause there came neuer man before owre of owre knowne worlde to these vnknewen nations: At the leasse, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwise nothyng can be gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuered Defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admittinge them otherwyle then by conquest: especially the fierce *Canibales* or *Caribes*. For these wylde hunters of men, gyue them selues to none other kynde of exercise but onely to manhuntynge and ryllage after theyr manner.

O flaterynge fortune, looke his death in the booke of the Ilande lately founde.

The earth is owre general mother.

The court of infernall Pluto.

There is a better waye then this.

The Spanyardes conquestes.

Manhunters.

ner. At the commynge therfore of oovre men into theyr regi-  
ons, they loke as suerly to haue them faule into their snares  
as if they were hartes or wylde bozes: and with no lesse con-  
fydence like the their lippes secreately in hope of their praye. If  
they gette the vpper hande, they eate them greedely: If they  
mystruste them selues to bee the weaker parte, they truste to  
theyr feete, and flye swyfter then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the  
matter bee tryed on the water, as well the women as men can  
dyeue and swimme, as though they had byn euer brought by  
and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therfore yf the  
large tracte of these regions haue byn hytherto vnknewen.  
But nowe sithe it hath pleased God to discouer the same in  
oovre tyme, it shall becomme vs to shewe oovre naturall loue to  
mankynde and debotie to God, to endeuoure oovre selues to  
bryng them to ciuilitie and true religion, to thyncrease of  
Christes stocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Deuill  
theyr father who delyteth in oovre destruction as he hath  
doone frome the begynnynge. By the good successe of these  
fyrst frutes, oovre hope is, that the Christian religion shall  
sreache forth her armes very farre. Which thyng shalde the  
sooner come to passe yf all menne to theyr poure (especially  
Christian prynces to whom it chiefly perteyneth) wolde put  
theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The har-  
uest suerly is greate, but the woorkemen are but fewe. As we  
haue sayde at the begynnynge, yovre holynes shall hereafter  
noo ythe many myriades of hooodes of chekins vnder yovre  
wynges. But let vs nowe retorne to speake of *Beragua* beinge  
the weste syde of *Vraba*, and fyrs founde by *Colonus* the Admi-  
rall, then vnforsunately gouerne by *Diego Nicuesa*, and nowe  
lesse in maner desolate: with the other large regions of those  
prouinces brought from theyr wylde and beauly rudenes to  
ciuilitie and true religion.

The fierse-  
nesse of the  
Caubales.

Ooure duty to  
god, and na-  
turall loue to  
mankynde.

The office of  
Christian  
prynces.  
The harvest  
is great, &c.

*Beragua.*

*Nicuesa.*

The fourth booke of the  
thyerde Decade.



Was determynd (moste holy father) to haue  
proceeded no further herein, but that our fierce  
ipacke yet remaynyng in my mynde, wolde  
not suffer me to cease. Wheras I haue therfore  
declared howe *Beragua* was fyrs founde by  
*Colonus*

The thyrde decade.

The fourth  
navigation of  
Colonus the  
Admirall.

From Spaine  
to Hispaniola  
a thousande  
and two hundred  
leagues

The florey  
nyng Ilande  
of Guanassa.

Simple  
people.

A greate  
marchaunte.

Colonus, my thyncke I shulde commytre a heynous cryme if I shuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his traynables, of his cares and troubles, and finally of the daungerous and perels, whiche he susteyned in that navigation. Therefore in the yere of Christe, 1502, in the. vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoyled wyth his sayles and departed from the Ilandes of Gades with. iiii. shippes of fyfte or. iii. score tunne a peece, with a hundredth threlcore and tenne mē, and came with prosperous wynde to the Ilandes of Canarie within fyve daies followinge, from thence arryvinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of Dominica beinge the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he sayled from Dominica to Hispaniola in fyve or ther daies. Thus within the space of. xxvi. daies, with prosperous wynde and by the swyfte faule of the Ocean from the Easte to the west, he sayled from Spaine to Hispaniola: Which course is counted of the mariners to bee no lesse then a thousande and two hundredth leagues. He sayled but a whyle in Hispaniola, whether it were wyllingly, or that he were so admonished of the viceroye. Directing therefore his wyage from thence towarde the weste, leavyng the Ilandes of Cuba and Jamaica on his ryght hande towarde the north, he wyrteth that he chaunced vpon an Ilande moze southeuarde then Jamaica, whiche th inhabitantes caule Guanassa, so florey hynge and frutefull that it myghte seeme an earthlye Paradise. Coastynge alonge by the shores of this Ilande, he mette two of the Canoas or boates of those prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked slaues ageynst the streame. In these boates, was carryed a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chyldren, all naked. The slaues scyng owre men a lande, made signes to them with proude countenance in their maisters name, to stande owte of the waye, and threathned them if they wolde not gyue place. Their symple is suche that they nother feared the multitude or poure of owre men, or the greatnes and straungenes of owre shippes. They thought that owre men wolde haue honoured their maister with like reuerence as they did. Owre men had intelligēce at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunte whiche came to the parte from oher coastes of the Ilande. For they crecepte byng and sellynge by exchaunge with their conynies. He had also with him good stowe of suche ware as they stande in

in neede of or take pleasure in: as laton belles, rasers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne sharpe yelowc bypghte stone, with handles of a stronge kynd of woodde. Also many other necessary instrumentes with kychen stuffe and vesselles for all necessary vles. Lykewise sheetes of gossampine cotton wrought of sundrye colours. Dwyre men tooke hym prysoner with all his famely. But *Colonus* commaunded hym to bee loosed shortly after, and the greatest parte of his goodes to bee restored to wynde his fryndeshippe. Beinge here instructed of a lande lpyng furthward the southe, he tooke his voyage thither. Therfore lytle more then tennē myles distant fro hence, he founde a large lande whiche the inhabitants cauled *Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande and commaunded his chaplaine to saye masse on the sea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitantes flocked thither symplye and without feare, brynkyng with them plenty of meate and freshe water, marueplyng at dwyre men as they had byn summe straunge miracle. When they had presented their giftes, they wente sumwhat backwarde and made lowe curtesly after their maner bowyng their heades and bowes reuerently. He recompensed their gentylnes rewardeinge them with other of dwyre thynges, as counters, bralletes and garlandes of glasse and counterfecte stoones, lookyng glasses, nedelles, and pynnes, with suche other trash, whiche seemed vnto them precious marchaundies. In this great tracte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Tala* and the other *Mala*. He wyrteth that all that lande is very fayre and holsome by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the ayre. And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull ground beinge partely full of montaines, and partely large playnes: Also replenyshed with many goodly trees, holsome herbes, and frutes, continuyng greene and flozzyng all the hole yeare. It beareth also verye many holy trees and pyncle aple trees. Also. vii. kyndes of date trees wherof summe are frutes full and summe barren. It bryngeth furth lykewyse of it selfe *Pelgoras* and wilde bynes laden with grapes euen in the wooddes emonge other trees. He saythe furthermore that there is suche abundaunce of other pleasaunte and profitable frutes, that they passe nor of bynes. Of one of thole kyndes of date trees, they make certeyne longe and brode swozdes and darts,

The region  
of Queriques  
tana or Ci-  
amba.

Gentle peo-  
ple.

The regions  
of Tala and  
Mala.

Seuen kyndes  
of date  
trees,  
wylde vines,

The thyrde leade,

**Wirobalanco** These regions beare also go Sampnye trees here and here commonly in the woodds. Lyke wise <sup>Mirabolanes</sup> of sundry kyndes, as those which the physicians caule *Embolos* and *Cebulos*, *Murium* also, *Lucis*, *Ages*, and *Bittas*, lyke vnto those which we haue sayde before to bee founde in other regions in these coastes. The same noory they also Lyons, Tygers, Tartes, Ages, Boates, and dyuers other beastes. Lyke wyle sundry kyndes of byrdes and foules: Cynge they which are in colour, bygues, and taste, muche lyke vnto ome pe heanes. He saith that thir inhabitants are of high and goodly nature, well lynned and proportioned both men and women: Couerynge their pryue partes with fyne breeches of gossampine cotton wrought with dyuers colours. And that they may seeme the more cumple and bewtiful (as they take it) they paynte their bodies redde and blacke with the use of certeyne apples which they plante in their gardens for the same purpose. Summe of them paynte their hole bodies summe but parte: and other summe drawe the portraiture of herbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as seemeth best to his owne phantasie. Their language differeth hertelye from theirs of the Ilandes nere aboute them. From these regions, the waters of the sea ranne with as full course toward the weste, as if it had byn the faule of a swyfte riuier. Neuertheles he determined to searche the Easte partes of this lande, reuoluyng in his mynde that the regions of *Parsis* and *O. Dracanis* with other coastes founde before toward the Easte, shulde bee nere theraboute as in dedde they were. Departyng therfore from the large region of *Quirquetans* the xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had sailed thirtie leaques, he founde a ryuer without the mouth wherof he drewe freshe water in the sea. Where also the shoale was so cleane withoute rockes, that he founde grounde euery where, where he myght aptely cast anchor. He witteth that the swifte course of the Ocean was so vehement and contrarye, that in the space of fortye dayes he could not scartelye sayle thre score and tenne leaques, and that with muche difficultye with many fetches and compassynges, fyndyng himselfe to bee sometimes repulled and dyuen farre backe by the violent course of the sea when he woold haue taken lande toward

Wirobalanco

byrdes and foules.

people of goodly nature

They paynt their bodies

The swyfte course of the sea from the East to the West.  
Parsis

fresh water in the sea.

fetches and compassynges

toward

towarde the suckynge, leasse perhappes wanderynge in vn-  
 knowne coastes in the darcknesse of the nyght, he myghte  
 bee in daunger of shipwracke: He wylleth that in the space  
 of eght leagues, he founde thre great and fayre ryuers by-  
 pon the bankes wherof, there grewe reedes bygger then a  
 mannes thigh. In these ryuers was also greate plentye of  
 fyre and great tortoyles: Alike wile in many places, multi-  
 tudes of Crocodiles lye in the lande, and varyng to take  
 the heate of the soone: Besyde dyuers other kyndes of  
 beastes wherunto he gaue no names. He sayth also that the  
 soyle of that lande is very diuers and variable: beinge sum-  
 where stonye and full of rough and craggie promontories of  
 porphyres reachynge into the sea. And in other places as frut-  
 full as maye bee. They haue also diuers knynges and rulers.  
 In summe places they caule a kynge *Cacicus*: in other places  
 they caule hym *Quebi*, and sumwhere *Uu*. Suche as haue  
 behaued them selues valiantly in the warres agensse their  
 enemies, and haue their faces full of scarses, they caule *cu-  
 gras*, and honour them as the antiquitie dyd the goddes whi-  
 che they cauled *Heroes*, supposed to bee the soules of suche  
 men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes.  
 The common people, they caule *Chiu*: and a man, they caule  
*Hocum*. When they saye in their language, take man, they say  
*Hoppes home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apte to beare  
 great shippes: Besoze the mouthe wherof, lye foure smaule  
 Ilandes full of flourishing and frutfull rees. These Ilandes  
 he named *Quatuor tempora*, from hence sayllynge towarde the  
 Easte for the space of. vii. leagues syll agensse the byolent  
 southe of the water, he founde twelue other smaule Ilandes.  
 In the whiche because he founde a newe kynde of frutes  
 muche like vnto owze lemondres, he cauled them *Limonares*.  
 Wanderynge yet further the same waye for the space of. vii.  
 leagues, he founde a great haueu enterpynge into the lande af-  
 ter the maner of a goulfe the space of thre leagues, and in  
 maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was  
 Nicusa losse afterwarde when he soughte *Beragu*: By reason  
 wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the  
 losse men. Thus *Colonus* the Admirall yet further con-  
 tynuyng his course agensse the surfe of the sea, founde manye  
 highte mountaynes and horrible valleys, with dyuers ryuers  
 and

faire ryuers,  
 Great reedes

Great tortoy-  
 les.

Dyuers lang-  
 guages.

Heroes

Quatuor tem-  
 pora.

Twelue I-  
 lades named  
 Limonares.

Rio de los per-  
 didos,

## The thyrde decade.

and hauens, from all the whiche (as he saythe) proceeded  
 sweete sauers greatly recreatyng and confortyng nature.  
 In so muche that in all this longe tracte there was not one  
 of his men diseased vntyll he came to a region whiche thir-  
 habitantes caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the haven cauled  
*Cariak*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admirall because the *Mirobal-*  
*lane* trees are native in the regions therabout. In this haven  
 of *Cariak*, there came about two hundred of thir habitantes  
 to the sea syde with euerye of them thre or foure dartes in  
 their handes: yet of condition gentell enoughe, and not res-  
 usyng straungers. Their comyng was for none other pur-  
 pose then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what  
 they broughte with them. When owere men had gyven them  
 sygnes of peate, they came swymmyng to the shypes and  
 despyred to barter with them by exchaunge. The admirall to  
 allure them to frendshippe, gaue them many of owere thinges:  
 But they refused them, suspectyng summe disceate thereby  
 because he woolde not receyue theirs. They broughte all by  
 sygnes: for one vnderstoode not a woorde of the others lan-  
 guage. Suche gyftes as were sente them, they lefte on the  
 shore and woolde take no part therof. They are of suche ciu-  
 lize and humanytie, that they esteeme it more honorabile to  
 gyue then to take. They sente owere men two younge women  
 beinge byrgines, of comendable fauour and goodly stature,  
 signyfyinge vnto them that they myghte take them awaye  
 with them if it were their pleasure. These women after the  
 maner of their countrey, were couered from their ancles sum-  
 what aboue their priuye partes with a certeyne clothe made  
 of golampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women  
 vse to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the  
 hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore  
 parte. Their longe heare, they bynde vppon with fylletes, &  
 winde it in sundry vobles as owere maydes are accustomed to  
 do. The virgins which were sente to the Admirall he decked  
 in fayre apparell, & gaue them many gyftes, and sent them  
 home ageyne. But lykewise all these rewardes and apparell  
 they left vppon the shore because owere men had refused their  
 gyftes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and those ve-  
 ry wyllyngly) that by lernyng the Spanyshe tonge, he might  
 afterwarde vse them for interpretours. He considered that  
 the

The region  
of Quicuri.

The haven  
of Cariak or  
Mirobalanus

Ciulle and hu-  
mane people

the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troublede with  
 behement motions or ouerflowynges of the sea, forasmuche  
 as trees growe in the sea not farre frome the shore, euen as  
 they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thyng al  
 so other doo affirme whiche haue latelyer searched those coas-  
 tes, declaring that the sea riseth and fauleth but lyttle there  
 aboute. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospecte of this  
 lande, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after  
 that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes  
 of theyr branches into the grounde: which embrasing them  
 causeth other branches to sprynge owte of the same, and take  
 roote in the earth, bringynge forth trees in theyr kynde suc-  
 cessiuely as dyd the fyrst roote from whence they had theyr o-  
 riginall, as do also the settes of vines when onely bothe the  
 endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth  
 booke of his natural historie maketh mention of suche trees,  
 describynge them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The  
 Admirall wyrteth also that the lyke beastes are engendered  
 in the coastes of *Cariak*, as in other prouinces of these regions,  
 and such as we haue spoken of before. Yet that there is one  
 founde here in nature much differinge from the other. This  
 beaste is of the byggenes of a greate moonkepe, but with a  
 tayle muche longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes,  
 and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangynge by  
 the tayle vppon the braunche of a tree, & gatherynge strength  
 by swayynge her body twyse or thryse too and fro, she casteth  
 her selfe from branche to branche and so from tree to tree as  
 though she flew. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who  
 perceauinge her selfe to be wounded, leapte downe from the  
 tree, and fiercely set on hym which gaue her the wounde, in  
 so muche that he was fayne to defende hym selfe with his  
 sword. And thus by chaunce cuttyng of one of her armes,  
 he tooke her, and with muche ado brought her to the ships  
 where within a whyle, shee waxed tame. Whyle shee was  
 thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of our  
 hunters hadde chased a wyld boze owte of the maryshes nere  
 vnto the sea syde. For hunger and desyre of fleshe, caused the  
 to take double pleasure in huntynge. In this meane tyme o-  
 ther which remayned in the shippes, goinge a lande to recre-  
 ate them selues, tooke this moonkey with them. Who, as

syde.

Trees gro-  
 wyng in the  
 sea after a  
 straunge sort.

Plinie

A straunge  
 kynde of  
 moonkeys.

A moonkeye  
 seyghteth  
 with a man.

## The thyrd decade.

**¶** conflict betwene a monkey and a wylde boze.

**The bodies of kynge dyed & reserued**

**Cerabaro.**

**Aburema.**

**Theynes of golde.**

**Plentie of golde.**

**¶** five villages ryche in gold.

**Crownes of beastes claws**

soone as thee had espied the boze, set by her byssels & made towarde her. The boze lyk a toyle shooke his byssels & whette his teethe. The monkey furiously inuaded the boze, in a pynge her tayle about his body, and with her arme rescued of her victouer, helde hym so fast aboute the throte, that he was suffocate. These people of *Caria*, use to dye the deade bodies of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and so reserue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twentie leagues from *Caria*, he founde a goulfe of such largenes that it conteyned .xii. leagues in compasse. In the mouth of this goulfe were foure lyttle Ilandes so nere together, that they made a safe haven to enter into the goulfe. This goulfe is the haven which we sayde before to be cauled *Cerabaro* of thynhabitantes. But they haue nowe learned that only the lande of the one syde therof, syngre on the ryght hande at the enterynge of the goulfe, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte syde, is cauled *Aburema*. He saythe that all this goulfe is ful of fructeful Ilandes wel replenyshed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the sea to bee verye cleane without rockes, and commodious to cast anker: lykewyse the sea of the goulfe to haue greate abundance of fysh: and the lande of both the sydes to bee inferiour to none in fructulnes. At his fyrst arryuynge, he espied two of thynhabitantes haupngs cheynes about theyr neckes, made of ouches (which they caule *Quarinas*) of base golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beastes and foules. Of the thys *Carians* whiche he brought with hym from *Caria*, he was enformed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were ryche in golde: And that the people of *Caria* haue all theyr golde frome thense for exchaunge of other of theyr thynge. They tolde hym also, that in the same regions there are foue byllages not farre from the sea syde, whiche inhabitants apply them selues onely to the gathering of gold. The names of the byllages are these: *Chirua*, *Puren*, *Chirua*, *Iureche*, *Atames*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take great pleasure in wearynge garlandes of flowers, and crownes made of the claws of Lions and Tygers. The women couer onely theyr pryncy partes with a speller of goatampine cottow. Deuouringe from here and aduynge byll by the same shore

for the space of thre li. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he spyed aboute thre hundred naked men in a com-pany. When they sawe the Shippes drawe neare the lande, they cryed owte aloude, with euell countenances theyr wordes were swordes and halynge dretes, takyng alle water in theyr mouthes and spouryng the same ageynst our men: wherby they seemed to insinuate that they wolde receaue no condicion of peace or haue ologh: to doo with them. Here he commaunded certeyne pieces of ordnancc to be shot of toward them: yet so to ouershure them, that none myght be hurt therby. For he euer determyned to deale quietly and peaceably with these newe nations. At the noyse therfoze of the gunnes and syght of the spher, they fell downe to the grounde, and desyred peace. Thus enteringe into further frendshippe, they exchaunged theyr cheyues and ouches of golde for glasses and haukes belles and such other marchan- dies. They vse drummes or rymbels made of the shelles of certeyne sea fyshes, wherewith they encozage theym selues in the warres. In this tract are these seuen ryuers, *Acateba*, *Quireba*, *Zobroba*, *Riquistin*, *Vrila*, *Duribba*, *Bragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them selues ageynste rayne and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the steade of clokes. Departinge from hence, he searched the coastes of *Ebetere*, and *Embigar*: And here ceaseth the plentie and fruite- fulnes of golde, in the tracte of fiftie leagues or there about. From hence onely thre leagues distant, is the tocke whithe in the vnfortunate discourse of *Nirnes*. We sayde was cauled of owre men *Pignorem*. But of thynhabitantes the Region is cauled *Vibba*. In this tracte also aboute syre leagues frome hence, is the haueyn which *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wher- of we haue spoken before) in the region whiche thynhitan- tes caule *Xagaguar*. This region is very populous: but they go all naked. The kynge is paynted with blacke colours: but all the people with redde. The kynge and seuen of his noble men, had euery of them a sylde plate of golde hangynge at theyr noses hylles downe vnto theyr lippes. And this they take for a tummy ornamente. The menne inclose theyr priue members in a shell: And the women couer theyr with a syl- der of gossampine cotton ryed about theyr loynes. In theyr gardens

Secret  
people.

Suns make  
peace.

Seuen golde  
ryuers

More where  
the plentie of  
golde endeth

*Pignorem*.

*Vibba*.

*Portus Bellus*.

paynted  
people.

A strange  
sight.

As they in the  
see de of a  
codpiece.

## The thyrde decade.

Crocodiles of  
sweete sa-  
uour.

Alcayr or Ba-  
bilon in Egypt

Shippes ea-  
ten with  
wormes.

Alexandria in  
Egypte.

Broma.

Hiebra.

Beragua.

gardens they nooys the a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine  
tree: the whiche (as we haue sayde in an other place) groweth  
on a shrubbe muche lyke vnto an archhocke: But the  
frute is muche softer, and meate for a kynge. Also cer-  
teyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue spoken  
befoze. This tree, they caule *Hibero*. In these coastes they  
mette sumtymes with Crocodiles lyinge on the sandes, the  
whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they lefte a very  
sweete sauour behynde them sweeter then milke or *Casoz-  
reum*. When I was sente ambassadour for the catholike king  
of Castile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayr in Egypte,  
the inhabitants nere vnto the ryuer of Nilus coulde me the like  
of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmyng furthermoze that the  
fatte or sewette of them is equall in sweetnes with the plea-  
saunte gummess of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at  
the length enforced of necessitye to departe from hente, al-  
well for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarye  
and vyolente course of the water, as also that his shippes  
were daily moze and moze putrifed and eaten thowgh with  
certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmenes of  
the water in all those tractes nere vnto the Equinoctial line.  
The Venetians caule these woormes *Biffas*. The same are al-  
so engendred in two hauens of the cite of Alexandria in Egypt  
and destroye the shippes if they lye longe at anker. They are  
a cuber in lengch, and sumwhat moze: not passyng the quan-  
titye of a fynger in bygnesse. The Spanysh mariner cauleth  
this pestilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfoze whom befoze the great  
monsters of the sea coulde not feare, nowe fearyng this *Bro-  
ma*, beyng also sooze bered with the contrarye faule of the  
sea, directed his course with the Ocean towarde the west, and  
came first to the ryuer *Hiebra*, distant onely two leaques from  
the ryuer of *Beragua*, because that was commodious to har-  
bozowe great shippes. This region is named after the ryuer,  
and is cauled *Beragua* the lesse; Because bothe the ryuers are  
in the dominion of the kyng, whiche inhabitants the region of  
*Beragua*. But what chaunced vnto hym in this byage on the  
ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whyle  
therfoze *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hie-  
bra*, he sent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieutenante  
of *Hispaniola*, with the shyppe boates and thyselcoze and. viii.  
men

men to the ryuer of *Beragus*, where the king of the region be-  
 luge naked and painted after the maner of the countrey, came  
 towarde them with a great multitude of men wayrynge on  
 hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyvinge also  
 signes of peace. When he approached neerer, and entered com-  
 munication with owre men, certeyne of his gentlemen nea-  
 rest aboute his person, rememberinge the maiestie of a king,  
 and that it stood not with his honour to barge and brynge,  
 tooke a greatesoonne owre of the ryuer, w<sup>ch</sup> theynge an<sup>d</sup> rub-  
 brynge it beayn decently, & so put it vnder hym with humble  
 reuerence. The kyng thus spyring, seemed with signes & to-  
 kens to insinuate that it shuld be lawfull for owre men to sear-  
 che & viewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherefore, the  
 vi. day of the Moones of february, leauing his barres with cer-  
 teyne of his company, he wente by lande a foote from the  
 bankes of *Beragus* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, wher-  
 che he assidmich to be richer in golde then eyther *Kiebra* or *Bera-  
 gus*. For golde is engendred in al the ryuers of that land. In so  
 muche that amonge the rootes of the trees growynge by the  
 bankes of the ryuers, & amonge the stones left of the water,  
 also where so euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde  
 not passe the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde  
 the earthe taken owre therof, myxte with golde. Where vpon  
 he decremynd to fassen his foote there and to inhabyte.  
 Whiche theynge the people of the countrey perceauynge and  
 smellynge what inconueniencie and myschiete myght thereof  
 enselwe to their countrey if they shulde permitte straungers to  
 plant their habitation there, asembled a great army, and  
 with horrible owre crye a Tayled owre men (whd had nowe  
 begonne to buylde houses) soo desperately that they were  
 scarcely able to abyde the fyrst brynne. The naked barba-  
 rians at their fyrst approche, vied onely slynges and dartes:  
 But when they came neerer to hande strookes, they foughte  
 with their wooden swordes whiche they caule *us charis*, as  
 wee haue sayd befoze. A man woulde not thinke what great  
 malice and wrath was kyndred in their hartes agens owre  
 men: And with what desperate myndes they foughte for the  
 defense of their libertie whiche they more esteeme then lyfe  
 or ryche. For they were nowe to boyde of all feare, and  
 conuynge death, that they neyther feared longe bowes

how the king  
 of Beragua  
 entereyned  
 the lycetes  
 nauie.

The reue-  
 rence to their  
 kyng.

Solde in the  
 ryuer of Du-  
 raba.

Great plenty  
 of golde.

Slynges and  
 dartes.

Liberty more  
 esteemed than  
 ryches.

The thyrde detade.

or crozebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooste to be marueled) were any thyng discouraged at the terryble noyse of the gunnes shotte of from the Gypyes. They receyved once. But shortly after encreasynge their number, they returned more fiercelly then at the fyrste. They woold haue bpn contented to haue receyued owre men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabitours. The more instance that owre men were to remaine, so muche the greater multitude of bozherers flocked together dayly, disturbyng the both nyght & daye sumtymes on the one syde & sumtymes on the other. The Gypys lying at anchor neare unto the boze, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and retourne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much dysculty and danger, they came to the Island of *Lanica* lyenge on the south syde of *Hispniola* and *Cuba*, with their Gypyes as full of holes as sieues, and so eaten with woodymes, as though they had bpn bozed through with winnibles. The water entered so faste at the ryftes and holes, that if they had not with the paynefull labour of their handes emptied the same as faste, they were lyke to haue perished. Where as yet by this meane they arriued at *Lanica*, althoughe in maner halfe deade. But their calamitie ceased not here. For as fast as their Gypyes leaked, their strength diminished so that they were no longer able to keepe them from synkynge. By reason wherof, faulynge into the handes of the barbarians, and inclosed withowte hope of departure, they led their lyues for the space of tenn monethes among the naked people more myserably then ever dyd *Acbeides* amonge the gyantes cauled *Cidopes*: rather lyuing the beinge eyther contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that Islande: and that onely at such tymes as pleased the barbarians to gine them part of theirs. The deadly enmity and malice whiche these barbarous kinges beare one agaynst another, made greatly with owre men. For at suche tymes as they attempted warre agaynst their bozherers they woold sumtymes gyue owre men parte of their breade to ayde them. But howe myserable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onely with breade gotten by heggynge, yowre holynesste maye saye coniecture: Especially where all other accustomed foods is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, fleshe, butter, chiese, and mylke

The Spany-  
ardes are  
dyuyn to  
flight.

The Islande  
of Jamaica.

A myserable  
case.

milke, wherwith the stomakes of oþr people of Europe haue  
 euer byn noozifhed euen from their cradelles. Therefore as  
 necessyty is subiecte to no lawe, so doothe it enforce men to  
 attempt desperate aduentures. And those the soner, which  
 by a certeyne nobyltye of nature do no further esteeme lyfe  
 then it is ioynd with summe felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* ther-  
 foze, intendynge rather to proue what god woolde do with  
 hym and his companions in these extremities, then any lon-  
 ger to abide the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his steward  
 with two guydes of that Flannde whome he had hyred with  
 promysles of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter in-  
 to one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hispaniola*.  
 Beynge thus tossed on the sea two and fro from rocke too  
 rocke by reason of the shortnesse and narrownes of the ca-  
 noa, they arriued at the length at the laste corner of *Hispa-*  
*niola*, beynge distant from *Jamaica* fortye leagues. Here his  
 guydes departynge from hym, returned ageine to *Colonus* for  
 the rewardes which he had promysed them. But *Diegus Men-*  
*dez* wente on forwarde a foore vntyll he came to the citie call-  
 ed *Sanctus Dominicus* beynge the chiefe and heade citie of the  
 Flannde. The officers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beynge enfor-  
 med of the matter, appoynted hym two shypes wherwith  
 he returned to his maister and coompanions. As he founde  
 them, soo came they to *Hispaniola*, verie feeble and in maner  
 naked. What chaunced of them afterwarde, I knowe not  
 as yet. Lette vs nowe therfoze leaue these particulers, and  
 speake sumdhar moze of generalls. In al those tractes whi-  
 che the sayde here befoze to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the  
 Admyrall, bothe he hym selfe writeth, and all his coompa-  
 nyons of that vyage confesse, that the trees, herbes, and frui-  
 tes, ate flozpyng and greene all the hole yeare, and the ayer  
 so temperate and holesome, that of all his coompanye there  
 neuer fell one man sycke, nor yet were vered eyther with ex-  
 tremc coulde or heate for the space of fortye leagues from the  
 great hauch of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hiebra* and *Beragua*.  
 The inhabitants of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are be-  
 twyxe that and the sayde ryuers, applye not them selues to  
 the gatherynge of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the  
 yeare: And are very experte & cunnynge herein, as are oþre  
 wyners of *Syluer* and *Iren*. They knowe by longe experience

Necessytle  
 hath no lawe  
 howe farre  
 lyfe is to bee  
 esteemed.

A dange-  
 rous entera-  
 pise.

*Sanctus Domi-*  
*nicus.*

Landes found  
 by *Colonus*.

Temperate  
 regions and  
 holisome aier

*Cerabaro.*

*Hiebra.*

*Beragua.*

Experte my-  
 ners.

The thyrde decade.

In what places golde is mooste abundantly engendryed: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and suche as faule fro the montaynes: And also by the colour of the earthe and stones. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, for as muche as they neuer gather it excepte they vse certeyne religious expiations or pouerpynges, as to absteyn from women, and all kyndes of pleasures and delycate meates and drynkes, during all the tyme that their golden harned laste he. They suppose that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beastes do, and therefore honour none other thyng as god. yet doo they praye to the soonne, and honour it when it eclipseth. But lette vs nowe speake of the montaines and situation of these landes. From all the sea banks of these regions, extending great and hyghe mountaynes are seene towarde the South, yet reachyng by a continuall tracte from the East into the weste. By reason wherof I suppose that the two greete seas (wherof I haue spoken largely before) are deuided with these montaynes as it were with bulwarkes, leaste they shoulde soyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the sea cauled *Thyrdenum*, from the sea *Adriatyke*, which is nowe commonly cauled the goulfe of *Venes*. For whiche waye soo euer they sayled from the port cauled *Promontorium, S. Augustini* (whiche perteyneth to the *Portugales*) & prospecteth ageynste the sea *Atlantike* seven vnto *Vraba* and the haven *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes found hyther to westwarde, they had euer greete mountaynes in syght bothe nere hande and farr of, in all that longe rase. These mountaynes were in summe place, smooth, pleasaunt and fruefull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And sumwher, hygh, rologh, ful of rockes, and baten, as chauntyeth in the famous mountayne of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and suche othes of lyke byggenesse. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleys. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragus*, is thought to be hygher then the cloudes, in so much that (as they saye) the tops of them can seldome bee seene for the multitude of thicke cloudes which are beneath the same. *Colonus* the Admirall the fyrste spyder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the montaynes of *Beragus* are moze then fiftie myles in hyghth. He saye

A godly nature in golde.

Golde harnest.

hyghe and greete mountaynes.

*Tyrhenum* is nowe cauled *Turcane*.

*Cap. S. Augustini*.

*Vraba*.

*Cerabaro*, fruitful mountaynes.

*Apennini* are mountaynes which diuide *Italy* into two partes.

*Beragus*.

The mountaynes of *Beragus* higher then the cloudes.

Mountaynes of fiftie miles hyghth.

Capth fittthermore that in the same region at the rotes of the mountaynes the way is open to the south sea, and comparably it as it were betwene Venice and Genua, or Ianus as the Venetians wyl haue it cauled, whiche fable that theyr citie was buylded of Ianus. Be a firmeth also that this lande reacheth forth towarde the south: And that from hense it taketh the begynnyng of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owre of the narrowe thpygh of Italy, we see the large and mayne landes of Fraunce, Germanye, and Spayne, to the Sacmatians and Scythians, euen vnto the mountaynes and rockes of Riphea and the frozen sea, and embrace therewith as with a continuall bonde, all Tracia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of Malis and Hellespontos southwarde, and the sea Euxinus and the myrysthes of Meotis in scythia northwarde. The Admirall suppolethe, that on the lefte hande in saylyng towards the weste, this lande is ioynd to India beyonde the ryuer of Ganges: And that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended to the frozen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole: So that both the seas (that is to meane that south sea which we sayde to bee founde by Vascus, and owre Ocean) shulde ioyne and meete in the corners of that land: And that the waters of these seas doo not onely inclose and compasse the same without diuision as Europe is inclosed with the seas of Hellespontos and Tanais, with the frozen Ocean & owre sea of Tyrrhenum with the Spanysh seas. But in my opynion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the weste, doth signifie and teete that the sayde two seas shulde not so ioyne togither: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme landes towarde the North, as we haue sayde before. It shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the length hereof. Let vs nowe therfore speake sumwhat of the breadth of the same, We haue made mention before howe the south sea is diuided by narrowe lymities from owre Ocean, as it was proued by the experience of Vascus Nunnex and his companions which first made open the way thither. But as dyuersly as the mountaynes of owre Alpes in Europe are sumwher narrowe and in some place brode, euen so by the lyke prouidence of nature, this lande in some parte thereof reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places constricted with narrowe lymities  
as from

Janus others  
wyse cauled  
Japhet, the  
son of Noe.

1588  
1589  
1590  
1591  
1592  
1593  
1594  
1595  
1596  
1597  
1598  
1599  
1600

Italy is lyke  
vnto a legge  
in the sea, &  
the mountaynes  
of the Alpes, are in  
the thyshe  
therof.

Colonus his  
opinion of  
the supposed  
Continent.

By this con-  
ecture, the  
way shuld be  
open to Ca-  
thay by the  
hyperboreans

Looke the  
ingation of  
Cabore. decs.  
iii lib. vi.

The breadth  
of the lande

## The thyrd decade.

The regions  
of *Uraba* and  
*Beragua*.

The greate  
riuer *Marag-*  
*nonus*.

The greate  
riuer *Daba-*  
*ba*, or *sancti*  
*Johannis*.

The ryuers  
haue their in-  
crease from  
the sprynges  
of the moun-  
taynes.

The ryuer of  
*Nilus* in *E-*  
*gypte*.

marshes  
and desolate  
wayes.

A superstiti-  
ous opinion  
of the originall  
of *Dabaiba*.

res from sea to sea, with halleyes also in some places, wher-  
by men may passe from the one syde to the other. Where we  
haue descrybed the regions of *Uraba* and *Beragua* to bee situ-  
ate, these seas are diuided by smaule distaunce. Per ought  
we to thynke the region which the great ryuer of *Marag-*  
*nonus* runneth throughe, to bee very large if we shall graunt  
to bee a ryuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the  
same ought to perswade vs. For in suche narrowe caues of  
the earth, there can bee no swalowinge goulkes of such byg-  
nesse as to receaue or nooyshe so great abundance of water.  
The lyke is also to bee suppoed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba*  
which we sayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of *Uraba*  
in some place of fortie fathomes depth, and sumwhere fiftie:  
Also thre myles in breadth, and so to faule into the sea. We  
must needes graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whi-  
che the ryuer passeth from the hyghe mountaynes of *Dabaiba*  
from the East and not from the west. They say that this ry-  
uer consisteth and taketh his encrease of foure other ryuers  
fauynge from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Wyre men caule  
this ryuer *Flumen, s. Iohannis*. They say also that from hense it  
fauleth into the goulfe of *Uraba* by seuen mouthes as doothe  
the ryuer of *Nilus* into the sea of *Egypte*. Lykewylse that in  
the same region of *Uraba* there are in some places narrowe  
streightes not passynge fyftene leaques: and the same to bee  
saluage and without any passage by reason of dyuers ma-  
rythes and desolate wayes, which the Latines caule *Lamas*:  
But the Spanyardes accordynge to theyr varietie, caule the  
*Tremedales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, and *Zabondaderos*. But  
before we passe any further, it shall not bee greatly from ovr  
purpose to declare from whence these mountaynes of *Dabaiba*  
haue theyr name accordynge vnto chautiquities of thynhabi-  
tantes. They saye therefore that *Dabaiba* was a woman of  
greate magnanimitie and wylsedomme emonge theyr predices:  
lours in owlde tyme: whom in her lyfe, all thynhabitantes  
of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and beinge deade  
gaue her diuine honour and named the regio after her name,  
beleuyng that shee sendeth thunder and lghnyng to de-  
stroy the frutes of the earth yf shee bee angered, and to send  
plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hath byr  
perswaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretense of  
religion

religion to thintent that they might enioye suche gyftes and offerings as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore that the maryshes of the narrowe lande wherof we haue spoken, byynge foorth great plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, hartes, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when so euer they take any iorney towards the south, they go owte of the way towards the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neare vnto those perelous fenues or maryshes. Some thinke that there is a valley lpyng that way that the ryuer runneth which owte men caule *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to *Nicuesa* and his company) and not far distant from the haven *Cerabaro* whiche diuideth those mountaynes towards the south. But let vs nowe synthe this booke with a fewe other thynges woorthy to bee noted. They say therefoze that on the ryght hande and lefte hande frome *Dariens*, there are twentie ryuers in all the whiche, greate plentie of golde is founde. Beinge demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of gold from thense, they answered that they lacked myners: And that the men whiche they tooke with them from Spayne thither, were not accustomed to labour, but for the moste parte brought by in the barres. This lande seemeth also to promise many precious stones. For besyde those whiche I sayde to bee founde neare vnto *Caris* and *Sankte Marths*, one *Andreas Moralis* a pylot (who had rauayled those coastes with *Iohannes de la Costa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diamonde which he bought of a naked younge man in the region of *Cumana* in the prouince of *Paria*. This stone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans middell synger, and as bygge as the fyrst ioynte of the thumme: beinge also paynted on euery syde, consistynge of eyght squares perfectly formed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in anuttles and hammers, and brake the teethe of sples, the stone remaynyng unpercythed. The younge man of *Cumana*, wore this stone aboute his necke emonge other riches, and soulede it to *Andreas Moralis* for spue of our colicrect stones made of glasse of dyuers colours wherewith the ignorant younge man was greatly deleyted. They founde also certeyne topases on the hoze, But the estimation of golde was so

dragons and crocodiles in the marshes.

The haven Cerabaro.

Twentie golden ryuers.

Precious stones.

a precious diamonde of ercedynge bynes.

Topases.

farrs

The Spany-  
erdes con-  
temne effem-  
inate pleasures

face entered into the heades of dore men, that they had no regarde to stones. Also the most part of the Spanyardes, do lawogh them to scoine which vse to weare many stones: spect ally such as are common: Judginge it to bee an effeminate thynge, and moze meete for women then men. The noble me onely when they celebrate solene mariages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheyns of gold byser with precious stones, and vie saye apparell of sylke embrothered with golde iner mire with pearles and precious stones: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no lesse effeminate for men to smell of the sweete saouours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with sum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they smell the sa uour of muske or *Castoreum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceiue the tree to bee fruitfull, and by one sylke taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that sylke is ingen- dered in the same, euen so, by a lyttel gold, and by one stone, we ought to consyder that this lande bringeth forth the great plentie of golde and precious stones. What they haue found in the porte of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Caria* when the hole nauye passed therby vnder the gouernaunce of *Petrus A- rias* and his company with certyne other of the kynge of *spycers*, I haue sufficiently declared in his plate. To be shorte therefore, all thynge do so flourish, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the laste are euer better then the fyrste. And surely to declare my opinion herin, what so euer hath here a fore byn discovered by the famous trauayles of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with such other whs the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, seemeth but lyttell and obscure if it be compared to the Spanyardes victorius laboures.

Sweete sa-  
uours.

A similitude  
prouing great  
plentie of  
Golde & preci-  
ous stones.  
The haue of  
Sancta War-  
tha.  
*Caria*.

The heroical  
factes of the  
Spanyardes.

This I byd you holynes fare well, desyringe you to cert-  
eifie me howe you lyke these fyrste frutes of the *Oceane*,  
that being encouraged with youre exhortations,

I maye the gladlyer and with lesse  
tediousnesse write suche  
thynge as shall  
chaunce  
heraf  
etc.

## The fyfte booke of the thirde decade.



Al suche luyunge creatures as vnder the cercle of the moone bringe forth any thyng, are accustomed by thynstincte of nature as soone as they are deliuered of their byrthe, eyther to close vpp the matrice, or at the leaste to bee quyet for a space. But oovre mooste frutefull Ocean and newe woorld, engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wher

by men of great wytte, and especially suche as are studypous of newe and meruelous thynges, may haue sumwhat at hand wherwith to feede their myndes. If yowre holynes do a ke to what purpose is al this, ye shal vnderstand, that I had scarcely synished the historpe of suche thynges as chaunced to Vascus Nunnex and his coompanye in their vyage to the fourthe sea, when suddenly there came newe letters from Petrus Arias the newe gouernour whom the kyng had appoynted the yeaere before with an army of men and a nauye of shippes to sayle to these newe landes. He signifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and coompany, arriued all safelpe.

Furthermore, Iohannes Cabedus (whome yowre holynes at the requeste of the mooste catholyke kyng had created bysshoppe of that prouynce of Dariena) and thre other of the chiefe offycers ioined in comission to be his allysaunce, as Alfonso de Ponte, Diegus Marques, and Iohannes de Tauris, confyrmied the same letters and subscribed them with their names. The nauygation therfoze of Petrus Arias, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yeaere of Christe. 1514. he hoysed vpp his sayles in the towne of saincte Lucar de Barrameda, lytuante in the mouthe of the rpuer Betis, whiche the Spaniards nowe caule Guadalchebir. The seven Ilandes of Canaria are about foure hundred myles distant from the place where this riuier fauleth into the sea. Summe thinke that these are the Ilandes which the oulde wyters did caule the Fortunate Ilandes. But other thinke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes, are these. The two whiche appere byrthe in syght, are named Lanzelota and Fortisuentura. On the backehalte of these, lyeth Magna Canaria. Or Gran Canaria. Beyond that is Tenerife: and Gomera sumwhat towarde the north frome that.

¶¶

Palma

The bysshop  
of Dariena.The nauigati  
on of Petrus  
Arias.

Saint Lucar.

The Iland of  
Canarie.

The thyrdē decade.

*Palm* and *Ferrea*, lye behynde as it were a bulwarke to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfoze, arrived at *Gomera* the eyghtē dāye after his departure, with a nauye of. xlii. shippes and a. iii. and foue hundred men, althoughe there were onely a thousand and two hundred assigned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayde furthermoze that he lette behynd hym moze then two thousande herye penyue and syghyng that they also myght not be receaued, proferynge them selues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xvi. dayes in *Gomera* to thintente to make prouysyon of fuell and freshe water: But chiefly to repayre his shippes beyngē soze hroled with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shippe whiche had losse the rudder. For these Ilandes are a commodious restinge place for all suche as intende to attempte any nauygations in that mayne sea. Departynge from hense in the nones of *Maye*, he sawe no moze lande butyll the thirde dāye of *June*, at the whiche he arrived at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Caribales*, being distant from *Gomera* aboute eyght hundred leaques. Here he remained foure dayes, makinge newe prouision of frehe water and fuell, durynge whiche tyme he sawe no man nor yet any stepes of men; But founde plentie of sea crabbes and greate lizards. From hense he sayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (o<sup>r</sup> therwoyle cauled *Madaniño*) *Guadalupea*, and *Galanta* (otherwoyle cauled *Sakana*) of all whiche, we haue spoken in the fyrste decade. He passed also throughe the sea of herbes o<sup>r</sup> weedes, continyng a long tracte. Yet nother he, nor *Colonus* the *Admirall* (who fyrste founde these Ilandes and sayled throughe this sea of weedes) haue declared anye reason howe these weedes shoulde come. Summe thynke the sea too be verye muddye there, and that these weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and so beyngē loosed, to ascende to the vppermooste parte of the water, as wee see oftentymes chaunce in certeyne stonyngē pooles, and sumtymes also in greate ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendered there, but to bee heauen from certeyne rockes by the violence of the water in tempestes. And thus they leaue the matter indowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they stycke faste and gyue place to the shippes, o<sup>r</sup> wander loose vppon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwoyle they shulde bee dryuēt together

Prouision of  
freshe water  
and fuell.

The Iland of  
*Dominica*.

*Guadalupea*,  
otherwoyle  
cauled *Caru-*  
*cueria*, o<sup>r</sup> *Que-*  
*raquiera*.

The sea of  
herbes.

together on heapes by thympullsion of the wyppes euen as a beasome gathereth the sweepnges of a house, and shulde also lette the course of the wyppes. The fourth day after that he departed from *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes covered with snowe (wherof we haue spoken in the seconde decade) appered vnto hym. They saye that there the seas runne as wyftely towarde the weste, as it were a ryuer faulping from the toppes of hyghe montaynes: Although they sayled not directly toward the west, but inclined sumwhat to the south. From these montaynes fauleth the ryuer of *Saira*, famous by the slaughter of dyore men at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes as we haue sayde befoze. Ipketwyle many other sayre ryuers haue their originall from the same montaynes. This prouynce (in the whiche is, also the regydon of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which dyore men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof, thynhabitanes caule *Saturma*. The porthe of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaines covered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales*; for it is at the rootes of the same montaines. But the haven of *Carthago*, is more westewarde aboute fyfte leagues. He writeth marueylous thynges of the haven of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately fro thēle: Of the which younge *Vesputius* is one to whō *Americus Vesputius* his vnclē (being a Flozētine bozne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maister in the knowlege, of his carde, his compaite, and the eleuation of the pole starre with all that pertaineth thereto. This younge *Vesputius* was assigned by the kyng to be one of the maisters of the gouernours wyppē, bicause he was cunninge in iudgyng the degrees of the eleuation of the pole starre by the quadzante. For the charge of gouernynge the rudder, was chiefly committed to one *Iohannes Serranus* a Spaniarde, who had oftentymes ouer runne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my bette familiar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whole company I take great pleasure, and therefore vse hym oftentymes for my gesse. He hath also made many wyages into these coastes, and diligently noted suche thynges as he hath seene. *Petrus Arlis* therefore writeth, and he confyrmeth the same; that thynhabitanes of these regy-

f. ii.

ons tooke

These mountaynes are cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neua*, de cide. li. liber. i. r. ii. The wyfte course of the sea towarde the west. The ryuer *Saira*. *Caramairi*. *Carthago*. *Saturma*.

mountaynes covered with snowe.

*Americus Vesputius*.

## The thyrde decade.

The stoutnes  
of the Barba-  
rians.

The Caniba-  
les feyght in  
the water.

The vse of  
gunnes.

The genera-  
tion of thun-  
der and lyght-  
nynges.

Meteora.

Benemous  
arrowes

Thus tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as ap-  
peared by the desperate fiercenes and crueltie which they of-  
ten tymes shewed to oware men when they passed by their coas-  
tes. Suche stoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallye  
engendered in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not  
to a Tayle oware hole nauy & to forbyd them to coome a land.  
They feyght with benemous arrowes as we haue sayde be-  
fore. Perceraynge that oware men contempned their threat-  
nynges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen bype to the  
brestes, nothyng fearynge epher the bygnes or multitude  
of oware shyppes, but ceased not continually beinge thus in  
the water, to cast dartes and shure their benemous arrowes  
as thicke as hayle: In so muche that oware men had bynne  
in great daunger if they had not byn defended by the cages  
or paulles of the shyppes and their targettes. yet were two  
of them wounded whiche died shortly after. But this con-  
flicte continued so sharpe, that at the length oware men were  
enforced to shute of their byggest pieces of ordinaunce with  
hayle hotte: At the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof the  
barbarians beyng soze discomfited and shaken with feare,  
thynkyng the same to be thunder and lyghenyng, tourned  
their backes and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thun-  
der bycause these regyons are ofentymes vexed with thun-  
der and lyghtnyng by reason of the hyghe montaynes and  
nearenesse of the same to the region of the ayer wherin such  
fierie tempestes are engendered whiche the philosophers caule  
*Meteora*. And all be it that oware men had nowe dyuert their  
enemyes to flyght, and sawe them disparted and oware of or-  
der, yet dowted they and were of dyuers opinions whether  
they shulde pursue them or not. On the one parte, some pic-  
ked them forwarde, and on the other syde feare caused them  
to caste many perelles, especially consydeyng the benemous  
arrowes whiche these barbarians canne direct so certeynely.  
To departe from them with a dype foote (as saithe the pro-  
uerbe) with so great a nauye and suche an armye, they repu-  
ted it as a thyng greatly soundyng to their reproche and  
dishonour. At the length therfore some ouercommyng feare,  
they pursued them and came to land with their shippe boates.  
The gouernoure of the nauie, and also *Vesputius* doo wypte,  
that the haven is no lesse then thre leagues in compasse, be-  
ing



## The thyrd decade,

Another kind  
of amber is  
founde in  
whales.

Sold & bra-  
sile.

Marchassites  
are flowers  
of metals, by  
the colours  
wherof, the  
kyndes of me-  
tals are kno-  
wen.

These locu-  
stes burne  
the come  
with toching  
and deuoure  
the residewe  
they are in  
India of .iii.  
foote length.  
The sayre re-  
gion of Cara-  
mari.

Fruiteful mon-  
taynes.

Gardens.  
In iudres are  
nowe cauled  
Lumbardes,  
and Ietrusket,  
Tuscans.

Dyeters other do affirme that in the houses of Sume of the Ca-  
nibales of these regions, they found the lyke precious stones  
set in golde and inclosed in the tapstry or arras (if it may soo  
bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houses. The same  
lande byngeth forth also many wooddes of brasile trees &  
great plentie of golde. In so much that in maner in al places  
they founde on the sea bankes and on the shoores, certeyne  
marchalites in token of golde. *Fernandus Ouiedus* declarerh fur-  
thermore that in a certeyne region cauled *Zenu*, lyinge foure  
score and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eastwarde, they exercyse  
a straunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houses of the  
inhabitanes, they founde greate cheries and baskets made  
of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that pur-  
pose, beinge all full of gretehoppers, gyllles, crabbes, or  
crefpythes: snayles also, and locustes whiche destrowe the  
fieldes of cozne, all well dzyed and salted. Beinge demaun-  
ded why they reserued such a multitude of these beastes, they  
answered that they keppe them to bee soulede to theyr bozhe-  
vers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the  
exchange of these precious byrdes and salted spysches, they re-  
ceaued of them certeyne strange thynges wherin partely they  
take pleasure, and partly vse them for theyr necessary affay-  
ers. These people dwell not togpyther, but scattered here and  
there. The inhabitantes of *Caramari*, seeme to dwell in an earth-  
ly Paradise, theyr region is so fayre and frutefull, withowt  
outragious heate or sharpe coulde, with lyttle difference of  
the length of day and nyght throughtowt all the yeare. Af-  
ter that owre men had thus dzyen the barbarians to fyght,  
they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth & thre  
in length, extendyng to certeyne fruteful mountaynes ful of  
grasse, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof, lye two o-  
ther valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, throught  
eether of the which runneth a fayre ryuer, whercof the ryuer  
of *Gaira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo  
name. In these valleys they founde manye fayre gardeyns  
and pleasaunte fyeldes watered with trenches distributed in  
marueylous order, with no lesse arte then owre Insulubrians  
and Ietrurians vse to water theyr fyeldes. Theyr common  
meate, is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with suche other rootes  
and frutes of trees, and also suche spysche as they vse in the  
Ilandes

Ilandes and other regions of these prouinces. They eat  
mans flesh: but seldome, bycaule they meete not oftentymes  
with stranglers, except they goo forth of theyr owne domi-  
nions with a mayne army of purpose to hunt for men, when  
theyr rauenyng appetite pricketh them forwarde. For they  
absteyne from them selues, and eat none but suche as they  
take in the warres or otherwyle by chaunce. But suerly it  
is a miserable thynge to heare howe many myziades of men  
these fylthy and vnnaturall deuourers of mans flesh haue  
consumed, and lefte thousandes of moste fayre and frutfull  
Ilandes and regions desolate withowte menne: By reason  
wherof oure men founde so many Ilandes whiche for theyr  
fayrenesse and frutefulness myght seeme to bee certeyne earth-  
ly Paradyses, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby  
yowre holynesse may consider howe pernicious a kynde of  
men this is. We haue sayde befoze that the Ilande named  
*Sancti Iohannis* (which thynhabitantes caule *Burichena*) is nexte to  
*Hispaniola*. It is sayde that onely the *Canibales* which dwel-  
le in the other Ilandes nere about this, as in the Ilande cau-  
led *Haybay* or *Sancti Crucis*, and in *Guadalupes* (otherwise cauled  
*Queraquieta*, or *Caruciera*) haue in oure tyme vpolentely taken  
owte of the sayde Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, moze then fyue  
thousande men to bee eaten. But let it suffice thus much to  
haue wandered by these monstrous bludsuckers. We wyll  
nowe therfoze speake sumewhat of the rootes wherof they  
make theyr breade, forasmuch as the same shall hereafter bee  
foode to Christian men in steede of breade made of wheate,  
and in the steade of rabythe with such other rootes as they  
haue byn accustomed to eat in Europe. We haue oftentymes  
sayde befoze that *Iucca* is a roote wherof the beste and moste  
delicare breade is made bothe in the firme lande of these regi-  
ons, and also in the Ilandes. But howe it is tyllid or hui-  
banded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is,  
I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to  
plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knyg deape,  
and raffe a heape of the earth taken owte of the same, fasty-  
nyng it lyke a square hedde of nyne foote breadth on euery  
syde, settyng twelue trunckes of these rootes (beinge about  
a foote and a halfe longe a peece) in euery of the sayd heddes  
conteynyng thye rootes of a syde, so layde a slope, that the  
endes

Many coun-  
treys leste be  
solate by the  
fiercenes of  
the *Caniba-*  
*les*.  
One myziade  
is ten thou-  
sande.

A miserable  
hearyng.

Breade of  
rootes.

The maner  
of plantyng  
the roote *Juc-*  
*ca*.

## The thyrd decade.

Earth turned  
into rootes.

howe breade  
is made of  
rootes.

A strange  
sprunge.

*Caxabbi,*

Ages and  
*Battata.*

*Panicum* is a  
grayne some-  
what lyke it  
The *Italians*  
caule it *Penic-*  
*les.*

endes of them toyne in maner together in the center of myd-  
dest of the bedde within the grounde. Out of the topnes of  
the rootes and spaces betwene the same, spryng the toppes  
and blades of newe rootes, which by litle and litle increa-  
sprunge, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in  
the byrnone, and oftentimes as bygge as the thygh: So that  
by the tyme of theyr full rypnes, in maner all the earthe of  
the heape, is converted into rootes. But they say that these  
rootes are not ripe in lesse tyme then a yeare & a halfe: And  
that the longer they are suffered to growe euen vntyll twoo  
yeares complete, they are so muche the better and more per-  
fecte to make breade therof. When they are taken forth of  
the earth, they scrape them and sylle the with certeyne sharpe  
stones scrupnge for the same purpose: And thus layinge the  
betwene two great stones, or puttyng them in a sacke made  
of the stalkes of certeyne towgh herbes and smaule reedes,  
they presse them (as we do cheese or crabbes to drawe owte  
the iuse thereof) and so let them drye a daye before they eate  
them. The iuse or lyquoure, they cast away: for (as we haue  
sayde) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. yet is the iuse of  
suche as growe in the firme lande, holsome if it bee sodde, as  
is the whey of owre mylke. They saye that there are manye  
kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof some are moze pleasaunte and  
delycate then the other, and are therefore reserved as it were  
to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the  
gentlemen eate of the meauer sorte, and the common people  
of the basest. The fynest they caule *Caxabbi*, which they make  
rounde lyke cakes in certeyne presses before they seeth it or  
bake it. They saye furthermoze that there are lykewylse dy-  
uers kynes of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battata*. But they vse  
these rather as frutes and dyshes of seruice, then to make  
breade therof, as we vse rapes, radysches, mustheroms, na-  
uies, persennepes, and such lyke. In this case, they mooste  
especially esteeme the best kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleasant  
tast and tendernes farre exceedeth owre mustheromes. It shal  
suffice to haue sayde thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe  
therfoze speake of an other kynde of theyr breade. We decla-  
red before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulse muche  
lyke vnto *Panicum*, but with sumwhat bygger graines, which  
they beate into meale vppon certeyne greafe hollowe stones  
with

with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Tucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is sowne thise a yeare, so that the fructifullnes of the grounde may beare it by reason of the equalitie of the tyme, whereof wee haue spoken sufficiently befoze. In these regions they founde also the graine of *Maizium*, and sundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligently planted and well husbanded. The waye betwene the regions of *Caramairi* and *saturna*, is fayre, brode, and ryghte foorth. They founde here also sundrye kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe ferche and keepe frethe water. Lykewise sundry kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drynkyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dysshes, and platters artisyfially made.

When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that thynhabitantes shulde eyther obey the Christian kyng and embrace othere religion, or elles to depart owt of their countrey, they answered with benemous arrowes. In this skymyshe, othere men tooke summe of theym: whereof clothyng the moste parte in faire apparell, they sente them ageyne to their owne company: But leadyng the resydue to the shippes to thynrent to shewe them the poure and magnyfyccence of the christians that they myght declare the same to their companions, therby to wyne their fauour, they appareled them lyke wyse and sente them after their felowes.

They affyrme that in all the ryuers of these coastes, they sawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houses good store of hartes fleshe and bores fleshe wherwith they fedde them selues dylcarely.

They also, haue greate plentie of sundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof they bynge vypp many in their houses, summe for necessarye foode, and other for dainty dysshes as we do hennes and partriches. Othere men hereby coniecture that the ayer of these regions is hearye hollowe, for as muche as they pynge all nyghte vnder the skyment on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reason of any noysome hamoure or vapoure procedyng from the earthe, ayer, or water. Othere men furthermoze, founde there many great bothomes of golde, samppne cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers wherof they make them selues cresses and plu-

the meaner the  
the equal  
length of day  
and nyght  
which is con-  
tinually in re-  
gions vnder  
the Equinoce-  
tial lyne.

*Maizium*  
Earth of dy-  
uers colours,

Golde in  
ryuers.  
hartes and  
bores.  
Foules.

Hollowe ayer

Golde samppne  
cotton,  
Fethers,

The thyerde decade.

Bowes and  
arrowes.

Deade bo-  
dies referued

Ouches of la-  
ton.

Sonzalus Qui-  
edus, sayth  
that they gilt  
maruelously  
with the iuse  
of a certeyne  
herbe.  
whyte mar-  
ble.

The great ry-  
uer Maragno-  
nus. This  
ioyneth with  
the myghty  
ryuer cauled  
Flumen Ama-  
zonum, found  
of late.

Clokes of  
fethers.

mes after the maner of owre men of armes : also certeine clo-  
kes whiche they esteeme as mooste curly ornaments. They  
founde lykewyse an innumerable multitude of bowes and ar-  
rowes. The inhabitants also of these regions, in summe places  
ble to burne the carckes of their pynces when theye are  
deade, and to reserue their bones buried with spyces in cer-  
teyne hylles. In other places, they onely dye them and  
imbaume them with spyces and sweete gummes, and soo re-  
serue them in sepulchers in their owne houses. Somewhere  
also, they dye them, spycce them, adoune them with precy-  
ous icwells and ouches, and so reuerently place them in cer-  
teyne tabernacles made for the same purpose in their owne  
palayces. When owre men had many of their tabellies, bras-  
lettes, collers, and suche other ouches (whiche they caule  
Guanines) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of  
golde: wherby they suppose that they haue bin led to exchaunge  
their wares with summe craftie straungers whiche broughte  
thē those counterfect ouches to defraude them of their golde.  
For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate vntyll they  
came to the meltynge. Furthermoze, certayne of owre buyl-  
ders wanderynge a lyttell way from the sea coastes, chaunc-  
ced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they  
thynke that in tyme paste summe straungers haue coome too  
those landes, whiche haue dygged marble oute of the moun-  
taines, and lefte those fragmentes on the plaine. There owre  
men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descenderh frome the  
montaynes covered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra  
Neuata*: And the same to bee encreased by many other ryuers  
whiche faule into it throughtout all the lowe and waterye  
regions by the whiche it runneth with so longe a tracte from  
the sayde montaynes into the sea: And this to bee the cause  
of the greatnesse therof. These thynges beynge thus brought  
to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe  
a retraite: Wherbypon they whiche were sente to lande (be-  
ynge fyue hundred in number) makynge a great shoute for  
ioye of their victory, sette them selues in order of battayle,  
and so keping their array, returned to the Shippes laden with  
spoyle of those prouinces, and bynynge in souldiers clokes  
of fethers, with faire plumes and crestes of variable colours.  
In this meane tyme hauninge repaired their Shippes and fur-  
nyshed

nysshed the same with all necessaries, they loosed anker the xvi. daue of the Calendes of July, directyng their course to the hauen of *Carthagena*, in the whiche viage they destroyed and wasted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lpyng in the wyape, accorbyng as they were commaunded by the kynge. But the swifte course of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the governours shyppe, and all the other, althoughe they made their boffe that they perfectly knewe the nature therof. For they asseyne that in one night they were caried forty leaques beyonde their estimation,

The swifte course of the water. R. leaques in one nyght.

## The fyre booke of the thirde Decade.



Ere muste we sumwhat digresse from cosmography, and make a philosophicall discours to searche the secrete causes of nature. For wheras they al asseyne with on consent, that the sea runneth there from the East to the weste as swyftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountaynes, I thoughte it not good to leete so great a matter shyppe vntou-

ched. The whiche while I consyder, I am drawn into no smaule ambyguite and doute, whether those waters haue their course whiche flowe with so coneynuall a tracte in circuit from the Easte, as thowghe they fledde to the west neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weste therby any whytte the moze fylled, nor the Easte emptied. If we shall saye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuye thynges) and assigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as summe asseyne) what centre shall we appointe to bee able to receaue so great aboundaunce of water? Or what circumference shall be founde weate? They whiche haue searched thoe coastes, haue yet founde no lykely reason to be trewe. Many thynke that there shoulde bee certeyne large straighthes or enterances in the corner of that great lande whiche we described to bee eyght tymes bygger then *Italpe*, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they suppose that summe straghtes shoulde passe through the same lpyng on the weste syde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the sayde straghtes shoulde walowe by those waters, and so conuey the same into the weste

B g, ii,

and

Sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so swyfte course from the East into the west.

The equinoctiall all lyne. Why all waters moue toward the south or Equinoctiall, reade *Cardanus de subtilit. liber. ii. de Elementis. Straghtes.*

## The thyrde decade.

As by the  
strayght of  
Magellanus.  
The north  
landes.

The frozen  
sea.

Sebastian  
Cabor.

The Veneti-  
ans.  
The viage of  
Sebastian Ca-  
bor from Eng-  
lande to the  
frozen sea.  
Frost in the  
moneth of  
July.

Return Her-  
culeum, diti-  
deth Spayne  
& the woodes  
and is nowe  
cauled the  
strayghtes  
of warrok.  
B: allas, or  
Terra Bicoalles-  
rum.

and from thence ageyn into owre Easte Ocean, or north seas  
as summe thynke. Other wyll, that the goulfe of that great  
lande bee closed vpp: and the land to reache farre towarde  
the northe on the backe syde of Cuba: so that it embrace the  
northe landes whiche the frozen sea encompasseth vnder the  
northe pole: And that all the lande of those coastes, shoulde  
ioyne togyther as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture  
that those waters shoulde bee turned aboute by the obiecte or  
resystaunce of that lande so bendynge towarde the north, as  
we see the waters, tourned aboute in the crooked bankes of  
certeyne ryuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they  
also whiche haue searched the frozen sea, and sayled frome  
thence into the weste, do lykelyse asfyrme that those northe  
seas flowe continually towarde the weste, although nothing  
so swifely. These northe seas haue byn searched by one Se-  
bastian Cabot a Venetian boine, whom beinge yet but in ma-  
ner an infante, his parentes carped with them into Englande  
hauyng occasion to resozte thither for trade of marchandies,  
as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the  
worlde vnsearched to obteyne richesse. He therfore furni-  
shed two shippes in England at his owne charges: And fyrst  
with thre hundred men, directed his course so farre toward  
the northe pole, that euen in the moneth of July he founde  
monstrous heapes of yse swymning on the sea, and in maner  
continuall day lyght. yet sawe he the lande in that tracte,  
free from yse, whiche had byn molten by heate of the sunne.  
Thus sepyng suche heapes of yse before hym he was enforced  
to tourne his sayles and folowe the weste, so coastynge wyll  
by the shyre, that he was thereby broughte so farre into the  
south by reason of the lande bendynge so muche southward  
that it was there almoste equall in latitude with the sea caule-  
led Fretum Herculeum, hauynge the north pole eleuate in maner  
in the same degree. He sayled lykewise in this tracte so farre  
toward the weste, that he had the ylande of Cuba his left  
hande in maner in the same degree of langitude. As he tra-  
ueyled by the coastes of this greate lande (whiche he named  
Bicoalles) he sayth that he founde the true course of the waters  
toward the west, but the same to vanne in re softely and gen-  
tely then the swifte waters whiche the Spanyardes founde  
in their navigations southward.

Wherfore

Wherefore, it is not onely more lyke to bee trewe, but ought also of necessitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hether to unbeknowne, there shulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters shulde thus continually passe from the East into the weste: which waters I suppose to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vncertaine mouynge and impulsion of the heauens: and not to bee swallowed by and cast owte ageyne by the breathynge of Demogorgon as some haue imagined because they see the seas by increase and decrease, to flowe and reflowe. Sebastian Cabot him selfe, named those landes *Baccallaos*, because that in the seas therabout he founde so great multitudes of certeyne bigge fyshes much lyke vnto tunnes (which thynhabitances caule *Baccallaos*) that they sumtymes stayed his shippes. He founde also the people of those regions couered with beastes skynnes: yet not without thuse of reason.

He saythe also that there is greate plentie of beares in those regions, whiche vse to cate fyshes. For plungeinge theym selues into the water where they perceue a multitude of these fyshes to lye, they fasten theyr clawes in theyr scales, and so drawe them to lande and cate them. So that (as he sayth) the beares beinge thus satisfied with fyshes, are not wayson to men. He declareth further, that in many places of these regions, he sawe great plentie of lator amonge thynhabitantes. Cabot is my very frende, whom I vse samplierly, and de lyte to haue hym sumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne house. For beinge cauled owte of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kynge of Castile after the death of Henry kynge of Englande the seuenth of that name, he was made one of owre counsaile and assistance as touchynge the a Raynes of the newe Indies, lookynge dayely for shippes to bee furnished for hym to discover this hyd secrete of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yeare next folowynge, beinge the yeare of Christ M. D. XXI. What shall succede, yowre holynes shalbe aduertised by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Some of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrst fynder of the lande of *Baccallaos*: And affirme that he went not so farre westwarde. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of the goulfes & wayghes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs nowe therefore

The mouynge of heuen causeth the sea to moue. Demogorgon is the spirite of the earth.

People couered with beastes skyns howe beares take and cate fyshes of the sea.

perhappes this lator is copper which holdeth gold. For lator hath no myne, and is an artificer all metal and not natural. Cabot cauled owte of Englande into Spayne. The Second vyage of Cabot.

returne

## The thyrd decade.

The Ilandes  
of the Cany-  
bales.

The Ilande  
Fortis.  
Salte

A straunge  
thyng.

How Petrus  
Arias with  
the kynges  
navy arrived  
at Dariena.

Howe Uas-  
chus recea-  
ued the new  
gouernour.

Whye these  
regions are  
cauled pro-  
uinces.

returne to the Spanparden. At this tyme, they let passe the hauch of *Carthago* vntouchd, with all the Ilandes of the *Cannibales* there aboute, whiche they named *Insulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leapynge also behynde theyr backs, all the region of *Caramairi*. Heare by reason of a looden tempeste, they were caste vppon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyftrie leagues distant from the entereance of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houses of th inhabitants, many baskets made of certeyne greate sea reedes, ful of salte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly salte bayes: by reason whereof they haue greate plentie of salte which they sell to other nations for such thynges as they stande in neede of. Not farre from hence, a great curlew as bygge as a stozke came flying to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to bee feacely taken: which beinge carped about amonge all the shippes of the name, dyed shortly after, They sawe also a great multitude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of.

The gouernour his shippe whiche we sayde to haue losse the rudder beinge nowe soze broosed and in maner vnyprofytable, they left behynde to folowe at leasure. The nauie arrived at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of July, and the gouernour his shippe (beinge voyde of men) was dyuyn a lande in the same coastes within foure dayes after. The Spanparden whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieutenant *Vusobus Nunnez Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention befoze) beinge certified of tharrival of *Petrus Arias* and his coompanye, wente soozthe thre myles to meete him, & receaued him honorably & religiously with the psalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuinge thanks to god by whose safe conducte they were brought so prosperously thither to al theyr confortes. They receaued them gladly into theyr houses builded after the maner of those prouinces. I may well caule these regions, prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) such as are overcome farre of, sozasmuch as owre men doo nowe inhabite the same all the barbarous kynges and Idolatoues beinge elected. They entercyued them with such chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of those regions, and newe breade bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Makium*. Other delicates to make by the feast, were of theyr owne stozke whiche they brought with theym in theyr shippes, as powdered

fle he

Wethe, salted fythe, and breade made of wheate. For they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the same purpose. Here maye youre holynes not without iuste cause of admiration beholde a kynges nauie and great multitude of Christians, inhabytinge not onely the regions situate vnder the circle of heauen cauled *Tropicus Cancrī*, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to thopinion of the olde wytters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette togyther, let vs further declare what they determyned to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the nauie arrived, there assembled a company of the Spanyardez thynhabytoures of *Dariena*, to the number of foure hundred and fyftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauie and his company, conferred with them bothe priuily and openly of certeyne articles wherof it was the kynges pleasure he shulde enquire: And most especially as concernyng such thynges wherof *Vaschus* the fyfte fynder and Admirall of the Sourhe sea, made mentio in his large letter sent fro *Dariena* to Spayn. In this inquisition they founde all thynges to bee trewe, wherof *Vaschus* had certifyed the kyng by his letters: And there vpon concluded that in the dominions of *Comogrus*, *Pocchorrosa*, & *Tumanama*, at thassignement of *Vaschus*, certeine fortresses shuld bee erected forthwith to thintente there to plant theyr colonie or habitacion. To the better accomplisshement hereof, they sent immediatly one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentel man of *Corduba* and vnder Lieutenent, with foure hundred men and foure carauelles and one other lytle shippe. Thus departinge, he sayled fyrst directly to the haue of *Comogrus*, distant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they wyte in theyr last letters. Frome hence, he is appoynted to sende a hundred and fyftie of his foure hundred, towarde the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the which (as they say) it is not paste .xxvi. leagues from the palace of kyng *Comogrus* to the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Sancti Michaelis*. The residue of the foure hundred, shall remaine there to bee an ayde and succour to all such as shall trayne to and fro. Those hundred and fyftie which are assigned to go southwarde, take with them for interpreters certeine of otre men which had lerned the sootherne language of the bonde men which were gyuen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne those

Barrelles of  
meale.

habitable res-  
gions vnder  
the Equino-  
ctiall lyne.

where the  
newe gouer-  
nour planted  
his habitatio

The viage of  
*Iohannes*  
*Aiora*.  
The haue  
of *Comogrus*

Sainte My-  
chaels goulfe

## The thyrde decade.

those regions, and also certeyne of the bondemen them selues which had nowe lerned the Spanythe tonge. They say that the hauen of *Pocchorrosa*, is onely seuen leaques distant frome the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorrosa*, he is assigned to leaue fyfte men with the lyghtest shyp which maye bee a passinger betwene them: that lyke as we vse poste horses by lande, so may they by this currant shippe, in shorte space certifie the Lieuerenaunt and thinhabitours of *Dariena* of suche thynges as shall chaunce. They entende also to buylde houses in the region of *Tumanama*. The palaice of kynge *Tumanama*, is distant from *Pocchorrosa* about twentic leaques. Of these foure hundred men, beinge of the owlde souldiers of *Dariena* and men of good experience, fyfte weare appoynted to bee as it were *Decurians*, to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus sette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and therwith to certifie hym that in those prouinces there is a kynge named *Dabaiba* whose dominion is very riche in golde: But the same to be yet ynrouched by reason of his great power. His kingedome ioynerh to the seconde greate ryuer named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche fauleth into the sea out of the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* as we haue largely declared before. The common repozte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palayce of kynge *Dabaiba* is fyfte leaques distant from *Dariena*. Thinhabitantes saye that from the palaice, the golde mynes reache to the borders on euery syde. Albeit, owre men haue also golde mynes not to bee contempned, euen within three leaques of *Dariena*, in the which they gather golde in many places at this presente: yet doo theye asyryme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the bookes of owre fyfte trutes wyrtten to yowre holynes, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wherin owre men were deceaued and myshooke the matter. For where they founde the fyfther men of kynge *Dabaiba* in the maryshes, they thought his region had byn there also. They determyned therfore to sende to kynge *Dabaiba*, three hundred choyse younge men to be chosen oute of the hole army as mosse apte to the warrres, and well furnyshed with all kyndes of armour and artillery, to thintent to go unto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permytte

The hauen  
*Pocchorrosa*.

A passynger  
shyppe.

Kynge *Tuma-*  
*nama*.

*Decurians*  
are officers  
deuided into  
tennes. &c.

Kynge *Daba-*  
*iba*.

The gold my-  
nes of *Daba-*  
*iba*.

The palaice  
of kynge *Da-*  
*baiba*.  
The gold my-  
nes of *Dari-*  
*ena*.

An erreure.

Expedition  
against kynge  
*Dabaiba*.

mytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the fruiti-  
 on of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and  
 dyue hym owte of his countrey. In their letters, they often  
 tymes repete this for an argument of great ryche to coome,  
 that they in maner dygged the grounde in noo place, but  
 founde the earthe mytte with sparkes and smaule graynes  
 of golde. They haue also aduertised the kyng that it shalbe  
 commodious to place inhabitours in the haven of *sancta Mar-*  
*tha* in the region of *Saturna*, that it maye bec a place of refuge  
 for them that sayle from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whi-  
 che (as they saye) it is but foure or fyue dayes sayl-  
 yng to that haven of the regyon of *Saturna*. And from the haven, but thre  
 dayes sayl-  
 yng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee understode in go-  
 yng and not in returnyng. For the returnyng from thense  
 is so laborious and difficulte by reason of the contrary course  
 of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyghe  
 montaynes and steyue ageynste the poure of *Neptunus*. This  
 stoyfte course of the sea towards the Weste, is not so violence  
 to them whiche retourne to Spayne from the Ilandes of  
*Hispaniola* and *Cuba*: Althoughe they also do labour ageynste  
 the faule of the Ocean: The cause wherof is, that the sea is  
 here verpe large, so that the waters haue their full scoope.  
 But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are constrayned toge-  
 ther by the bendyng tydes of that great lande, and by the  
 multiplyde of Ilandes lpyng ageynste it, as the lyke is seene  
 in the straighes or narrow seas of *Sicilie* where the violent  
 course of the waters cause the daungerous places of *scylla*  
*and Charybdis*, by reason of those narrow seas whiche contene  
*Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrhenum*. Colonus the first synder of these  
 regyons, hath left in wyryng, that sayl-  
 yng from the I-  
 lande of *Guassa*, and the prouynces of *Iaia*, *Maa*, and *Cera-*  
*baro*, beyng regyons of the west marches of *Beragua*, he founde  
 the course of the water so behemente and furious ageynste  
 the fore parte of his shippe whyle he sailed from those coastes  
 towarde the Easte, that he coulde at no tyme touche the  
 grounde with his soundyng plummet, but that the contrar-  
 y violence of the water wolde beate it vppe from the bot-  
 tome. He affirmeth also, that he coulde neuer in one hole  
 dape with a meately good wynde, wyne one myle of the  
 course of the water. And this is the cause why they are of-

Great plenty  
of golde,

The regyon  
of *Saturna*  
The Ilande  
of *Dominica*

*Dariena*.

Difficulte say-  
l-  
yng ageynst  
the course of  
the sea,

The daunge-  
rous straigh-  
tes of *Scylla*  
& *Charybdis*,

*Guassa*.

*Iaia*,

*Maa*.

*Cerabaro*.

*Beragua*.

The velle-  
ment course  
of the sea fro  
the east to  
the west.

The thyrde decade.

The north  
wynde.

Sancta Ma-  
ria Antiqua,  
the fyist ha-  
bitation of  
the spaniar-  
des in the  
fyine lande.  
Sardus the  
Ilande of  
Sardinia,  
The variety  
of regions ly-  
nge vnder  
one paralel,

By what mea-  
nes the sonne  
beames are  
cau'e of fer-  
uent heate.

The pernicious  
ayer of  
Darien.

rentymes enforced to sayle fyfte by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea toward the North when they retorne to Spaine, that the North wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not bynge to passe by a directe course. But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffice. Let vs now therfore cherche what they write of *Dariena*, & of their habitation there, which they caule *sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defense: And the ayer is moze pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanyshe inhabitants, are all pale & yelow, lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe giaundynges. Whiche neuertheles commeth not of the nature of the region as it is situate vnder the heauen, for in many regyons beyng vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the same eleuation, they fynd holsome & temperate ayer, in such places where as the earth byngeth forth fayre sprynges of water, or where holsome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but mooste especyally where they inhabyte the sydes of the hylles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed on euery syde with hygge hylles: By reason wherof, it receaueth the soonne beames at nooneryde directly perpendicular ouer their heades, and are therfore soze vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the sydes. For it is the reflection of the soonne beames whiche causeth feruente heate, and not their accesse or nerenesse to the earth. Forasmuche as they are not passyble in them selues as dothe manifestly appere by the snowe lpyng contynually vnmolten vpon certeyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holynesse knoweth ryght well. The soonne beames therfore faulng on the montaynes, are reflected downeward into the valley by reason of the oblicte of the declynyng sydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde soone rowled from the toppe of a montayne. The valley therfore receaueth, both those beames whiche faule directly thereon, and also those whiche are reflected downeward from euery syde of the montaynes. Their habitation therfore in *Dariena*, is pernicious and unholsome onely of the particular nature of the place, & not by the sytuacion of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen

heauen or feate to the soonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the soyle, by reason it is compassed aboute with muddy and synkynge marlyshes, thinflection wherof is not a lyttle increascd by the heate. The byllage it selfe, is in a marlyshe, and in maner a standynge puddle, where, of the droppes faulng from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houses, roades are engendered immediatly, as I my selfe sawe in an other place the droppes of that water turne into flees in the soomer season. Furthermoze, where so euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handefull and a halfe, there springeth owte ynholosome and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe & muddy chanel of the valley, and so fauleth into the sea. Now therefore they consulte of remouyng their habytation. Necessyrie caused them fyrst to fassen their foote heate, bycause that they whiche fyrst aryued in those landes, were oppressed with suche vrgente hunger, that they had no respecte to chaunge the place although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the soyle and heate of the soonne, besyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reason of venenous vapours and exhalacions rplynge from the same. An other great incommoditie was, that the place was destitute of a commodious haven, beyng three leaques distante from the mourthe of the goulfe. The waye is also roughe and dyscultye to bynge vytrayles and other necessaries from the sea. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of other particuler thynges whiche chaunsed. Therefore shortly after that they weate aryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisytion of Cuile, whome partely thaurorpe of the byllhoppe of *Dariena*, and partely the desire of golde had allured to those landes, was so scarred with lyghtrynng in the nyghte season linge in bedde with his wyfe, that the house and all the stuffe therein beyng sette on fyre and burnt, he and his wyfe beyng bothe sooze scorched, ranne sooze cryng and almoste naked, hardely escapyng the daunger of deache. At an other tyme, as certayne of them stode on the shoore, a great Crocodile sodenly carped awaye a masty of a yeare and a halfe owlde, as a kyte shulde haue snatched hye a chicken: And this euen in

Toades and flees engendered of droppes of water,

Necessyrie hath no lawe

A house sette on fyre with lyghtrynng,

A dogge deuoured of a crocodile, *Tanquam canis in Niloe,*

The thyrde decade

The byting  
of bannes.

Lions and  
tygers,

Beastes wch  
bygger in  
their kynde,

How the go-  
uernour en-  
terteyned  
kyng Careta,

Note.

Dioms or  
Billa, are  
wormes whi-  
che destroy  
shippes,

the presence of theym all, where the myserable dogge cryed  
in hayne for the helpe of his myster. In the nyght season  
they were tormentid with the bytyng of bannes whiche are  
there soo noysome that if they bite any man in his sleape,  
they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawyng  
of bludde: In so muche that summe haue dyed therof, fau-  
lyng as it were into a consumption through the malycious-  
nesse of the venemous wounde. If these bannes chaunce to  
fynde a cocke or a henne abroad in the nyght season, they  
bite them by the combes and so kyll them. They also whi-  
che wente laste into these regions, do wyte, that the lande  
is troubeled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that  
they haue nowe deuised artes and ingens howe to take them.  
Lkewyse that in the houses of their felowes, they founde  
the hydes and cases of suche Lyons and Tygers as they had  
kylled. They wyte furthermore, that by reason of the ranke-  
nesse and frutefulnesse of the grounde, kyne, swyne, and hoz-  
ses, doo maruelously increase in these regions, and growe to  
a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the first  
broode. Of the excedyng hyghnesse of the trees with their  
fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and seedes  
whiche othere men broughte from Spayne and Colwed and tre  
the same in these regyons, lykewyse of the hertes and othere  
four footed beastes bothe tame and wyld, also of dyuers  
kyndes of foules, byrdes, and fylthes, they wyte euen as  
we haue declared in the decadys before. Careta the kyng of  
the regyon of Cioba, was with them for the space of thre  
dayes: whome when they had frendly enterteyned and re-  
tred hym the secrete places of their shippes, their hozes al-  
so with their trappars, bardes, and othere furnimentes, be-  
syde many othere thinges whiche seemed straunge to hym,  
and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their  
musycall instrumentes, and gyuen hym many rebardes, they  
dysmytted hym halfe amased with so muche admyzation.  
He signyfyed vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce,  
of the planches wherof, if shippes were made, they shoulde  
bee safe from the woodzines of the sea whiche they caule <sup>Broas</sup>  
mas. Howe these woodzines knawe and corrode the shippes,  
wee haue declared before. Othere shippes are greatly troube-  
led with this plage if they lye longe in the haucens of these  
regyons

regions. But they affirme that the woodde of this tree is  
 soo bitter, that the woodmes wyll not taste thereof. There  
 is also an other tree peculiar to these landes: whose leaues  
 if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body,  
 they cause greate blysters, and those soo malycious that ex-  
 cepte the same bee forthwith healed with salte water or  
 fassynge spytte, they doo incontynently engender deadly  
 paynes. They saye lykewyse, that the sauour of the woodde  
 is presente popson: And that it can noo whither bee caryed  
 without daunger of lyfe. When thinhabitauntes of the I-  
 lande of *Hispaniola* had ostentymes attempted to shake of the  
 yoke of seruytude, and could neuer byynge the same to passe  
 neyther by open warre nor yet by pryue conspiraces, they  
 were determyned in the nyghte season to haue kyled oovre  
 men in their sleepe with the smoke of this woodde. But  
 when the Christian men had knowldege hereof, they com-  
 pelled the pooze wretches to confesse their intente, and pu-  
 nished the chiefe aurours of the denyse. They haue also a  
 certayne herbe with the sauour wherof they are preferred  
 from the hurte of this venemous woodde so that they maye  
 beare it safely. Of these smaule thynges it shall suffice too  
 haue sayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater  
 thynges to certyfy vs of from the Ilandes of the south sea.  
 For at suche tyme as the messenger whiche broughte oovre  
 letters departed from thense, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedi-  
 tion to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouthe of the  
 goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the southe  
 sea, byynge also lefte vntouched of *Vasobus* by reason that the  
 sea was at that tyme of the yeaere soze troubeled with tem-  
 pestes, as wee haue further declared in *Vasobus* his vyage to  
 the southe. Wee looke therfore dayly for greater thynges  
 then are hethereto passe. For they haue nowe taken in hand  
 to subdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee suppose too  
 bee eyther verve ryche, or to byynge furthe summe strange  
 woodkes of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Solisus* of *Nebriſſa* (of whome  
 we haue made mention befoze) is sente by the fronte of the  
 cape or poynte of *Sancti Augustini* (whiche reacheth seuen de-  
 grees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and perteyneth to the  
 dominion of the Portugales) to thintent to ouer runne the  
 southe tpe from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Guaybacoa*,  
 with

A venemous  
tree.

perhappes  
they: vene-  
mous arrowes  
are made of  
this woodde  
or. 2c.

A preferma-  
tine ageynst  
popson,

The Ilands  
of the south  
sea,

The ryche I-  
land cauled  
Dites,

Cab. sancti  
Augustini,  
Of the euyl  
successe of  
these viages,  
reade decade  
iii, Liber, ii,

## The thyrde decade.

An expedition  
to destroy the  
Canibales,

Fogeda,

Looke, decad.  
14. Lib. ix.

with the hauens of *Carthago* and *sancta Martha*, of *Dariens* also and *Berigua*, that moze perfect and certeyne knowledge may bee had of those tractes. Furthemoze, one *Iohannes Poncius* was sente foorth with thre shippes to destroye the *Canibales* bothe in the lande and *Islandes* there aboute: alwell that the nations of the moze humane and innocent people maye at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and moze safely to searche the secretes and rycheesse of those regions. Many other lykewise were sente dyuers and sundry wayes: as *Gasper Badaiocius* too searche the West partes: *Franciscus Bezerra*, to sayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to passe by the mouthe or entrance therof to the East coastes of the goulfe to searche the secretes of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his companye had of late begunne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortrell and a byllage. *Badaiocius* departed fyrste frome *Dariens* with foure score souldiours well appoynted: Whome *Lodouicus Mercado* folowed with fyftee: To *Bezerra* were also fourestore assignd, and thre score and renne to *Valleius*. Whether they shall arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or faule into vnfortunate stations, he onely knoweth whose prouydence ruleth all: for as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of thinges after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therfoze coome to other matters.

## The seuenthe booke of the thirde decade.



The nauigati  
ons of *Andreas*  
*Moralis*.

*Etrus Arias* the gouernour of the supposed continent, was scarcely entred into the mayne sea with his nauye onwarde on his byage to *Dariens*. But he was aduertised that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentimes ouer runne the coastes of these new seas and the *Islandes* of the same, was coome to the court to sell suche marchaundies as he broughte with hym frome thence. This man had diligently searched the tracte of the supposed continent, and especpally thinner regions of the *Islande* of *Hispaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his

his brother *Nicolaus Ovandus* (the governour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) because he was a wytty man and moze apte to searche suche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drew faire cardes and tables of suche regyons as hee discouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of suche as haue sense had better tryall herof, so is he in most credyt emongest the best sorte. He therfore resoized to me as all they are accustomed to doo, whiche retourne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of thynges heretofore unbeknownen, I wyll nowe declare. The begynnyng of this narration, shalbe the particullar description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuche as it is the heade and as it weare the principall marke of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousande and againe a thousande fayre, pleasant, bewtifull, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboute it on euery syde, adournyng this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronyng her aboute, and attendyng vppon her as their queene and patronesse. But of these *Nereides* (that is to saye, the Ilandes placed aboute her) we wyll speake moze hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare sumwhat of the Ilande whiche oore men named *Margarita Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knowen, and lyinge in the southe sea in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) *Sainte Michaels goulfe*. This Iland hath presently brought to oore knowledg many straunge and woonderfull thynges and pponyseth no smaule hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles so fayre & great, that the sumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, chaynes, and brasser tes. Of the welkylthes wherin these are engendered, wee wyll speake sumwhat moze in thende of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hispaniola* mooste lyke vnto the earthly paradys. In the description hereof, we wyll begynne of the impressyon of dyuerse names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayre and benefyciall heauen: And synally of the deuision of the regyons. Therfore for the ryghter proportionation of the names, yowze holynesse muste vnderstande that they are pronouncd with thaccent, as yowe may knowe  
by the

A particullar description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*

*Nereides* are nymphes of the sea, he meaneth *Ilandes*, *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus* and goddess of the sea, The Ilande of *Margarita Diues*, *Sainte Michaels goulfe*

Great pearles

*Hispaniola* lyke vnto the earthly paradys,

## The thyrd decade.

by the berge sette ouer the heddes of the bowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinino*, where the accente is in the last bowell, and the lyke to be vnderstoode in all other names.

The fyfth inhabytours of Hispaniola

They saye therfore, that the fyfth inhabytours of the Ilande were transported in their *Canoas* (that is boates made of one hole ppece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banyshted men dzyuen from thense by reason of certayne contrary factions and diuisions emonge them selues, lyke as wee reade howe *Bardanus* came from *Corybo*, and *Teucus* from *Creta* into *Asia*, and that the regyon where they placed their habitation, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*.

*Bardanus.*  
*Teucus.*  
*Troianum.*  
*Tirtans.*  
*Sidonians.*

The lyke wee reade howe the *Tirians* and *Sidonians* arryued with their nauye in *Libya* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. These *Matinians* in like maner beyng banyshted from their owne countrey, planted their fyfth habytation in that parte of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* whiche they caule *Cabona*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnyng of the Romaynes that *Eneas* of *Trope* arryued in the region of *Italy* cauled *Latium* vpon the banks of the ryuer of *Tiber*.

*Eneas.*  
*Latium.*

Within the mouthe of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is sayde that thynhabitauntes buylded their fyfth howse whiche they named *Camotica*. This howse they consecrated shortly after, and honoured the same reuerently with continual gyftes and monumentes, euen vntyl the comynge of othere men, lyke as the *Christians* haue euer relygyously honoured *Jerusalem* the fountayne and oryginall of othere saythe: As also the *Turkes* attribute the lyke to the ctye of *Mocha* in *Araby*, and thynhabytantes of the fortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of *Canarye*) to *Tyrma* buylded vpon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounte with ioyfull myndes and songes to caste them selues downe headlonge, beyng perswaded by their priestes that the soules of all suche as so dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, shulde therby enioye eternall felcity.

*Jerusalem*

*Mocha.*  
The Ilandes of *Canarie*,

The conquerours of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, founde them yet remaynyng in that superstition, euen vntyll othere tyme: For yet is the memozy of their sacryfices vterly woyme awaye: The rocke also reserueeth the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue also learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande summe of the faction

*Betanchor,* a Frenchman,

of *Betanchor* the French man and fyfth that broughte the Ilandes

landes

landes to good culture and ciuilitie beyng thereto lycenced by the kynge of Castile as I haue sayde before. These doo yet (for the mosse parte) obserue bothe the language and maners of the frenshemen, although the eyses and succedours of *Bethinchor*, had soulede the two subdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Castile. yet thynhabitours whiche succeded *Bethinchor*, and buyldeed them houses and encreased their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleasauntly with the Spanyardes, not greued with the sharpe coulde of France. But lette vs nowe retorne to thynhabitauntes of *Martinico* and *Hispaniola*. The Ilande of *Hispaniola* was fyrste named by the fyrste inhabitours, *Quizqueia*, and then *Haiti*. And this not by chaunce, or at the pleasure of suche as diuised these names, but of credulitie and belefe of summe great effecte. For *Quizqueia*, is as muche to saye as a great thinge: And that so great that none maye bee greater. They interpret also, that *Quizqueia* signifieth, large, vniuersall, or all, in like signification as the Greekes named their god cauled *Pan*: Bycause that for the greatnes therof, these simple soules supposed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the soonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the same: And therbyppon thoughte it most woorthy to bee cauled great, as the greatest of all other knowen to them. *Haiti* is as muche to saye by interpretation, as rough, sharpe, or craggie. But by a fyguratiue speache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland *Haiti* (that is) voyghe: For as muche as in many places the face of this Iland is rough by reason of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and diepe halleys enuyroned with great and highe montaynes, although it bee in manye other places exceedyng betotifull and flozyspynge. Here muste wee sumwhat digresse from the order we are entered into. Perhaps your holynesste wyll maruell by what meanes these simple men shoulde of soo longe contynuaunce beate in minde suche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beginninge, their princes haue euer byn accustomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wise men whiche they caule *Boitios*, to bee instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie

The fyfth names of *Hispaniola*.

The roughnesse of *Hispaniola*.

The maner of lernynge.

## The thyrde decade.

Ballets and  
rhymes.

Singing and  
daunceing.  
Soonges of  
loue and mood  
nyng.

Prophecies,

Note

They: famili-  
aritie with  
spirites

The deuyl is  
dryuen awaye  
by baptisme

more suche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them selues  
chieflye to two thynges: As generally to lerne thoziginnall  
and successe of thynges: And particularlye to cherche the no-  
ble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and  
aunccestours alwell in peare as in warre. These two thynges  
they haue of olde tyme composed in certeyne myters and  
ballettes in their language. These rhymes oz ballettes, they  
caule *Arcitos*. And as owre mynstrelles are accustomed too  
syng to the harpe oz lute, so doo they in lyke maner syng  
these songes and daunce to the same, playinge on tymbrells  
made of shels of certen fyshes. These tymbrells they caule *Maz-  
guel*. They haue also songes and ballettes of loue: And oz-  
ther of lamentations and mooznyng: Summe also to encor-  
rage them to the warres, with euery of them their reuolues as  
greable to the matter. They exerceple them selues muche in  
daunceinge, wherein they are verry actyue and of greater agi-  
litie then owre men, by reason they gyue them selues to noz  
thyng so muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche  
is also the cause of their swiftenesse of foote. In their bal-  
lettes lefte them of their aunccestours, they haue prophecies  
of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. These they  
syng with mooznyng and as it were with gromyng, bewayle  
the losse of their lybertie and seruitude. For these prophecies  
make mention that there shoulde coome into the Ilande *Maz-  
guacochios*, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with  
suche swoordes as shulde cutte a man in sunder at one stroke:  
hynder whose yoke their posteritie shulde bee subdued. And  
here I do not maruell that their prediccestours coulde prophe-  
eye of the seruitude and bondage of their successyon, if it bee  
trewe that is sayd of the familiaritie they haue with spirites  
whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue large-  
ly made mention in the nynt hooke of the first decade, where  
also wee haue entreated of their zemes (that is) their Idoles  
and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they  
saye that sence these zemes were taken awaye by the Christi-  
ans, the spirites haue no more appeared. Owre men ascribe  
this to the sygne of the crosse wherwith they defende them  
selues from suche spirites. For they are nowe all clesned and  
sanctified by the water of baptime wherby they haue renoun-  
ced the deuyl and are consecrated the holy members of Christ.  
They

They are vniuersally studious to knowe the boundes and limites of their regions and kingdomes: And especially their *Mitani* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not bitterly ignorant in the surueyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of settinge, sowynge, and plantynge. They are mooste experte fyllers, by reason that throughout the hole yeare, they are accustomed daylye to plouge them selues in the ryuers, so that in maner they lyue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are also giuen to huntynge. For (as I haue sayde before) they haue twoo kyndes of foure footed beastes, wherof the one is lyttle creatures cauled *vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Iuannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of mooste pleasaunte taste, and luyng on the lande. All the Ilandes toooyse innumerable byrdes and foules: As stocke doves, duckes, geefe, heacons, bysde nolesse number of poppingiais then sparowes with vs. Every kyng hath his subiectes diuided to sundrye affaires: As summe to huntynge, other to fyllynge, and other summe to husbandrye. But let vs now retorne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that *Quixqueia* and *Haiti*, were the oulde names of this Ilande.

The hole Ilande was also cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundynge with golde: Lyke as oure ancient poetes cauled all *Italie Latium* of parte therof. Therfore as they cauled *Ausonia* and *Hesperia*, *Italie*, euen soo by the names of *Quixqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderstode the hole Ilande of *Hispaniola*. Oure men dyd fyrste name it *Isabella* of queene *Helisabeth* whiche in the Spanysh tounge is cauled *Isabelli*: And so named it of the fyrst Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the North syde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrst decade. But of the names, this shall suffice. Lette vs nowe therfore speake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrste ouer ranne it, described it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a chestnurt tree, with a goulfe toward the west syde, lpyng open ageynst the Ilande of *Cuba*. But the experte shyppe mayster *Andreas Moralis*, broughte me the forme therof sumwhat differynge from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the East angle and the West, he described it to be indented and earen with many great goulfes, and the corners

Surueyers

They lyue as much in the water as on the lande

Serpentes  
A Crocodile  
is much lyke  
to our ewte  
or Lyserte  
Byrdes and  
foules  
Poppingayes

*Cipanga*.

*Italie* cauled  
*Latium*

*Isabella*

The forme of  
the Ilande of  
*Hispaniola*

A particular  
carde of His-  
paniola.

Hispaniola  
compared to  
Italie.

The tempera-  
ture of Hispa-  
niola.

The equinocti-  
all.

Could acci-  
dentali, and  
not by the sy-  
tuation of the  
region,

Perpetuall  
springe and  
soomer,

Maruelous  
fruitfulness

to reache forth the verye farre: and placeth manye large and safe hauens in the great goulfe on the East syde. But I trust shortly too to trauaile further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particuler description of *Hispaniola* maye bee sente vnto your holynesse. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographeicall description thereof in cardes, euen as your holynesse hath seene the forme and sytuation of Spayne and Italpe with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therfore without shamfastnesse compare the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to Italic, sumtyme the heade and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee consyder the quantitie, it shalbee founde lytle lesse, and muche moze fructfull. It reacheth from the East into the Weste, fyue hundred and fortye myles accordyng to the computation of the later searchers: Althoughe the Admyrall summeth increased this number as wee haue sayde in the fyfthe decade. It is in breadth summe where, almoste thre hundred myles: And in summe places narrower where the corners are extended. But it is suerlye muche moze blessed and fortunate then Italie: Beyng for the mooste parte thereof so temperate and frozylthyng, that it is neyther hered with sharpe coude, nor afflicted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the steppinges or conuersiones of the soonne (cauled *solfstia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lytle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyght throughout all the yeare. For on the the south syde, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboute the nyghte, or contrary wyse. But the dyfference is moze on the northe syde. yet are there summe regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coude is of sum force. But your holynesse muste vnderstonde this to bee incident by reason of the obiecte or nearenesse of the mountaines, as wee wyl moze largely declare hereafter. yet is not this coude so pearenyng or sharpe, that thynhabitantes are molested with snowe or bytyng froste. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall springe tyme, and is fortunate with contynuall soomer and haruest. The trees frozylbe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are exceasyng fortunate, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encrease, soo that within the space of syxtene dayes after the seede is sowne, all herbes

herbes of smaule steames, as lettelle, bozage, rabythe, and  
 suche other, coome to their full ryphenesse: And also howe  
 herbes of the bygger sorte, as gourdes, melounes, cucumers,  
 pompons, citrons, and suche other, coome to their perfection  
 in the space of thirtie dayes, wee haue sufficiently declared  
 elles where. Of the beastes transported out of Spaine the-  
 ther, wee haue sayde howe they growe too a muche greater  
 kynde: In so muche that when they faule into communica-  
 tion of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bignesse to ele-  
 phantes, and swyne to mules: But this sumwhat by an ex-  
 cellyue kynde of speache. Wee haue also made mention how  
 their swynes fleshe is moze sauourye and of farre better and  
 moze pleasaunte taste and moze hollome then obores, by rea-  
 son they are fedde with the frutes of Myzobalane trees, and  
 other pleasaunte and nurylshynge frutes of that contrey,  
 whiche growe there of them selues, as do with vs beeches,  
 holly, & okes. Wynes woolde also prosper there with marue-  
 lous encrease, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof.  
 The lyke encrease commeth of wheate if it be sowed vpon  
 the mountaynes where the colde is of some strength: but not  
 in the playnes, by reason of to much fatnes and rankenes of  
 the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare  
 of wheate shuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the braloue,  
 and moze then a spanne in length, bearynge also moze then a  
 thousande graynes, as they all confesse with one voyce, and  
 earnestly affirme the same with othes. yet they say the bread  
 of the Ilande (cauled *Caxabbi* made of the roote of *Iucca*, to  
 bee moze holsome, because it is of easyer digestion, and is cul-  
 tured with lesse labour and greater increase. The residue of  
 the tyme which they spende not in setyngge and plantynge,  
 they bestowe in gatheringe of golde. They haue nowe suche  
 plentie of foure footed beastes, that horses and ore hydres with  
 sheepe skynnes and goate skyns and such other, are brought  
 from thence into Spayne: So that nowe the daughter in ma-  
 ny thynges helpeth and succureth her mother. Of the trees  
 of brasile, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright  
 shynnge redde, mastix, gossampine cotton, the precious me-  
 tall cauled *Electrum*, and such other commodities of this I-  
 lande, we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore  
 can chaunce moze happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there

Beastes  
 Oxen and  
 swyne of ex-  
 ceadyng byg-  
 nesse,

Swyne fed  
 with Myzoba-  
 lanes.

Wynes

wheats

An eare of  
 wheate as  
 byg as a mas  
 arme in the  
 braloue  
 The bread of  
 the Ilande.

Soide,

Great plentie  
 of cattayle,

Brasile,  
 woflyr,  
 Gossampine  
 Electrum,

## The thyrde decade.

Incommodities of intemperat regions

holosome ayer and water

Golde euery where

The description of the inner partes of the Ilande,

The citie of s. Dominicke

The mountaynes of Haiti

The mountaynes of Cibao

to lyue where he neede not to bee dyuen to close chambers with sharpe coulde or sayntynge heate? Nor yet in wynter eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the shynnes with continuall sytryng at the fyre, which thynge make men oulde in short tyme by resoluinge the natural heate, wherof a thousande diseases insue. They also a firme the ayer to bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no lesse holosome, as they whiche haue theyr continuall course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in manner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are hterely without golde. But let vs nowe at the length come to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed Ilande. We haue befoze declared howe it is in maner equally diuided with foure greate ryuers descendynge frome hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the East, is cauled *Iunna*, as that towarde the West is named *Atitubunicus*: The thyrde is *Naba* or *Haba* which runneth Southward: The fourth is cauled *Iache*, and fauleth towarde the North. But this shippe master, hath brought an other description obserued of chynhabitantes from the begynnynge. Let vs therfoze diuide the hole Ilande into fyue partes, callynge the regions of euery prouince by theyr owlde names: and synally make mention of suche thynge as are woorthye memory in euery of them. The begynninge of the Ilande on the East syde, is conteyned in the prouince named *Caxcim*: so named for that in theyr language *Cimu*, signifieth the front or begynnynge of any thynge. After this, foloweth the prouince of *Huhabo*, and then *Cababo*. The fourth is *Bainoa* & *Guaacalarim* conteyneth the west corner. But the last saue one, *Bainoa* is of larger haundes then the thre other. *Caxcim* reacheth from the fyrst fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer *Hoxama*, whiche runneth by the citie of saynt Dominicke. But towarde the North syde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. *Huhabo*, is included within the mountaynes *Haiti* and the ryuer *Iaciga*. *Cababo* the thyrde prouince, conteyneth all that lyeth betwene *Cubabo* and *Dabatio*, euen vnto the mouth of the ryuer of *Iaccha* or *Iache* (one of the foure which diuide the Ilande equally) and ascendeth to the mountaynes of *Cibao*, where the greatestte plentie of golde is founde: Dwt of the which also the ryuer *Demachus* springeth: and ioyynge with the

the springes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, (being an other of the foure which diuiderh the Ilande towarde the South sea) faulceth to an other banke of the ryuer of saynt *Dominicke*. *Bainoa*, be-  
 gynneth at the confines of *Cabibi*, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of *Cabini* which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the north syde of the Ilande where wee sayde that they erected the fyrst colonie or habitacion. The prouince of *Guacaciarima*, occupieth the remanent towarde the west. This they named *Guacaciarima*, bycause it is the extreme or vttermost parte of the Ilande. For *Iarima* in theyr language signifieth the tayle or ende of any thyng: And *Gua*, is an article whiche they vse often tymes in the names of thynges: And especially in the names of theyr kynges: as *Guarionexius*, and *Guaccanarillus*. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, are these regions: *Higuel*, *Guanama*, *Rey*, *re*, *Xagua*, *Aramana*, *Arabo*, *Haxoa*, *Macorix*, *Calacoa*, *Guatagua*, *Baguanimabo* and the rough mountaynes of *Haiti*. Here let vs speake sume what of theyr aspirations which they vse otherwyse then the Latins doo. It is to bee noted that there is no aspiration in theyr bowels, which hath not the effecte of a consonant. So that they pronounce theyr aspirations moze vehemently then wee do the consonant. *f*, *pe*, all suche woordes as in their tonge are aspirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and spirite as is *f*. Sawing that herein the neather lyppe is not moucd to thuppermost teethe. With open mouthes and makinge theyr brestes, they breath out these aspirations, *ba*, *be*, *bi*, *bo*, *bu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theyr. I fynde also that the Spanyardes vse the lyke vehemence in the aspirations of those woordes whiche they haue receaved of the Moores & Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in these woordes: *Almo* *badda*, whiche signifieth a pyllowe or bolster: Also *Almoba* *za*, that is, a horse combe: with dyuers such other woordes whiche they speake in maner with panting brestes and vehement spirite. I haue thought it good to reherse these thynges, by cause amonge the Latines it often tymes so chaunceth that onely the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the woorde: as *bora*, for an houre, and *ora* for the plurale number of this woorde *os*, which signifieth the mouth: Also *ora*, which signifieth regions or coastes. The lyke also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as *occido* I kyll, and *occi*  
 do I

The Ilande of Cahini

Of prouinces diuided into regions

Of theyr aspirations

The pronunciation of the hebrewes & Arabians, The moores and Arabians possessed Spayne

howe the aspiration chaungeth the signification of wordes

## The thyrde decade.

Dyvers lan-  
guages in  
the Ilande

So I faule. Euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many rhymes to bee obscured. But let vs nowe returne to the description. In the prouince of *Huaboo*, are these regions: *Xanoni*, *Cansibacoa*, *Cubabo*, with many other, the names wherof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Cababo*, comprehendeth these regions: *Migua*, and *Cacacubana*. The inhabitants of this region, haue a peculpar language much differinge from the common language of the Iland, and are cauled *Miccoyres*. There is also an other region cauled *Cubanz*, whose language differeth from the other. Lykewyle the region of *Baiobagua*, hath a dyuers toonge. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon*, *Cyhabo*, and *Murabho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runneth the ryuer *Nixus*: And the mountaynes cauled *Mibaitin*, *Hozua*, and *Neibayno*, confine with the same. In the prouince of *Bainoa*, are the regions of *Mizguina*, *Lagobaucho*, *Baurcco*, *Dabalagua*, and *Atibuni*, so named of the ryuer: Also *Caunoa*, *Bukici*, *Dababonici*, *Milaguarith*, *Atlei*, *Micaxina*, *Gushabba*, *Aminici*, *Mirien*, *Guricco*, *Amaguei*, *Karagua*, *Yaguana*, *Azzuei*, *Iacchi*, *Honorucco*, *Diaguo*, *Cansie*, and *Neibaino*. In *Guacoderima* the last prouince, these regions are comprehended: *Municario*, *Gushagua*, *Taquenaxabo*, *Nimica*, *Bainoa* the leste, *Cabayni*, *Iamixi*, *Murabixio*, *Zuana*, *Habacoa*, and *Ayjueros*. But let vs entreate somewhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of *Cuzcimu*, with in the great goulfe of the beginnyng, there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the sea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnyke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnyng many wayes. *Antreas Moralis* the shipmaster, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to searche the caue with the smaulest vessels. He sayth that by certeyne priuie wayes, manye ryuers haue concourse to this caue as it were to a sinke or chanell. After the experience here of, they ceased to manuaile whither other ryuers canne whiche commyng fourescore and tenne myles, were swallowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the sea by any knowen wayes. Nowe therfore they suppose that ryuers swallowed by by the holowe places of that stony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the shipmaster entered into the caue his shippe was almost swallowed. For he sayth that there are many whylepooles and vspingges or boylinges of the wa-  
ter,

A greate caue  
in the rocke  
of a mount-  
ayne,

A dangerous  
enterpise

Riuers deuou-  
red of caues,

fer, which make a violent conflict and horrible roynge  
 encounterng the other. Also many huge holes & holowe pla-  
 ces: So that what on the one syde with the whyle pooles, &  
 on the other side with the boylng of the water, his sypp was  
 long in maner tossed vp and downe lyke a haule. It greatly  
 repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how  
 to come forth. He now wandered in darkenesse, as wel for the  
 obscurenesse of the caue into the which he was farre entered,  
 as also that in it were thicke cloudes engendered of the moist  
 vapours proceeding of the conducte of the waters whiche co-  
 rminually faule with great violence into the caue on euery side.  
 He comparerth the noyse of these waters, to the faule of the  
 famous ryuer of Nilus from the montaines of Ethyope. They  
 were al so deafe, that one could not here what an other said.  
 But at the length with great daunger & feare, he came forth  
 of the caue as it had byn dore of hel. Aboute thre scoze mi-  
 les distancer from the chiefe citie of saincte Dominicke, there  
 are certeyne hyghe montaynes vppon the toppes wherof is a  
 lake or standynge poole inaccessible, neuer yet scene of them  
 whiche came latelpe to the Ilande, bothe by reason of the  
 roughnesse of the montaines, and also for that there is noo  
 pathe or open waye to the toppes of the same. But at the  
 length the shypp maister beinge conducted thether by one of  
 the bynges, ascended to the toppes of the montaines and came  
 to the poole. Hee saith that the coulde is there of sum force.  
 And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramble bus-  
 shes, whiche two, growe only in coulde regions. These mon-  
 taynes, they caule Ymizui Hib. shano. This poole is of frethe  
 water thre myles in compasse, and wel replenished with di-  
 uerse kindes of fyshes. Many smaule riuers or brookes faule  
 into it. It hath no passage oute, bycause it is on euery  
 syde enclosed with the toppes of montaynes. But  
 lette vs nowe speake of an other poole whiche  
 maye well bee cauled a sea in the mydlande,  
 and bee compared to the Caspian or  
 Bircanian sea in the tyme landjof,  
 As: with certeyne other la-  
 kes and pooles of  
 freshe water.

whyles pooles  
 and conflict  
 of waters,

Cloudes is  
 the caue.

The Catarac-  
 tes of Nilus

A standynge  
 poole in the  
 toppes of a  
 hygh mount-  
 ayne.

Ferne and  
 bramble bus-  
 shes, growe  
 only in coulde  
 regions.

The Caspian  
 and Bircan-  
 an sea,

The

## The thyrde decade.

### The eyght booke of the thirde decade.



A great lake  
of soure and  
saite water.  
Swallowinge  
goulfes.

Sea fyshes  
in lakes of  
the midlande

The deuour-  
ynge fythe  
cauled Tibu-  
ronus.

The ryuers  
that faule in-  
to the lake.  
Caspium,

CC. springes  
with in the  
space of a  
furlonge,

Amiracle.

The Indian  
language,

The prouynce of *Balnoa* beyng thise as bygge as the thre fyrst, that is, *Caizcimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caibabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiovani*, in the whiche there is a lake of salte, soure, and bytter water, as wee reade of the sea cauled *Caspium*, lpyng in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. Wee haue therfoze named it *Caspium*, althoughe it bee not in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye swallowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the sea springeth into it, and also suche as faule into it from the montaines, are swallowed vpp. They thyncke that the caues therof, are so large and deepe, that great fyshes of the sea passe by the same into the lake. Amonge these fyshes, there is one cauled *Tiburonus* whiche cutteth a man in sunder by the myddest at one snappe with his teethe, and deuouereth hym. In the ryuer *Hozama*, runnyng by the chiefe cite of sayncte *Dominicke*, these *Tiburoni* do sumtymes coome from the sea and deuoure manye of thinhabitauntes: Especially suche as do dayly ploonge them selues in the water to thinttent to keepe their bodyes verpe cleane. The ryuers whiche faule into the lake, are these. From the Northe syde, *Guannicabon*: From the Southe, *Xaccori*: from the Easte, *Guannabo*. And from the West, *Occoa*. They saye that these ryuers are great and continuall: And that besyde these, there are .xx. other smaule ryuers whiche faule into this *Caspium*. Also on the Northe syde within a furlonge of the lake, there are aboute two hundredeth springes, occuppyng lykewise aboute a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coude in soomer, freshe also, and holsome to bee droonke. These springes make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at hande ioynnyng with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here muste wee stape a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde his wyfe prayng in a chapel builded by the Christians with in the pprecincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie to satysfy his fleshely luste. His wyfe reproued hym, and put hym in remembraunce to haue respecte to the holpe place. The woordes whiche she spake to hym, were these: *Tetitoca*, *Tetitoca*.

*Tebeta*: whiche is as muche to saye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet: *Tebeta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angerie.

*Guamechyna*, signifiyeth god, *Tebeta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie. But the husbände halynge her by the arme, sayde: *Gusibba*, that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that to me if god be angerye? And with these woordes as he profured her violence, soodenlye he became dumme and lame.

Yet by this myracle beyng striken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a relygious lyfe: In soo muche that from thense foorth hee woold be neuer suffer the chapell to be swepte or decked with any other mannes hande. By the same myracle, manye of thinhabitaunces and all the Christians beyng moued, resoorted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good parte that the kynge suffered the reuenge of that reproche.

Lette vs nowe recourne to *Caspium*, That salte lake is tossed with stormes and tempestes: And oftentimes drowneth smaule shippes or fysher boates, and swaloweth them vpp with the maryners: In so muche that it hath not byn harde of, that any man drowned by shypwreake, euer plounged vppe ageyne, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the deade bodyes of suche as are drowned in the sea. These tempestes, are the deintie banquetes of the *Tiburones*.

This *Caspium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*, In the myddest hereof, lyeth an Ilande named *Guarizacca*, to the whiche they resoort when they go a-fysshynge: But it is not cultured. There is in the same playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whose water is myrte of salte and freshe: And is therfore nother apte to bee dronke, not yet to bee refused in vrgente necessitie.

This conteineth in length .xxv. miles, and in breadth eighthe myles: In summe places also nyne or ten. It receaueth manye ryuers whiche haue no passage oute of the same, but are swallowed vppe as in the other. Water springeth out of the sea into this also: but in no great quantitie, whiche is the cause that it is so commyrt. In the same prouynce toward the Weste syde, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre distante from *Caspium*. This thinhabitaunces caule *Lainagua*. The same salte lake, hath on the North syde therof, an other named *Gusocaa*. This is but lytle: as not past three or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of this, maye well bee dronke. On the southe syde of the salte

A kyng stricken dumme and lame by a myracle,

Such as are drowned in the lake are not cast vpp ageyne.

The Ilande *Guarizacca* in the myddest of the poole, A lake of salt and freshe water.

A lake of freshe water

The thyrde decade

lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbareo*, of three myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is freshe as of the two other. This lake bycause it hath no passage oute nor yet any swatowynge goulkes, conueyeth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be increased with the streames whiche faule sometimes more abundantly fro the montaines. This is in the region of *Xamania* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. There is an other cauled *Gnaniba*, lying betwene the East & the South nere vnto the syde of *Caspus*. This is ten myles in length and almoste rounde. There are furthermoze many other smaule standing pooles or lakes dispersed here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyll lerte passe lesse I shulde bee tedious in remainging to longe in one thyng. I wyll therefore make an ende with this addition, that in all these, great plentie of fysh and foule is nourysht. All these lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the East reacheth into the West a hundred and twentie myles: beying of breadth, xviii. myles where it is narrowest, and .xxv. where it is largest. Looking toward the West, it hath collaterally on the lefte hande the montaines of *Daiquani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines, of *Cagua*, so cauled of the name of the vale it selfe. At the rootes of the montaines of *Cagua* toward the North syde, there lyeth another vale much longer & larger then that before named. For it containeth in length, almoste two hundred myles: And in bredth, .xxx. wher it is largest, & about .xx. wher it is narrowest. This vale in summe parte thereof, is cauled *Maguani*: In another place, *Iguanu*, & elles where, *Hathabiei*. And forasmuche as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named *Hathabiei*, wee wyll sumwhat digresse from the discourse of this description, and entreate of a thinge so straunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therefore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatecius*, taketh great pleasure in fysshinge. Into his nettes chanced a yongge fysh of the kynde of those huge monsters of the sea whiche inhabiticous caule *Manati*, not folinde I suppose in othere seas nor knownen to othere men before this tyme. This fysh is foure footed, and in shape lyke vnto a tozopie althoughe hee be not covered with a shel, but with scales: And those of such hardnesse & couched in suche order, that no arrowe can hurt hee, For scales are byset & defend with a thousand knobbes.

A lake of ten myles in length

A playne of a hundred and twenty myles

A playne of two hundred myles in length

The maner of the fysh Manati,

Her backe is playne, and her heade vterly lyke the heade of an ore. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is slowe of mouyng: of condition meeke, gentell, aduocable and louing to mankind and of a maruelous sence or memorie as are the elephant and the delphyn. The king nourished this fysh certeyne daies at home with the breade of the countrey, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with suche other rootes as men are accustomed to eate. For when she was yet but younge, he cast her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake also receaueth waters and casteth not the same forth againe. It was in tyme paste cauled *Guaurabo*: But is now cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this fysh whiche wandered safelye in the same for the space of .xxv. yeares, and grew exceeding byg. What so euer is wrytten of the Delphines of *Baian* or *Arcion*, are muche inferior to the dooinges of this fysh: which for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Wherefore when so euer any of the kynges familyers, especiallye suche as are knowne to her, resorte to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum, Matum*, then she (as myndefull of suche benefites as she hath receaued of men) lyftech by her heade and cometh to the place whither she is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of suche as feede her. If any desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of theyr intente, she boweth her selfe to them, therewith as it were gentelly inuoyng them to amouit bypon her, and conveyeth them safely ouer. It hath byn seene that this monstrous fysh hath at one tyme safely carryed ouer tenne men singlly and playng. But if by chaunce when she lyftech by her heade she espyed any of the Christian men, she wolde immediatly ploung downe agayne into the water and refuse to obey, because she had once receaued iniury at the handes of a certeyn wanton younge man amonge the Christians, who hadde caste a sharpe darre at her, although she were muche hurte by reason of the hardenes of her skynne beinge roughe and ful of scales and knobbes as we haue sayde. Yet dyd she beare in memorie thynurie she susteyned, with so gentell a reuenge requityng thyngratitude of hym which had delt with her so vngentelly. From that day when so euer she was cauled by any of her familyers, she wolde firste looke circumspect

A monster of the sea fedde with mans hande.

*Matum.*

A fysh carryeth men ouer the lake.

A maruelous thyng.

## The thyrde decade.

ly about her, least any were present appareled after the man-  
ner of the Christians. She woolde oftentimes play and wpe:  
ple hypon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And es-  
pecially with a younge man whom the kyng fauoured well,  
beinge also accustomed to feede her. Shee woolde bee some-  
tymes as pleasaunt and full of play as it had byn a moonkey  
or marmaset: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and so-  
lace to the hole Ilande. For no smaule confluence aswell of  
the Christians as of thinhabitantes, had dayly concourte to  
beholde so straunge a myracle of nature, the contemplation  
wherof was no lesse pleasaunt then woonderfull. They say  
that the meate of this kynde of fythe, is of good taste: And  
that many of them are engendered in the seas therabout. But  
at the length, this pleasaunt playfelow was losse, and cari-  
ed into the sea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the foure  
which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced so  
terrible a tempest of wind, & rayne, with such fluds enswyng  
that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reason of this  
tempest, the ryuer *Attibunicus* so ouertowed the bankes, that  
it fylled the hole vale & myxt it selfe with all the other lakes.  
At which tyme also, this gentell *Mitum* and pleasaunte com-  
panyon, folowynge the vehemente course and faule of the  
fluddes, was therby restozed to his oulde moother and na-  
tyue waters, and sence that tyme neuer scene ageyne. Thus  
hauynge digrested sufficiently, let vs nowe coome to the situ-  
ation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of  
*Cibaua* and *Caignam* which bynge it to the South sea. There  
is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of *Cibaua* towarde  
the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycause  
that befoze the memorie of man, the prediceitours and auz-  
cestours of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is descended by right  
of inheritaunce, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of  
this kyng, we haue spoken largely in the fyfth narration of  
the Ilande in the fyfth Decade. This vale is of length from  
the East to the West, a hundzeth and fourescore myles: And  
of breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher  
it is narrowest, and fiftie where it is broadest. It begynneth  
from the region *Cambocoa* by the prouinces of *Hubabo* and *Cais-  
ho*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Ma-  
ricua*, It lyeth in the myddest betwene the mountaynes of *Ci-  
baua*

The ryuer  
*Attibunicus*.

The situation  
of the great  
vale.

The moun-  
taynes of *Ci-  
baua* and *Cai-  
guam*.

The greate  
vale of *Suari-  
onexius*.

land: and the mountaynes of *Cabonai* and *Caxacubana*. There is no prouince nor any region, which is not notable by the multitude of mountaynes, frutefulnes of vales, pleasauntnesse of hylles, and delectablenes of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnyng through the same. There are no sides of mountaynes or hylles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delycate fyshes, except only one ryuer which from the originall therof, with the sprynges of the same breakyng forth of the mountaynes, commeth owt salte and so contynueth vntyll it perishe. This ryuer is cauled *Babuan*: and runneth through the myddle of the region *Maguana* in the prouince of *Bainos*. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe awaye vnder the grounde by some passages of playster or salte earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable salte bayes, wherof we wyl speake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers & fyue prouinces. There is also an other partition, whiche is this. The hole Ilande consisteth of the tops of foure mountaines which diuide it by the myddest from the East to the weste. In all these is abundance of noozsphyng moisture and greate plentie of golde: of the caues also of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptye them selues) haue theyr originall and increase. There are lykewyse in the horryble dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noysome beast founde in it: Nor yet any rauenyng foure footed beast. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no craftie foxes, nor deuouring wolfes. Al thynges are blessed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receaued to bee the sheepe of Chrystes flocke, all theyr zemes and Images of deuylls being reiected and vterly out of memorie. If I chaunce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to reapeate one thyng dyuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desyre your holynes therewith not to bee offended. For whyle I see, heare, and wyte these thynges, mee seemeth that I am herewith so affected, that for verie joy I feele my mynde stirred as it were with the spirite of *Aspollo* as were the *Sibylles*, whereby I am enforced to reapeate the same ageyne: Especially when I consyder howe farre the amplitude of owre religion spreadeth her wynges.

per.

mountaynes,  
vales.  
hylles.  
playnes.  
ryuers.  
Solde in all  
mountaynes,  
and golde and  
fysh in all  
ryuers.

Salte bayes.

howe the I-  
lande is di-  
uided with  
mountaynes.  
Solde.  
The ryuers  
haue theyr in-  
crease from  
the caues of  
the moun-  
taynes  
No hurtful or  
raueninge  
beast in the  
Ilande.

The autours  
excuse.

The thyrde decade.

By what meanes the people of the Ilande are greatly continued.

The pleasures of Hispaniola.

The region of Corobi, situate in the Cloudes. A playne in the toppes of mountaynes

The hygher, the cooler.

Moderate coulde in the mountaynes.

Ferne of marvellous bignes

Aside.

Yet amonge these so many blessed and fortunate thynges, this one greueeth me not a litle: That these simple poore men neuer brought vp in labour, do dayly peryshe with intolerable trauayle in the golde mynes: And are thereby brought to suche desperation, that many of them kyll them selues, hauyng no regarde to the procreation of chyl dren. In so much that women with chylde, perceauynge that they shall bynng forth such as shall be slaues to the Christians, vse medecines to destroy theyr conception. And albeit that by the kyniges letters patentes it was decreed that they shalde bee set at libertie, yet are they constrained to serue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wyretches is wondrously extenuate. They were once rekened to bee aboute twelue hundred thousande heades: But wher they are nowe, I abhorre to rehearse. We wyll therefore let this passe: and returne to the pleasures of Hispaniola. In the mountaynes of Cibana, which are in maner in the myddest of the Ilande in the prouince of Caiabo (where we sayd to bee the greatest plentie of natyue golde) there is a region named Corobi, situate in the cloudes, environed with the toppes of hyghe mountaynes, and well inhabited. It consisteth of a playne of .xxv. myles in length, and .xv. in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that these mountaynes, maye seeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours of the other. This playne sufereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yeare: as the Springe, Sommer, Autumne, and Wynter. Here the herbes ware wythered, the trees loose theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche thynges (as we haue sayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The soyle of this playne bynngeth forth ferne and bramble bushes bearynge blacke berries or wyldc raspes, which two are tokens of coulde regions. yet is it a fayre region: for the coulde therof is not very sharpe: neyther dooth it a little thinne habitantes with froste or snowe. They argue the fructifullnes of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or steames are bygger then a spere or tanelen. The sydes of thos mountaynes are ryche in golde. yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the same, because it shall be needefull to haue appavelled myners, and such as are vsed to labour. For thynhabitantes bynng

winge contented with litle, are but tender: And can not ther-  
foze away with labour or abyde any coule. There are two  
ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the  
toppes of the present mountaynes. One of these is named *Co-*  
*moisyx*, whose course is towarde the West, and fauleth into  
the chanell of *Naba*. The other is cauled *Tirevotus*: which run-  
nyge towarde the East, ioynech with the ryuer of *Iunus*. In  
the Ilande of *Creta* (nowe cauled *Candic*) as I passed by in  
my legacie to the Soldane of *Alcayr* or *Babylon* in *Egypte*,  
the *Venetians* coulde me that there laye suche a region in the  
toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee  
more frutefull of wheate cozne then any other region of the  
Iland. But forasmuch as once the *Cretenses* rebelled agens  
the *Venetians*, and by reason of the streight and narrow way  
to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes  
against chauctozitie of the Senate, and at the length beinge  
forwerped with warres, rendered the same, the Senate com-  
maunded that it shulde bee lefte deserte, and the streightes of  
Chenteraunces to bee stopped, lest any shulde ascende to the  
region without their permissyon. Yet in the yeare of *Christe*  
*M. D. ii.* lycence was graunted to the husband men to tyll  
and manure the region, on suche condition that no suche as  
were apte to the warres, myght enter into the same. There  
is also an other region in *Hispaniola* named *Cotoy* after the  
same name. This diuiderh the boundes of the prouinces of  
*Vbabo* and *Calabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines.  
But bycause it is baren, it is not muche inhabited. Yet is it  
richest in golde: For the originall of the abundaunce of gold,  
beginneth here: In so muche that it is not gathered in smaule  
graines and sparkes as in other places: but is founde hole,  
massie, and pure, emonge certaine softe stones and in the bai-  
nes of rockes, by breakynge the stones wherof, they folowe  
the waynes of golde. They haue founde by experience, that  
the wayne of golde is a lpyunge tree: And that the same by  
all wayes that it spreadeth & springerh from the roote by the  
softe porres and passages of the pearth, putterh forth bran-  
ches euen vnto the hyppermost part of the earth, & ceaseth not  
vntyl it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time,  
it shewerh forth certaine bewtifull colours in the seeede of  
floures, rounde stones of golden earth in the seeede of frutes,

II

and

This habi-  
tantes of his-  
paniola can  
abyde no la-  
bour nor  
coule.

The Iland of  
*Creta* or *Can-  
dic*, vnder the  
domini on of  
the *Venetia-  
ans*.

Pure and  
massie golde  
in the region  
of *Cotoy*.  
The wayne of  
golde, is a lpy-  
unge tree.

These colers  
or floures are  
cauled *War-  
chastes*,  
*pyures*.

## The thyrde decade

and thynne plates in steede of leanes. These are they whiche are disperced throughout the hole Flannde by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the sprynges owte of the montaynes, and biolent faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that such graines are not engendered where they are gathered: especialy on the dry land: but otherwile in the ryuers. They say that the roote of the golde tree extendeth to the center of the earth & there taketh nourishment of increase. For the deeper that they dygge, they fynd the trunkes therof to be so muche the greater as farre as they maye folowe it for abundaunce of water springing in the montaynes. Of the braunches of this tree, they fynde summe as smaule as a threde, and other as bygge as a mannes fynger accordyng to the largenesse or straghtnesse of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sometymes chaunced vpon hole caues sustented and borne vp as it were with golden pylars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the braunches ascende: The whiche beyng fylled with the substance of the trunkes creapyng from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe owte. It is oftentimes diuided by encounteryng with sum kynde of harde stone. Yet is it in other clyftes nourished by the exhalacons and vertue of the roote. But nowe perhappes youe will aske me what plentie of golde is brought from thence. Youe shall therfore vnderstande that onely owte of Hispaniola, the sum of foure hundred and sumtymes fyue hundred thownde ducates of gold is brought yearely into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion deuote to the kynges Exchequer, which amounteth to the sum of a hundred and fourescore, or fourescore and ten thousande Castellanes of golde, and sumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Flannde of Cuba and Sancti Iohannis (otherwile cauled Baribocna) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue sayde thus muche of golde, it shall suffice. Wee wyll nowe therfore speake sumwhat of salte wherwith wee may season and reserue suche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of Banoa, in the montaynes of Daguao, about twelue myles distant from the salte lake cauled Caspius, there are salte bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as stoones, also clearer and whiter then cristall. There are lykewise suche salte bayes whiche growe woonderfully in

The roote of the golden tree.

The braunches of the golden tree.

Caues sustented with pylars of golde.

The stonnes of the golde mynes.

What gold is brought yearely from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salte of the montaynes, very hard and cleare.

the (now called *Catalonia*) in the territorie of the Duke of *Catalonia* the chiefe ruler in that region. But suche as knowe them bothe, affirme that these of *Bainoa* are moſte notable. They ſaye alſo that this can not be clefve without wedges and bea- telles of Iron. But that of *Lalotans*, maye eaſlye bee broken as I my ſelfe haue proued. They therfore compare this to ſuz- che ſtoones as may eaſelye bee broken: And the other to mar- ble. In the prouince of *Caxima*, in the regions of *Iguanas*, *Cat- licoos*, and *Guariagus*, there are ſpryngeſe whole waters are of maruelous nature, beyng in the ſuperficial or uppermoſte parte, freſhe: In the mydded, myxt of ſalte and freſhe: And in the loweſt parte, ſalte and ſower. They thincke that the ſalte water of the ſea, iſſewerth owte ſoftely, and the freſhe, to ſprinke owte of the mountaynes. The one ſauleth downe and the other rſerth: & are not therfore ſo vniueſal- ly myxt wherby the one may beterey corrupt thother. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of theſe ſprin- geſe, he ſhal perceawe the ground there to bee ſo hollowe, that the reboundyng noyſe of a horſeman commynge may be harde for the ſpace of three myles, and a foote man one myle. In the laſte region toward the ſouthe named *Gusccuarina*, in the lordſhyp of *Zauana*, they ſay there are certeyne wyld men whi- che lyue in the caues & denes of the montaynes, contented onely with wilde fruices. Theſe men neuer vſed the compa- nyſe of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becoome tame. They lyue without any certayne dwellynge places, and with- oute tyllage or culturynge of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in oulde tyme lyued in the golden age. They ſay alſo that theſe men are withoute any certayne language. They are ſumtymes ſcene. But owre men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they coome to the ſyght of men, and perceyue any makynge toward them, they flye ſwifter then a harte. Ye they affirme them to bee ſwifter then grehouldes. What one of theſe ſolitary wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearynge. So it is that owre men huryng granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke wods, certen of the repaired thither in the mooneth of Septerber in the yeare M. D. viii. In the meane tyme, one of theſe wyld men came leapyng owte of the woodde. And approchynge ſumwhat toward them with ſmyling countenance, ſoodenly ſnatched

Salt as hard  
as ſtones.

Spryngeſe of  
ſalt, freſhe  
and ſower  
water.

holowes  
in the  
grounde

Certeyne  
wyld men  
lyuing in caues  
and denes

men without  
a certeyne  
language

men as ſwift  
as grehouldes

A wyld man  
runneth a-  
way with a  
chylde

## The thyrde decade.

byppe a childe of therse beyng the soonne of the owner of the  
 graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the Ilande. He  
 ranne awaye with the childe, and made spygnes to owre men  
 to folowe hym. Many folowed aswel of owre men as of the  
 naked inhabytantes, but all in vayne. Thus when the plea-  
 saunt wanderer perceaued that the Christians ceased to pur-  
 sue hym, he lefte the childe in a crosse waye by the whiche the  
 swynehearδες were accustomed to dryue the swyne to their  
 pasture. Shortly after, a swynehearde founde the chylde and  
 brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge hym selfe  
 for sorowe, supposynge that wyld man to haue byn one of  
 the kynde of the Canibales, and that his soonne was nowe  
 deuoured. In the same Ilande they gather pytche whiche  
 sweareth owte of the rockes, beyng muche harder and sou-  
 rer then the pitche of the tree: and is therfore moze commo-  
 dious to calke or defende shyppes agaynst the woormes cau-  
 led *Bromas*, wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This I-  
 lande also byngeth fourth pitche in two kyndes of trees, as  
 in the Pyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede noe  
 speake of the pyne tree, because it is engendered and knowen  
 in maner euery where. Lett vs therfore speake sumwhat of  
 the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitche is lykewyse gathered of  
 it as of the pyne tree: althoughe summe saye that it is gathe-  
 red by distylling or droppynge of the woode when it is burnt.  
 It is a straunge thyng to here of the leafe thereof: and how  
 necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to  
 be thought that this is the tree in the leaues wherof the Cha-  
 deans (beyng the fyrste fynders of letters) expressed their  
 myndes before the vse of paper was knowen. This leafe is a  
 spanne in breadyth and almost round. Owre men wyte in them  
 with pynnes or needles or any suche instrumentes made of me-  
 tall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee  
 laboghed at what owre men haue perswaded the people of  
 the Ilande as to chynge this leafe. The symple soules be-  
 leue that at the commandement of owre men, leaues do speak  
 and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie  
 by this meanes. One of owre men dwellynge in the citie of  
*Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, delyuered to his seruaunte  
 (beyng a man bozne in the Ilande) certayne rosted connies,  
 whiche they caule *Vitas* beyng no bygger then myse) wyl-  
 lynge

Pitche of the  
rocke.

Pitche of two  
kyndes of  
trees.  
The pine  
tree.  
The tree  
*Copeia*.

The leafe of  
a tree in the  
see de of  
paper.

They beleue  
that leaues  
do speake.  
A pietie  
stone.

lynge hym to carie the same to his frende whiche dwelte fur-  
ther within the Ilande. This messenger, whether it were  
that he was therto constrained through hunger, or emptied  
by appetite, deuoured three of the countiees by the waye.

He to whome they were sente, wrot to his frynde in a leafe  
howe manye he receaued. When the mayster had looked a  
whyle on the leafe in the presence of the seruaunt, he sayde  
thus vnto hym. Ah soonne, where is thy faythe? Coude  
thy gredye appetee preuaile so muche with the as to cause  
the to eare the countiees commytted to thy fydeltye?

The poore wretche reembelynge and greatlye amased, confessed  
his faute: And therewith desyred his mayster to tell hym  
howe he knewe the trewth therof. This leafe (quod he)

whiche thou brooghtest me, hath coulde me all. Then hee  
further rehearsed vnto hym the houre of his coomynge to  
his frende, and lykelye of his departyng when hee re-  
toured. And thus they meryly deceaue these seely soules

and keepe theym vnder obedyence: In so muche that they  
take owt men for goddes, at whose commaundement lear-  
nes doo disclose suche thynges as they thyncke mooste hyd  
and secrete. Bothe the sydes of the leafe receaueth the for-  
mes of letters euen as dooeth owt paper. It is thyccker  
then double parchement, and meruelous tough. While it  
is yet stonylyng and newe, it sheweth the letters whyte  
in greene. And when it is drye, it becommeth whyte and  
harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters were yelow.

It dooeth not corrupte or putryfy: nor yet looseth the let-  
ters thoughe it bee wette: nor by any other meanes excepte  
it bee burnt. There is an other tree named *Xagus*: the iuise  
of whose soure apple beyng of a darke redde colour, stay-  
neth and colourerth what soo euer is touched therewith: And  
that soo fyrmely, that noo washyng canne take it awaye  
for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe,  
the iuise looseth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of  
good tast. There is also an herbe whose smoke (as we haue  
rehered the like befoze of a certen woodde) is deadly poison.

On a tyme when the kynges assembled rogether and conspi-  
red the destruction of owt men, where as they durste not at-  
tempre thentrepryse by open watre, they diuise was, prui-  
tye to lay many bundels of those herbes in a certeyne house,

which

Ignorance  
causeth ad-  
miracion.

The leafe  
wherin they  
wrote.

A strange col-  
our of the  
iuise of an  
apple.

An herbe  
whose smoke  
is poison.

## The thyrde decade.

whiche shortly after they intended to set on fyre, to thintent that othere men makynge haste to quenshe the same, myght take theyr death with the smoke therof. But theyr purposed practyse beinge betrayed, thantours of the diuise were punished accordyngly. Nowe (moste holy father) for as much as yowre holynesse wyrteth that what so euer we haue writen of the newe worlde, dooth please yowre ryght well, wee wyll reherse certeyne thynges owt of order, but not greatly from othere purpose. Of the settinge the rootes of *Mazium*, *Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and such other beinge theyr common foode, and of thuse of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before. But by what meanes they were fyrste applyed to the commonditic of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to entreate sumwhat hereof.

### The nyynth booke of the thyrde Decade.

The kyndes of frutes wherwith the inhabitants there lyled fyrst.



Necessarie the moother of all artes.

THEY saye that the fyrste inhabitants lyled contented with the rootes of dates, and *Magucans*, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto that which is commonly cauled *Sengrene* or *Dypin*. Also the rootes of *Buaiegans*, whiche are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto puffes of the earth or *multheromes*. They did lykewise eate *Gusieros*, lyke vnto *persenepes*: *Cibaios* lyke nuttes, *Cabaios* and *Watoanes*, lyke vnto onions, with dyuers other suche rootes. They say that after many yeares, a certeyne *Baltion*, that is, a wyse oulde man, sawe vppon the bankes syde, a bushe lyke vnto fenel: and transplantyng the roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by nooryshyng it in gardens. This was the begynnynge of *Iucca*, which at the fyrste was deadely popson to all suche as dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it to bee of pleasaunte taste, they decerned many wayes to proue the vse therof: And at the length founde by experyence that beinge sodde or fryed, it was lesse hurtfull: by whiche meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the veneme lyinge hyd in the iuse of the roote. Thus by dryyng, saltyng, sealyng, and otherwyse temperyng it, they brought it

to theyr fine breade which they caule *Casabi*, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of manns then breade made of wheate, bycause it is of easyer digestion. The same is to bee vnderstoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Mazium* whiche they haue chosen for their chiefe meate amonge the seedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the daughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (withe suche other corne as are nowe most in vse amonge men) in *Egypte* of certeyne graynes taken owte of the muddie dyuen from the mountaynes of *Ethiopia* by thincrease of the ryuer *Nilus*, and lefte in the plaine at such tyme as *Nilus* resorted ageyne to his chanell. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who firste nourished and increased such chosen seedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is knowne by theyr leaues and aiores. One kynde of these, is cauled *Guaraguari*. This is whyte boothe within & without. Another named *Guaraguri* is of vpolet colour without & whyte within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caule *Zorauos*. These are redde without and whyte within. *Squicetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tenna*, is all together of vpolet colour. *Hobos* is yelow booth of skynne and inner substance. There is an other named *Atiburbeix*: The skynne of this is of vpolet colour, and the substance whyte. *Aniguamir*, hath his skynne also of vpolet colour, and is whyte within. *Guaccaraca*, hath a whyte skynne, and the substance of vpolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearall of these, I shal prouoke the spures of inlicitious persons ageynst me which wyll scozne these omdoinges for that we haue wyrtten of many such smaule thynges to a pryncer occupped in suche weyghty affayres, as vnto poble holpnes vppon whose shulders resteth the burthen of the hole *Christiane* worlde. But I wolde aske of these many famous enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether *plinie* and such other famous wyrters, when they dyrected and dedicated such thynges to kynges and prynces, entended only to proueyte them to whom they consecrated the fruite of theyr knowleage. They sumtymes intermyt famous thynges with obscure thynges, lycht with heauie, and greate with smaule, that by the foortheraunce of prynces, they vniuersall posteritie myght enioye the fruition of the knowleage of thynges.

and

The fine  
breade *Casabi*, made  
of the rootes  
of *Zucca*.

howe *Ceres*  
firste founde  
wheate and  
barley in  
*Egypte*.

The rootes  
of *ages*.

The antonre  
excute.

## The thyrde decade.

At other tymes also, beinge intent about particular thinges, and desyrous of newe thynges, they occupied them selues in the searchinge of particular tractes and coastes, with suche thynges as nature brought forth in the same, by this meanes to coome the better to moze absolute and vniuersal knowleage. Let them therefore contemne owre doinge: And wee wyll laugh to scozne, not theyr ignozance and stouthe, but pernicious curiosnes: And therewith haunge pitie of theyr frowarde dispositions, wyll commit them to the venemous serpentis of whom enrie tooke his fyrst originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly contente vs that these thynges do please yowre holynes: And that yowre doo not dispise owre simple bestures wherewith we haue only weaved together and not adourned, gathered and not described such maruelous thynges in the garnyng wherof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunnynge. Owre desyre is none other but herein for yowre sake to doo owre endeuoure that these thynges maye not peryshe. Let euery man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the sheepe or bullocke soule in the market, nothyng remayneth in the eueryng, because the shulder pleaseth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, some haue most phantasia to the bowels, and some to the feete. Thus haunge enough wandered, lette vs returne to owre purpose and declare with what woordes they salute the kynges chyldren when they are fyrst bozne: or howe they apply the begynnynge of theyr lynes to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therfore when the kyng hath a sonne bozne, such as dwel neare about his pallace or byllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where one saluteth the newe bozne chyld with one name, and an other with another name. God saue the thowse thynginge lampe sayth one: An other canker hym bygght and cleare. Some name him the victourer of his enemies: and other some, the puissaunt conquerour descended of bludde royall, and bygghter then gold, with byuers other suche bayne names. Therfore lyke as euery of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus, Parthicus, Armenicus, Dacicus, Gothicus, and Germanicus*, accordynge to the titles of theyr parentes and auncestours, euen so by thimposition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beucbicus Anacachoa* the lord of the region of *Xaragza* (of whome and of the wyfe woman

By what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are bozne. The names and titles of the Romane Emperours.

Anachsona his syster, we haue spoken largely in the fyrste Decade) was cauled by all these names solowynge: *Tureigus* *Hobin*: whiche is as muche to saye, as, a kynge thynynge as bygght as lator, *starek*, that is, bygghte: *Hulbo*, *hyghneide*: *Duibeynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all these names and more then fortye other suche, dooeth kynge *Beuchius* magnifye hym selfe as often as he commaunderh any thynge to bee doone or causeth any proclamation to bee made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leaue owte any of these names, the king thynketh it to sounde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is also of other. Howe fondely they vse them selues in makynge their testaments, wee wylle now declare. They leaue thinheritaunce of their kyngdomes to the eldest sonnnes of their eldest systers. If thee fayle, to the eldest of the seconde syster and so of the thirde if the second also faile. For they are owte of doubtre that those children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remaine none of their systers children, they leaue thinheritaunce to their broothers. And if they faile, it descendeth to their owne sonnnes. Laste of all, if al these faile, they assigne it to the woorthiest, as to hym that is of greatest power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their subiecttes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lysteth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to bee buried with hym. *Anichona* the syster of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of suche wisedome and cunnynge that in makynge of rhymes and balettes shee was counted a prophetisse emonge the beste, commaunded, that emonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrest (whose name was *Guanabatabenechina*) shulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her waytyng maydes with her. Shee wolde also haue appointed dyuers other to that wyse, if shee had not byn otherwise perswaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of saincte *Fraunces* order whiche chaunced then to bee present. They saye that this *Guanabatabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in bewtie. She buried with her all her iewelles and thentire of her best ornaments. Their custome is, to place besyde euery of them in their sepulchres, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Casabbi*.

Howe they  
make their  
testamentes

So dyd grea  
Alexander

The kynges  
wyues and  
concubines  
are buried  
with hym.

They burie  
their iewel  
with them.  
A dreame of  
an other lyfe  
after this.

## The thyrd decade

where it ray-  
neth but sel-  
dome.

*zabbi.* In *Xaragus* the regyon of this kynge *Beuchius*, and in *Hozua*, parte of the regyon of *Calabo*, also in the fayre vale of *salte* and freshe lakes, and lykewise in the region of *Yaguino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome. In al these regyons are fosses or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conuycy the waters in order to water their fyeldes, with no lesse arte then doo thinhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcien* in *Spartaria* for the seldome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of

where it ray-  
neth much.

*Bainoa* from *Calabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guacciarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth. Also the confynes of the chiefe citie named *saincte Dominike* are moister then is necessary. In other places, it rayneth mo-

variable mo-  
tions of the  
elementes.

derately. There are therfore in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, dy-  
uers & variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the  
lyke of manye other regions. Of their colonies or

The colonies  
and vyllages  
which the  
Spanyarden  
haue buylded

mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande  
we haue spoken suffcientely beefore. They haue sence  
that tyme buylded these vyllages: *Portus Plate*, *Portus Regalis*, *La-*  
*res*, *Villanous*, *Azuam*, and *Salusterra*. Hauynge sayde thus muche

The other I-  
landes about  
Hispaniola,

of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* the moother and ladye of the other  
Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the mooste bewtifull wyfe of  
*Neptunus* the god of the sea, let vs nowe entreate sumwhat of  
her *Nymphes* and faire *Nereides* which wate vppon her and

The Ilande  
Aretbusa.

adourne her on euery syde. Wee wyll therfore begynne at the  
nearest cauled the newe *Aretbusa*, soo named of the fontayne  
*Aretbusa* in the Ilande of *Sicilie*. This is famous by reason

A spryngerun-  
nyng vnder  
the sea frome  
Hispaniola to  
Aretbusa.

of a sprynge: but otherwyse vnpofytable. Oure men nam-  
med it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycause it hath onely twoo trees  
groynge in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fountaine that com-  
meth from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* throughe the secrete pas-  
sages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh forth in this  
Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaia* runneth vnder the sea  
from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh forth in the Ilande of  
*Sicilie* in the fontayne *Aretbusa*. That the fontayne of this  
newe *Aretbusa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*,  
it is manifest hereby, that the water is therwynghe otwe of the  
fontayne, byngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche  
growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They saye that  
the fontayne hath his originall from the ryuer *Yamiroa* in  
the region of *Guacciarima* confynnge with the land of *Zauana*.

This Ilande is not passe a myle in circuite, and commodious for sylther men. Directly towarde the East (as it were the porter keypunge the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwylse cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This aboundeth with golde: and in fruitfull soile, is equall with her moother *Hispaniola*. In this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, whiche applye them selues to gather ynge of golde. Towarde the west on the North syde, great *Cuba* (for the longenesse therof, longe supposed to be the continent or fyne lande) wardeth ower *Tethys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And from the East to the Weste, is dwyded in the mydde with the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hispaniola* and the other lpyng on the South syde of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the sayde Tropyke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers supposed to bee inhabitable & desert by reason of the seruent heate of the soone in that clyme as they coniectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion. They asseyrme that rycher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hispaniola*. They saye also that euen nowe while I wyte these thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the meltyng, amountynge to the quantitie of a hundred and fourescore thousande Castellans of gold, an argument surely of great rycheffe. *Jamaica* is more towarde the Southe then these: And is a pleasaunte and fruitfull Ilande, of soyle apte for corne, grasses, and lettes, it consisteth of onely one mountayne. The inhabitants are warrlyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to *Sicilie* in bygnesse. They whiche of late searched it more exactly, saye that it is sumwhat lesse: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and precious stoones, as the like was supposed of *Cuba* at the begynnynge. The Ilande of *Guadalupe* (fyrist named *Caraqueira*) lpyng on the Southe syde of *Hispaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as in the reade of great *Britayne* nowe cauled *Englande*, and *Calidonia* nowe cauled *Scotlande*) beinge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Anime Album*, whose fume is holesome against reumes and heauynesse of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth

The Iland of Sancti Iohannis.

The Ilande of Cuba.

habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of Jamaica.

The Iland of Guadalupe.

England and Scotlande.

The gumme cauled *Anime album*.

## The thyrde decade.

**Dares.**

**fine trees.**

**The Canibales.**

**whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women,**

**hony in trees and rockes.**

**The Ilande desiderata.  
The Ilande Salanta.  
The Ilandes of Todos Sanctos or Barbata.**

**The Ilander monferratus**

engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to conteyne a certayne swete meale. As oovre husbande men are accustomed to referue cheskenuttes and suche other harde fruities all the wynter, soo do they the dates of this tree, beyngge muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, wyne trees of the beste kynde, and suche other deyntie dyshes of nature, wherof wee haue spoken largely befoze. Ye, they thyncke that inhabitauntes of other Ilandes, had their seedes of soo many pleasaunt fruities from hence. For the Canibales beinge a wylde and wanderynge people, and ouer runnyngge all the countreys aboute them to hunte for mannes fleshe, were accustomed to bryngge home with them what so euer they founde straunge or profytable in any place. They are intractable, and wyll admytte no straungiers. It shall therfore bee needefull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vse to inueneime their arrowes. When the men goe sooth of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coastes ageyns suche as attempte to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym selfe perswaded me, as I haue sayde in the fyrste decade. This Ilande hath also frutes full mountaynes and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nouryssheth honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered among the briers and bramble bushes. Aboute .xxviii. myles Eastward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which oovre men named *Desiderata*, beyngge .xx. myles in circuite and verry fayre. Also aboute ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Salanta*, beyngge thirrie myles in circuite and playne. It was so named for the neatenesse and bewtifulnes therof. Wyne myles distant from *Guadalupea* toward the East, there are fyve smaule Ilandes named *Todos Sanctos* or *Barbata*. These are full of rockes and barren: yet necessarye to bee knowen to suche as vse to trauallye the seas of these coastes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea* .xxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monferratus*, conteynyngge in circuite fortye myles, hauynge also in it a mountayne of notable heyghe.

heyght. The Ilande named *Antipua*, distaunte from *Guadalupe* thirtie myles, is aboute fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonius* the soonne and heyre of *Christophorus Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he lefte in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late emonge the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the lefte syde of *Hispaniola* towarde the Southe, neare vnto the haven *Botes*, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell maruelous thynges of the monsters of the sea aboute this Ilande, and especially of the tortoyles. For they saye that they are bigger then greate rounde targettes. At suche tyme as the heate of nature moueth theym too generation, they coome foorth of the sea: And makynge a deepe pytte in the lande, they laye thre or foure hundreth egges therein. When they haue thus emptied their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the sande ageyne into the pytte, as maye suffice to couer the egges: And soo resorte ageyne to the sea, nothyng carefull of their successyon. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of these beastes, there creaketh owte a multitude of tortoyles, as it were pytemares; stowynge owte of an ante hyl: And this onely by the heate of the soonne withowte any helpe of their parentes. They saye that their egges are in maner as bygge as geese egges. They also compare the fische of these tortoyles, to be equall with beale in taste. There are besyde these, unnumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet searched: noz yet is it greatly necessarye to syfte this meale so fynely. It maye suffice to vnderstand that there are large landes & many regions whiche shal hereafter receaue owre nations, tounses, and maners: and therewith embrace owre religyon. The *Troians* dydde not soodenly replenythe *Asia*, the *Tyrians* *Aibia*, noz the *Greekes* and *Phoenices* Spayne. As touchynge the Ilandes which lye on the north syde of *Hispaniola*, I haue let passe to speake. For albeit they are commondious for tyllage and fyshynge, yet are they lefte of the *Spanyades* as poore and of litle value. We wyll nowe therefoze take owre leaue of this owlde *Tethis* with her moyst and watery *Nymphes*: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance the bewtiful ladye of the South sea which is crowned with

The Ilande  
*Antiqua*,

The Ilande  
*Portus Bellus*  
Great Tortoy  
les.

The genera  
tion of Tortoy  
les.

The egges of  
Tortoyles.

Innumerable  
Ilandes.

*Troians*.  
*Tyrians*.  
*Greekes*.  
*Phenicians*.

The North  
Ilandes.  
The Ilandes  
of the South  
sea.

## The thyrde decade.

The Ilande of  
pearles.

wylde beasts  
must be tamed  
with the rod.

great pearles, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treasure. In my epistell booke whiche I sente vnto your holynes this last yeare, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnez Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche passed ouer the dangerous mountaynes towarde the South sea, learned by repute that in the prospect of those coastes there laye an Ilande aboundynge with pearles of the greatest sorte: And that the kynge therof was ryche and of great power, infestynge with warres the other kynges his boztherers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was left vntouched by reason of the ragynge tempestes whiche troubled that South sea thre moonethes in the yeare. But it is nowe better knowne to ovr men, who haue nowe also brought that fierce kynge to humanitie: and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke sanctified with the water of baptisme with all his familie and kyngedome. It shall not therfore bee from ovr purpose to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what meanes these thynges were so happely atchpyed.

## The tenth booke of the thyrde Decade.

An expeditio  
to the Ilande  
of *Dites* in  
the South sea



The Ilande of  
*Margaritea*.

*Os Draconis*,  
*Paris*.

In the arrivall of *Petrus Arias* the newe gouernour of *Daricna*, he gaue commaundment that one *Gaspas Moralis* shuld take in hande therpeditio to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therfore tooke his vyage fyrst to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaschus* before had conccyled and left fryndes to the Christians. They frendely and magnifycally enterreyned ovr men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to passe ovr into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearles which in the latin tonge are cauled *Margarite*. For they fyrst cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paris*, in the which also is founde greate plentie of pearles. *Gaspas* brought with hym onely thre score armed men to the Ilande, for that he coulde conuey ouer no greater number by reason of the smaulesnes and narrownes of theyr boates

boates or barkes which they caule *Culebas*, made of one hole  
 piece of tymber as we haue sayde before. The kynge of the *A conflict.*  
 lande came forth against them fiercely with cruell and threa-  
 tenynge countenance, and with a great bande of armed men  
 cryng in maner of a larome and in token of the battayle,  
*Guaxzauara, Guaxzauara*, which is as much to saye as, battayle a-  
 geynst the enemye: And is as it were a watch worde to giue  
 thoutset, wherewith also they threwe theyr dartes. For they  
 haue not chuse of bowes. They were so obstinate and despe-  
 rate that they assayed oovre men with foure *Guaxzauaras*, that  
 is, battayles. At the length oovre men with certeyne of *Chiap-*  
*es* and *Tumacchus* men (beinge oulde enemies to this kynge of  
 the Ilande, gorte the vpper hande by reason they assayed  
 the kynge soddenly and vnwares. yet was he determyned to  
 assemble a greater powder, and once ageyne to attempt the for-  
 tune of warre, but that he was otherwylse perswaded by the  
 kinges his boztherers which counceled him to gyue ouer and  
 submyt hym selfe: sumtyme by the example of them selues and  
 other threatenynge the destruction of his flooythynge kynge-  
 dome: And otherwhyles declarynge vnto hym the humani-  
 tie and gentelnes of oovre men, by whose frendship he might  
 obteyne honoure and quyetnes to hym and his: wyllyng hym  
 furthermoze to consider what chaunced vnto them which the  
 yeare before resysted and aduencured the hasarde of the bat-  
 tayle as dyd these kynges, *Poncha, Pocchorrosa, Quarequa, Chiapes,*  
 and *Tumaccus* with such other. By these perswasions, the king  
 submytted hym selfe and came freendely to oovre men whom  
 he conducted to his palaice which they say to be maruelously  
 adourned and princelyke. As soone as they entered into the  
 pallaice, he brought forth a basket of curious woozkeman-  
 shyp and full of pearles which he gaue them. The summe of  
 these pearles amounted to the weyght of a hundreth and ten  
 poundes after viii. vnces to the pounde. Beinge ageyne re-  
 warded of oovre men with such trybles as they brought with  
 them of purpose, as garlandes of Chrystall and glasse and o-  
 ther counterfet stones of dyuers colours, with lookyng glas-  
 ses also and lator belles, and especially two or three Iren-  
 hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapes of gold)  
 he thaught hym selfe abundantly recompensed. They laughe  
 oovre men to scozne that they wyll departe with so great and  
 necessaie

The kynge of  
 the Ilande of  
 Dites submit-  
 teth him  
 selfe.

The kynges  
 palaice.  
 A hundreth &  
 ten pounde  
 weight of  
 pearles.

ares and hat-  
 chets more  
 esteemed the  
 golde.

## The thyrde decade.

necessarie a thyng for any summe of golde: a tynnynge an  
 are or harchet to bee profytable for manye bles of men: and  
 that golde seruetly onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be  
 greatly necessary. Beyng therfore ioyfull and gladd of the  
 frendeshyppe of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand  
 and brought him with certeine of his familiars to the highest  
 towre of his palaice, from whense they myght prospecte the  
 mayne sea. Then castyng his eyes about hym on euery side,  
 and lookynge towarde the Easte, he sayde vnto them. Be-  
 holde here lyeth open befoze yowre the infynite sea extended  
 beyond the soonne beames. Then tournyng hym toward the  
 South and Weste, he sygnified vnto them that the lande  
 which laye befoze their eyes, the toppes of whose great moun-  
 taynes they myght see, was exceedynge large. Then com-  
 myng somewhat neauer, he sayde: Beholde these Ilandes  
 on the ryght hande and on the lefte, whiche all obeye vnto  
 owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and blessed, if yowe  
 canle those landes blessed whiche abounde with golde and  
 perle. Wee haue in this Ilande lytle plentie of golde: But  
 the deepe places of all the seas aboute these Ilandes, are full  
 of perles: wherof yowe shall receaue of me as many as yow  
 wyll requyre, so that ye persyste in the bonde of frendeshyppe  
 whiche yowe haue begonne. I greatly desyre yowre frendes-  
 hyppe, and wolde gladlye haue the fruition of yowre thyn-  
 ges, whiche I sette muche more by then myllions of perles.  
 yowe shall therfore haue no cause to doubte of any vnfayth-  
 fulnesse or breach of frendeshyppe on my behalfe. Owre men  
 gaue hym lyke friendly woordes: and encouraged hym with  
 many fayre promysse to doo as he had sayde. When owre  
 men were nowe in a redynesse to departe, they couenaunted  
 with hym to paye yearely to the greate kynge of Castyle a  
 hundredth pounce weyghre of perles. He gladlye agreed to  
 their request, and tooke it for no great thyng: nor yet thought  
 hym selfe any whitte the more to becoome tributarie. With  
 this kynge they founde suche plentie of hartes and connies,  
 that owre men stondynge in their houses myght kyll as ma-  
 ny as them lyfe with their arrowes. They lyue heave verye  
 pleasauntly, haunyng greate plentie of al thynges necessary.  
 This Ilande is scarsely fyre degrees distant from the Equi-  
 noctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breade made of  
 rootes

The kynges  
 woordes.

Ilandes ryche  
 in golde and  
 pearles.

℥. pounce  
 weyght of  
 perles yerely  
 for a tribute.

plentie of  
 hartes and  
 connies.

rootes and the graine of *Maizium*, and wyne made of seedes and frutes, euen as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and in other places aswell in the *Flandes* as in the firme lande. This kynge is now baptised with all his familie and subiectes. His desyre was at his baptisme, to bee named *Petrus Arias* after the name of the gouernour. When oovre men departed, he accompanied them to the sea syde and furnished them with boates to retoune to the continent. Oovre men diuided the perles emonge them, reseruyng the syfte portion to be deliuered to rhothycers of the kynges *Exchequer* in those partes. They saye that these perles were maruelous precious, faire, oriente, and exceedynge bygge: In so muche that they broughte manye with them bygger then hasell nuttes. Of what pryce and value they myghte bee, I consyder by one perle the which *Paulus* predicatour to yovre holines, bowght at the second hand of a marchant of *Venece* for foure & forty thousande ducates, yet emonge those whiche were broughte from this *Flande*, there was one bought euen in *Dariena* for a thousande and two hundredeth Castellans of golde. This was almost as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the gouernour, who gaue it to that noble and faithfull woman his wyfe, of whose maner of departure with her husbände, wee haue made mention before. Wee muste then needes thinke that this was verye precious which was bowght so deare emonge suche a multitude of perles where they were not bowght by one at once, but by poundes and at the least by ounces. It is also to be thought that the *Venece*an marchaunte boughte his for no great summe of mony in the East partes. But he soude it the dearer for that he chaunced to lye in those lasciuious and wanton dayes when men were giuen to suche nyse and superfluous pleasures, and mette with a marchaunte for his purpose. But lettes vs nowe speake sumwhat of the shellfishes in the whiche perles are engendered. It is not vnknowen to yovre holynesse, that *Aristotell*, and *Plinie* his colowber, were of dyuers opinions as concernynge the generation of perles. But these *Indians* and oovre men, rest onely in one a Tertion, not assentynge to them in any other: as eyther that they wander in the sea, or that they moue at anye tyme after they are bozne. They wyll therfore that there bee certayne greene

wyne of frutes and seedes

The kynge is baptised.

The syfte part of perles due to the kynge.

Byg perles.

A perle for a pope.

An other perle of great pryce.

Nyse and superfluous pleasures.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of pearles.

## The thyrd decade.

herbes in the  
bottome of  
the sea,

A hundreth  
perles in one  
shell fyfthe.

The matrice  
of the perle  
fyfthe.

The tyth of  
perles.

places as it were medowes in the bottome of the sea, byn-  
gynge foorthe an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme  
that they haue scene the same: And that they are engende-  
red, nozysht, and growe therein, as we see thyncrease and  
succession of oysters to growe aboute them selues. Also that  
these fyfthes delyteth not in the conuersation or coompanye  
of the sea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one,  
twoo, or thre, or at the moste foure pearles: Affyrmyng that  
in the fyfthyng places of the kyng of this Ilande, there  
was founde a hundreth pearles in one fyfthe, the whiche *Cas-  
par Moralis* the capitayne hym selfe, and his coompanions,  
diligently numbered. For it pleased the kyng at their byn-  
gynge there & in their presence, to commaund his diuers to go  
a fyfthyng for those kynde of fyfthes. They compare the  
matrices of these fyfthes, to the places of conception in hen-  
nes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great mul-  
titudes and clusters: And beleue that these fyfthes byn-  
gynge foorthe their byrth in lyke maner. For the better profe wher-  
of, they saye that they founde certayne pearles coompanyng  
foorthe of their marrees, as beyng nowe coome to the tyme  
of their full rypenesse, and moued by nature to coome owte  
of their mootheres wombe openyng it selfe in tyme conueni-  
ent. Lykewise that within a while after, they sawe other  
succede in lyke maner. So that to conclud, they sawe sum  
coompanyng foorthe, and other summe yet abydinge the tyme  
of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they also became  
loose and opened the matrice. They perceaued the pearles to  
bee inclosed in the mydde of their bellies, there to bee nozys-  
ht and increase as an infante suckyngt his mootheres pap-  
pes within her wombe, before hee moue to coome foorthe of  
her pryue places. And if it chaunce any of these shellfyfthes to  
be founde scattered in the sande of the sea (as I my selfe haue  
scene oysters disparted on the shores in diuers places of the  
Ocean) they affyrme that they haue byn violently dryuen thi-  
ther from the bottome of the sea by force of tempestes, and  
not to haue wandered thither of them selues. But, that they  
become white by the clearenesse of the moonyng dewe, or  
waxe yelowe in troubled wether, or otherwyse that they  
seeme to reioyse in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary  
wyse to bee as it were astonysht and dymme in thunder and  
tempestes

tempestes, with suche other, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men whiche handell the matter but grossely, and enquire no further then occasion serueth. yet do they asserme by their experience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane sorte hygher, and the least hygher of all and nearer to the bymme of the water. And saye therfore that the greatest do not wander: but that they are created, nourysed, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fowe, dyuers, and that but seeldome dare aduenture to diue so deepe to gather them, as wel for feare of the sea crabbes whiche wander amonge these perle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monsters of the sea, as also lest their byrthe shuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And this they saye to bee the cause why the olddest and therfore byggest sea muscles, inhabyte the deepest places from whence they are not lyghly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder these fyshes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger pearles are founde: And that for this cause, there are fewer founde of the byggest sorte. They thyncke also, that when they fyyste faule from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fyshes, by cause they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the smaulest differ from the byggest in a certayne swellynge or impostumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulde muscles cleaueth fast to the shell: But that it is a warte, whiche beyng vased from the shell with a fyke, is rounde and bygght but onely of one syde, and not precions, beyng rather of the nature of the fysh it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue scene certayne of these muscles cleauynge on rockes: yet these but fewe, and nothynge woorth. It is also to bee thought that the pearle fyshes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde sea, or Tappobana, are ruled in suche order as the afore named famous autours haue wrytten. For their opinyon herein is not vtterly to bee reiected, forasmuche as they were learned men and trauayled longe in the serchynge of these thynges. But wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of these sea fyshes and of their egges which the fonde wysenes

where the byggest, meane, and least pearles are engedied

Sea crabbes

The sea muscles wherein pearles are engendied.

## The thyrdē decade

and wantonnesse of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Lette vs therfore entreate somewhat of other particular thynges whiche are come to oðre knowlledge of late. We haue elles where largely described the mouthes of the goulfe of *Vraba*, with sundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that sea. But as concerning the West coastes in the whiche oðre men haue buylded houses and planted their habitations on the banks

The regions  
of the East  
syde of the  
goulfe of *Vraba*.

of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the goulfe, I haue leauned as foloweth.

The region  
of *Caribana*.

They saye that the vniuersal lande of the East region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachyng into the sea, and from the extreame or better moste mouth of the same reachyng the waters of the sea whiche faule into it, cuen but

The original  
of the *Caribes*  
bales.

to *O s Draconis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name called *Caribana*, of the *Caribes* or *Canibales* whiche are founde in euery regyon in this tracte. But from whence they had their particular originall, and howe leauynge their native soyle, they haue spredde their generation so farre lyke a pestiferous contagion, wee wyll nowe declare. Therfore from the fyrste fronte reachyng into the sea (in whose tracte we said that *Fogeda* fastened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne

The vylages  
of *Caribana*.

myles distant, there lyeth a byllage of *Caribana* named *Futracca*. Three myles distant from this, is the byllage of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, because this byllage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute fyve myles from this, is *Feti*. Nyne myles from *Feti*,

manhunters.

is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles from this, *Sorabe*. Oðre men founde all these byllages full of people, all the whiche gyue them selues onely to manhuntynge. In so muche that if they lacke enemyes ageynst whom they maye keepe warre, they exercise crueltie ageynst them selues, and eyther sleye the one the other, or elles dyue the vanquysshed to syghte.

Whereby it is apparante that by these their continuall warres, and dyuyng the one the other oðre of their countreis, this infection hath gonne so farre nor onely on the fyrste lande, but also into the *Ilandes*. I was also aduertised of another thyng the whiche to my iudgement, seemeth woorthye to bee putte in memozye.

One *Cornelis* a iudge in causes of lawe amoung the *Spany- ardes*

ardes of *Darien*, sayth that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugitive which had fledde from the great landes lyinge farre toward the weste, and remayned here wyth a kynge wyth whom he was enterepned.

When this man perceaued the lawier lookyng on his booke, marueylunge thereat, he came runnyng vnto him, and by interpretours of the kynge whom he serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue yowe also bookes wherein yowe may reserue thynges in perpetual memoire: And letters wherby yowe may declare yowre mynde to suche as are absent: And herewith desyred that the booke might bee opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey. But when he sawe theim vnto yke, he sayde further that in his countrey there were cities fortified with waules and governed by lawes: and that the people also vled apparell. But of what religion they were,

I dyd not learne. Yet had othere men knowleage both by the woozdes and signes of this fugitive, that they were circumcised. What nowe thinke yowe hereby (most holy father) what do yowe diuine may come hereof when tyme shall subdue al these vnder yowre throne: Let vs nowe entermynge certeyne smaule thynges amonge these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitte that which chaunced to

*hannes Sobysius*, who, to searche the South syde of the supposed continent, departed with thre shippes from porte *Ioppa* (not farre distant from the Ilandes of *Gades* or *Tales* in the *Ocean*) the fourth day of the *Ides* of *September* in the yere *M. D. xv.* What successe *Iohannes Pontius* had, whom the newe gouernour *Petrus Brias* appoynted to vanquish and destroy the *Caribes* or *Canibales*, deuourers of mans flesh. Also to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, whiche were sent forth dyuers wayes at the same tyme: As *Gonzalus Bada-*

*ocus*, *Franciscus Bezerra*, and *Valleius*, *Iohannes Solicius* tooke the mat *ter* in hande in an euill houre. He sayled beyonde the poynt of *saynt Augustine*, (whiche they caule *Cabo. s. Augustini*) toward the South syde of the supposed continent beyonde the *Equinoctiall* lyne. For (as we haue sayde before) that poynt reacheth Southwarde to the seuenth degree of the South poole cauled the pole *Antarctike*. He proceeded in that viage syre hundredeth leagunes: And founde the lande from the poynte to

Bookes.  
Looke in the  
begynnyng of  
the booke of  
the landes  
lately founde.

Circumcised  
people.

what chaunced  
to the Ca  
pitaines whi  
che the gover  
nour sent dy  
uers wayes.

Lookedecade  
iii. liber. vi.

The vyage of  
*Iohannes So  
lusius*.  
*Cap. s. Augustini*

extende

## The thyrde decade.

John Solysius is slaine of the Canibales. The fiercenes of the Canibales.

Basell.

Johannes Pontius is repulsed by the Canibales.

extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctiall; that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As he sayled thus forwarde, hauynge nowe on his backe halfe the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade) and the regions of *Paris* lpyng northwarde frome hym, and prospectynge towarde the pole Arctike, he chaunced to faule into the handes of the fylthye Canibales. For these craftie foxes seemed to make signes of peace, when in theyr mindes they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And espyng their enemies a farre of, beganne to swalowe theyr spetle as their mouches watered for greedines of theyr pray. As unhappye *Solysius* descended with as many of his coompanie as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shippe, loodenly a great multytude of thinhabitanes byuste foorth vpon them, and slew them euery man with clubbes, euen in the syght of theyr felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it all to pyeters. Not one man escaped. Theyr furie not thus satisfied, they cutte the slayne men in peces euen vpon the shore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they being stycken with feare though this exemple, durst not coome foorth of theyr shippes, or devise howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coompanyons. They departed therefore from these vnforsunate coastes: And by the waye ladyng theyr shippes with basell returned home ageyne with losse and heauie chere. Of these thynges I was aduertysed of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shal haue moze particular knowleage hereafter. *Johannes Pontius* was also repulsed by the Canibales in the Glannde of *Guadalupes* beinge one of the chiefe Glanndes of theyr habitacion. For when they sawe oovre men a farre of on the sea, they ley in ambushe loodenly to inuade them when they shulde coome alande. Oovre men sent foorth a fewe foore men and with them theyr laundresses to walke theyr shertes and sheetes. For from the Glannde of *Ferre* beynge one of the Glanndes of *Canarie* (euen vnto this Glannde, for the space of foure thousande and twoo hundzeth myles) they had seene no lande where they myght fynde any fresh water: for as muche as in all this large space, the Ocean is without Glanndes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the Canibales assayled them, caried awaye the women, and put the

the men to suche distresse that fewe of them escaped. By reas-  
 son wherof, *Pontius* being greatly discomfited, durste not in-  
 uade the *Canibales*, fearynge theyr venemed arrowes which  
 these naked manhunters can direct most certenly. Thus good  
*Pontius* saylpyng of his purpose, was fayne to gyue ouer the *Ca-*  
*nibales*, whome (beinge safe and vnder the house rouse) he  
 threatened to banquythe and destroy. Whether he went from  
 thense, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no  
 further knowleage. By these mylfortunes, *Solsius* losse his  
 lyfe, and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other  
 whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeare. *Iohannes*  
*Aiora* bozne in the citie of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage,  
 sent in steade of the Licuetaunant (as we haue sayde) more to  
 uetous of golde then carefull of his charge or despyous of  
 prayse for well deseruyng, sought occasions of querelyng  
 ageynst the kynges and spoyled many, violently extorpyng  
 golde of them ageynst ryght and equitie: And further hande-  
 led them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel  
 enemies: In so much that they ceased not with desperat myn-  
 des by all meanes they coulde to slei othe men openly or pri-  
 uilye. By reason wherof it is coome to passe, that where be-  
 fore they bartered quirely exchanginge ware for ware, they  
 are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When  
 he had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it  
 is sayd) he fledde priuilye and tooke away a shyppe with him  
 by selth as the common rumoure goeth: No; yet hethereto  
 haue we hard whpyther he went or where he is arryued. Sum  
 suspect that *Petrus Arias* the gouernour shulde consente to his  
 depacture because this *Iohannes Aiora* is brother to *Consalus Aiora*  
 the kynges histoziographer, a man booth lerned, and expert  
 in the discipline of warre: and so much the gouernours friend,  
 that these two amonge a fewe, may be counted examples of  
 rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto theym  
 bothe and haue longe enioyed theyr frendshipp. Yet shall  
 I despyze them bothe to pardone me in declaryng my phan-  
 tasie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragicall affayres  
 of the Ocean, nothyng hath so muche displeasid me as the  
 couerousnes of this man who hath so disturbed the pacified  
 myndes of the kynges. Nowe emonge these troublous chaun-  
 ces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of *Consalus Badiocivis*,

The vryage of  
*Iohannes*  
*Aiora*,  
 Locke decade  
 iii. liber, vi.

The lewde  
 behanour of  
*John Aiora*.

## The thyrde decade.

The Variable  
fortune of So-  
salus Sadato-  
cius.

Cerabaro, De-  
cade. iii. li. iii

The South  
sea.

A leaque con-  
teyneth foure  
myles by sea  
and but thre  
by lande.

The golden  
region of Coi-  
ba Dytes.

Sande myrte  
with golde.  
Howe they  
flaues are  
marked in the  
face.

his felowes, whose prosperous begynnynge, ended with  
unfortunate successe. *Gonsalus* therfore in the moneth of May  
in the yeare of *Christe M. D. xv.* departed from *Dariena* with  
fourescore armed men, directynge his byage towarde the  
Southe, and restinge in no place vntyll he came to the regi-  
on of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, distant from  
*Dariena* about a hundred and fourescore myles: for they caule  
it threescore leaques. He spent certeyne dayes here in *Fidel-*  
*nelle*: for he coulde neyther by sayre meanes nor by foule, al-  
lure the kynge of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye  
thus idelly, there came to hym other fyftie men sente frome  
*Dariena* vnder the gouernauce of capytayne *Lodouicus Mercada*  
who departed from *Dariena* in the calendes of Maye, to thin-  
reent to searche thinner partes of those regyons. When they  
mette together, they determyned after consultation, to passe  
ouer the mountaynes lpyng towarde the Southe, euen vnto  
the Southe sea latelpe founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull  
thyng: That in a lande of suche maruelous longitude in  
other places, they founde it here to bee onely aboute fyftie  
myles distant to the Southe sea: for they counte it, xvii. lea-  
ques, as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not  
by myles. yet saye they that a leaque consisteth of thre my-  
les by lande and foure by sea as wee haue noted before. In  
the toppes of the mountaynes and turnynge of the waters,  
they founde a kynge named *Iuana*, whose kyngedome is also  
named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kynge *Careta*, of whome we  
haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the re-  
gion of this *Iuana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Coiba Di-*  
*tes*, that is, *Coiba* the ryche. For, whersoener they dygged the  
grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate  
chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande whiche they  
caste foorth, myrte with golde. *Iuana* fledde at the coom-  
ynge of owre men, and coulde neuer bee brought ageyne.  
They spoyled all the countrey neare aboute his palayce. wee  
had. they but lytle golde: for hee had. carped all his flutte  
with hym. Here they founde certeyne flaues marked in the  
faces after a straunge sorte. For with a sharpe prycke made  
eyther of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in  
their faces: and foorthwith sprinkelynge a powder theron,  
they moiste the pounced place with a certeyne blacke or redde  
iunife,

iuile, whose substance is of such tenacitie and clamminesse,  
 that it wyll neuer weare awaye. They brought these slaues  
 away with them. They saye that this iuile is of such sharp-  
 nesse and purteth them to such payne, that for extreme dor-  
 loure they haue no stomacke to their meate certaine dayes af-  
 ter. The kynges whiche take these slaues in their warres,  
 vse their helpe in seekyng for golde and in tyllage of the  
 grounde, euen as do othere men. From the pallaice of *Iuana*,  
 folowynge the course of the water aboute tenne myles to-  
 ward the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other  
 kyng, whome othere men named the oulde man, bycause hee  
 was oulde, not passynge of his other name. In the regyon  
 of this kyng also, they founde golde in all places bothe on  
 the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verry fayre and  
 frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departynge  
 from hense, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande leste  
 desolate. They suppose that this was destroyed by ciuile dis-  
 corde for as muche as it is for the mooste parte frutefull, and  
 yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they sawe two men com-  
 myng a barre of. These were laden with breade of *Mazium*,  
 whiche they carryed on their sholders in sakes. Othere men  
 tooke them: and vnderstoode by them that there were two  
 kynges in that tracte: The one was named *Periquete*, whose  
 dwelte neare vnto the sea. The others name was *Totonoga*.  
 This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The  
 two men whiche they mette, were the fyfthers of *Totonoga*,  
 whome he had sente with certayne fardelles of fysh to *Peri-*  
*quete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchaunge.  
 For thus do they communicate their commodities one with  
 an other by exchaunge, without thuse of wycked money.  
 By the conductinge of these two men, they came to kyng  
*Totonoga* dwellinge on the Weste syde of saynre *Michaelles*  
 goulfe in the Southe sea. They had of this kyng, the sum  
 of fyue thousande Castellans of golde bothe rude and artify-  
 cially wrought. Amonge those groumes of rude or natyue  
 golde, there was one sounde of the weyghte of two Castell-  
 lans, whiche argued the plentifull rycheesse of the ground.  
 Following the same coastes by the sea syde toward the West,  
 they came to a kyng whose name was *Taracuru*, of whome  
 they had golde amounyng to the weyghte of eight thousand

Golde.

A fruteful re-  
 gion leste dese-  
 late by ciuile  
 dis-corde.

kyng Per-  
 quete.

S. Michael,  
 kyng Toto-  
 noga.

Six thousand  
 Castellans of  
 golde.

kyng Tara-  
 curu,

## The thyrde decade.

viii. thousand  
pesos of gold

kyng Panama-  
nome.

kyng Tabor.  
kyng Cheru.

liii. thousande  
pesos of gold  
Salte.

kyng Anata.  
xv. thousande  
pesos of gold

They maner  
of warre.

Four score  
thousand Cas-  
tellans of  
golde.

kyng Scoria.  
kyng Pariza.

Basalus Bada-  
locius hath  
the ouerthrow  
and is spoy-  
led of great  
ryches of  
golde.

*Pesos.* Wee haue sayde before that *Pesos* is the weyghte of a Castellane not coyned. From hense they wente to the domi-  
nion of this kynges broother named *Pananome*, who fledde at  
their commyng, and appered no moze afterwarde. They  
saye that his kyngdome is ryche in golde. They spoyled his  
pallaice in his absence. Syre leaques from hense, they came  
to an other kyng named *Tabor*. From thense they came to the  
kyng of *Cheru*. He frendly entercepted owre men, and gaue  
them foure thousande *Pesos* of golde. He hathe in his do-  
minion many goodly salte bayes: the region also aboundeth  
with golde. About twelue myles from hense, they came to an  
other kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had, xv. thousande  
*Pesos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kynges his bozther-  
ers whom he had vanquished by warre. A great part of this  
golde was in rude forme because it was molten when he see  
the kynges houses on fyre whom he spoyled. For they robbe  
and sleie the one the other, sackynge and spynng their villa-  
ges, and wastinge their countreys. They keepe warre barba-  
rouly and to bitter destruction, executing extreme crueltie a-  
geinst them that haue the ouerthrowe. *Gonsalus Badaocius* with  
his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this  
kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kin-  
ges. For, what in bracelets, collers, earinges, breste plates,  
helmettes, and certeine barres wherewith women beare vppe  
their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the sum of  
fourescore thousande Castellans, whiche they had obteyned  
partly by exchaunge for owre thinges where they founde the  
kynges their frendes, & otherwise by forceible meanes where  
they founde the contrary. They had gotten also forty slaues  
whose helpe they vled both for cariage of their vitayles and  
bagagies in the steade of moiles or other beastes of burden,  
and also to relieue suche as were sycke and forweried by rea-  
son of their longe iorneyes and hunger. After these prospe-  
rous viages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to  
the palaice of a kyng named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no such  
thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armye, and assailed  
them straggelyng and vnwares, in suche sorte that they had  
no leasure to put on their armure. He slewe and wounded a-  
bout fyrie, and put the resydue to flyght. They made suche  
had, that they had no respect epyther to the gold they had ga-  
thered,

thered, or to their slaues: but lette all behynde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyse men as concernynge the varyable and inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane thinges, were false, if al thinges shuld haue happened vnto them prosperously. For such is the nature of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentimes delyteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted: and taketh pleasure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to bee impermutable, that who soo wylly applie hym selfe to gather rootes, shall sumtymes meete with sweete lyqueresse, and other whiles with soure cockle. yett vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not longe leape in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundred and fyftie choise souldiers to reuenge the death of ower men: But where as he by chaunce fell sycke, his poure went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieutenant *Gaspar Spinoza*, a Judge in cases of lawe in *Dariena*. At the same time other were sent forth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What shal succede, tyme will bring to ower knowleage. The other two, attempted thinhabitanes beyond the goulfe *Franciscus Bezerra* passed ouer by the corner of the goulfe and the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundred and fyftie souldiers well appointed, went to make warre vpon the *Canibales* euen in *Caribana* their owne chiefe dominion, toward the byllage of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought also with them diuers engens of warre: as thre pieces of ordnanunce whole shot were bygger then egges: Likewise forty archers, and, xxv. hagbutters to thintent to reache the *Canibales* a farre of, and to preuent their venemed arrowes. But what became of hym and his company, or where they arriued, we haue yett no perfecte knowleage. Certaine which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they of *Dariena* stode in great feare lest they also were tossed with sum misfortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obteyned the fore parte of the goulfe. But he passed ouer by an other waye then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and *Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the thre scoze and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee

The Incon-  
stancie of  
fortune.

The expediti-  
on of *Fran-  
ces Bezerra* a-  
geynst the  
*Canibales*.

*Sunaco*.

*Valleius* repul-  
sed of the *Ca-  
nibales*.

## The thyrde decade

lefte fortye and eyght slaine emonge the Canibales. These are  
 the nettes whiche they bringe that came laste from *Dariena*.  
 There came to me the day befoze the Ides of October in this  
 yeare M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made  
 mention befoze) and one *Franciscus Delapuenta*. This *Franciscus*,  
 was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whose chiefe  
 capitaine was *Gonsalus Badaiocius* who hardly escaped the han-  
 des of kyng *Pariza*. These twoo capitaines therfoze, *Rodericus*  
 and *Franciscus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the  
 misfortune whiche befell to *Badaiocius* and his companye, do  
 both affirme, the one that he hath harde, and the other that  
 he hath seene, that in the Southe sea there are diuers Ilan-  
 des lying westwarde from the Iland of *Dites* and saincte Mi-  
 chaels goulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and  
 nourished which bring foorth the same aromaticall fruites,  
 as doth the region of *Collocutea*, This lande of *Collocutea*, with  
 the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marre pla-  
 ces from whence the Portugales haue their spices. And here-  
 by do they coniecture that the land where the fruitfulness of  
 spyce begynneth, shulde not be farre from thense. In so much  
 that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne those coastes, do  
 onely desyre that leaue may be graunted them to seache fur-  
 ther, and that their wil of their owne charges frame and fur-  
 nish the shippes and aduenture the viage to seeke those Ilandes  
 and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes shulde be  
 made and prepared, euen in saincte Michaels goulfe: And  
 not to attempte this vyage by saincte Augustines point, which  
 waye were both longe and dysticulde, and ful of a thousande  
 dangiers, and is saide to reache beyonde the forty degree of  
 the pole Antartike. The same *Franciscus*, being partener of the  
 trauailes and dangiers of *Gonsalus*, saithe that in ouer run-  
 ninge those landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and  
 wolde bozes: and that he toke many of them by an arte which  
 thinhabitantes taught him: whiche was to make pittes oz  
 treches in their walkes, and to couer the same with bowes.  
 By this meanes also they deceaue al other kindes of wild and  
 foure footed beastes. But they take foules after the same man-  
 ner that we do: As focke doues with an other tame focke  
 done brought by in their houses. These they tye by a stryng,  
 and suffer them to flye a litle among the trees. To the which  
 as other

The Ilandes  
 of the south  
 sea.

In this sea ly  
 the Ilandes  
 of Molucca,  
 most frutefull  
 of spices.

*Collocutea*,  
*Cochinus* and  
*Camemorus*,  
 from whence  
 the Portuga-  
 les haue their  
 spices.

he meareth  
 by the streight  
 of Magella-  
 nus.

howe they  
 take hartes  
 and wyde  
 bozes.

focke doues

As other birdes of their kind resort, they kill the with their arrows. Otherwise they take the with nettes in a bare place pouged from trees & bushes: and scattering certeyne seedes rounde about that place, in the myddeste whereof they tye a tame foule or byrde of the kynde of them whiche they desyre to take. In lyke maner do they take poppingiayes and other fowles. But they say that poppingiayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them will flye euen into the tree in whose boubes the fouler sitteth: & swarme about the tame chattering poppingiaye, sufferinge them selues to bee easely taken. For they are so without feare of the syght of the fouler, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothyng feared hereby, though they see hym drawe them to hym with the snare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the same purpose. There is another kynde of fowlinge, heretofore neuer harde of, and pleasant to consyder. We haue declared befoze howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and especially in *Hispaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or sandyng pooles. In some of these (beinge no deaper then men may wade ouer them) are scene great multitudes of water fowles: as wel for that in the bottome of these lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the sonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by redaction and preserued by moyster, there are engendered of the stymines of the earth and water, and by the providence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable lytle fyshes, with a thousande sundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, lyes and such other. The fowles which vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geese, swannes, seemewes, gullles, and such other. We haue sayde also that in theyr orchardes they noyssh a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of these gourdes theretofore well stopped leasse any water shulde enter in at theyr eyes and cause them to synke, they cast many in the halowe pooles: where, by theyr continual wanderyng and waueryng with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the fowles out of suspection and feare. The fouler in the meane tyme, digginge hym selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmer, with two holes neare about his eyes,

Theyr maner  
of fowlinge.

Poppingiayes  
are easely taken.

A strange  
kynde of fowlinge.

Fyshes and  
wormes engendered of slime

Fowles.

Gourdes of  
the tree.

his

## The thyrde deca de.

his face and hole heade besyde beinge covered therewith. And thus entereth he into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie exercised in swymmyng and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a longe space. The foules thynkynge this gourde to be one of the other that swymme vppon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place wher he seeth the greatestt flocke of foules: And with waggynge his heade, counterfeccinge the mouing of the waucryng gourdes, drawethe neare to the foules: where softly puttyng forth his ryght hande, he soodenly snarcheth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he puttereth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpose. The other foules supposinge that this dyued into the water of her owne motion to seke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as befoze, vntyll they also faule into the same snare. I haue here for this cause entered into the declaration of theyr maner of huntynge and foulynge, that by these moze pleasaunt narrations I may sumwhat myrigate and assuage the horzour conceaued in yowre stomake by the former rehearfall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therfoze speake sumwhat ageyn of the newe and later opynions as concernynge the swyfte course of the sea towarde the west about the coastes of *Paria*: also of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late. And with these two quyet and peaceable thynnges, we wyl make an ende of the tragical affayres of the Ocean: and therewith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therfoze that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouedus* (of whom we haue made mention befoze) repayred to me, at my house in the towne of *Matrice*. As we met thus togyther, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concernynge this course of the Ocean. They both agree that these landes and regions perteynyng to the dominion of *Castile*, doo with one continuall tract and perpetuall bonde, embrace as one hole firme lande or continent al the mayne lande lyeing on the north syde of *Cuba* and the other *Ilandes*, beinge also north-west both from *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*. Yet as touchynge the course of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyl that this vyolent course of water bee receaued in the lappe of the supposed continente whiche

Later opinions of the swyft course of the Ocean towarde the west.

The continēt or firme land.

which bendeth so much and extendeth so farre towarde the North, as we haue said: And that by the object or resistance of the lande so bendynge and crookynge, the water shulde as it were rebounde in compasse, and by force thereof be dzyuen about the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri*, where the largenes of the sea maye receaue the waters faulynge frome the narrowe streames, and therby represseth that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothyng more aptely then to the swyfte streame commyng forth of a mylle and faulynge into the myl poole. For in al suche places where waters runne with a byolent faule throughe narrowe chanelles, and are then receaued in large pooles, they are suddenly disparcelled and theyr violence broken: So that wheras befoze they seemed of such force as to ouerthowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the fyrst fynder of these landes (who had nowe in commyng and goinge, foure tymes passed throughe these seas) beinge demaunded of me what he founde or perceaued in saylynge too and fro, answered that there was muche difficultie in returnynge the same way by the which they go. But wheras they fyrst take the waye by the mayne sea towarde the North befoze they directe theyr course to Spayne, he saythe that in that tract, he felt the shippe sumtymes a lytle dzyuen backe by the contrary course of the water. yet supposeth that this chauncerth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the sea: And the same not to be enforced by the circumflection or course of the water reboundynge in compasse as we haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or supposed continent, shulde sumwhere bee open: And that the sayde open place, shoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or streyght, diuptyng the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which also, the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dzyuen about the hole earth. *Ouledus* agreeth with *Andreas Moralis* as touchynge the continuall adherence and closenes of the sayde continente. yet neyther that the waters shulde so beate ageynst the bendynge backe of the West lande, or bee in  
suche

The Vyages  
of *Diegus  
Colonus*.

The Vyage  
from the new  
landes to  
Spayne.

## The thyrde decade.

Such sorte repulsd and dryuen into the mayne sea. Witte safely that he hath diligently consydered, that the waters runne from the deepest and myddest of the maine sea, towarde the West. Also that saylinge nere unto the shore with smaule vessels, he founde the same waters to retorne ageine towarde the East. So that in the same place, they runne together with contrary course, as we oftentimes see the lyke to chaunce in euers wherby the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whyle pooles and turnynges arysse in the water. By reason wherof, if any chaffe, strawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght substance be cast in any suche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al such as runne with the water in the myddest of the channell, procede well forwarde: But suche as faule into the bendyng goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are carped ouerthwarte the channell, and so wander about vntyll they meete with the ful and directe course of the ryuer. Thus haue we made yowre partener of suche thynges as they haue gyuen vs, and wryten their dyuers opinions. We wyll then gyue more certeyne reason, when more certeyne truth shalbe knowen. We must in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntill the day coome appointed of god to reueale this secrete of nature, with the perfecte knowleage of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauyng sayd thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a bryefe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, shall close vppre oure Decades and make an ende of oure trauayles. Wee haue sayde, that nyne myles distant from *Dariena*, are the sydes of the hylles and the dyse playnes in the whiche golde is gathered bothe on the dyse lande, and also on the bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therfore to all such as are wyllyng to gather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appointed to euery man by the suruoyers of the mynes, a square plote of grounde conteynyng twelue pases, at the arbitrement of the chooser, so that it bee not grounde already occupied, or leste of other. The portion of grounde beinge thus chosen (as it were assigne of the augures to buylde a temple) they inclose their stanes within the same, whose helpe the Christians vse in tyllinge of their grounde and gatheringe of golde, as we haue saide. These places appointed vnto them, they keepe as long as them lyst. And if they perceaue tokens of lytle golde, they requyre an other plote of ground

The contrary course of waters,

The point of the pole star.

The golde mynes of *Dariena* and the manner of gatheringe golde.

ground of twelue pases to be assigned them, leauyng the first in common. And this is thorder which the Spaniards inhabiting *Dariena* obserue in gathering of golde. I suppose also that they vse the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath byn proued that these twelue pases of grounde, haue yelded to their choosers, the summe of fourescore Castellans of gold. And thus leade they theyr lynes in fulfyllinge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fylle their handes with syndynge, the more increaseth their couetous desyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyre, the more furiously rageth the flame. Unsatiabile couetousnesse is no more diminished with increase of rycheesse, then is the drynesse of the droppe satisfied with drinke. I sette passe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I shall in the meane season vnderstande these to be acceptable vnto your holynes: my deuotion and obseruance to whose auocaturie, hath caused me the gladlier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt your holynes many prosperous yeares.

Oure inclosters wolde leaue no such commens.

*Aurifera Pans*

The diuorcie of couetousnes.

The laste booke of Peter Martyr of Angleria, of the Landes and Ilandes largely founde: and of the maners of the inhabitants of the same.



Have partly declared before in my decades how certaine fugitines which came out of the large West landes arrived in the conynes of *Dariena*. And howe that maner of people at the bookes of those men; they declared that they sum tyme dwelt in regions whole inhabitants vnder such circumstances: and were ruled by politike lawes. Also that they had cities fortified with waulles, and faire pallaces with streetes well paved, and common places wherther marchantes resorte as to the burse or streete. These landes, our men haue nowe founde. Therefore who were thantours hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so desireth to knowe with the conditions of straunge regions and the maners of

Loke Decade 4. Liber. 1.

Cities fortified with waulles.

The thyrde decade.

The Iland of  
Cuba or Fer-  
nandina.

The Spani-  
ards of Cuba  
attempt new  
Vyages.

The west an-  
gle of Cuba.

Note.

The Iland of  
Yucatan.

A great citie  
well buylded.

Temples.

Humane peo-  
ple.

the people, let hym giue diligent attendance to such thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of Cuba (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, ly-  
punge nexte vnto *Hispaniola* on the west syde, and yet sumwhat  
so bendynge towarde the North that the circle cauled *Tropi-  
cus Cancri* deuideth it in the myddeste, wher as *Hispaniola* is dis-  
tante from the Tropike and declinynge certen degrees to-  
ward the Equinoctial line) we haue spoken sumwhat before.  
In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe syxe townes cree-  
ted. Wherof, the chiefe is named *Sanctiago* of saynt James the  
patrone of the Spaniardes. In this, there is natie golde,  
found both in the mountaynes and ryuers: By reason wher-  
of they are daylye occupied in gathering & digging the same.  
But wherely after that I had finisshed my sayde booke, thre  
Spaniardes that were the most auncient citizens of Cuba, as  
*Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lopus Orbo*, & *Christophorus Morantes*, de-  
termined to seeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spa-  
nyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enter-  
prises. They furnished at their owne charges, thre of those  
shyppes whiche they caule *Carauels*. And hauynge sycle ly-  
cense of *Diegus Velasquez* the gouernour of the Ilande, they de-  
parted with a hundred and ten men from the West angle of  
Cuba. For this angle is mosse commodious to relieue shyppes  
and to make prouision for freshe water and fuell. Thus they  
sayled continually syxe dayes and a halfe, betwene the West  
and the South, contented onely with the syght of the heauen  
and the water: durynge whiche tyme, they suppose that they  
sayled not past thre score and syxe myles. For they ley at an-  
ker all nyght where so enter the faulynge of the soonne rooke  
the day light from them, leasse by wanderynge in vnknowen  
seas, they myght chaunce to be cast vpon rockes or sandes.  
But at the length they chaunced vpon a great Ilande na-  
med *Yucatan*, whose begynnyng inhabitants caule *Eccan-  
ch*. Thre men went to the citie stondeynge on the sea syde, the  
whiche for the bygues thereof, they named *Cayrus* or *Alcair*.  
Inhabitantes entertained them very frendly. When they  
were entered into the citie, they maneypled to behold the hou-  
ses buylded lyke towres, magnifycall temples, greates well  
paued, and great exercise of bying and sellynge by exchange  
of wafe for wafe. Their houses are ryther bylte of stone, or  
of bricke and lyme, and artificially wroughte. To the syde  
porches

porches of their houses and fyrst habitations, they ascend by ten or twelue steeres. They are couered eyther with eyles, flates, reades, or stalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue owre men many brooches and iewelles of golde, verpe sayre and of cunnyng woodzkmanshyppe. Owre men recompensed them with vestures of sylke and woolle, counterfette stones, of coloured glasse and chrystall, haukes bellis of laton, and suche other rewardes whiche they greatly esteemed for the straungnes of the same. They sette nought by lookynge glasse, because they haue certeyne stoones muche brighter. This nation is appareled after a thousande fashions with vestures made of gossampyne cotten or bombage of dyuers colours. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele haupnge dyuers fashions of veles aboute their heades and brestes, with great cautele lest any parte of their legges or feete bee seene. They resozte muche to their temples: vnto the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paved from their owne houses. They are Idolatours and circumcised. They occupie their maner of erchaunginge, with muche fydeltie. They vse to adourne the heares of their brades, being demanded by thinterpretours of whom they receaued their circumcisyon, they answered that there once passed an excedyngge sayre man by their costes, who leste them that in token to remember hym. Other saye that a manne brighter then the soone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there certeyne dayes, they seemed to bee molestous to th inhabitants accordyng to the common sayinge. The longer a gesse tarieth, the woozle is his enterreynement. The whiche thyng owre men perceaupng, they made the more hast awaye. Being therfore prouided of all thynges necessary, they tooke their wyage directly towarde the west by the prouidence whiche th inhabitants caule *Comi* and *Maim*. They ouer passed these regions takyng ouerly freche water and fuel in the same. The barbarians both men, women, and children flocked to the sea syde, astonysed greatly to behold the huge bygynne of the shypes. Owre men marueled in maner no leste to viewe their buyldynges and especially their temples syuate neare vnto the sea, and erected after the maner of towres.

Cunnyng arte  
fycers.

Appareled  
people.

Circumcised  
Idolaters.

*Comi*  
*Maim*

The thyrde decade

*Campechium.*

A towne of  
three thou-  
sand howses.

Plentie of  
beastes and  
foules.

They: Idoles  
and Idolary.

Howses of  
lime & stone.

Thus at the length haupng sayled about a hundred and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anchor in a prouince named *Campechium*, whose chiefe towne consisteth of thyrre thousande houses. Thinhabitauites came thymmyng to the shyppes: marueplyng cecedyngly at the maner of saylinge, and at the sayles and other tackelynges. But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, sawe the smoke, and smelte the sauour of brimstone and spet, they supposed that thunderboultes and lyghenynge had byn sente from god. The kynge receaued swre men honozably and broughte them into his pallapce: where he feasted them well after his maner. They are accustomed to eate fleete, and haue great plentie of beastes and foules: as peacokes, and other whiche they francke and secde in their houses: Also dyuers kyndes of wyld foules of the mountaines, wooddes, and waters: Likewise partriches, quales, turtle dooues, duckes, and geese. Of beastes, they haue connies, woolues, ypons, tigers, foxes, wyld boozes, hartes, and hares. After this banquet, the kynge with his traine and samplie broughte swre men into a brode crosse way where many streates do meete. In this, they shewed them as it were a great and highe aulter buylde four square of marble compacte together partly with the toughe clepe of Babilon cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with smaule stoones. It had on euery syde four steares. Upon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and fast by it the Images of two beastes of unknowen shape, whiche seemed as though they wolde with panyngge mouthes haue torne in sunder the bealy of the mannes Image. On the other syde stode a great serpent compacte of the sayde toughe clepe and smaule stoones. This serpent beyng in length, xlviij. foote, and of the bygnelle of a large oxe, seemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by sparclod with freshe bludde. Harde by the altare, were thyr postes fastned in the ground, the which thyr other trauesed and were sustained with stones. In this place offenders were put to death: In token wherof they sawe innumerable arrowes scined with bludde, sum scatered, sum lpyng on heapes, and sum broken: Also a great number of mennes bones lpyng in a court or yarde nere vnto this funestal place. Their houses are here also builded of lime and stone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicause they actined at this laude on  
saincte

Saint *Lazarus* day. Departing fro hence & directing theyr course  
 syl toward the West for the space of .xv. myles, they came to a  
 prouince named *Aquanil*, whose chiefe towne is cauled *Mosco*, &  
 the kynge thereof, *Cupoton*. He behelde oovre men with a fro-  
 warde countenaunce, and sought occasion to doo them sume  
 priniic mischief whyle they sought for freshe water. For he  
 made signes vnto them that on the further syde of the nexte  
 hyl, they shulde fynde sprynges of water, intending to haue  
 assayed them in that narrowe passage. But by the colouryng  
 of theyr forheades (as they are accustomed in theyr wares)  
 and by the bearynge of theyr bowes and other weapons, oovre  
 men perceaued theyr wplynes, and refused to go any further:  
 yet a thousande of the Barbarians assayled theym vntwases  
 and vnprepared. By reason wherof, they were put to flyght,  
 and dyuers of them slayne in the chace. Many that fledde to  
 warde the shippes, were entangled in the mudde and mary-  
 shes nere vnto the shore. Twentie and two, were slayne with  
 arrowes, and the resydwelwe for the most parte, wounded. *Fran-  
 ciscus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this con-  
 flicte thre and thirtie woundes. And in maner none escaped  
 without hurt. If they had goune to the hylles whiche were  
 appoynted them, they had byn slayne euery man. They ther-  
 fore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* froms  
 whence they came, where they were receaued of theyr felowes  
 with heauie chere. But when *Diegus Velasquez* the gouernoure  
 of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediarly furny-  
 shed a newe nauie of foure Carauelles with thre hundredeth  
 men. Of this nauie he appoynted *John Brisalua* his neucie,  
 to be the gouernour: And assigned for vnder capitaynes, *Al-  
 phons Auila*, *frances Montegio*, and *Peter Aluarado*. For  
 the pylot he assigned *Antonie Alaminio* who had the regiment  
 of the byst nauie. They attempted the same byage ageyne,  
 but declyned sumwhat more towards the South about thre-  
 scoze and tenne myles. Before they sawe any lande, they es-  
 pyed a coloze a farre of, by the biewe wherof, they came to an  
 Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they smelte swete  
 fauours proceedinge with the wynde, before they appoched  
 to the lande by the space of thre myles. They founde the I-  
 lande to be forzie and fme myles in circuite. It is playne and  
 of maruelous frutefull soyle. There is also golde in it, but it  
 is not

The prouince  
*Aquanil*,  
*Mosco*.

The Span-  
 ardes are put  
 to flyght and  
 many slayne.

An other ex-  
 pedition.

The Ilande of  
*Cozumella*,  
 Swete sa-  
 uours.  
 A frute full  
 Ilande.

## The thyrde decade.

Towres and  
temples.

Cozumella na  
med Sancta  
Cruz.

Idoles lyke  
beares.

Idolary.

Centell  
people.

Iucutana but  
fyue myles  
from Cozu-  
meilla.

is not engendered there, but brought thether from other regi-  
ons. It aboundeth with hony, frutes, and herbes: And hath  
also great plentie of foules and foure footed beastes. Theyr  
order and maner of lypung, is in al thynges lyke vnto theyr  
of *Iucutana*. Lykewyle theyr howses, temples, strectes, and ap-  
parell. In many of theyr houses, are great postes of marble  
after the maner of owre buyldynge. They founde there, the  
foundations of certeyne owlde towres ruinare: And one espee-  
ally wth. *xviii.* steeres ascendynge to it, after the maner of so-  
lemne temples. They manuepled greatly at owre shippes and  
maner of saylunge. At the fyrst, they wolde admyt no straun-  
gers: but shortly after, receaued them genrally. Theyr chiefe  
ruler (whom owre men supposed to bee a preeste) led them vp  
to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and  
addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kynge of Castyle,  
nampunge it *sancta Cruz*, bycause they entered into the same in  
the nones of Maye beinge then the feast of the holye crosse.  
They saye that it was cauled *Cozumella* of kynge *Cozumellaus*,  
whose auncestours were the fyrst that inhabited the Ilande.  
In the towre, they founde many chambers furnished with I-  
mages, made both of earthe and marble to the simyltude of  
beares. These they caule vpon with a houlunge and lament-  
table songe, perfumyng th:m with sweete odours, and other  
wyle honourynge them as theyr domesticall goddes. They  
are also circumcised. The kynge was in fayre apparel made  
of goddampine cotton curiously wrought. He was lame on  
the one foote by reason that as he once exercised hym selfe in  
swymmyng, a deuourynge fythe cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the  
toes, of one of his feete. He entreated owre men very frend-  
ly and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre  
dayes, they departed. And saylunge styll towarde the Weste,  
they espyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drew  
neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Iucutana*, beinge  
distant from *Cozumella* onely fyue myles. Directynge therfore  
theyr course towarde the south syde of *Iucutana*, they compar-  
sed it on that syde which lyeth nearest to the supposed contri-  
nent: yet could they not sayle rounde about it by reason of  
the multitude of rocks, halowe places, and helkes of sande.  
Then Alaminus the pplot turned his sailes to the North side  
wherof he had better knowledge. Thus at the length, they  
came

came to the towne *Campechum* and kynge *Lixarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the fyrst voyage the yeare before. At the fyrst, they were gentelly receaued, and requyzed to resort to the towne. But shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to stay about a stoncs cast from the towne, and to proccade no further.

When oovre men desyzed that they myght make prouision for freshe water befoze theyz departure, they assigned them to a certeyne well which they had leste behynde them. Declaringe further, that it shulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Oovre men rested that nyght in the fylde adioynge to the well. The which thyng the Barbarians suspectinge, assembled an army of thzee thousande men, and encamped not farre from them. Bothe parties passed awaye the nyght without sleape. They fearynge leaste oovre menne shulde breake into the towne: And oovre men, leaste the Barbarians shulde inuade them sooddenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other syde with the noyse of timbrels kept them styll wakyng that were disposed to sleape. At the spryng of the day, the Barbarians approached to oovre mens campe & cauld for thinterpretours of *Cuba*, whose language is much agreable vnto theyz. They had diuised to lyght a torch of frankensence and to place the same betwene bothe tharmies to thinent that if oovre men dyd not depart befoze the torch were consumed, to stande to theyz pcell. The torch was walled and the matter came to hand strokes. They slewe onely one of oovre men with an arrowe bycause his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this conflict, oovre men resorted to theyz ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had discharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne.

Oovre men were of stierce and greedye courage to haue pursued them, but that *Brissalua* the gouernour wolde not suffer the. From thence they proceeded to the last ende of *Iucutana*, which they founde to reache moze then two hundred myles frome the East to the West. Here they founde a comodious haueu and named it *Portus desideratus*. From hense they sayled to other landes, and came to the region nerre to *Iucutana* Westwarde, whiche they doubte whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annext to the continent

The Barbarians make resistance.

A conflict.

The length of Iucutana.

## The thyrde decade.

The region  
of Caluacum,  
or Oloan.

The ryuer  
Grifalua.

Targets and  
brest plates  
of golde.

Armure of  
golde.

Experte arti-  
ficery.

Fyffe hokes  
of golde.

In this there is a goulfe which they suppose to be incompa-  
sed with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certentie.  
Thinhabitantes caule this region *Caluacum* or otherwise *Oloan*.  
They founde here also a great ryuer whiche by his violence  
course and faule, dyueth freshe water two myles into the sea.  
This they cauled *Grifalua* after the name of the gouernour.  
The barbarians marueilng at the huge grearneite and mo-  
uyng of oware shippes, came vsarmyng the bankes on bothe  
sydes the ryuer, to the number of fyre thousande men armed  
with targerres and brest plates of golde, bowdes and arrowes,  
brode swoordes of heauy woodde, and longe sauelens harden-  
ned at the endes with fyre: Thus stonnyng in battayle saye  
to defende their coogges, and with proude countenaunces for-  
byddinge oware men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched  
al char nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, owar men es-  
pied about a hundreth Canoas (whiche we haue saide to be  
their boates) full of armed men. Here also the language of  
thinterpreteurs of *Cuba* agreed well enoughe with theirs.  
When they had admitted the peace profered them by thinter-  
preteurs, al the Canoas staied excepte one whiche approached  
toward the shippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa,  
demaunded of oware men what they sought in other mennes  
landes. They answered, golde. And that, for permutacion of  
other ware, and not of gift or vpolentcy. The *Canoa* returned  
and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladlye to  
the shippes. When he had saluted the gouernour, he cauled  
his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundyng him to bryng his  
armure and other oznamentes of golde wherwith he armed  
*Grifalua* from the toppe of the heade to the soule of the foote:  
In so myche that, what so euer any man of armes armed at  
all partes, is among vs accustomed to weare of Iren or Steele  
when he commeth in to the fielde, all suche kynde of furni-  
tures made of golde and wrought with woonderfull arte, the  
kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompensed hym with bes-  
tures of sycke, clothe, linnen, and other of oware thinges. In  
the beginning of this *Lucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumelle*,  
they chaunced vppon a *Canoa* of fyfther men to the number of  
nyne, fyllyng with hokes of golde. They tooke them all  
prisoners. One of them was knowen to this kyng, who pro-  
myled the daye folowng to sende the gouernour as muche  
gold

golde for his ransome as the man hym selfe wated. But the gouernour denyed that he coulde release hym withoute the content of his felowes: And therfore kept hym styll to proue what he coulde further knowe of hym. Departing from hense and saylunge styll westwarde, they founde a great gonlke in the which thre smaule Ilandes were sytuat. Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh most corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyshe impietie? Let euery godly man close the mouth of his stomake lest he be disturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Amonge their Idoles of marble, there standeth a lyon hauynge a hole through the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miserable sacrifice, that it maye from thence runne downe into a syncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they sacrifice the bludde of these poore wretches. They curte not their throates, but open the very brestes of these selve soules and take owte their hartes yet pantynge, with the horte bludde wherof, they anoynte the lippes of their Idoles, and suffer the resydue to faule into the synke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, supposynge the smoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shape of a man, bowynge downe his heade and lookynge toward the synke of bludde, as it were acceptyng the offeringe of the sayne sacrifice. They eate the fleshe of the armes, thighes, and legges, especially when they sacrifice an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a streame of congeled blud as though it had runne from a bouchery. For this myscheuous purpose, they bringe these wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They sawe also innumerable heades, and trunkes of bodie thus manglede, besyde many other yet remaining hole and covered with certeine mattes. All the trackes of these regions abounde with golde and precious stones. One of owre men wanderynge in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water portes of alabastr artificially wrought and full of lyttle stones of dyuers colours. They saye also that they founde a stone of the value of two thousand Castilans of gold, whiche they sent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of sacrifice. Inhabitautes are circumcised. There are also other Ilandes sytuat about this Coluacana, or Caluacam, the

The Ilandes  
of Sacrifice.

Chyldren sa-  
crified to I-  
doles.  
Their Idoles  
of marble.

Gold and pre-  
cious stones.

A stone of  
great price.

## The thyrde decade.

**Ilandes of  
women.**

the whiche are inhabited onely with women lyuing without the companye of men after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter moze wisely, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue bowed chasitie and professed a solitarie lyfe as the nunnes doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Vestales* or *Bona Dea*, were accustomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the yeare, men of the other Ilandes resorte vnto them. But not for thynck of generation, but moued with pittie to helpe them to dresse their gardens and tyll their grounde. The resorte goeth lykewise that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men resorte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children least it shuld hinder their shootyng. Also that they kepe onely the women children and sende awaye the men children. Dore men therfore drowe nere to the shore of *Colluacana* where they quyerly exercised marchaundises with thynhabitauntes. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Also bracelets, chaynes, brouches, with many oether iewelles, and al of gold. Dore men ageyne on the other parte satisfyed him with such stuffe as they had done other before. Here wolde they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour wolde not permytte them, wherat they graged not a lyttle. The houses and other edifyes of this prouynce, are buylded like vnto towres. It hath also. xv. great townes in it. Of these they affirme that they haue scene sum consisting of moze then. xx. thousande houles, not ioyning together, but descuered with courtes and gardens. They haue also certeyne large market places encompassed with waules, and streates well paved. Likewise fornares and onens made of lyme and brycke. Furthermoze al sortes of handy craftes men & very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: & the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king kepeth his court, containeth. xv. thousand houles. When they receaue any straungiers and make a leage of frendshyppe with them, they are accustomed with a knife made of a sharpe stone, to let them selues bludde in the tooonge, hande, arme, or sum other parte of the body: And this euen in the syght of them whom they admitte to frendshyp, in token that they are ready to shedde their bludde in their freyndes causes. Their priestes professe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmariied. What it is to

**golde.**

**houses lyke  
towres.  
xv. greate  
townes in the  
prouince of  
Colluacana.  
Townes of  
xx. thousande  
houles.**

**The region  
of Palmaria.**

**A token of  
frendshyp.**

**priestes.**

haue to do with women, no man knoweth befoze he be married. Fornication and adultery (which selde chaunce emonge the) they counte abhominat ion. The women are of maruelous chasticite. Surey noble maãfter that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lysteth. But a married woman taken in adulterie, is soulede of her husbände. But this onely to the prince: at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her kynsefolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for suche as are not married, to sytte at the same table with them that are married, or to eate of the same dyshe or drinke of the same cup. In the moneth of August and September, they absteine. xxx. dayes not onely from fleshe wherof they haue great plentie, but also from fythe and al other thinges that lyue by bludde: And durynge these daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yeaere. Oure men consumed certeyne dayes here verpe pleasauntly. When they departed, coastynge styll by the same shore, they came to an other kyng whom they named *Quandus*. When he had intellygence that oure men desired golde, he brought forth certeyne plates of molten gold. But whẽ the gouernour signified vnto him by thinterpretors that he delyzed great plentie of that metal, the day folowynge he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length: Also a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domesticall goddes of curious woorkemanshyppe. Likewyse garlandes of stones of sundry colours, with many breste plates, brooches, and other kyndes of ornementes, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore abundaunce of delycate meates well salted and pouzred with spices. When he had required oure men to coome alande, he commaunded his seruantes with all speede to prepare a great multitude of brazes of trees and to waite vpon oure men to his pallyce. As they went thus in order, sum behynde and sum befoze on bothe sydes, they seemed so to shadowe oure men with the bouwes as thoughe they had gonne in a continuall arbour. The kyng hym selfe hauynge a septer in his hand, dyd sette them in their arraye, and sumtyme strike suche as were negligent in bearyng their bouwes. They shewed them selues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenance, humbled them selues to receaue his stripes. When he was demaunded

Chasticite.

The punyshment of adulterie.

marriage is honoured.

fastynge.

kyng Quandus.

Idoles, jewels, and outchepes of gold.

## The thynde decade

Sold in moun-  
taynes and  
ryuers

Theyr maner  
of gathering  
golde.

Sweete sa-  
uours.

A stone of  
great price.

where he had suche plentie of golde, he pointed with his fpynger to the next mountaynes, and to the ryuers descen-  
ding from the same. They are so accustomed to the tyuers and exer-  
cised in swymming, that it is al one to them to lye in the wa-  
ter and on the lande. When they desyre to gather golde, they  
plunge theym selues in the ryuers and bynge from the bot-  
tome therof, bothe their handes full of sande, whiche spe-  
tynge from hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes  
of golde. And by this meanes in the space of twoo houres,  
they fyll a reede as bygge as a mannes fpynger. Of the sweete  
sauours of these landes, many thinges myght be spoken, the  
whiche bycause they make rather to the effeminate of the  
myndes of men, then for any necessarye purpose, I haue  
thought best to omitt them. The kynge also gaue the go-  
uernour a younge virgine of twelue yeares of age, adourned  
with ryche and fayre iewelles. Of the stones whiche he had  
of this kynge, one was valued at twoo thousande Castellans  
of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng,  
laden with golde and precious stones. *Grifalus* the gouer-  
nour, sente one of the Carauelles to his vncle *Diego Velasquez*  
gouernour of the Ilande of *Cuba*, with messengers to deli-  
uer hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornamentes. The  
resydue in the meane tyme styll folowed the traecte towarde  
the West. One of them in the whiche *Frauncis Montegius*  
the vnder gouernour was caried, sayled harde by the shore:  
and the other twoo kept aloofe within prospecte of the land.  
Thinhabitauntes of these coastes also, no lesse marueyllynge  
at the shyppes then dyd the other, came with twelue Canoas  
to *Montegius*, desyringe hym by thinterpretours to coome  
alande, promysynge in the name of their kynge, that hee  
shoulde be honorably entertayned. But *Montegius* answer-  
ed that hee coulde not assente to their request bycause his  
companiones were so farre from hym: yet dyd he gyue them  
certayne of owre thynges straunge vnto them, and thanks  
for their gentylnesse. Shortly after espyng a great towne  
they directed their cource thicher. Thinhabitauntes prohiby-  
ted them to coome alande, and came foorth agaynst them  
with bowes & quyners ful of arrowes, brode wooddes made  
of heauy woode, and Jaucens hardned at the ende with fier.  
They shotte at owre men a farre of: And owre men dischar-

ged certeyne pieces of ordinaunce ageynst them. The Barbarians astonyshted at the noyse of the gunnes, fledde amayne, and desyred peace. Here oovre mens bytayles began to fayle them, and theyr byppes were brooked with longe wyages. Hauynge therfore founde and doone these thynges wherof we haue spoken, *Crisalua* returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* well contented, but so wers not his companions. We muste nowe diuerse sumwhat from this matter, and speake of another nauigation. And from thense wyll we returne to these landes which oovre men haue founde. So it is therfore, that *Diegus Velasquez*, the gouernour of the Iland of *Fernandina*, about the same tyme that he had sent forth this nauie of foure Carauelles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Carauell and one bygantyne with fortie and fyue men. These exercised vyolent handes ageinst the inhabitants of those regions whete they arryued, thynkynge that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggynge of golde because they were *Cassitanite* Idolaters and circuncised. There are at the sea syde not farre from the supposed continent, many lyttle Ilandes of moske fortunare and fearefull soyle, wherof thre are thus named: *Guanapan*, *Guanguan*, and *Quinilla*. Oovre of one of these (which they named *Santa Marina*): they violently caried away thre hundred men and women which they thrust into the Carauell and returned immediatly to *Fernandina*, leauynge the bygantyne with xxv. of theyr felowes to thyncke to hunt for more men. The haueu where the Carauell fyrst arryued, is cauled *Carenas*, beinge distante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe cite of *Santiago*, two hundred and fyfte myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reachyng in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Canceri*, as we haue sayde before. Now shall you heare how fortune sought the reuenge of these pore wretches. Therfore as theyr keepers went aland and few remained in the Carauell, they perceuyng occasiō ministred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, soodeynely snatched by oovre mens weapons and a fewe syre of them which yet remained in the Carauell, whyle the residue lepe into the sea. And by this meane the Barbarians possessed the Carauell which they had some learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they sayled fyfte to the nexte Ilande  
wher

Other viages  
from *Cuba* or  
*Fernandina*.

many Ilandes  
betwene *Cu*  
*ba* and the  
firme lande,

*Santiago*  
the chiefe cite  
of *Cuba*.

The Barbarians  
sley the  
*Spaniards*  
with theyr  
owne weapons.

## The thyrde decade.

where they burne the Carauel and caried away the weapons with them. From hence they conueyed them selues to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pryuilie assailed them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and slewe many of them also. The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantine where they betwayered theyr felowes deatnes and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farre from the place where they suffered this misfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they set by a crosse, and graued this inscription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldaricci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof standeth the chiefe cite of the supposed continent. The gouernour therfore hauing intelligence herof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnished, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were wylse to late: yet folowynge the viewe of the crosse, they came to the shore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durste not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie souldiers departinge from hence with despayre, they sayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they carped away by violence fyue hundred men and women, supposynge lykelyhode that they myght lawfully so doo: because they were Idolaters and circumcised. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians espyinge oportunitie, sette vppon the Spaniardes in one of the shippes with theyr owne weapons and slewe theyr keepers. The residue that escaped, castynge them selues into the sea, swamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes assailed the carauell that was taken from them. This conflict was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte shoulde obreyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verve fiercely, aswell to recouer theyr libertie, as also to holde faste the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spaniardes had the vpper hande by reason they were more experie in handelynge of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus ouercome, lepte into the sea: but the Spaniardes rooke them ageyne with the Shippe boates. About a hundredeth of the Barbarians perished, beinge partely drowned and partly slayne with the swoorde: And but fewe of the Spaniardes. These thynges thus

The chiefe cite of the supposed continent.

The Spaniardes are slayne ageyne with theyr owne weapons.

The Barbarians are slayne and put to flight.

thus pacified, the resydue of the Barbarians were carryed to the towne of *Sanctiago* and condemned to labour in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made owere a newe byage to another of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about so thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in owere sea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades*. Here owere men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arriued there on Easter day whiche the Spanyardes caule the *kozpstyng* day of the resurrection. They say also that in this tracte they sawe .xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpasse: And the same so to lye about *Hispaniola* & *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natie golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum*. The inhabitants also weare many icwels, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and also of woodde gylded. Francis Cheregatus brought one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thyng to see what maner of rasers they haue, made of certeyne yelowe stones cleare & transparent lyke vnto Crystal. With these they haue and carue as though they were made of fine steele. Wher the edges are blunte with longe exercise, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kindes of instrumentes or tooles and such other thynges of tyndeuse, which were to longe to rehearse. Let vs therefore returne from whense we haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Lucatana*, *Collucana* or *Oloa*, beinge all landes lately founde, and so rich fruteful and pleasaunt, that they may in maner be compared to the earthly Paradyse. Therfore, after that it was knowne to owere men of howe greate momente these tractes were, the Spanyardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* *Anuncius* beinge the gouernour of the Ilande furnished a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundred men, with twofmaule brigantines, as it weare in the steade of lyght horsemen or forerunners whose ayde they myght vse as scoutes to searche the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or shelles. They shipte also certeyne horses, as fyue stoned horses,

An other voyage.  
Archipelagus.  
A multitude of Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about Hispaniola & Cuba.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and tooles.

Ilandes lyke vnto the earthly Paradyse.

An other voyage of .x. Carauels and a hundred men.

horses and mares.

horses.

The thyrde decade.

Fernando Cortesius.

The Island of Cozumella.

Carpets and sheetes.

Innumerable bookes.

Circumcised Idolaters.

They Sacrifice Chyldren

horses and. xvi. mares apte for the warres. For their generall governour and Admiral of the navy, they elected *Fernando Cortesius* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of *Sanctiago*. For vnder capitaines, they appointed *Alfons Portu- carerius*, *Francis Montegius*, *Alfons Auita*, *Aluorado Spatenes* *John Velsquen*, & *Diegus Ordassus*. They syll folowed the same wynde from the last angle of *Cuba* toward the west. As soone as *Frauncis Fernandes* of *Cozduba*, and then *John Britsalua* came within prospecte of the Islande of *Sacrifyses* (wherof we haue made mention befoze) suddenly a tempest of contrary wynde prohibited them to take lande and drove them backwarde to *Cozumella* lpyng on the East syde of *Iucatan*. This Islande hath onely one haven named *sainte Johns porte*. And hath in it, onely syxe towntes. Also none other water then in welles and cesterne, bycause it lacketh riuers and springes by reason it is plaine, conteynynge onely. xlv. myles in circuite. At the coomynge of ovtre men, thynhabitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, & forsoke their towntes for feare. Ovtre men entered into their houses where they founde plentie of byttrayles and many ornamentes perpeynge to the furnyshynge of their houses, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes also of gossampine cotton (whiche they caule *Amaccas*) and muche apparell. They haue furthermore innumerable bookes, of the whiche with many other thinges sent to ovtre newe Emperour, we wyll speake more largely hereafter. The souldiers wandered about the Island & viewe alchynge diligently, keepyng them selues syll in battell raye least they myght be sodenly inuaded. They founde but a fewe of thynhabitauntes and onely one woman in their coompanie. By thinterpretours of *Cuba* and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrst from *Iucatan*, they perswaded the woman to caule the kynges that were absente. They came gladly & made a leage of frendshyp with ovtre men, wherby they were restored to their houses and a great parte of their stuffe. They are circumcised Idolaters, and sacrifice chyldren of bothe kyndes to their *Zemes*, which are the Images of their familiar and domesticall spirites whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus* the pilote, also of *Francis Montegius* and *Portuocarerius*, from whense they had the chyldren they offered in sacrifice, they answered

answered that they bought them in the Ilandes therabouts by exchange for golde and other of their trasycke. For in al this so large a space of land, the deuely be auerrie for the desyre of wicked money, hath not yet oppressed th inhabitants. They saye the same also of the Ilandes lately founde, wher of two are named *Deslam* and *Sestam*, whose inhabitauntes go naked: and for scarenesse of children, sacrifice dogges whiche they nourishe as well for that purpose as also to eate as wee do conies. These dogges are dumme and can not barke, hauynge snowtes lyke vnto foxes. Suche as they destinate to eate, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they ware very fat in the space of foure monethes. They reterue al the bytches for increase, and but fewe dogges. Dvve men disswaded them from these superstitions, declarynge how they were abhominable and detested of god. They were soone perswaded and despyred a law whiche they myght folowe. Dvve men therfore declared vnto them that there was onely one god which made heauen & earth, the gener of al good thynges, hepng of one incomprehensyble substaunce vnder triplite of person. As soone as they harde these woordes, they broke their *Zones*, and pared, scraped, and washed the paucementes and waules of their temples. Dvve men gaue them a painted picture of the blessed byrgine whiche they placed reuerently in their temple, and aboue it a crosse to be honored in the remembraunce of god and man and the saluation of mankynde. They erected also an other great crosse of wod in the toppe of the temple, wher they oftentimes resorte together to honour the Image of the byrgine. Th inhabitants signified by thinterpretours that in the Iland of *Lucatana* not far from them, there were seue Christians captiues whiche in tyme past were dyuen thither by tempeste. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, is onely fyve miles distant from *Lucatana*. The gouernour *Cort sus* being aduertised hereof, furnyshed ii. Carauels with fyrie me, wyllyng the incontinent to direct their viage thither & to make serch for these me. They toke with the thre interpretours of *Cozumella* (whose langage agreeth with theirs with letters to the Christians if any myght be found. He further declared vnto they n howe goodly a matter they shoulde byrge to passe if they coulde byrge away any of them. For he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he shuld

R c

be fully

The Ilandes  
of *Deslam* &  
*Sestam*.

Sacrifice of  
dogges.

They are  
soone persua  
ded to owne  
religion.

The picture  
of the bless  
ed byrgine

An other v  
age

The thyrde decade.

be fully certified of the commodities of all those tracter, and the maners of thynhabitauntes. Thus they departed with commaundement to retourne within the space of fyve dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and had no word of their Cozumellane interpreters whome they had sent alande with the message and letters, owre men returned to Cozumella without them, suspectyng that they were ether flaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determyned to depart from Cozumella but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they sodenly espied towarde the Weste a Canoas coomynge from Iucatan, and in it, one of the Chyistian captiues (named Hieronimus Aquilaris) who had lyued seven yeares in that Islande. With what ioye they embraced the one the other, the chance may declare. They were no lesse desyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myfortune whiche befell to hym and his coompanions. And here it shall not bee greatly from my purpose briefely to rehearse how the chynge chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named Valdiua, whome the Spanyardes whiche inhabited Dariens in the supposed continere of the goult of Vraba, sent to the Island of Hispaniola to colonus the Admiral and biceroy with the residue of the Senate and counsell there (to whom perteyneth the redyesse and orderynge of all thinges in these newe landes) to signifye vnto them in what extreme necessitie and penurie they lyued. Unhappy Valdiua therfore, takyn ge this matter in hand in an euell houre, was with a sudden and vyolent whylewinde, dryuen vpon certayne quicke sandes in the prospecte of the Islande of Iamaica, lyinge on the South syde of Hispaniola and Cuba. These blind and swalowyng sandes, the Spaniardes caule vipers: And that by good reason, because in them many thyppes are entangled, as the lycertes are implecate in the tayles of the vipers. While the Carauell thus wrestled with the water, it was so bruste in sunder, that Valdiua with thirtie of his felowes, coude scarcely with muche difficultie descende into the thyppie boate: where, without oers, and without sayles, they were caried awaye by the vyolence of the water. For (as we haue laid before in owre Decades) the seas do runne there continually with a vyolent course towarde the West. They wandered thus, xiii. dayes not knowyng whyther they went.

Aquillaris,  
vii. yeares  
captiue in the  
Island of Ju-  
catana.

Valdiua.

The ship  
wracke of  
Valdiua.

The quicke  
sandis cau-  
se of vipers.

The course  
of the sea to-  
warde the  
west.

nor yet fyndyng any thyng to eate. Famen consumed seuen  
of them whiche were caste in the sea to feede the fshes. The  
resydue lykewise in maner consumed by famen and faulynge  
from one calamitie into an other, were driuen to *Lucanus* and  
fell into the handes of a cruell kynge who hewe *Valdius* the  
gouernour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had  
fyrst sacrificed them to his *Zemes*, thozely after he eate them  
with his frundes of that conspiracie. For they care onely their  
enemyes and straungiers: And doo otherwile absteyne from  
mannes fleshe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris*  
with syxe of his felowes were reserved to be sacrificed the  
thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, escaped the han-  
des of that cruell tyraune, and fledde to an other kynge be-  
yng his enemye, who receaued them, yet onely as bonde-  
men. It is a straunge thinge to heare of the moother of this  
*Aquillaris*. For as soone as she harde that her sonne was tau-  
len into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleshe,  
she fell madde incontment: So that when so euer after, she  
sawe any meate rostyng at the fyre, or onely ready spitted to  
laye to the fyre, she cealed not to crye out in this maner, O  
me misse wretched moother: Behold the members of my son,  
But to returne to oovre purpose. When *Aquillaris* had now re-  
ceaued the gouernours letter sente by the *Coxumellanc* mes-  
sengers, hee declared to the kynge his mayster (whose name  
was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfoze  
they were sent: vsyng in the meane tyme many large discour-  
ses in exprelyng the great poure and magnifycence of their  
kynge who had of late arriued in those coastes. Also of their  
humanitie and gentilnesse toward their frundes and suche as  
submytted them selues to them, and againe their tygour and  
fiercenesse ageynst suche as toooberly eyther contemned them  
or denyed their requestes. With these woordes he broughte  
*Taxmarus* into suche feare, that the maister was now fayne to  
despyze his seruaunt so to handell the matter that they myght  
quyetly enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as  
his enemyes. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe that they shuld  
not onely coome in peate, but also to ayde hym ageynst his  
enemyes if neede shulde so require. Wherbyppon hee dismissed  
*Aquillaris* and with hym thzee of his families and compani-  
ons, Thus they sayled together from *Coxumella* to *Augustana* to  
the

*Valdius* is  
sacrificed to  
Idoles.

howe *Aquillaris*  
escaped

kynge *Taxmarus*.

## The thyrde decade

The mouth  
of a ryuer  
stoped with  
lande.

Turky hens.

the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the fyrste voyage  
thither by the governante of Alamitus the pilot. They found  
the mouth of the ryuer stoped with lande, as wee reade of  
the ryuer of Nilus in Egipte when the wyndes (cauled etc.)  
blowe in summer and especially in the canicular dayes. There-  
fore where as they coule not enter into the ryuer with the  
biggeste vesselles (although it bee otherwise apte to receave  
great shippes) the gouernour raised two hundred men to be  
sette a lande with the brigantynes and Gyppe boates: wyl-  
lynge *Aquillaris* to offer peace to thir inhabitants. They de-  
maunded what owre men required. *Aquillaris* answered, by  
tayles. There was a longe space of lande by the syde of the  
towne, whither they wylled them to relocate, promysynge  
to hyunge them bytaylor thither the daye folowynge. Oure  
men wente and they came accordynge to their promysse and  
brought with them eyght of their hennes beynge as bygge  
as peacockes, of byowynge coloure, and not inferiour to pea-  
cockes in pleasaunte tast. They brought also as muche bread  
made of *Mazium* (whiche is a graine not muche vnylike unto  
panpke) as wolde scarcely serue tenne hungry men: And here  
with desyred them to depart. But when they perceaued that  
oure men made no hast away, immediately there came a great  
companye of armed men towarde theym demaundynge what  
they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Oure  
men made answer by *Aquillaris*, that they desyred peace, by  
taylor, and golde for exchaunge of other thinges. They an-  
swered ageyne, that they wolde nother peace nor warre with  
them. But threathned them to auoyde the lande excepte they  
wolde bee destroyed euery manne. Oure men sayde that  
they wolde not departe withoute sufficiente bytaylor  
to mayntayne their souldyers.

They appoynted the day folowynge to hyunge them more by-  
taylor: but they brooke promysse, yet perceauing the second  
day that oure men were encamped on the lande and had re-  
posed there that nyght, they brought them as much more by-  
taylor, and commaunded them in the name of theyr kynge to  
departe. Oure men sayde that they were despyous to see the  
towne, and to haue yet more store of bytaylor. The Barbar-  
rians denyed theyr request, and therewith departed whispe-  
rynge and mutterynge amonge them selues. In the meane  
tyme

tyme olde men were still so oppressed with hunger that they  
 were enforced to seeke for meate. The gouernour therefore  
 sent his vnder capitaynes to lande with a hundred and fyf-  
 tie men. As they went disperced in dyuers companyes about  
 the byllages of the countrey, the Barbarians met with one  
 of theyr bandes, and put them to great distresse. But when  
 theyr felowes beinge not farre from them, harde the noyse of  
 theyr alarome, they came with all possible haste to theyr res-  
 cue. The gouernour on the other syde, placinge his ordinaunce  
 in the byggantines and shippe boates, approached to the  
 shore with the residue of his souldiers. The Barbarians  
 lyke wise, beinge redy furnished to the battayle, came run-  
 nyng to the sea syde to disturbe them that they shulde not  
 coome alande: And with theyr arrowes, wounded manye a  
 farre of vnprepared. The gouernour discharged aboute .xx.  
 peeces of ordinaunce ageynste them: With the slaughter and  
 terrible thunder, wherof, & with the flame of fyre and smel of  
 brimstone, they were so astonished and put to such feare, that  
 they fled and disperced lyke wyld beasts: whom olde men  
 perswinge, entered into the towne which thynhabitantes for-  
 sooke in maner for feare of theyr olde men whom they sawe  
 so dismayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of  
 such portentous byggenes as I dare not speake. But *Alami-  
 nus* the pylot, sayth that it consisteth in circuite fyue hun-  
 dredth myles, and that it consisteth of .xxv. thousande houses.  
 Sunne make it somewhat lesse: But they all agree that it is  
 excedyng great and notable. The houses are diuided with  
 gardens, and are buylded of lyme and stone verry artificially  
 and of cunnyng woodkemanhippe. To theyr haules, cham-  
 bers, parlors, or other places of habitation, they ascende by  
 tenne or twelue steares: And haue certeyne spaces betwene  
 euery house: so that it is not lawfull for any to lade his neigh-  
 bours waules with rafters or beames. Theyr houses are sepe-  
 rate one from an other by the space of thyr houses: And are  
 for the more parte couered with reede and thetche: And ma-  
 ny also with slate or other stone. The barbarians them selues  
 confessed that they were that day fortie thousande men at the  
 battayle, which were vanquished of a fewe by reason of the  
 newe and vnknewen kynde of seyght with gunnes and hozes:  
 for the gouernour had vnbarked .xxvi. hozes which were  
 also

A confitee.

The Barba-  
rians are put  
to flight.

The great  
towne of *Pe-  
sanchana* or  
*Victoria*.  
A towne of  
.xxv. thousand  
houses.

Sunnes and  
hoises.

## The thyrd decade.

The man &  
the horse,  
thought to  
be one beast.

Centaurus.

Palaces of  
maruelous  
bygnes and  
wel buylded.

They receue  
owre religio.

also at the battayle, and so fiercely assayed the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake theyr array and scattered them as it had byn flockes of sheepe, ouerthrowing, wounding, and kyllyng them on euery syde. Whiche thyng the seely wretches so imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie theyr weapons. For wheras before they had neuer seene any horses, they thought that the man on horsebacke and the horse, had byn all one beaste, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monster *Centaurus*. Our men possessed the towne. xxiij. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the firmament and durst not assayle our men who had placed them selues in the strongest parte of the towne, where some keppe continuall watche (least the Barbarians shulde soodenly invade them) whyle other gaue them selues to reste and sleepe. Whinhabitantes caule this towne *Potanchana*: But our men for the victorie which they obreynd here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thyng to consider the greatnes, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaces they haue in the countrey to the which they resorte sumtymes for theyr solace and pastyme. These are curiously buylded with many pleasant diuises, as galleries, solars, turrettes, portals, gutters with chambers hooded after the maner of our wayncotte and well rowred. Foure of our Spanyarde went into one of them of such greatnes, that they wandered in the same for the space of foure houres before they coude fynde the waye out. At the length by thinterpretours and certeyne captiues our men sent for the kynge and suche rulers as were next vnder hym in autoritie, wyllyng them to submyt them selues and to coome into the towne vnarmed. Byyinge the messengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in these so doinge, they wolde commen with them as concernyng conditions of peace, and restore them theyr towne. They came gladly, and entered euery man into his owne house vpon condition that they shulde euer thereafter absteyne from such ceremonies and horrible sacrifices of mans fleshe to deuils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whose Images they honoured. And to directe the eyes of theyr myndes to Ihesus our god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and suffered deathe on the crosse for the redemption

demption of mankynde. And synally to professe them selues  
 subiectes to the great Christian kynge of Spayne. They pro-  
 mysed both, and were instructed as farre as the shortnes of  
 tyme wolde permitte. Beinge thus restozed, they recompen-  
 sed oovre men with many rewardes: Supposynge suche men  
 to be sent from heauen, which beinge so fewe in number, durst  
 attempte battayle ageynst so great a multitude. They gaue  
 oovre men also certeyne golde and twentiz slaues. Departing  
 therefoze from hence, and coastynge styll alonge by the same  
 shore, they came ageyne to the goulfe whiche *Alaminus* the pry-  
 lot founde befoze vnder *Grisulua*. This they named *Bian Sancti*  
*Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Johns goulfe: For *Bian* in the Spa-  
 nysh tongue significth a goulfe. Here thynhabitantes restoz-  
 red to them peaceably. Aboute a myle frome the shore, was a  
 towne of a thousand and fyue hundred houses situate by  
 pon a hyll. They profered oovre men halfe the towne if they  
 wolde dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the  
 rather eyther fearynge the remede of thynhabitantes of *Potam-*  
*chana*, the fame wherof myght haue coome to theyz eares, or  
 els hoppynge that vnder the shadowe of suche valiant menne,  
 they myght obteyne ayde and succour ageynst theyz enemies  
 and boztherers. For (as I haue sayde befoze) they dystroye  
 one an other with continuall warre for the desyre to inlarge  
 theyz dominions. Oovre men refused perpetuall habitacion,  
 and accepted theyz frendely profer for a tyme. As they came  
 alande, the people folowed them on euery syde with bowes  
 in theyz handes which they helde ouer oovre mens heades to  
 defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a  
 continuall arbour. Here they encamped. And least the residue  
 left in the shippes, shulde in the meane tyme waie ilothefull  
 with Idleness, the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alami-*  
*nus* the pylot and *Francis Montegius* to search the west par-  
 tes of that lande, whyle he reliued the wried souldiers and  
 healed suche as were wounded. To them that went forwarde  
 on this vyage, he assigned two brigantines with fiftie men.  
 Vnto this goulfe, the course of the water was gentyl enough  
 and moderate. But when they had sayled a lytle further to-  
 warde the Weste, they founde the sea runnyng with so thicke  
 a course as if it were a great ryuer faulynge from the tops of  
 hygh mountaynes: In so much that in a shorte space of tyme  
 it caried

A towne of a  
 thousand &  
 fyue hundred  
 houses.

An other vy-  
 age of two  
 brigantines  
 & fiftie men.

where the  
 sea runneth  
 swyftly from  
 the East to  
 the West.

The thyrde decade.

A conflict be-  
twene the wa-  
ters coming  
from the west  
and from the  
south.

A dangerous  
and painfull  
wyage.

The land of  
Colluacana.

The land of  
Baccalaros or  
Baccalarum

Rych presen-  
tes of golde  
and precious  
stones.

It caried them fiftie myles from theyr felowes. When they were now entered into this violent streame of the water, they sawe on their left hand a large playne sea which mette with the course of the other waters faultynge from the weste. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conlycte where they meete, so seemed the waters commyng from the Southe to relyst these waters as enemyes that had entered into the ryght or possession of an other. On the contrary parte, they sawe the lande reachynge farre bothe on the lefte hande and on the ryght. In this strife betwene the waters, they were so tolled on bothe sydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wretched with owte hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turnyng the stemmes or forpartes of their shyppes ageynst the streame from whense they came, and labouryng al that they myght with their oers and sayles, they coulde scarcely overcome the rage of the water: In so much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght sayled twoo myles, they founde that they were dyuen backe foure myles. yet at the length with goddes helpe, they overcame this daungerous conlycte. They spent. xxii. daies in this lyttle space of sea: And when they were now returned to their felowes, declared unto them that that ende was the land of *Colluacana* whiche they adyudged to be parte of the supposed continent. The lande whiche they sawe a farre of before their sale, they suppose eyther to be annexed to owre continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Baccalaros*, wherof we haue made mention in our Decades in the wyage of Sebastian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtfull. But wee thinke it shall once bee better knowne. While Alaminus and Montegius searched these secretes, the kynge of the prouince (whose name was *Mulloxumam*) sent owre men by one of his chiefe offycers (theyng also his Lieutenaunt of the sayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stones, sette and broughte after a marueylous strange wyse and with no lesse cunnynge woorkemanshyp. Here they determined to sende messengers to owre newe Emperour to knowe his pleasure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withowte the aduise of *Diego Velasquez* the gouernour of the Island of *Cuba*

*Fernandus*, who byrthe sente them forth w<sup>th</sup> commaundement  
to retorne ageyne after they had searched these regions and  
obreynd plentie of golde. While they consulted hercof, they  
were of dyuers opinions. But the moste part alleaged that in  
this case it was not requisyte to make the governour of their  
countsaile. Forasmuche as the matter shulde be referred to a  
higher Judge, as to the kyng of Spaine him selfe. When they  
were thus agreed, they receaued byrtrayples of the gentle kyng  
of the prouince, and assigned the place of their colonie twelue  
myles from the sayde towne, in a fruteful and holtsome soile.  
For their generall governour, they elected *Cortesus* the gover-  
nour of the nauye, against his wyll as sum saye. For other  
magistrates to gouerne the cite which they intended to build  
he choose *Portucarerius* and *Montegius* of whome we haue  
made mentio before. They chose also certeyne messengers  
to sende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylor.  
Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered the  
selues w<sup>th</sup>plyngly to go w<sup>th</sup> othere men into Spaine to thin-  
rent to see othere landes and that kynges whole pouere is soo  
great and whole auctoritie reacheth so farre. They brought  
lykewise two women w<sup>th</sup> them, which serued & obeted the in  
all thinges after the maner of theyr countrey. The people of  
this nation is of broune or yelowyshe colour. Bothe the men  
and the women haue pendauntes of gold and precious stones  
hanginge at their eares. The men also, boore their nether  
lyppes full of holes from the hypermoste parte of the lyppe  
euen vnto the nethermoste parte of the gumme. At these they  
hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and syluer fastned  
to a smaule and thynne plate lyinge w<sup>th</sup>in betwene the lippe  
and the gumme. At the byggest hole in the myddest of the lip,  
there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer as brode as the copie  
cauled a *Cozolyne*, and as thicke as a mannes synger. I do  
not remember that euer I sawe any thinge that seemed more  
fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing  
more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may  
see howe vainely mankynde wandereth in his owne bynd-  
nesse. The *Ethiopian* thinketh the blacke colour to be sayzer  
then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwise. They  
that are pointed, thinke that more decent then to weare a bush  
and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformatie to be sha-  
uery.

A newe colo-  
nie.

This Cortes-  
us hath writ-  
ten a booke of  
these thinges

They weare  
rynges and  
plates at  
the lyppes.

The dyuers  
phantasies of  
men.

Item. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reason perswa  
deth, men runne after vanities: And every prouynce is ruled  
by their owne sense, as writeth saint Jerome. From whence  
they haue their golde, we haue spoken sufficiently before.  
But as afore men manuepled where they had their syluer,  
they shewed them certayne high mountaynes whiche are con  
tinually couered with snowe sayunge that at certeyne tymes  
of the yeare, the onely toppes are seene bare bicause the snow  
is there molten by reason of the thicke and warme cloudes.

Syluer.

Note where  
gold and syl  
uer are engē  
dered.

I thinke this  
laton to be  
sum kynde of  
pure copper,  
or els copper  
that holdeth  
goide. For la  
ton is an arti  
ficial metal, &  
hath no natu  
rall myne.  
They booke

The playnes therfore, or mylde, softe, and pleasaunt moun  
taynes seeme to bynge sooth the golde: And the rough crag  
gye mountaynes with their coude valleyes, are the places  
where syluer is engendered. They haue also laton, wherof  
they make such maces and hammers as are used in the waer  
res. Wyggynge mattookes also, and spades: for they haue  
nother Iren nor stele. But lette vs nowe speake of the pre  
sentes sent into Spayne to the kyng: and fyrste of the booke.  
These procuratours therfore of the newe colonic of the pro  
uynce of *Collusiana*, among other their presentes, brought al  
so a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of  
the inner ryndes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that  
of the elme or of the salowe. These they smere or annoint with  
the pytche of molten *Bitumen*, and while they be softe, extend  
them to what forme them lysteth. When they be coude and  
harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playster. It is  
so be thoughte that they beate the playster into fine floure,  
and so temperynge it with sum byndynge moister, to make  
a cruste therwith vpon the leaues, wheron they wyte  
with any sharpe instrument, and blotte the same againe with  
a sponge or sum suche other thynge, as marchaunt men and  
noble mens stewardes are accustomed to do with their wy  
tyng tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues  
of their booke are not set in order after the maner of doores,  
but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whi  
che they wyte, are conteyned in square tables: Not loose,  
but so bounde together with the tounge and flexible cley call  
ed *Bitumen*, that they seeme lyke woodden tables whiche had  
byn vnder the handes of cunnyng bookebynders. Whiche way  
so euer the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues seene and  
two sydes written, with as many lpyng hyd vnder them, ex  
cepte the booke be vnfoulded in length. For vnder one leafe

there are many leaues toynd together. The formes of their letters are nothyng like vnto ooures. But are muche moze crooked and entangeled, lyke vnto fysshhookes, knottes, squares, squares, disc, fyls, and suche other muche lyke vnto the Egyptian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto ooures. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the shapcs of men & douers brastes: And especially the Images of kyniges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in suche bookes, the factes of their kyniges are conteyned, as wee see the lyke emonge vs howe oure printers expresse the summe of histories in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye suche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are also artifycially wrought and paynted. When they are writte, they seeme to differre nothyng from ooures in forme. In these bookes are furthermoze comprehended their lawes, rites of ceremonies and sacrifices, annotations of Astro- nomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of grafpnge, sowyng, and other thynges pertainyng to husbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goynge downe of the sevene starres cauled *Vergilke* or *Pleides*: And counte theyr monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Tona*, of the moone. For in theyr language, they caule the moone *Tona*, they reken the dayes by the soones. Therefore as many dayes as they name, they saye, so many soones. The soone in their tonge, is cauled *Tonatico*. They distribute the yeare (without any reason why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynges and other ornamentes of golde and spluer with precious stones intermirte. At the sprynge of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankensence and make their prayers before they take in hande any other busynesse. But oh horrible crueltie. For thynhabitauntes of all these tractes also, doo sacrifice chyldren to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue sayde before. At suche tyme as the seedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to shewe forth the eare, they destinate to their *Zenes* suche bondmen as they haue bought, or suche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they sacrifice after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Also before they sacrifice these

Theyr letters

what is con-  
teyned in  
theyr bookes.

Temples  
rychly adour-  
ned.

prayer.

They sacrifyce  
chyldren  
& captiues.

## The thyrde decade.

**A wronge way to heauē** poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people salute them humbly and reuerently, affirmyng that in shorte space, they shalbe receaued into the companye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other sharp kind of deuotion: For they leete them selues bludde, epyther in the tongue, lyps, eares legges, thyghes, or brest, which they take in their handes and hurle it vpppe towarde heauen, soo that with the faule therof the paucment of the temple is all beset with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleased. From the newbe colonie (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles distante, there is a towne of. xv. thousande houses, whiche thynhabitauntes caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kynge of this towne had fyue men whiche he referued to be sacrificyed. Whom when owre men wold haue deliuered, the kynge made humble request to them, sayinge that if they tooke awaye suche men as he had conecrated to be offered to the goddes, they shulde byynge hitte destruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre sacrificyes (sayd he) do cease, owre *Zemes* wyll take suche displeasure with vs that they wyll suffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee consumed of woozmes, scortched with drowth, destroyed with fluddes, or blasted with lychtynge. Owre men perceauynge his ruelnesse hersin, thought it beste to chose the least euell, perceauynge that it was yet no tyme to disquyete their myndes, and therfore suffered them to exercise their accustomed ceremonies. And althoughe their priestes promysed them immortal glorie, eternall felicytie, and perpetuall conuersation with the goddes after the stormy dapes of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenances giue eare to their promisses, and had rather be sette at lybertie. Their priestes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the synygular. They leade a pure and chaste lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reuerence. They make faggots of the bones of their enemyes which they haue taken in the warres, and hange vpppe the same at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obtayned by their fauour. So these they adde certayne titles and superscriptions as testimonies of the same. This is straunge and woozthy to be noted, that when their children are a yeare oulde, the priestes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmurynge wordes,

poore

poize water in foyme of a crosse vpon their heades with a cruet, whereby they seeme to baptise them. Neyther do they as the Jewes and Turkes, thinke their temples polluted if any of a straunge religyon bee present at their sacrificyes and other solemnities. Wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of their bookes, temples, and superstitions. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to the other presentes which were brought to the kynge. Emonge these, there were twoo broode and rounde plates (whiche summe haue named the Images of the soonne and moone) the one of siluer and the other of gold in largeness and roundnesse muche lyke to the stones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one circumference, that is. xxviii. spannes in circuite.

That of golde is of the weyght of thre thousande and .liiij. hundreth Castellans, where as wee haue sayde before that a Castellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more then a Ducaate by a trient, that is the thyrde parte of a pounce. In the center of this, was the Image of a kynge of halfe a cuberte longe, sittyng in a trone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumerte, with such countenaunce as oovre paynters are wonte to paynte fayries or sprites. About the Image, were the tapes of trees and floures, so that it seemed to sytte as though it had byn in a fielde. The other of syluer, was made to the same similitude, beinge also in maner of the same weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyse certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, suche as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fyrches or the pulse cauled lincels in token of plentie of natue golde. Also twoo cheynes of golde, wherof the one conteyned .liiij. lynkes in the whiche were set twoo hundreth thre score and twoo fayre and cleare redde stones, and yet no rubyes: furthermore, a hundreth foure score and thre greene stones, and yet no emerodes. Nevertheless, these are in lyke estimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange .xxviiij. golden belles, haupnge betwene euery of them, foure iewels of precious stones inclosed in golde, at euery of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne spangels of golde. The other cheyne consisteth onely of foure golden lynkes, beset rounde about with a hundreth and twoo redde stones, and a hundreth thre score and twelue greene stones, with .xxviij. golden belles

curiously

A figure of  
baptisme.

The presentes  
sent into  
Spayne to  
the kynge.  
Two Images  
of gold and  
syluer.

Two cheynes  
of gold mar-  
uelously byes-  
with precious  
stones and  
jewels.

## The thyerde decade.

**Baskyns.**

**Myters.**

**How can we  
then call the  
beastly or  
Barbarous.**

**If they had  
chaged their  
gold for owre  
Ire, they had  
not so soone  
byn subdued.  
Quylles.**

**Helmetts.**

**A byrde.**

**Speares.**

**A scepter.  
A braselet.  
Shoos.**

curiously wrought and placed in comely order. In the very  
myddest of the cheyne, are ten great precious stones inclosed  
in golde, at the whiche also hang a hundrethe golden pen-  
dauntres of cunnynge woorkemanhippe. They brought furz  
thermore twelue paire of leather baskynnes of diuers colours,  
summe imbroythered with gold and summe with syluer, with  
plates and iuwelles of golde and precious stones inclosed,  
and at euery of them certayne golden belles. Also certeyne  
myters beletee with precious stones of dyuerse colours,  
emonge the whiche sume are blewe like unto saphires. Of  
crestes, gerdles, and fannes made of feathers, I woote not  
what I shalde saye. But surely if euer the wyttes and inuen-  
tions of men haue deserued honoure or commendacion in suche  
artes, these seeme mooste woorthy to bee had in admiracion.

I do not maruyle at golde and precious stones. But am in  
maner astonysed to see the woorkemanhippe excell the sub-  
stance. For I haue with woonderfyll eyes behelde a thou-  
saunde formes and similitudes, of the which I am not able to  
write. And in my iudgement, I neuer sawe any thing whose  
betytie myght so allure the eyes of men. As they manuepled  
at the naturall betwite of the feathers of owre peacocks and  
pheasantes, so dyd we no lesse manue at the artifycial betwite  
of suche thynges as they make of feathers and quilles impaled  
with golde. For I sawe in manye of their woorkes, all ma-  
ner of natyur colours even in the quilles wherof they make  
suche instrumentes. They brought also two helmettes gar-  
nysshed with precious stones of a whitch blewe colour. One  
of these is edged with belles and plates of golde, and vnder  
euery bell two knobbes of golde. The other, besyde the sto-  
nes wherwith it is couered, is lykewyse edged with xxv.  
golden belles and knobbes: & hath on the crest, a greene bird  
with the feete, bylle, and eyes, of golde. Also foure speares  
muche lyke unto fronte speares or yele speares, the woodde  
wherof is all couered with quilles of diuers colours manue-  
lously wyrted with golden wyers and plates intermytte.  
Euery of these speares haue thye pikes, whose edges or crestes  
are all of precious stones made faste with wyers of golde. Of  
like woorkmanship they brought a great scepter beset with pre-  
cious stones and belles of gold, also a bysset of gold, and  
shoos made of a hares skynne, sowd & imbroythered with  
wyers,

golde wyers, with a white sole beneth. Furthermore a glasse of a bygght blew stone, and an other of white, both enclosed in golde. Likewise a precious stone of the kynde of them that are cauled *sphinges*, inclosed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lysarde, two great shelles, two duckes, the shapen of diuers other byrdes, foules, and fyshes, and all of masse golde. Furthermore. xxiii. rounde and square targettes, shieldes, and buckelers of golde, and syue of syluer. Also a triple crowne of plates and wyers of golde marueylously wrought with quilles and fethers of diuers colours, hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idole *Zemes*. About this Image, hange foure other plates like crosses of gold in the whiche are grauen the heades of diuers beastes, as Lyons, tigers, woulues, and such other. They brought also the similitudes of certeyne beastes made summe of rodde or twygges, and sum of woodde with the beastes owne skynnes theron, and garnysht with collers of laron belles. Likewise diuers shertes weaved of gossampyne cotton of sundry colours, wherof two are ryche-ly fringed with golde and precious stones, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyrte with gossampyne cotton of sundry colours and chekered lyke the panes of a chesse boarde. Sum are on the one syde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other syde, plaine without any varietie. Other sum, are brought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddest intermyrte with shynning fethers and sparkes of golde lyke starres. They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure of marueylous work: manshyppes. Like wise a souldiers cloke suche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne pryue coates of fence, and sundrye timentes perceyving to their heades, with also many suche other thynges more bewtiful to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to enreate particularly, it shoulde be more tedious then prosyable. I lette passe here also to speake of many particular nauigations and of the traualles and daungers whiche they susteyned in the same, with the monstres and secreates of nature they sawe: whiche are all conteyned in the registers of owre Senate of the saynes of India, owre of the whiche I haue selected these fewe annotations, suche as seemed to me mosse meete to bee published.

Glasses.

Byrdes, foules,  
les, & fyshes  
of golde.  
Targettes, &c.  
of gold.  
A crowne of  
golde.

Crosses.

Images of  
beastes.  
Shertes.

Cloth of Aras:  
ras.  
A souldiers  
clocke.

Registers of  
the saynes of  
India.

## The thyrde decade.

Chautoitie  
of the Lieue-  
tenaunt.

The Spany-  
ardes of Da-  
riena.

Sancta Maria  
Antiqua.

Petrus Arias  
Whom the  
Spanyarden  
name pedria-  
rias.  
This sea the  
Spanyarden  
caule Wardel  
Sur.

Notwithstanding these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them, and also Cortesius the governour of the nauye and aurour of erectinge their newe colonie in those remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue doon ageinst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same withoute the aduice of the governour of the Ilande of Cuba who sente them forth by the kynges auctozitie, where as they dyd other thinges besyde their comyssion, ye although they wente to the kyng, not fyrst knowynge his pleasure whom the kyng had substitute his Lieuetenaunt in that Ilande. In so muche that by his procuratour, he accused them befoze the Senate as fugitiue theues and traytours. They on the other parte alleaged that they had dooen the kyng better seruyce then he: And that they had shewed sufficient obedience in appealingg to the kyng as the hygher Iudge. But the gouernour required by the vertue of his commission and the kinges letters patentes that they myght be headed for their disobedience ageinst hym whom they knewe to be auctozised by the kyng. They ageine replied that they had not offended the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauailes. Bothe the rewarde and punishment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe parties shoulde bee hard. Lette vs nowe therfoze coome to the Spaniardes of Dariena, th inhabitours of the goulfe of Vraba in the supposed Continent. We haue sayde befoze that Dariena is a ryuer runnyng towards the Weste syde of the goulfe of Vraba. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted their fyrst colonie or habitation after they had banquished kyng Chemacus. This colonie they named Sancta Maria Antiqua, by reason of a howe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tyme of the battaile ageynst Chemacus. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of othere decades) was Petrus Arias sente with a thousande and two hundred men at the request of Vascus Nunez Balboa, who was then the governour of Dariena, and the fyrst that found and discovered the large South sea here tofoze unknowen. Wee haue also declared how at the arrinal of Petrus Arias the newe governour, he deuided his armye into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundredes, whom hee sent forth byuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I will absolue in fewe woordes, bycause all are horrible and vnpleasaut

displeasante. For sence we synphed oovre Decades, there  
 hath byn none other then kyllynge, slepyng, murtheryng  
 and accusyng. The kynge made *Vaschus* gouernoure but du-  
 ryng his pleasure. His courage was such, and his factes so  
 notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the haupnes of *Pe-  
 trus Arias*. To bee brecfe, they faultynge oovre and discord con-  
 founded al thynges. *John Tacedus* the pulpitte feyer of the  
 order of saynt Frances, dyd his vttermoste endenour to make  
 them frendes, promysynge vnto *Vaschus* the dowghter of *Petrus  
 Arias* to wyfe. But no meanes coulde be founde howe these  
 two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agree-  
 ment. At the length the matter grewe to such extremite, that  
*Petrus Arias* syndynge occasion of querelyng ageynste *Vaschus*,  
 sent procelle to the maiestrates of the towne, wherby he com-  
 maunded them to strangle *Vaschus*, and fyue other which were  
 chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: All agynge that they and their  
 confetherates conspired to rebel in the South sea: And that  
*Vaschus* hym selfe for that intente, had buylded and furnished  
 foure shippes to search the south coastes of the supposed con-  
 tinent: Also that to his thre hundred and compa-  
 nyons which he had with hym, he shulde speake woordes of  
 this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my  
 longe peynes and traunples: Howe longe shall we be subiecte  
 to the commaundement of other, sythe wee haue bydden the  
 byunt and ouercumme thencepryse for the whiche this newe  
 gouernour was sent with so great a multitude? Who can any  
 longer abyde his pryde and insolentie? Lette vs therfoze fo-  
 lowe these coastes whycher so euer fortune shall dyue vs:  
 And amonge these so many pleasaunt and fruteful prouinces  
 of this large lande, let vs chose one in the whiche wee maye  
 with libertie spende that portyon of oovre lyues which yet re-  
 mayneth. Who can synde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs byor-  
 lence? When these of the lyke woordes were declared to *Pe-  
 trus Arias*, he sence to the Southe partes for *Vaschus*, wyllynge  
 hym by the vertue of his commission to repayze to him foorth  
 with. *Vaschus* obeyed, and at his comynge was caste in pry-  
 son: yet constantly denyng that euer he entended any suche  
 thyng. Wytnelles were brought ageynst hym, and his wor-  
 des rehearfed from the begynnynge. To conclude, he was  
 iudged woorthy death, and was put to execution. And this

Contention  
 berwene *Vas-  
 chus* and *Pe-  
 trus Arias*.

*Petrus Arias*  
 commandeth  
 that *Vaschus*  
 be put to  
 death.

*Vaschus* is  
 accused.

*Vaschus* is  
 put to death.

The thyrde decade

is the rewarde wherewith the blynde goddesse oftentimes re-  
 compenseth such as haue susteyned great tranayles and dan-  
 gours to bee hyghly in her fauoure. *Petrus Arias* leauynge his  
 loyfe in *Dariena*, embarked hym selfe in the shippes left of *Vas-*  
*chus*, to thintent to searche those coastes. But whether he be  
 returned or not, we haue yer no certeyne knoweledge. He  
 hath also his fortune. yet is there an other gouernour as-  
 signed, whose name is *Lupus Sosa*, the viccrope of the Is-  
 landes of *Canarie*. What stomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he re-  
 turue, let good men iudge. There was nothyng doone vnder  
 hym woorthy glorie. Some thynke that he was at the be-  
 gynnynge to slacke and negligent in his office, and not seuerer  
 in correctynge errours and misorders. But we wyll leaue him  
 and rehearse sumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed  
 as touchynge the great and diepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche  
 for the greatnes and largenes therof, oovre men named *Granz-*  
*dis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in oovre Decades. This  
 riuer sauleth into the furthest corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* by  
 seuen portes or moouthes as dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the  
 Egyptian sea, whose large description yowe may also reade  
 in oovre Decades. That the mountaynes on euery syde about  
 this ryuer, are ryche in golde, we haue learned by thinforma-  
 tion of thinhabitaantes, of whom we made diligent inquisiti-  
 on. *Vaschus*, and besyde hym other gouernoures and Liene-  
 nautes, haue sountymes entered into this ryuer with theyr  
 armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes  
 fyrste for the space of fortie myles, then fyrte, and at the last  
 fourescore, at an other tyme also ouerthwarte the ryuer. Of  
 shamefull chaunce and derestable cowardenes of oovre men.  
 A naked nation encounterynge with them that had apparell,  
 the armed ageynste the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in ma-  
 ner in all condictes, and were other all slayne or wounded.  
 They vse inueniented arrowes, and are suche experte archers,  
 that if they espye any place of theyr enemy bare or vnarmed,  
 they wyll not lyghtly fayle to stryke him there. They vse al-  
 so many dartes, which in the tyme of the battayle they hucle  
 so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the sonne fro  
 theyr enemies as it were with a clowde. They haue lykewise  
 brode and longe swoordes made of a heaue and harde kinde  
 of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande.  
 Watchus

*Petrus Arias*

*Lupus Sosa*

The great ry-  
 uer of *Daba-*  
*iba* or *Grandis*

The goulfe  
 of *Uraba*.

The ryche  
 mountaynes  
 of *Dabaiba*.

Fierce & war-  
 lyke people.

Dartes.

Swoordes of  
 heaue wood.

Vaschus hym selfe receaued many woundes in encounterynge with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenes of these barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet leste vnsearched. We wil nowe speake sumwhat moze of the Island of *Hispaniola* (which the Spanyardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chiefe of al other landes or Islandes wherof we entended to wyre. In the Senate is now restozed, and fyue Judges assigned to giue lawes to all thynhabitauntes of those tractes. But in thozte tyme, they shall cease gatherynge of golde although there bee greate plentie: by reason they shall lacke labourers and mynners, forasmuch as thynhabitauntes whose helpe they vsed herein, are brought to a smaule number, consumed partly by warre, and many moze by famen that yeare that they dygged by the rootes wherof they made theyr beste breade, and leste of sowynge theyr grayne of *Mazium* which is theyr commou foode, supposinge hereby to haue dyuen oore men wote of the Islande, who had bytrayles sente them from Spayne. A great number of them also, dyed of newe and straunge diseases which in the yeare of Chryste a thousande fyue hundred and. xviij. consumed theym lyke rotten sheepe.

And (so sape the truth) oore mens vnfaciable desyre of gold, so oppressed these poore wozerches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and pastymes as daunfynge, tpyshinge, foulynge, and huncyng of lyttle connies, that many of them perished cuen for verye anguythe of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccustomed labour) are thynge of them selues suffy- cient to engender many newe diseases. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe deternyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them selues onely to increase, and tpy- lage of the gound: And that onely such as are bought or ta- ken wote of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it shall suffyce to haue sayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde. Therfore to speake of o- ther matters: It is a maruylous thynge to consyder howe all thynge increase and prosper in this Islande. There are nowe. xxviii sugar pzedes wherewith great plentie of sugar is made. The canes or recdes wherin the sugar groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brayne, and higher then the

Et. ii,

nature

*Hispaniola.*  
Quiedus wyre  
teth that they  
are nowe. v.  
monasteries.

Newe and  
strange disea-  
ses.

The suger of  
*Hispaniola.*

Suger of *Ua-*  
*leunia.*

The thyrde decade.

A token of  
maruelous  
fruitfulness.

Carrayle.

wheate.

vines.

Cassia fistula.

Brasyle.  
Myrobalanes.

nature of a man, by the halfe. This is moze woonderfull,  
that where as in Valencia in Spaine (where a great quantie  
of suger is made yearly) where so euer they applye them  
selues to the great increase thereof, yet doth euery roote bring  
foorth the not paste fyue, or syxe, or at the moste seuen of those  
redes: whereas in Hispaniola one roote beareth twentie, and  
oftentymes thirtie. Foure footed beastes and carrayle, are  
marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the  
rauenynge hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered  
othre men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there great plens-  
tye of wheate, whiche prospereth so wel that it ycaldeth sum-  
tyme a hundreth fould: And this especially on the hylles or  
rydges of the mountaynes prospereynge towarde the North.  
Vines do also increase here with no lesse fruitfulness. What  
shuld I speake of the trees that beare *Cassia fistula*, brought first  
into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the suppo-  
sed Continent, as we haue noted in our decades? There is  
not soe suche plentie hercof, that after a fewe yeares we shall  
haue a pounce of the price that we paye now for an ounce.  
Of the brasyle and myrobalane trees, with other innumerable  
privileges and benefites whiche nature hath plentifully  
ly given to this blessed Iland, we haue spoken sufficy-  
ently in our decades, yet haue I thought good  
to reapeate part of the same, because I thinke  
that the wittes of many readers haue dis-  
tracted from the weyght of great ad-  
uares, to the recordation of such  
pleasaut thynges. And yet  
doe not suche thynges as  
are sauerie, engent  
der redyous  
nelle, soo that a precious mats  
ter bee adourned with a  
precious vesture.

I I I I I

EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV  
DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE  
CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS ALEXAN-  
der eius nominis sextus, concessit et donauit Castela-  
lae regibus & suis successoribus, regiones & In-  
sulas noui orbis in Oceano occidentali.

Hispanorum nauigationis  
bus repertas ..



ALEXANDER EPISCOPVS,  
seruus seruorum Dei, Charissimo in  
Christo filio Ferdinando Regi, et  
Charissimæ in Christo filiaë Eliza-  
beth Reginaë Castellæ, Legionis,

Aragonum, Siciliaë, et Granataë, illustribus, salute  
et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cætera Diuinæ maiestati beneplacita opera  
et cordis nostri desiderabilia, illud profecto potissi-  
mū existit vt fides catholica & Christiana religio no-  
stris præsertim temporibus exaltetur ac vbilibet  
ampliatur ac dilatetur, animarumq; salus procure-  
tur, ac barbaræ nationes deprimantur et ad fidē  
ipsam reducantur. Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Pe-  
tri sedem Diuina fauente clementia (meritis licet im-  
paribus) euocati fueremus, cognoscentes vos tanq̄  
veros catholicos reges et principes: quales semper  
fuisse nouimus, & a vobis præclare gesta, toti pens-

orbi notissima demonstrant, nedum id exoptare, sed  
omni conatu, studio, et diligentia, nullis laboribus,  
nullis impensis, nullisque parcendo periculis, etiam  
propriam sanguinem effundendo efficere, ac omnem  
animum vestrum, omnesque conatus ad hoc iam du-  
dum dedicasse, quemadmodum recuperato regni  
Granatae a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodiernis tem-  
poribus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis gloria  
facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito, et  
debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter con-  
cedere, per quae huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile ab  
immortali deo acceptum propositum, indies feruen-  
tiori animo ad ipsius dei honorem et Imperij Chris-  
tiani propagationem, prosequi valeatis. Sane acce-  
pimus quod vos qui dudum animum proposueratis a-  
liquas insulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas,  
ac per alios haecenus non repertas, quarere et inue-  
nire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum  
redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profi-  
tendum reduceretis, haecenus in expugnatione et re-  
cuperatione ipsius regni Granatae plurimum occu-  
pati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum  
vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequiuistis:  
Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto  
recuperato, volentes desiderium vestrum adimplere,  
dilectum filium Christophorum Cololum virum  
vtique

vtiq; dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigijs et hominibus ad similia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinastis vt terras firmas et Insulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi haecenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Diuino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas insulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quæ per alios haecenus repertæ non fuerant, inuenerunt. In quibus plurimæ gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt asseritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnibus vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt præfati nunciij vestri possunt opinari, gentes ipsæ in Insulis et terris prædictis habitantes, credunt vnum deum creatorem in Cœlis esse, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, satis apti videntur: Spesq; habetur, qd si erudirentur, nomen Saluatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et insulis prædictis facile inducetur. Ac præfatus Christophorus in vna ex principalibus Insulis prædictis, iam vnam turrim. satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiam et vt alias Insulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et ædificari fecit. In quibus quidem Insulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ

res.

res præciosæ diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatis reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præsertim fidei catholicæ exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memoriæ Regum, terras firmas et insulas prædictas, illarumq; incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiicere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuistis.

Nos itaq; huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commendantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducat, et ipsum nomen saluatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamus vos quamplurimum in domino, et per sacri lauacri susceptionem, qua mandatis Apostolicis obligati estis, et p viscera misericordiæ Domini nostri Iesu Christi attente requirimus, vt cum expeditionem huiusmodi omnino prosequi et assumere prona mente orthodoxæ fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiusmodi Insulis et terris degentes, ad Christianam religionē suscipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores vlllo vnq; tempore vos deterreant, firma spe fiduciaq; conceptis q; Deus omnipotens conatus vestros foeliciter prosequetur. Et vt tantij negotij prouintiam Apostolicæ gratiæ largitate donati, liberius et audacius assumatis, motu proprio non ad vestram vel

alterius pro vobis super hoc nobis oblatae petitionis instantiam, sed de nostra mera liberalitate, et ex certa scientia, ac de Apostolicae potestatis plenitudine, omnes Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo vnam lineam a polo Arctico, scilicet Septentrione, ad polum Antarcticum, scilicet Meridiem, siue terrae firmae et insulae inuentae et inueniendae sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunque partem quae linea distet a qualibet Insularum quae vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem. Itaque omnes Insulae et terrae firmae repertae et reperiendae, detectae et detegendae a praefata linea versus Occidentem et Meridiem, quae per alium Regem aut Principem Christianum non fuerint actualiter possessae usque ad diem natiuitatis Domini nostri Iesu Christi proxime praeteritum, a quo incipit annus praesens Milleffimus Quadringentesimus Nonogessimus tertius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos vestros inuentae aliquae praedictarum Insularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro concessa, ac vicariatus Iesu Christi qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illarum dominijs, ciuitatibus, castris, locis, et villis, iuribusque et iurisdictionibus ac pertinentijs vniuersis,

vobis heredibusq; et successoribus vestris (Castellæ  
et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore præsentis  
um donamus, concedimus, et assignamus: Vosq;  
et hæredes ac successores prætatos illarum Domi-  
nos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda potestate, au-  
toritate, et iurisdictione, facimus, constituimus, et  
deputamus. Decernentes nihilo minus per huius-  
modi donationem, concessionem, et assignationem  
nostram, nullo Christiano Principi qui actualiter  
præfatas Insulas et terras firmas possederit vsq; ad  
prædictum diem natiuitatis Domini nostri Iesu  
Christi ius quæsitum, sublatum intelligi posse aut  
auferri debere.

Et insuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ sanctæ  
obedientiæ (vt sicut pollicemini et non dubitamus  
pro vestra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate  
vos esse facturos) ad terras firmas et Insulas  
prædictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos,  
peritos, et expertos ad instruendum incolas et ha-  
bitatores præfatos in fide Chatholica et bonis mo-  
ribus imbuendum, destinare debeatis, omnem de-  
bitam diligentiam in præmissis adhibentes. A quis-  
buscumq; personis, cuiuscumq; dignitatis, etiam im-  
perialis et regalis status, gradus, ordinis vel condi-  
tionis, sub excommunicationis latæ sententiæ pœna  
quam eo ipso si contra fecerint incurrant, districtius

inhia

inhibemus ne ad Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo lineam a polo Arctico ad polum Antarcticum, siuæ terræ firmæ et Insulæ inuentæ et inueniendæ sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamcunq; partem quæ linea distet a qualibet Insularum quæ vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem vt præfertur, pro mercibus habendis vel quauis alia causa accedere præsumat absq; vestra ac hæredum et successorum vestrorum prædictorum licentiâ speciali: Non obstantibus constitutionibus et ordinationibus Apostolicis, cæterisq; quibuscunq; in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes q; dirigente Domino actus vestros, si huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile propositum profequamini, breui tempore cum foelicitate et gloria totius populi Christiani, vestri labores et conatus exitum foelicissimum consequentur. Verum quia difficile foret præsentis literas ad singula quæq; loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et scientia similibus decernimus, q; illarum transsumptis manu publici notarij inderogati subscriptis, et sigillo alicuius personæ in ecclesiastica dignitate constitutæ, seu curiæ ecclesiasticæ munitis, ea prorsus

V u. ii.

fides

671  
fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vbilibet adhibeatur,  
quæ præsentibus adhiberetur si essent adhibitæ vel  
ostensæ.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam  
nostræ commendationis, hortationis, requisitionis,  
donationis, concessionis, assignationis, constitutionis,  
deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis  
infringere vel ei ausu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc  
attentare præsumperit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei,  
ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apostolorum eius, se noverit incursurum.

Datum Romæ apud sanctum Petrum: Anno incarnationis  
Dominicæ. 1593. quarto nonas Maij: Pontificatus  
nostri anno primo.

The coppie of the Bull or donation, by thautozitie wher  
of, Pope Alexander the fyrte of that name, gaue and  
graunted to the kynges of Castyle and theyr succes-  
sours the Regions and Zlandes founde in the  
Weste Ocean sea by the nauigations of  
the Spanyardes.



Alexander by Hoppe, the seruaunte of the ser-  
uauntes of God: To oure moste deare belo-  
ued sonne in Christ Kyng Ferdinande, And  
to oure deare beloued daughter in Christ  
Elizabeth Queene of Castyle, Legion, Ara-  
gon, Sicilie, and Granata, most noble Prin-  
ces, Greetinge and Apostolical benediction.

Amonge other woorkes acceptable to the diuine maiestie  
and accordynge to oure hartes desyre, this certeinly is the  
chiefe, that the Catholyke fayth and Christian religion, spe-  
cially in this oure tyme may in all places bee crasted, ampli-  
fied, and enlarged, wherby the health of soules may be pro-  
cured, and the Barbarous nations subdued and brought to  
the fayth. And therefore wheras by the fauoure of gods cle-  
mencie (although not without equall desertes) we are cauled  
to this holy seate of Peter, and vnderstandynge you to bee  
true Catholyke Princes as we haue cuer knowne you, and  
as youre noble and woorthy factes haue declared in maner to  
the hole worlde in that with all your Studie, diligence, and  
industre, you haue spared no wayles, charges, or perils,  
aduenturyng euen the shedding of your owne bludde, with  
applyng your hole myndes and endcours here vnto, as  
your noble expeditions achyued in recoueryng the kyngdome  
of Granata from the tyrannie of the Sarracens in these our  
dayes, doo playnely declare your factes with so great glozpe  
of the diuine name. For the whiche as we thinke you woort-  
hy, so ought we of oure owne free wyll fauorably to graunt  
you all thynges wherby you maye dayely with more seruent  
myndes to the honour of god and enlargynge the Christian  
empire, prosecute your deuoute and laudable purpose most ac-  
ceptable to the immortal God. We are credably informed  
that wheras of late you were determynd to seeke and synde-  
recteyne Zlandes & firme landes farre remoc and vnknowen  
and

## The bull or donation

(and not heretofore found by any other) to thintent to bringe  
thinhabitauntes of the same to honoure oovre redemer and to  
professe the catholyke fayth, you haue hethereto byn much oc-  
cupied in thepugnation and recouerte of the kyngedome of  
Granata, by reason wherEOF youme coulde not bringe yowre  
sayde laudable purpose to thende desyred. Acuertheleisse as  
it hath pleased almyghy god, the foresayde kyngedome be-  
inge recouered, wyllng toaccomplyshe your sayde desyre, you  
haue, not without great labour, perelles, and charges, ap-  
pointed oovre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man  
certes wel commended as moste worthy and apte for so great  
a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other ne-  
cessaries, to seeke (by the sea where hereterto no manne hath  
sayled) suche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote and his-  
thereto vnknowen. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligent  
searche in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote Ilan-  
des and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by  
any other. In the which (as is sayde) many nations inhabit  
lyuynge peaceably and goynge naked, not accustomed to eate  
fleete. And as farre as yowre messengers can coniecture,  
the nations inhabitynge the foresayde landes and Ilandes,  
belue that there is one god creatoure in heauen: and seeme  
apte to be brought to thimbrasinge of the catholyke saythe  
and to be imbued with good maners: by reason wherEOF, we  
may hope that if they be well instructed, they may easely be  
induced to receaue the name of oovre sauour Iesu Christ. We  
are further aduertised that the fozenamed Christopher hath  
nowe builded and erected a fortrelle with good munition in  
one of the foresayde principall Ilandes in the which he hath  
placed a garrison of certeyne of the Christian men that wente  
thither with him: aswell to thintent to defende the same, as  
also to searche other Ilandes and firme landes farre remote  
and yet vnknowen. We also vnderstande, that in these lan-  
des and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and  
spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of sun-  
dry kyndes and qualities. Therfore al thinges diligently con-  
sidered (especially thamplifynge and enlargynge of the catho-  
like fayth, as it behoueth catholyke Princes folowynge the  
exmples of yowre noble progenitours of famous memoire)  
wheras youme are determyned by the fauour of almighty god

to subdūe and bynge to the catholyke fayth thinhabitauntes of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable purpose in owr lordē, and desirous to haue the same broughe to a dewe ende, and the name of owre sauoure to be knowen in those partes, doo exhorte yowe in owre Lordē and by the receauynge of yowre holy baptisme wherby yowe are bounde to Apostolicall obedience, and earnestly require yowe by the bowels of mercy of owre Lordē Iesu Christ, that when yowe intende for the zeale of the Catholyke faythe to prosecute the sayde expedition to reduce the people of the foresayde landes and Ilandes to the Christian religion, yowe shall spare no labours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perels, conceauynge firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde wyll gyue good successe to yowre godly attemptes. And that beinge autorysed by the priuilege of the Apostolycall grace, yowe may the moze freely and bouldly take vpon yowe the charge of so greate a matter, we of owre owne motion, and not eyther at yowre request or at the instant petition of any other person, but of owre owne mere liberalitie and certeyne science, and by the fulnesse of Apostolycall power, doo gyue, graunt, and assigne to yowe, yowre heires and successours, al the firme landes & Ilandes founde or to be founde, discovered or to be discovered toward the West & South, drawyng a line fro the pole Arctike to the pole Antartike (that is) fro the north to the Southe: Conteynyng in this donation, what so euer firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde towarde *India*, or towarde any other parte what so euer it bee, beinge distant from, or without the foresayd lync drawen a hundred leagues toward the Weste and South from any of the Ilandes which are commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*. All the Ilandes therfore and firme landes, founde and to be founde, discovered and to be discovered from the sayde lync towarde the West and South, such as haue not actually bene heretofore possessed by any other Christian kynge or prynce vntill the daye of the natiuitie of owre Lordē Iesu Christe laste passe, from the which begynnerh this present yeare beinge the yeare of owre Lordē. M. CCC. lxxxiii. when so euer any such shall be founde by your messengers & capytaines,

Wee by the autoritie of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs.

## The bull or donation

In Capite p̄ter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the steede of Iesu Christe, doo for euer by the tenoure of these presentes, gyne, graunte, assigne, vnto you, your heires, and successours (the kynges of Castyle and Legion) all those landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, castels, towres, places, and byllages, with all the ryght, and iurisdictiones therunto perteynyng: constitutyng, assignyng, and depurtyng, you, your heires, and successours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iurisdiction. Decreeyng neuerthelesse by this oure donacion, graunt, and assignation, that from no Christian Prince whiche actually hath possessed the foresayde Ilandes and firme landes vnto the day of the natiuities of oure lord before sayde theyr ryght obteyned to be vnderstoode hereby to be taken away, or that it ought to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde you in the vertue of holy obedience (as you haue promysed, and as wee doubt not you will doo vpon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to sende to the sayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeste, vertuous, and lerned men, suche as feare God, and are able to instructe the inhabitants in the Catholyke fayth and good manners, applyng all theyr possible diligence in the premises.

Wee furthermore strenghtly inhibite all maner of persons, of what state, degree, order, or condition so euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignitie, vnder the peyne of the sentence of excommunication whiche they shall incurre if they doo to the contrary, that they in no case presume without speciall lycence of you, your heires, and successours, to trauaile for marchaundies or for any other cause, to the sayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to be found, discovered, or to be discovered, toward the west & south, drawing a line fro the pole Arctike to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands & Ilandes found & to be found, be situate toward India or toward any other parte beinge distant from the lyne drawen a hundredeth leagues toward the west from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithstanding constitutions, decrees, and Apostolycall ordinances what so euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Emperres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Trustyng that almyghtie god directyng youre enterpryses

prises, yf yowre folowe yowre godly and laudable attempres,  
yowre laboures and trauayles herein, shall in shorte tyme ob-  
teyne a happy ende with felicitie and glorie of all Christian  
people. But forasmuch as it shulde bee a thyng of great dif-  
ficultie these letters to bee carped to all suche places as shuld  
bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowleage  
doo decree that whither so euer the same shalbe sent, or wher  
so euer they shalbe receaued with the subscription of a com-  
mon notarie therunto requyred, with the seale of any person  
constitute in ecclesiasticall dignitie, or suche as are autozpled  
by the ecclesiasticall courte, the same sayth and credite to bee  
gyuen thereunto in iudgement or els where, as shulde bee ex-  
hibyted to these presentes.

It shall therefore bee lawefull for no man to infringe or  
rashely to contrarie this letter of obore commendation, exhor-  
tation, requeste, donatyon, graunte, assignation, constitu-  
tion, deputacion, decree, commaundement, inhibiti-  
on, and determination. And yf any shall presume  
to attempte the same, he owght to knowe that  
he shall thereby incurre the indignation  
of almyghtie God and his holye  
Apostles Peter and

Paule. (.)

(:)(\*)

Given at Rome at saynt Peters: In the  
yeare of thincarnation of owre Lord  
M, cccc. LXXXIII. The fourth  
day of the nones of Maye,  
the fyfte yeare of  
owre seate,

( ) ( )

0

R. L.

## To the reader.



Although amonge dyuers which haue wyrtten of the Ocean and Weste Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declarynge by philosophical discourses the secreare causes of naturall affectes bothe as touchynge the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge woozkes of nature, yet forasmuche as of later dayes those countreys haue byn better knowen and searched, and dyuers suche particuler and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hystories of later wyrters, emonge the number of whom, Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouedus, (whom lerned Cardanus compareth to the ancient wyrters) is doubteles the chiefe, I haue therfore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intituled the Summarie or abbrigement of his generall hystorie of the west Indies wyrtten in the firme lande of the same in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua in Dariena* (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to Theemperours maiestie, as maye appeare by the epyttell followinge.

To the most hygh and myghtie prince Charles the fyfte of that name: Emperour of Rome, Kyng of Spayne, and of the two Sicilies, of bothe the sydes of the streight of Faro, Kyng of Hierusalem and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders, Lorde and inheritour of the firme lande and Ilandes of the Weste Ocean. &c. *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouedus* his most humble seruant wysheth health and perpetual felicitie.



Thes thynges whiche principally pferue and mayntayne the woozkes of nature in the memories of men, are hystories and bookes composed of the same. Amonge the whiche certes those are esteemed moste trewe and autentike which haue byn wyrtten by wyttie and experyent men.

men well-tranayled in the worlde, as faythfull wytnesses of  
 suche thynges as they haue partly seene and byn partly in-  
 formed by credible persons. Of this mynde and opinion was  
 Plinie, who better then any other autoure hath wyrtten in  
 xxxvii. bookes al that pertyneth to the naturall hystorie, con-  
 teyned al in one volume dedicated to Vespasian Theemperour.  
 Wherein, as a prudente historiographer, he declaverh suche  
 thynges as he had harde: Attributyng the seconde autoritie  
 to suche as he had redde in autoures that wyrote befoze hym:  
 And thyzdely ioyned to the same hystorie, such thynges as he  
 hym selfe had seene as moste certeyne testimonie. Whose exem-  
 ple I folowynge, wyl in this my bzeefe summarie reduce and  
 represent to your maiesties memorie such thynges as I haue  
 seene in your Emppye of the West Indies alwell in the I-  
 landes as in the firme lande of the Ocean sea, where I haue  
 serued nowe moze then twelue yeares in the place of suruoy-  
 er of the golde mynes by the commaundemente of the Catho-  
 lyke kynge *Don Fernando* the fyfte of that name and graundfa-  
 ther vnto your maiestie, to whom god gaue great fame and  
 glorie. Sense whose death also I haue lykewyl serued and  
 trust whyle the rest of my lyfe yet remayneth, to serue your  
 maiestie as shall please you to commaunde. As touchynge  
 which thynges and such other lyke, I haue moze largely wri-  
 ten in a hystorie begunne as sone as my age was ripe to take  
 suche matters in hande. Wherein furthermoze I haue made  
 mention of suche thynges as haue chaunced in Spaine, from  
 the yeare .1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge also thereunto  
 suche thynges woorty memorie as I haue obserued in other  
 realmes and prouinces where I haue traualled. And haue  
 likewise particularly wyrtten the lyues and woorty actes of  
 the catholyke Princes of famous memorie *Don Ferdinando* and  
 lady *Elizabeth* his wyfe to theyr last dayes. After whose fru-  
 ition of heauenly Paradyse, I haue noted suche thynges as  
 haue chaunced in your most fortunate succession. Not omit-  
 tyng particularly to wypte a large booke of such thynges as  
 haue seemed moste woorty to bee noted as rouchynge your  
 maiesties Indies. But for asmuche as that volume remaineth  
 in the citie of *San. Dominico* in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* where I  
 dwell and am placed in houtholde with wyfe, chyliden,  
 and famelie, I haue brought no moze with me of that my wri-  
 tyng

## The epistle.

tynges then I beare in memorie. Determyninge notwithstandinge  
dynges for your maiesties recreation to make a breefe rehear  
fall of certeyne notable thynges wherof I haue more largely  
entreated in my sayde general historie, and such as may seeme  
moste woorty to bee redde of your maiestie. Of the which,  
al though a great parte haue byn wytten by other who haue  
also scene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and  
particularly described as of me, forasmuche as in maner all  
that traually into these Indies haue greater respecte to laker  
and gynes then diligently to searche the woorkes of nature  
toherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclined, and haue ther  
foze with all possible endeuour applyed myne eyes and intel  
ligence to fynde the same. And this presente Summarie shall  
not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger historie wherin (as  
I haue sayde) I haue more amplye declared these thynges:  
but shall onely more breefely expresse the effect therof vntyl such  
tyme as Godde shall restore me to myne owne house, where I  
may accomplishe and fynishe my sayd general historie. Where  
vnto to gyue the fyrst principle, I say that Don Christopher  
Colonus (as it is well knowen) beinge the fyrst Admirall of  
this India, discovered the same in the dayes of the Catho  
lyke kynge Don Ferdinando and the ladye Elizabeth his  
wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto your maiestie:  
In the yeare. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yeare  
1492. with the fyrst Indians and other thewes and profes  
of the great ryches and notice of this west Empire. The whiche  
the gyfte and benefyte was suche, that it is vnto this daye,  
one of the greatest that euer any subiect or seruant hath done  
for his prince or countrey, as is manifeste to the hole worlde.  
And to save the trowth, this shall doubtlesse bee so commodi  
ous and profytable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that  
I repute hym no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doothe  
not recognise the same. And (as I haue sayde before) foras  
much as in my sayde generall historie I haue more largely in  
treated of these thynges, I intend at this present only briefe  
ly to rehearse certeyne especiall thynges, the whiche surely  
are verie fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght bee  
sayde in this behalfe. Fyrst therfoze I wyl speake somewhat  
of the nauigation into these parties. Then of the generati  
on of the nations whiche are founde in the same, with thete  
rytes

rytes, customes, and ceremonies. Also of beastes, foules, byrdes, woozmes, sylbes, seas, ryuers, spynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered boothe on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of the order and company of them that are appointed to returne into these regions to serue yowre maiestie, yf therfoze the thynges conteyned in this booke shall not bee distincte in such order as I promised to perfozme in my greater woozke. I desyre yowre maiestie to haue no respecte hereunto, but rather to consyder the noueltie of suche straunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to write. Whotesyng that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trewth of suche thynges as coome to my remembraunce: wherof not onely I my selfe can testifye, but also diuers other woozthy and credible men which haue bin in those regions, and are nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte. And thus it shal suffice to haue saide thus much vnto yowre maiestie in maner of a prohemie vnto this presente woozke which I most humbly desyre yowre maiesties thankfully tacept, as I haue wrytten it faythfully.

**C**Of the ordinary nauygation from Spayne  
to the Weste Indies.



The nauygation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weste India, is from Seuille, where yowre maiestie haue yowre house of contractation for those partes, with also yowre officers therunto perteynyng, of whom the capitaines take their passeporte and lycence. The patrones of suche shippes as are appoynted to these vyages, imbarke them selues at *San Lucea di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadalciber* entereth into the Ocean sea. And from hence they folowe their course toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of these seuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eether *Grancanaria* or *Comera*. And here the shippes are furnyshed with freshe water, suell, cheefe, biese, and suche other thynges whiche may seeme requisite to be added to suche as they brynge with them oute of Spayne, from Spayne to these Ilandes, is commonly  
eygh.

## The historie

eyght dayes saylinge, or lyttle more or lesse. And when they are aryued there, they haue sayled two hundereth and fyfte leaques, whiche make a thousande myles, accompryng foure myles to a leaque as is their maner to reckon by sea. Departynge from the sayde Ilandes to folowe their course, the shippes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse, before they see the fyrste lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*. And the lande that is commonly fyrste seene, is one of these Ilandes whiche they caule *Ogni sancti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Desseada* (otherwise cauled *Desiderata*) *Matunino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Christoual*, or summe other of the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lyinge aboute these aforesaide. yet it sumtymes so chaunceth that the shippes passe withowte the syght of any of the sayde Ilandes, or any other that are within that course vntyll they coome to the Iland of *sancti Iohannis* or *Hipaniola*, or *Iamaica*, or *Cuba*, whiche are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouer passe all these likewyse, vntyll they faule vpon the coastes of the fyrme lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is not well practised in this nauigation or not perfecte in the trewe carde. But makynge this viage with experre maryners (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the sayde fyrste Ilandes shall euer bee knowen. And from the Ilandes of *Tanarie* to one of the fyrste of these, the distaunce is nyne hundredeth leaques by saylynge, or more. And from hence to the cite of saynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is a hundredeth and fyfte leaques: So that from Spayne hitherto, is a thousand and thre hundredeth leaques. yet for asmuche as sumtymes the nauigation procedeth not so directly, but that it chaunceth to wander euer on the one syde or on the other, wee may well saye that they haue nowe sayled a thousande and fyue hundredeth leaques and more. And if the nauigation be slowe by reason of summe hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be fynished in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And this happeneth for the moste parte, not accompryng the extremes: that is, eyther of them that haue slowe passage, or of them that arryue in verye shorte tyme. For wee owghte to consyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne from those partes to Spayne, is not fynished without longer tyme, as in the space of. l. dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse.

Reuer:

Neuerthelesse in this present yeare of. 1525. there came foure shippes from the Ilande of *San Dominico* to *sainte Luca* in Spaine, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue sayd) we oughe not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth seldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarily. This nauigation is very safe and much blessed, euen vnto the sayd Ilande. And from this to the firme land, the shippes traueise diuers wayes for the space of five, syxe, or seuen dayes saylynge, or moze, accordyng to the partes or coastes whither they directe their vyages, forasmuche as the sayde fyne lande is verie great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the same. Yet to the fyne land whiche is nearest to this Iland, and lyeth directly agaynst *San Dominico*, the passage is fynished in the fyne aforesayde. But it shalbe muche better to referre all this to the carde of these nauigations and the newe Cosmographie, of the whiche no parte was knowen to *Protonomie* or any other of the owlde wytters.

Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rycheesse broughed from thense into Spayne.



After my vniuersall description of the historie of the Indies, there cometh to my remembrance two thynges chiefly to be noted as touchyng the empire of this West Indies perceyvyng to the dominion of your maiesty. And these besyde the other particulars wherof I haue suffyciently spoken, are to be considered as thynges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the shortnesse of the way & with what expedition your maiesties shippes maye passe beyonde the mayne fyne lande of these Indies into the newe Southe sea cauled *Mare del Sur* lyynge beyond the same. And this to thintent to coome to the Ilandes where the spices growe, besyde the other innumerable rycheesse of the kingedomes and signidities whiche confine with the sayde sea where are so many people and nations of dyuers tonges and maners. The other thinge, is to consider howe innumerable treasures are entered into Spayne by these

these Indies, as well that whiche cometh dayly from thence as also that is continually to be looked for, bothe of golde and perle & other marchaunties which are first brought into this yowre realme of Spaine before they are seene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly enriched, but also the benefyte thereof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare therunto. A testimonye of this, are the double ducades whiche yowre maiestie haue caused to be coynded, and are disparted throughtout the hole worlde. But after they are once passed out of this yowre realme, they neuer returne againe because they are the best curraunt money of the world. And therfore if after they haue byn in the handes of straungers they chaunce to be returned ageyne into Spaine, they coome disguised in an other habite, and are diminished of the goodnesse of their golde, with the stampe of yowre maiestie chaunged: So that if it were not for their suche defaitynges in other realmes for the cause aforesayde, there shulde not be founde so great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any prynce in the worlde as of yowre maiesties. And the cause of all this, are yowre Indies.

Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkynge in theym.



This particular of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to be noted: And I maye muche better speake hereof then any other man, forasmuche as there are nowe twelue yeares paste since I serued in the place of the surcieur of the meltynge shoppes perceyninge to the golde mynes of the firme lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng Don Ferdinando, after whose departure from this lyfe, I serued longe in the same roome in the name of yowre maiestie: By reason wherof, I haue had great occasion to knowe howe golde is founde and brought oute of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that this lande is exceedynge ryche: hauynge by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and slaues, gathered and syled a great portion of the same: and may therfore the better asseure this  
by

By testimonye of syght. For I am well assured that in no part of *Castilla del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwise cauled *Beragua*) no man coulde aske me of the mynes of golde, but that I darste haue bounde my selfe to haue discovered them in the space of ten leagues of the countrey where it shalde haue byn demaunded me, and the same to bee verye ryche. For I was allowed all maner of charges to make searche for the same. And although golde be founde in maner euery where in these regions of golden Castile, yet owghe wee not in euery place to bestowe the trauell, and charge to get it owte, bycause it is of leste quantite and goodnesse in sum place then in sum. And the myne or beyne whiche owghe to be folowed, oughe to bee in a place whiche may stande to saue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the administration of other necessary thinges that the charges may bee recompensid with gaynes. For there is no doubtre but that golde shalbe founde more or leste in euery place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is verye good, and of. xxii. caracres or better in spynelle. Furthermore, belyde this great quantite of golde whiche I haue sayde to be founde in the mynes, there is also from day to day found or otherwise gotten, great treasure of suche wrought gold as hath byn in the custodie of the subburd Indians and their kynges, aswell of suche as they haue gyuen for their spye and raunsome, or otherwise as frendes to the Christians, belyde that whiche hath byn violently taken from the rebelles. But the greatest parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is base and holdeth sumwhat of copper. Of this they make bracelets and chaines and in the same they close their iewels whiche their women are accustomed to weare and esteeme more then all the riches of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of suche as is founde in *Zanana*, that is to saye in the plaines and riuers of the champion countrey being without trees, whether the earth be with grasse or without. Or of suche as is sumtymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, so that to coome by the same, it shalbe requisite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of waters, or elles in the earth, I wyll shewe howe it is founde in bothe these places,

The hystorie of the

and howe it is separated and purged. Therefore when the myne or veine is discovered, this chaunceth by serchynge and prouynge in suche places as by certeyne sygnes and token do appeare to sayfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue sayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrst they make the place verie cleane where they intende to dygge. When they dygge eyght or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a spanne or two, or more as shall seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally. Then they washe all the earthe whiche they haue taken oute of the sayde space. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before. And if then also, they fynde nothyng, they continue in dyggyng and washyng the earth as before until they come to the hard rocke or stone. And if in fyne they fynd no gold there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderstande, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in diggyng in the same measure in leuell and deapth until they haue made an ende of all the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to consist of certen fecte or pales in length or breadth accordyng to certeyne ordets determined. And within that compasse of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrste founde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a staffe to assigne hym selfe a place by the syde of the same, inclosyng it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mynes of *Zawina* (that is such as are found in the playnes) owght ever to bee sought neare to sum ryuer or brooke or springe of water, or dyke, or standyng poole, to chende that the golde maye bee washed, for the whiche purpose they vse the laboure of certeyne Indians as they doo or ther in diggyng of the myne. And when they haue dygged oute the myne, they fyl certeyne traies with that earth, whiche the other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carie those trayes of earth to the water where it maye bee washed. yet do not they that bynge it, washe

haſte it, but deliuer it to other, puttynge it owte of their owne trays into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. Theſe walſhers for the moſt parte, are the Indian women, bycauſe this woozke is of leſſe paine and trayayle then any other. Theſe women when they waſhe, are accuſtomed to ſpyre by the waters ſyde, with their legges in the water euen vpp to the knees or leaſt as the place ſeruech their purpoſe. And thus holdynge the trays with earth in their handes by the handles thereof, and puttynge the ſame into the water, they moue them rownde aboute after the maner of ſyftynge, with a certeyne apteneſſe in ſuche ſorte that there entereth no more water into the trays then ſeruech their turne: And with the ſelfe ſame apte mouynge of their trays in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one ſyde of the veſſell, and receaue in cleane water on the other ſide thereof. So that by this meanes by liſtle and lytle, the water waſſeth the earth as the lygher ſubſtance owte of the trays, and the golde as the heavier matter reſteth in the bottome of the ſame, beyng rounde and hollowe in the myddell lyke vnto a harbars haire. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered together in the bottome of the trays, they putte it aparte, and retorne to take more earth, whiche they waſhe continually as before. And thus they that labour in this woozke, do gather dayly ſuche portion of golde as ſhal pleaſe god to graunte to the payrones of theſe Indians and ſuche other as trauaile in the ſame. Furthermore, it is to be noted that for euery two Indians that waſhe, it is requiſite that two other ſerue them to bynge earth from the myne, and other two to breake the ſame ſmaule and fylle their trays therewith. Alſo beſyde theſe labourers, it is neceſſarye that there bee other people in the place where they woozke and reſte in the nyght. Theſe are ſuche as make their breade, and prouyde for byttables and other neceſſaryes. So that to conlude, there are in all, fyue perſons ordinarily aſſigned to euery traye of walſhers.

There is an other maner of woozkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnyng waters. And this is, that in appoyntynge the water of his courſe, after that the beddes of the riuers are drye and vterly emptied, they fynde golde amonge the beaches, clyftes, and pyeces of ſtones, and among

## The hystorie

All that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuers runneth of greatest force. So that it chaunceth sum tyme, that when the hedde of the riuers is good and ryche, they fynde in it great quantitie of golde. And therefore some ma: este ought to vnderstande for a generall rule, as it appeareth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the toppes and hyghest places of the mountaynes: And in continuance of time is by lytle and lytle brynged downe to the vales and plaines by howres of rayne, and the faules of sprynges, riuers, and brookes hangge their originall in the mountaynes and descendynge from the same, notwithstanding it bee oftentimes founde in the plaines farre from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moste parte amonge the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, moze then in any other parte of the plaine. And in these two maners is it commonly founde moste abundantly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is brought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great token therof whiche causeth me to beleeue it for certeyne. And this is to consyder that coles neuer pacifis noz to rype vnder the ground, if they be made of stronge woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the fouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the sydes, and breakynge a myne in the earth where it had not byn broken before, and hangge nowe dygged one or two or thre poles in measure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they found golde. And this I saye in the earth whiche was taken for a vryngne: that is to saye, such as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the superficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by sum occasion of fyre, & that they fastned there in tyme, and that afterwarde in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lytle and lytle covered with the earth, which the often howers of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeares the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the sayde leuell and measure whiche had before tyme byn the superficial part of the earth where the coles and golde were founde together: wherby it maye appeare that

that the golde was no more engendered there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the faulces of waters as we haue sayde: forasmuche as the mountaynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and beyde this, I say that in how much more the gold is gonne farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is so muche the more purged and fynyed and of a better caracte. And the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it is so muche the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a baser alay and caracte, and dothe wast so much the more in meltinge, and remayneth more bricke. Sumetyme there are founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate weyght aboute the earth and sumetymes also vnder the earth. And the greateste of all other that was founde to this daye in the Indies, was that which was loste in the sea about the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyed thre thousande and two hundredeth Castellans of golde, which are in value foure thousand and a hundredeth, thirtie and eyght ducades of golde, which weyde one *Arroua* and seuen pounde, or .xxii. pounde after .xii. ounces to the pounde, whiche make threescore and foure markes of golde. And I sawe in the yeare .1515. in the handes of *Pyche* *Passamone* treasurer to your maiestie, two graines of the which one weyde seuen poundes, which are .xiii. markes, and are in value aboute threescore and fyue ducades of golde every marke. The other was of .x. markes, which are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of .xxii. caractes and better. There are also founde many other greate graynes, although not equall vnto these in byggenes. And forasmuche as I haue spoken of golde, I haue thought good to declare somewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gyfte suche vesselles of copper and base golde as they make: for they can gyue them so fayne and hoystyrge a colour, that all the masse whiche they gyfte, appeareth as though it were golde of .xxii. caractes and better. This colour they gyue with a certeyne herbe as though it were brought by the arte of any goldsmith of Spayne or Italie, and would of them bee esteemed as a thyng of greate ryches, and a secret maner of gyldeyng. And for as muche as I haue spoken sufficiently of the myne of golde, I will nowe speake  
something

A marke, is a  
 pounde of  
 viii. ounces  
 iij. iij. li.  
 weyght. viii.  
 ounces. after  
 xii. ounces to  
 the .li.

## The historie

sumwhat of copper because I haue made mention thereof. This met all is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and also in the firme lande: And is founde dayly in greate quantitie holdynge sumwhat of golde. But for the desyre that oovre men haue to golde, they nothyng esteeme the copper, although there myghte great commoditie and profute be had therby, and also by other metals whiche they nothyng regarde excepte syluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled newe Spayne. But of this it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche, because I haue more particularly encreated of these thynges in my general hystorie of India.

### Of the maner of fyshynge for perles.



The Indians exercise this kynde of fyshynge for the moste parte in the coastes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*. And manye of theym which dwell in the houses of certeyne particular lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, resort to the Ilande of *Cubagua* for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go bye, fyve, or seuen, or more in one of theyr *Canoes* or barkes etly in the moornyng to some place in the sea there about where it appeareth unto the that there shulde bee greate plentie of those shell fyshes (which some caule muscles and some oysters) wheriu perles are engendered. And there they plonge them selues under the water, even vnto the bottome, sayynge one that remaineth in the *Canoe* or boate which he keepeth styll in one place as neare as he can, lookynge for theyr retorne oovre of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryseth vp and commeth swymnyng to the boate, enterynge into the same, and leauynge there all the oysters, whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in these, are the perles founde. And when he hath there rested, hym selfe a whyle, and eaten parte of the oysters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remaineth as long as he can endure, and then ryseth ageyne, and swimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as doo all the other in lyke maner, being all

moste

moste experte swymmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they returne to the Ilande to theyr houses, and presente all the oysters to the master or stewarde of the house of theyr lord who hath the charge of the sayde Indians. And when he hath gyuen them sumt what to eate, he layeth by the oysters in safe custodie butyll he haue a great quantitie therof. Then hee cauleth the same fylsher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of theym pearles other great or smaule, two or thre or foure, and sumtymes fīue and syxe, and many smaule graines accordyng to the lyberalitie of nature. They saue the pearles bothe smaule and great whiche they haue founde: And epyther eate the oysters if they wyl, or caste them away, hauynge so great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. These oysters are of hard fleshe, and not so pleasaunt in eatyng as are oysters of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubigua* where this maner of fylshing is exercised, is in the Northe coaste, and is no bygger then the Iland of Zelande. Oftentymes the sea increaseth greatly, and muche more then the fyshers for pearles wold, bycause where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally rest at the bottome by reason of the aboundaunce of aery substaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentymes proued. For althoughe he may by hypolence and force descende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted vp agayne so that he can continuē no tyme there. And therfore where the sea is verye deepe, these Indian fylshers vse to tye two great stoones aboute them with a corde, on euery syde one, by the weyght wherof they descende to the bottome and remayne there butyll them lyseth to ryse agayne: At which tyme they vnlose the stoones, and ryse vppē at their pleasure. But this their aprenesse and agilitie in swimming, is not the thyng that causeth men moste to maruaile: But rather to consyder howe many of them can stande in the bottome of the water for the space of one hole houre, and summe more or lesse, accordyng as one is more apce hereunto then another. An other thyng there is whiche seemeth to me very straunge. And this is, that where as I haue oftentymes demaunded of summe of these lordes of the Indians, if the place where they are accustomed to fysh for pearles beyng but lyttle and narrowe, wyllyt in shorte tyme bee vnterly withowt oysters if they consume them so faste, they answered me,

## The hystorie

red me, that although they bee consumed in one parte, yet if  
 they go a fylling in an other parte or an other coaste of the  
 Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fylling  
 there also vntill the oysters be lyke wyse consumed, and then  
 retorne ageyne to the fyrste place, or any other place where  
 they fyllbed befoze and emptied the same in lyke maner, they  
 find the ageine as ful of oysters as though they had neuer bin  
 fyllbed. Wherby we may iudge that these oysters eyrher re-  
 moue from one place to an other as do other fyllbers, or elles  
 that they are engendered and encrease in certeyne ordinarie  
 places. This Ilande of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fythe  
 for these perles, is in the twelue degree of the part of the said  
 coaste which inclineth toward the North. Lyke wyse pearles  
 are founde and gathered in the South sea cauled *Mare del Sur*.  
 And the pearles of this sea are verpe bygge. yet not so bigge  
 as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margari-  
 tes*, whiche the Indians caule *Terarequi*, lyinge in the goulfe  
 of saince Michael, where greater pearles are founde and  
 of greater pryce then in any other coaste of the North sea,  
 in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I speake this as a trewe testi-  
 monie of syght, haupng byn longe in that South sea, and ma-  
 kyng curious inquisition to bee certainly informed of al that  
 perteyneth to the fylling of pearles. From this Ilande of  
*Terarequi*, there was brought a pearle of the faithyon of a  
 pearle, wayinge. xxvi. carattes, whiche *Petrus Arias* had as-  
 munge a thousande and soo many poundes weight of other  
 pearles whiche hee had when capicayne *Gaspar Morales*  
 (befoze *Petrus Arias*) passed to the saide Ilande in the yeare  
 1515. whiche pearle was of great pryce. From the saide I-  
 lande also, came a great and verpe rounde pearle, whiche I  
 brought owte of that sea. This was as bygge as a smaule  
 pellet of a stone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. carattes.  
 I bought it in the citie of *Panama* in the sea of *Sur*: And paide  
 for it lyxe hundred and fyttie tymes the weyght therof of  
 good gold, and had it thre yeares in my custodie: and after my  
 retorne into Spaine, sould it to therle of *Nauao* *Marque*.  
 of *Zenete*, great chamberleyn to powre maiestie, who gaue  
 it to the *Marque* his wyfe, the ladye *Mentis* of *Mendozza*.  
 I thyncke verely that this pearle was the greatest, fayrest,  
 and roundest that hath byn scene in those partes. For powre

Of this reade  
 more largely  
 in the deca-  
 dea.

By the com-  
 putation of  
 nice. iii. grat-  
 nes make a  
 caratte.

that this ought to vnderstande that in the coaste of the Sea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundreth greate pearles rounde after the fashion of a peare, to one that is perfectly rounde and greate. This Ilande of *Techiqui*, which the Christians caule the Ilande of pearles, & other caule it the Ilande of *Roures*, is founde in the eyght degree on the southe syde of the firme lande in the prouince of golden Castyle or *Beragua*. And these are the coastes of the firme lande where pearles are founde euen vnto this day. I vnderstande also that there are pearles founde in the prouince and Ilandes of *Cartagena*. And sence your maiestie appoynted me a gouernour and capytayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertised that pearles are founde in dyners other places as about the Iland of *Codego* which lyeth ageynst the mouth of that porte of the Ilande of *Cartagena* which the Indians caule *Coro*. The which Iland and porte, are on the North syde in the tenth degree of the coastes of the firme lande.

**C** Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyl, and howe they receaue answer of hym of thynges to coome.



When the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or go to any combat or attempte any other greate matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom they reuerendely esteeme and caule them *Tequins*, whiche in theyr tongue is as muche to saye as masters. Notwithstandinge that they caule euery man that is cunnyng in any science, by the same name, as fyfthers, fowlers, hunters, or makers of nettes. These *Tequins* therefore, they caule the masters of theyr answers by cause they speake with *Tuyra*, that is the deuyl, and bynge them answer what he saythe, eyther as touchynge suche thynges as they haue to doo or shall chaunce to them the day folowynge, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyl beinge so auncient an Astronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges and seeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And makethe them belue that they come so to passe by his ordynance, as though he were the lord and mouer of all that is and shalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: cau

## The hystorie

seth tempest and ruleth the seasons of tymes, gyyng lyfe or  
 takynge awaye lyfe at his pleasure. By reason whereof, the  
 Indians being deceaued of hym, and seing also such effectes  
 to coome certeynely to passe as he hath tolde them before, be-  
 lieue hym in all ocher thynges and honoure hym in many pla-  
 ces with sacrifices of the bludde and liues of men and odorif-  
 ferous spices. And when god disposeth the contrary to that  
 whiche the deuell hath spoken in oracle wherby he is proued  
 a lyer, he causeth the *Tequins* to perswade the people that he  
 hath changed his mynde and sentence for summe of their  
 synnes, or deuileth summe suche lye as lyketh hym beste, be-  
 ynge a skylfull maister in suche subtile and craftie deuises to  
 deceyue the simple and ignorant people whiche hath smaule  
 defence against so myghty and craftie an aduersarie. And as  
 they caule the deuell *Tuyra*, so doo they in many places caule  
 the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly  
 honoure them therby, as in dedde it is a name very feete and  
 agreeable to many of them, hauynge layde aparte all honestie  
 and vertue, luyng moze lyke Dragons then men amonge  
 these simple people.

Before thynhabitantes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had re-  
 ceaued the Christian faith there was amonge them a secte of  
 men whiche liued solytrarily in the desertes and wooddes and  
 ledde their lyfe in sylvence and abstinence moze straightly then  
 euer dyd the phylosophers of Pythagoras secte, absteinyng in  
 lyke maner from the eatynge of al thynges that liue by bludde  
 contented onely with suche frutes, herbes, and rootes as the  
 desertes and wooddes mynistred vnto them to eate. The pro-  
 fessours of this secte were cauled *Piaces*. They gaue them sel-  
 ues to the knowlege of naturall thynges, and vled certeine  
 secrete magicall operations and superstitions wherby they  
 had familiaritie with spirites whiche they allured into theyr  
 olone bodies at suche tymes as they wolde take vppon them  
 to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as fol-  
 loweth. When any of the kynges had occasyon to caule any  
 of them owte of the desertes for this purpose, their custome  
 was to sende them a porcion of their fyne breade of *Caxabbi* or  
*Maizium*, and with humble requeste and sute to desyre them to  
 tell them of suche thynges as they woulde demaunde. After  
 the request graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the  
Piaces

<sup>Places</sup> cometh with twoo of his disciples waytynge on hym,  
 wherof the one byngeth with hym a bestell of a seccate wa-  
 ter, and the other a lytle syluer bell. When he commeth to  
 the place, he syteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym  
 of purpose. Where hauninge his disciples the one standynge  
 on the one hande and the other on the other euen in the pre-  
 sence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common  
 people are nor admytted to these miseries) and turnynge his  
 face toward the deserte, he begynneth his inchauntment and  
 cauleth the spirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which  
 no man vnderstandeth but he and his disciples. After he hath  
 dooen thus a while, if the spirit yet deserre his commynge,  
 he dynketh of the sayde water, and therwith warrry hotte  
 and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchauntment,  
 and lecteth hym selfe bludde with a thorne, maruelously tur-  
 moyllynge hym selfe as wee reade of the furious Sybilles not  
 ceasynge vnyl the spirit bee coome: who at his commynge  
 entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it were a gre-  
 ybunde schulde ouerturne a squerell. Then for a space, he see-  
 meth to lye as though he were in great payne or in a rapte,  
 wonderfully tormentynge hym selfe, durynge whiche agonie,  
 the other disciple shaketh the syluer bell continually. Thus  
 when the agonie is passe and he lyeth quietly (yet withowte  
 any sence or feelyng) the kyng or summe other in his steade,  
 demaundeth of hym what he desyret to knowe, and the spi-  
 rit answereth by the mouth of the rapte <sup>Places</sup> with a directe  
 and perfecte answer to all poyntes. In so muche that on a  
 tyme certeyne Spanyardes beyng present at these mysteries  
 with one of the kinges, and in the Spayne toungue deman-  
 dyng the <sup>Places</sup> of their shippes whiche they looked for owte  
 of Spayne, the spirit answered in the Indian toonge, and  
 toulde them what daye and houre the shippes departed from  
 Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought with-  
 owte sayllynge in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the  
 eclipse of the soonne or moone (which they greatly feare and  
 abhorre) he geueth a perfecte answer, and the lyke of tem-  
 pestes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and suche other thin-  
 ges. When all the demaundes are synplished, his disciples  
 caule hym aloude, rynging the syluer bell at his eare and blo-  
 wyng a certeyne powder into his nosethylls wherby he is  
 rayled

rapped as it were from a deade sleape beinge yet somewhat heauy headed and saynt a good while after. Thus beinge begone rewarded of the kynge with more breade, he departed by ageyne to the desertes with his disciples. But sence the Christian fayth hath byn disparted throughte oute the Ilandes, these deuyllyge practises haue ceased; and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Christ by baptisme, forsakynge the deuyll and his workes, with the vaine curiositie of desyre of knowleage of thynges to come, wherof for the most part it is better to be ignorant then with vertion to knowe that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermoze, in many places of the same lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his household seruantes, as well women as men which haue continually serued hym, kyll them selues, beleauynge as they are taught by the deuyll, that they which kyll them selues when the kynge dyeth, go with hym to heauen and serue hym in the same place and office as they dyd before on the earth while he tyued. And that whiche refuse so to doo, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwise, theyr soules do dye with theyr bodies, and to bee dissolued into ayer, and become nothyng as do the soules of hogges, byrdes, or fythes or other brute beastes. And that only the other may enioy the priuileage of immortalitie for ever to serue the kynge in heauen. And of this false opinion commeth it that they which sowe corne or set rootes for the kynges breade, and gather the same, are accustomed to kyll them selues that they may enioy this priuileage in heauen. And for the same purpose, cause a portion of the graine of Maizium and a bundle of Iucca (wherof theyr breade is made) to bee buryed with them in theyr graues that the same may serue them in heauen if perchappes there shuld lacke seedes to sowe. And therfore they take this with them to begyn with all, vntyl *Tyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promyses) prouyde them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe sene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauynge in pryson the kynge of that prouince (who rebelled from thobediencie of powre maiestie) and demaundyng of hym to whom perrepynd those sepultures or graues whiche I sawe in his house, he answered that they were of certeyne Iudians whiche slewe them selues at the death of his father. And because they

they are oftentimes accustomed to burye greate quantities of  
 wrought golde with them, I caused two graues to bee ope-  
 ned, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the  
 grayne of *Maizium*, and a bundell of *Iucca* as I haue sayde.  
 And demaundayng the cause hereof of the kinge and the other  
 Indians, they answered that they that were buried there,  
 were the labourers of the grounde, and men skilful in sow-  
 yng of seedes and makynge of breade, and seruauntes to the  
 kynges father. And to thende that they, soules shoulde not  
 dye with theyr bodyes, they setwe them selues at the deathe  
 of the kyng their master to lyue with hym in heauen. And  
 to thinc that they myght serue him there in the same office  
 they reserued that *Maizium* and *Iucca* to some it in heauen.  
 Wherunto I answered them in this maner. Beholde howe  
 your *Teyn* deceaureth youe? And howe all that he teacheth  
 you is false? youe see howe in so long a tyme sence they are  
 deade, they haue not yet taken awaye this *Maizium* and *Iucca*  
 which is nowe putrifid and woorth nothyng, and not lyke  
 to bee solen in heauen. To this the kyng replied, sayinge.  
 In that they haue not taken it awaye nor solen it in heauen,  
 the cause is that they chaunced to fynde enowgh there, by rea-  
 son wherof they had no neede of this. To this errour manye  
 thynges were sayde which seemed of lytle force to remoue  
 hym from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that  
 age are occupped of the deuyl, whom they paynt of the selfe  
 same forme and coloure as he appereth vnto theym in diuers  
 shapen and formes. They make also Images of golde, copper  
 and woodde, to the same similitudes in terrible shapen and so  
 variable as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the  
 feete of saynte Michaell tharchangell or in anye other place  
 where they paynt them of most horrible portiture. Lyke wyse  
 when the deuyl greatly intendeth to feare theym, he threte-  
 neth to sende them great tempestes which they caule *Furacanas*  
 or *Hurricanes*, and are so behement that they ouerthrowe ma-  
 ny howses and great trees. And I haue seene in montaynes  
 full of many and great trees, that for the space of thre quar-  
 ters of a league the mountayne hath byn subuerted, and the  
 trees ouerthrowen and plucked owte of the earthe with the  
 roores: a thyng doubtelesse so fearefull and terribble to be-  
 hold, that it may verely appere to be doen by the hand of the  
 deuill

## The hystorie

Demyll. And in this case the Christian men ought to consider with good reason, that in al places where the holy sacrament is reserved, the sayd tempestes are no moze so obstragious, or so perelous as they were wonte to bee.

**O**f the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled *Torrída zona* or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare.

**T**he landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowghe they bee otherwise temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therfore suche fleithe or fyre as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not bee preserved from putrefaction except it be roasted, sodden, or perboylde, the same daye that it is kylde. And wheras I haue sayde that such regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is so in dedde. And therfore not without cause the auncient auncours were of opinion that the burnt lyne or *Torrída zona* where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shoulde be inhabitable by reason the soonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged frō the superficial parte therof to the depth of a mans heygth, it is founde temperate. And within this space, the trees and plantes fasten and spreade their rootes, and no dieper. Euen dyng the same as farre in breadth in the ground as do their branches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the ground then I haue sayde, bycause that beneath the depth of the said space of a mans heygth, the earth is verie hotte, the upper parte beinge temperate and verie moyste aswell by reason of the aboundaunce of water whiche fauleth from heauen vpon that earth at certeyne ordinarie seasons of the yeare, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brokes, sprynges and marcythes, wherby the myghtie and supreme lord which made these landes, hath moste prudently prouyded for the preservation of the same.

R. S. As touchyng this poyn't whiche was vnknewen to the  
 owlde wyters, and without consideration wherof reason can not  
 perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions shulde be vnder the  
 Equinoctiall lyne. I haue thought good for the better manifestyng  
 of this secrete woork of nature, to note owre of Cardanus his  
 booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue theyr cour'e toward the  
 South as to the lowest part of the earth. he wytteth therfore as  
 foloweth. The water was made of lesse quantitie then the earth  
 and only in maner in the superficiall parte therof, that place might  
 bee lesse for the habitation of beastes, and that water by his coulde  
 nesse myght temperate and not destroy the lyfe of beastes. And by  
 cause this generation of lyyunge creatures, was only necessary on  
 the superficiall partes of the earth in comparison to the hole, ther-  
 fore was the water made to occupie onely the superficiall parte, in  
 the which, metals, plants, beastes, and fyshes shulde bee nury-  
 shed. And by cause there was great perell least it shulde be to much  
 consumed by the ayer and heate of the soonne, continuall mouinge  
 was toynd to it, wherby it gathereth cou'denes and is preserued  
 from sodeyne resolution. For suche waters as doo not moue. doo  
 soone putrisie, and are easely resolued into ayer. By reason wherof  
 nature prouyded for the generation of water in cou'de places, as vnder  
 the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the  
 Equinoctiall shulde etherwise for lacke of moyster haue bin to much  
 burned and scorched. nature also prouyded that that parte of the  
 earth shulde bee lowest, by reason wherof all waters haue theyr  
 cour'e toward the South to mitigate with moyster the extremitie of  
 heate which otherwise shulde haue bin intollerable in that cyme.  
 And by this reason, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, albeit it  
 haue his ouginal and springe, out of the mountaynes of the mone  
 cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cyrcle of Capricorne, yet run-  
 nyng with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall  
 cyrcle, it disparfeth thio'gh owr the burnt line of Torrida zona, and  
 by the same vyoient course fauleth into owre sea nere vnto the cite  
 of Alexandria. It was necessary therfore that the greatest parte of  
 the cou'de and moist element shulde haue recourse thither and con-  
 tyst there, wheras was the gratest necessity therof to temper the  
 heate of the soonne by moystyng and coolynge the earthe and the  
 ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith also hath most pri-  
 dent nature prouyded for the securitie and preseruation of the pla-  
 ces lyng betwene bothe the extrimities of heate and colde, as be-  
 twene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowyng e-  
 uer one wayes and k'pyng one course. no regions can be drowned  
 by fluddes: which thynge they well obserue that deliuer fields  
 from inundations or overflowynges, and that take in hande to dye  
 vpon many shes. If therfore waters had not theyr cour'e and faul to-  
 ward the places low: or declynyng, the hole earth shulde bee over-  
 flowne as a marryshe. And that the most declynyng parte shulde  
 bee toward the South, and sumwhat hygher about the poles, the  
 cause is aswell the consumyng heate of the soonne in the South  
 partes, as the preferyng cou'de of the hygh mountaynes nere to  
 the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate consumeth and  
 wasteth

## The hystorie

wasteth as coulde gathereth and preserueth. And for this cause that parte of the earthe that is nearest the poles, is, was, and euer shalbe highest, and likewise lowest in the midst furthest from the poles. And therefore it was not conuenient that the sonne shuld haue his course on every syde, neither to the poles. For if it were carryed alyke to every parte throughowt the worlde, it is necessary that the earth bee equall: and by that reason shulde it eyther bee altogether dryed, or elles all overflowed with water. But where as this coulde not suffice to the free course of ryuers for the often intercourse of higher places lyinge in the waye, whereby overflowynges and stayes of waters and their corruption myght ensue, mooste prouident nature hath gyuen this priuileage to water that it maye so muche ascende as it hath descended: that by this meanes passynge ouer mountaynes and hylles, it maye at the length bee carryed into the sea, &c. hitherto Cardanus, lette vs nowe returne to the hystorie.

There are also many roughe and hyghe mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleasaunt, cleare, and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient writers hauyng no certeyne knowleage, affymed the said burnt lyne or *Torrida zona*, or Equinoctial to be naturally inhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of syght and feelyng as by most certeine senses, hauyng liued many yeares in this regions, by reason wherof better credit ought to be giuen to me then to suche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the situation of these regyons, yowr shall vnderstande that the coaste of the North sea, beyng in the goulfe of *Vraba* and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the Shyppes arriue whiche coome oute of Spayne, is in the syxte degree and a halfe, and in the seuenth, and from syre and a halfe vnto eyght, except a smaule pointe which entereth into the sea toward the North That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth mooste toward the East, is the cape of saincte Augustine which is in the eight degree. So that the said goulfe of *Vraba* is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundreth and twentic to a hundreth and thirtie leagues and thre quarters of a league after thacompte of. xvii. leagues and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lytle more or lesse, goeth all the coaste. By reason wherof, in the citie of *sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the forsayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And if there bee any difference

Difference betwene theym by reason of this smalle distance from the Equinoctial, it is so lytle, that in .xxiii. houres ma kyng a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men and suche as vnderstande the sphere. From hence the North starre is seene very lowe And when the starres which are cauled the wardens of the north starre, are vnder the chariorte, it can not bee seene, bycause it is vnder the horisontal. And whercas I haue sayde beefore that it rayneth in these regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deede. For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greateste coulde of froste and rayne is in December and January: And the greatest heate of sommer aboute saynt Iohannes daye at mydsommer or in the moneth of July. But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the sommer and tyme of greatest drowght and witholot rayne, is at Christmas and a moneth befoze and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth most, is about mydsommer and a moneth befoze and a moneth after. And this season whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any coulder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Christmas then at other seasons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner, but for that that in this tyme which they caule wynter, the soonne is hyd from theyr syghes by reason of cloudes and rayne moze then at other tymes. yet forasmuch as for the moste parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayer, they sumtwhat thynke and feele a lytle coulde durynge the tyme of the said moist and cloudy ayer, althowgh it bee not coulde in deede, or at the leaste suche coulde as hath any sensible sharpenes.

**C** Of dyners particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees, &c.



Any other thynges myght be sayde, & much differynge from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of suche thynges as coome chiefly to my remembraunce as mooste woorthy to be noted, I wyll fyrste  
 A A a . i . speake

## The hystorie

speake of certeyne lytle and troubelous beastes whiche maye seeme to bee engendered of nature to molest and bere menne, to shewe them and gyue them to vnderstand howe smaull and wyle a thynge may offende and disquiete them, to chende that they maye remember the pyncepal ende for the whiche they were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of theyr saluation by the waye whiche is open to all Christian men and all other whiche wyl open the eyes of theyr vnderstandynge. And although the thynge wherof wee entende nowe to speake may seeme wyle and lytle to bee esteemed, yett are they woorthy to bee noted and consydered to vnderstand the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is therfore, that wherreas in many partes of the firme lande by the whiche as well the Christians as Indians doo trauele, there are such manyffhes and waters in the way that they are fayne to go wthout breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by reason wherof, certeyne smaule beastes or woorkes (whiche they caule *Carapates*) much lyke vnto rypes, cleaue fast to theyr legges. These wormes are as little as the pouder of bearen salt. And cleaue so fast that they can by no meanes be taken away excepte the place bee nought with oyle. And after that the legges bee nought with oyle, or the other partes wher these lytle rypes are fastened, they scape the place with a knyfe and so take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, smoke them and burne them with fyre, and abyde great paynes in takinge them awaye by this meanes. Of other lytle beastes whiche trouble men and are engendered in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, I saue that the Christian men whiche trauele into these partes, haue them but seldome tymes, and that not past one or two, and this al so very seldome. For passynge by the lyne of the Diameter wher the compasse makethe difference of saylunge by the wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North East) and *Magybra*, (that is South West) whiche is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a lytle way folowing oore byage by the west, but that all the lye whiche the Christians cary with them, or are engendered in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodies, dye and vnterly consume by lytle and lytle, and are not engendered in India excepte in the heades of lytle chyldren in those partes aduel amonge the chyldren of the Christians

Indians which are bozne there, as also amonge the natural In-  
dians who haue them commonly in theyr heades and sume-  
tymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of  
the prouince of *Cuzco*, which is a region conceyninge moze  
then a hundred leagues in length, and embraseth the one and  
the other coast of the North sea and of the East. When these  
Indians are infected with this fylchpneite, they dresse and  
cleense one an other. And they that exercise this, are for the  
moste parte women who eate all that they take: And haue  
herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that othe-  
men can not lyghly atteyne therunto. There is also another  
thyng greatly to bee considered. And this is how the Chy-  
lian men beinge there cleane frome this fylchpnes of India,  
as well in theyr heades as the reste of theyr bodyes, yet when  
they retorne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to ar-  
ryue in that place of the Ocean sea where wee sayde befoze  
that the lyle dyed and forsoke them, suddenly in theyr repa-  
sunge by the same clyme (as though the lyle had carped for  
them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde them for  
the space of certeyne dayes although they change theyr her-  
tes two or three tymes in a day. These lyle are at the fyrste  
as lytle as nyttes, and growe by lytle and lytle vntyl they  
bee of the byggeneite that they are in Spayne. This haue I  
often tymes proued, hauynge nowe foure tymes passed the  
Ocean sea by this vyage.

Besyd these woozmes and vermyn wherof we haue spo-  
ken, there is another lytle mucheuous woozme, whiche we  
may number amonge the kyndes of fleas, This pestilence the  
Indians call *Nigus*: And is much lesse then a flea. It perleth  
the fleshe of a man, and so launsereth or cutteth the same (while  
in the meane tyme it can nother bee scene nor taken) that s<sup>o</sup>  
sune it hath cutte of theyr handes, and from other theyr fiete  
vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynt the place with oyle  
and scrape it with a rasoure.

In the firme lande in golden Castyle or *Beragua*, there are  
many vppers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They that are byt-  
ten of them, dye in short space. For fewe lyue to the fourth  
day except present remedy. Of these, sume are of a lesse kind  
then other: And haue theyr taylor sumwhat rounde, and leape  
in the ayer to assaile men. And for this cause, sume cause

Nigus

vppers

## The hystorie

this kynde of bypers Tyro. Theyr bytting is most venemous, and for the moste parte incurable. One of theym chaunced to bite an Indian mayde whiche serued me in my house, to whome I caused the surgians to mynister theyr ordinarie cure, but they coude doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yelow water, so that shee died the thyrd day for lacke of remedy as the like hath chaunced to dyuers other. This mayde was of thage of. xiiii. yeares and spoke the Spaynshe toounge as yf shee had byn borne in Castyle. Shee sayde that the byper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two spannes longe or lytle lesse. And that to bite her shee lepte in the ayer for the space of more then fyve paces, as I haue harde the lyke of other credible persons.

Adders.

I haue also scene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very smaule and of seuen or eyght foote longe. These are so redde that in the nyght they appere lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day seeme as redde as bludde. These are also venemous, but not so much as the bypers. There are other much lesse and shorter and blacker. These coome owt of the ryuers and wander sumtymes farre on the lande, and are lykewyse venemous. There are also other adders of a russet coloure. These are sumwhat bygger then the bypers, and are hurtful and venemous. There are lykewyse an other sorte of manye coloures and very longe. Of these I sawe one in the yeare of Christ 1515, in the Island of Hispaniola nere vnto the sea costes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was slayne, I measured her and founde her to be more then .xx. foote longe, and sumwhat more then a mans fyft in byggenes. And althoughe she hadde thre or foure deadly woundes with a sword, yet dyed shee not nor stonke the same daye, in so much that her bludde continued warme all that tyme. There are also in the marythes and desertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lycertes, Dragons, and other dyuers kyndes of serpentes wherof I entende not here to speake much, because I haue more particulercly entreated of these thynges in my generall hystorie of the Weste Indyes.

Dragons.

Spyders.

There are also spiders of manueplous bygnesse. And I haue scene summe with the body and legges, bygger then a mannes hande extended euery waye, And I ones sawe one of suche bygnesse, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a sparowe

Sparowes, and full of that laune wherof they make their webs  
bes. This was of a darke rustette colour, with eyes greater  
then the eyes of a sparrow. They are venemous and of terrible  
shape to beholde. There are also scorpions and dyuers other  
suche venemous wormes. Wherby we maye see, that where  
as natural causes and influence of the planertes are of stron-  
gest activitie, they cease not to engender and byynge foorth  
bothe good and badde accordynge to the disposycion of the  
matter, whiche they also doo partely dispose as the phyloso-  
phers affyrme.

Furthermoze in the fyrme lande, there are manye toades  
beyng very noyous and hurtful by reason of their great mul-  
titude. They are not venemous. They are seene in greate ab-  
boundance in *Dariens* where they are so bygge that when they  
dye in the tyme of drouth, the bones of sum of them (and espe-  
cially the rybbes) are of suche greatnesse that they appere too  
bee the bones of cattes or of summe other beastes of the same  
byggenesse. But as the waters dymynishe and the moysture  
consumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue sayde) they also  
consume therewith vntyll the yeare nexte folowing when the  
rayne and moysture increase, at whiche tyme they are seene a-  
gayne. Neuerthelesse, at this present, there is no such quan-  
tite of them as was wonte to bee, by reason that as the land  
is better cultured by the Christians, as well by the fellynge of  
wooddes and shrubbes as also by the pasture of kine, hores,  
and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poyson dimini-  
sheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh moze holsome and  
pleasaut. These toades syng after thre or foure sortes.  
For summe of them syng pleasauntly: other, lyke owres of  
Spayne. Summe also whistle: and other summe make an o-  
ther maner of noyse. They are lykewyse of dyuers colours:  
as summe greene, summe rustette or grey, and summe almost  
blacke. But of all sortes, they are great, and fylthye, and  
noyous by reason of their great multitude: yet are they not  
venemous as I haue sayde.

There are also a straunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome  
foorth of certeyne holes of the earth that they them selues  
make. The head and bodye of these, make one rounde thing  
muche lyke vnto the hooche of a fawkon: hauynge foure feete  
commynge out of the one syde and as many out of the other,  
They

Crabbes,

## The hystorie

They haue also two mouthes like vnto a paire of smale pin-  
cers, the one bygger then the other, wherewith they bite, but  
do no great hurte bycause they are not venemous. Their skyn  
and bodye is smoothe and thynne as is the skynne of a man,  
sauynge that it is sumwhat harder. Their colour is rustette  
or white, or blew, and walke sydelonge. They are very good  
to bee eaten: In so muche that the Christians traunapling by  
the syrne lande, haue byn greatly nuryshed by them bycause  
they are founde in maner euery where. In shap and foyme,  
they are muche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the  
sygne Cancer, and like vnto those which are found in Spaine  
in *Andalusia* in the ryuer *Guadalebiber* wher it entereth into the  
sea, and in the sea coastes therabout, sauynge that these are  
of the water and the other of the lande. They are sumtymes  
hurtefull, so that they that eate of them dye. But this chaun-  
seth onely when they haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of  
the venemous apples wherewith the Canibale archers poyson  
their arrowes wherof I wyll speake hereafter. And for this  
cause the Christians take hede howe they eate of these crab-  
bes if they synde them neare vnto the sayd apple trees.

Serpentes  
cauled Juan-  
si.

Furthermoze in these Indies, aswell in the syrne lande as  
in the *Ilandes*, there is founde a kynde of serpentes, which  
they caule *Y. V. anas*, which summe caule *Iuannas*. These are  
terrible and scarefull to syght, and yet not hurtefull. They  
are very delicate to bee earen, and it is not yet knowen wher  
ther they be bestes of the lande or fyshes, bycause they lyue  
in the water, and wander in the woddes and on the lande.  
They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then conntes  
and in summe places bygger then orters, with taples lyke li-  
tartes or eutes. Their skynne is spotted, and of the same  
kynd of smothnesse or barenesse, although of dyuers colours.  
Upon the ridge of their backes, they haue many long prickes.  
Theyr teeth are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or  
dogge teeth. Their throttes are longe and large, reachynge  
from their beardes to their brestes, of the lyke skynne to  
the relydewe of their bodyes. They are dumme, and haue  
no boyce or make any noyse or crye although they bee kepte  
tyde to the foote of a chesse or any other thyng for the space  
of .xx. or .xxv. dayes without any thyng to eate or drynke,  
excepte they gyue them now and then a lyttle of the breade  
of

of *Cazabi*, or summe such other thynge. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans fynger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and suche as can not grasple or take holde of any thynge. They are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For seide that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of their horrible shape excepte suche as haue byn accustomed to the beastes of these regyons, whiche are moze horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleshe is of much better taste then the fleshe of connyes and moze holsome. For it hurteth none but onely such as haue had the frenche poxe. In so much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmite, although they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte and complayne of the eatynge of these *Iuannas*, as hath byn often tymes proued by experiance.

There are founde in the fyne lande certeyne byrdes so lyttle that the hole body of one of theym is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest fynger of a mans hande: and yet is the harte body withowt the feathers not passe halfe so bygge. This byrde, besyde her lyttlenes, is of such velocitie and swyftnes in flying that who so seeth her flying in the ayer, ca not ie her flap or heate her wynges after any other sort then do the doxres or hubble bees or betels: so that there is no man that seeth her flie, that wold think her to be any other thē a dovre. They make their nestes accordyng to the proportiō of their bygnes. And I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her neil put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more thē ii. Tomini, which are in poise .24. grains, with the feathers with out the which she hulde haue wayed sumtohat lesse. And doubtlesse when I consider the fynesse of the clawes and feete of these birdes, I knowe not wherunto I may better liken them then to the lytle byrdes whiche the lymmers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the margentes of church bookes and other bookes of deuine seruite. Their feathers are of many faire colours as golden yelow and greene beside other variable colours. Their beake is verve longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and subtile as a sowynge needle. They are very hardye: so that when they see a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr nests, they flye at hys face and stryke hym in the eyes, comynge, gonyng, and retournyng.

Byrdes.

A very lyttle byrde.

with

with such swiftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not seene it. And certainly these byrdes are so lyttle, that I durst not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue seene them as wel as I, can beare witness of my saying. They make their nestes of stokes and heave of corten wherof there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr purpose. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beastes of these Indies, bycause they are innumerable bothe lyttle and greate, I intende not to speake muche here, bycause I haue spoken moze largely hereof in my general hystoie of the Indies.

Scaques.

Sardatt.

There is an other kynde of beastes seene in the firme land which seemed very straunge and marueilous to the Chryistian men to beholde, and muche differynge from all other beastes which haue byn seene in other partes of the worlde. These beastes are cauled *Sardatt*: And are foure footed, hauing their taile and al the rest of theyr bodie covered onely with a skyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horse or the chekered skynne of a lysart or Crocodile, of coloure betwene whyte and russet, inclynynge sumwhat moze to whyte. This beast, is of forme and shape much lyke to a barbed horse with his barbes and flankettes in all poyntes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also and the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne all thynges in lyke sorte as in a barbed courser. They are of the bygues of one of these common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with there feete they make their dens very deepe & the holes therof in like maner as do connyes. They are verie excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and sum also killed with croshowes. They are lykewise taken often tymes when the husband men burie the stubble in sowynge time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beastes. I haue often times eaten of their fleshe which semeth to me of better tast then hyddes fleshe, and holysome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer byn seene in these partes of the woorld where the first barbed horses had their original, no man wold iudge but that the forme and fashion of the coperture of horses furnished for the warres was fyrst deuyled by the syght of these beastes.

Thei

There is also in the firme lande an other beaste cauled *Or* *Bearo.*  
*so Formigaro.* that is, the Ante beare. This beaste in heare and  
 colour, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner  
 of the same makynge saue that he hath a much longer snowe  
 and is of euyll syght. They are often tymes taken only with  
 stauces without any other weapon, and are not hurtful. They  
 are also taken with dogges bycause they are not naturally ar-  
 med althowgh they bite sumwhat. They are founde for the  
 mosse parte about and neare to the hyllockes where are great  
 abundaunce of antes. For in these regions is engendered a  
 certeyne kynde of antes very lytle and blacke, in the fyldes  
 and playnes where as growe no trees, where by thinstinct of  
 nature these antes separate them selues to engender far from  
 the wooddes for feare of these beares: The whiche bycause  
 they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmed (as I haue sayde) they  
 keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll very famen and neces-  
 sitie, or the great desire that they haue to fiede of these antes,  
 cause them to coomme out of the wooddes to hunte for them.  
 These antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heygght of a man,  
 or sumwhat moze or lesse, and as bygge as a great chest, and  
 sumtymes as bygge as a butte or a hogges head, and as hard  
 as a stone: So that they seeme as though they were stones  
 set by to lymette thendes and confines of certeyne landes.  
 Within these hyllockes made of most harde earth, are innu-  
 merable and infinite lytle antes, the which may bee gathered  
 by builhelles when the hyllocke is broken. The which when  
 it is sumtymes moysted by rayne and then dreyed ageyne by  
 the heate of the soonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne smaul  
 ryftes as lytle and subyle as the edge of a knyfe. And it sez  
 meth that nature hath gyuen sense to these Antes to fynde  
 suche a matter of earth wherewith they may make the sayde hyl-  
 locke of suche hardenes that it may seeme a stronge pauement  
 made of lyme and stone. And wheras I haue proued and cau-  
 sed sum of them to bee broken, I haue founde them of suche  
 hardenes as if I had not seene I coude not haue beleaued:  
 In so muche that they coude scarcely bee broken with pykes  
 of Iren: So stronge fortresses doo these lytle beastes make  
 for theyr sauegarde ageynst theyr aduersarie the beare, who  
 is chiefly nuryshed by them, and gyuen them as an enemy,  
 accordynge to the common prouerbe which sayth, *Non e alcuna*  
*persona*

## The hystorie

*persona si libera, a chiminehi il suo Bargello:* That is, there is no mā so free  
 that hath not his persecutour or pynne enemy. And here whē  
 I consider the maruelous prouidence which nature hath gy-  
 uen to these lytle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wis-  
 e sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such lytle beastes,  
 he sayth thus. Why doo we maruaile at the towebearynge  
 shoulers of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hath  
 placed so many senses and suche industry in suche lytle bod-  
 dies? where is hearynge, smellynge, seeinge, and feelynge,  
 ye, where are the haynes & arteries (withour which no beaste  
 can lyue or moue) in these so lytle boddies whereof sume are  
 so smaule that theyr hole boddies can scarcely be sene of owre  
 eyes, what shall we then saye of the partes of the same? yet  
 euen amonge these are there many of such sagacitie and indu-  
 strye as the lyke is not sene in beastes of greater quantitie,  
 no nor yet in man. &c. But to returne to the hystorie. This  
 enemy which nature hath gyuen to these lytle beastes; useth  
 this maner to assaile them. When he resorteth to the hyl-  
 locke where the antes lye hid as in theyr fortreffe, he putteth  
 his toonge to one of the ryftes wherof we haue spoken being  
 as subryle as the edge of a swoodde, and there with continu-  
 all lykkyng, maketh the place moyst, the some and froth of  
 his mouth beinge of such propertie that by continual lykkyng  
 the place, it enlargeth the ryfte in such sort by lytle and lyt-  
 tle, that at the length he easely putteth in his toonge whiche  
 he hath very longe and thynne, and much disproportionate  
 to his bodye. And when he hath thus made free passage for  
 his toonge into the hyllocke to put it easely in and owr at his  
 pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can  
 reache, and so letteth it reste a good space vntyl a great quan-  
 titie of the antes (whose nature reioyseth in heate and moy-  
 ster) haue laden his tonge and as many as he can conteyne in  
 the holowesse therof: at which tyme he suddelynly draweth  
 it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to  
 the same practise immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as manye as  
 hym lysteth, or as longe as he can reache any with his tonge.  
 The kille of this beaste, is fylthy and vnlawfull. But by rea-  
 son of the extreme thytes and necessitie that the Christian men  
 were put to at theyr fyrst commynge into these partes, they  
 were enforced to proue al thynges and so fel to thearyng of  
 these

these beastes. But when they had founde more delycate meates, they fell into hatred with this. These antes haue thaperaunce of the place of theyr enteraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde. And this at so lyttle a hole that it could hardly be founde yf certeyne of them were not seene to passe in and out. But by this way the beates coulde haue no such poure to hurte them as aboue at the sayde ryftes as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beaste whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the sloweste beastes in the worlde, and so heauy and dull in mouyng that it canne scarcely go fyfte pases in a hole day. These beastes are in the firme lande, and are very straunge to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes. They are abowte two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse. But when they are very younge, they are sumwhat more grosse then longe. They haue foure subtyle fiere, and in euery of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togyther. yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fiere able to susteyne theyr bodyes from the grounde. By reason wherof and by the heaupnesse of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellies on the grounde. Theyr neckes are hygh and streyght and all equall lyke the pestle of a morter, which is altogither equall euen vnto the toppe withowt makynge any proportion or similitude of a headde, or any dyfference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verpe rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle whiche maketh the theyr faces seeme sumwhat more longe then large. They haue smaule eyes and rounde: And nostrylles lyke vnto monkeys. They haue lyttle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one syde to an other as though they were astonysshed. Theyr chiefe desyre and delyte is to cleaue and stycke faste vnto trees or sume other thynge wherby they may clyme alofte. And therfore for the moste parte, these beastes are founde vppon trees wherunto cleaupng fast, they mounte vp by lyttle and lyttle, steyng them selues by theyr longe clawes. The colour of theyr heare, is betwene russet and whyte, and of the proper colour of the heare of a weasel. They haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much dyfferynge frome other beastes: for

A strange  
beast whiche  
seemeth a  
kynd of Cha-  
meleon.

## The hystorie

they syng onely in the nyght : And that continually frome tyme to tyme syngynge euer syre notes one hygher then an other, so faulynge with the same that the fyrste note is the hyghest and the other in a baler tone as yf a man shuld say *La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt.* So this beaste sayth, *Ha, ba, ba, ba, ba, ba.* And doubtrelesse, it seemeth vnto me, that as I haue sayde in the chapiter of the beaste cauled *Bardani*, that those beastes mighte bee thoziginall and document to imbarbe hozles, euen so the fyrste inuente of musycke myght seme by the hearynge of this beaste to haue the fyrst principles of that scyence rather then by any other thynge in the worlde. But nowe to retorne to the hystorie : I say that in a tzozte space after this beaste hath soonge and hath paused a whyle, he retureth ageyne to the selfe same songe, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reason wherof and also bycause of her euill syght, I thynke her to bee a nyght beaste and the frende of darkenesse. Sumtymes the Christian menne synde these beastes and bynge theym home to theyz hoyses, where also they creepe all abowte with theyz naturall stowenesse, in so much that nother for threatenynge or pryckynge they wyl moue any faster then theyz natural and accustomed pace. And yf they synde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mouate to the toppe of the hyghest bzaunche thereof, where they remaine continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatynge of any thinge as farre as any man can iudge. And wheras I my selfe haue keppe theym in my house, I coulde neuer perceaue other but that they lye onely of aper. And of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, bycause they haue neuer scene them eate any thynge, but euer turne theyz heades and mouthes towarde that parte where the wynde bloweth most : whereby may bee consydered that they take moste pleasure in the aper. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauyng very litle mouthes. They are not venemous or noyous any way; but altogether brutishe and viterly unprofytable and without commoditie yet knowen to men; sayynge onely to mooue theyz myndes to contemplate thynfinite poure of god, who delyreth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the poure of his incomprehensible wysedome and maiestie so farre to exceede the capacite of mans vnderstandynge.

In these regions there are likewise found certeyne foules  
 of byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz*. These are much  
 bigger then geese. The greatest parte of theyr feathers are of  
 russet colour, and in some partes yelow. Theyr bylles or  
 beakes are of two spannes in length and verye large neare to  
 the heade, and growynge smaule towarde the poynte. They  
 haue greate and large throates: And are much lyke to a foule  
 which I sawe in Flaunders in *Wustelles* in yovre maiesties  
 pallaice which the Flemynge caule *Haina*. And I remember  
 that when yovre maiestie dynd one day in yovre great haule  
 there was brought to yovre maiesties presence a chauderne of  
 water with certeyne fyshes alyue, which the sayde foule did  
 eate by hole. And I thynke verely that that foule was a foule  
 of the sea because thee had fiere lyke foules of the water as  
 haue also these *Alcatraz*, which are liketypse to ules of the sea:  
 and of such greatnesse that I haue seene a hole core of a man  
 put into the throates of one of them in *Panama* in the yere  
 1521. And forasmuch as in that coaste of *Panama*, there pas-  
 seth and aperyh a greate multitude of these *Alcatraz* beinge a  
 thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not  
 onely I, but also dyuers other nowe presente in yovre ma-  
 iesties courte haue often tymes seene. Yovre maiestie shall  
 therfore vnderstande that in this place (as I haue sayde be-  
 fore) the sea of *sur* rylseth and fauleth two leagues and more  
 from syxe houres to syxe houres: so that when it increaseth,  
 the water of the sea arryueh so neare to the houses of *Panama*  
 as doth oovre sea (cauled *Mare Mediterraneum*) in *Barzalona* or in  
*Naples*. And when the sayd increasynge of the sea commeth,  
 there commeth also therewith such a multitude of the smaule  
 fyshes cauled *sardynes*, that it is so marueylous a thyng to  
 beholde, that no man wolde belue it that hath not seene it.  
 In so much that the *Cacique*, (that is) the kynge of that land  
 at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was  
 commaunded by yovre maiesties gouernour, to bynge or dy-  
 raryly thre canoas or barkes full of the sayde *sardynes* and  
 to vnlade the same in the markette place, whiche were after-  
 ward by the rules of the citie diuyded amonge the Christian  
 men without any cosse or charge to any of them. In so much  
 that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they  
 were, and as many as are at this presente in *Toledo* or more,  
 and

Foules, and  
byrdes.

*Alcatraz*.

*Panama*.

## The hystorie

and had none other thyng to lye by, they myght haue byn sufficiently susceyned by these sardynes, bysye thouerplus whiche shulde haue remainned. But to retorne to the foules wherof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the sardynes with the same, euen so lykewyse coome the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therwith: and flye continually ouer it in suche a multytude, that they appeare to couer thupper parte of soure of the water. And thus continue in mountyng and faulynge from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer durynge all the tyme of theyr flyyng. And as soone as they haue taken any of these sardynes, they flye aboute the water and cate them incontynently, and suddelynly retorne ageyne to the water for moze, continuing thus course by course with out ceasynge. In lyke maner when the sea fauleth, they so lowe there flyyng as I haue sayde. There goethe also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Codainforata*, (that is) the forked taylor, wherof I haue made mention befoze. And as soone as the *Alcatraz* mounteth from the water with her pray of the sardynes, suddelynly this *Codainforata* gyueth her so many strokes, and so persecuteth her, that she causeth her to let faule the sardynes whiche she hath in her mouth. The whiche as soone as they are faulne, and be soze they yet touch the water, the *Codainforata* catcheth them euen in the faule, in suche sorte that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is such, that the Chyistian menne are accustomed to send to certeyne Ilandes and rockes whiche are neare abowte *Panama*, with theyr boates or barkes to take these *Alcatrazzi* whyle they are yet younge and can not flye: and kyll as many of them with staues as they wyll, butyll they haue therwith laden theyr barkes or canoas. These younge ones are so fatte and wel fedde that they can not be eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make greafe for candels to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lycht, and burneth easely. After this maner and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kylde. And yet it seemeth that the number of them that flye for sardynes doo dayly increase

*Puffes simple*

There are other foules cauled *Passere simple*: that is, simple sparowes. These are sumwhat lesse then semewes: and haue theyr

theye flete lyke vnto great malardes: And stande in the water sumtymes. And when the shippes sayle fyftie or a hundred leagues abowte the Ilandes, these foules beholdynge the shippes commynge towarde them, breake theye syght and faule downe vpon the sayle yardes, mastes, and cables therof. And are so simple and folyse that they rary vntyll they maye easely be taken with mens handes, and were therfore cauled of the maryners simple sparowes. They are blacke, and vpon their blacke, haue theye headdes and shoulers of feathers of a darke russet coloure. They are not good to bee eaten, although the mariners haue sumtymes bin inforced to eate the.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyne lande, which the Christians caule *Picuti*, because they haue very great beakes in respect of the lytlenesse of theye boddies: for theye beakes are very heauy and waye moze then theye hole boddies bysyde. These byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater buschement of feathers, in so much that theye feathers are moze then theye boddies. Theye feathers are very fayre and of many variable coloures. Theye beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or moze, and bendynge downe towarde the earthe, and thre fyngers brode neare vnto the heade. Theye tonges are very quilles, wherwith theye make a greate hysynge. Theye make holes in trees with theye beakes, in the which theye make theye nestes. And surely these byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche theye haue from all other byrdes that I haue seene, as well for theye toonges (which are quilles as I haue sayde) as also for the strangenesse of theye syght and disproportion of their greate beakes in respect of the rest of theye boddies. There are no byrdes founde that proude better for the safegarde of theye younge in the tyme of theye breedynge to bee withoute daunger of wylde catteres that theye enter not into theye nestes to destroye theye egges or younge. And this aswell by the straunge maner of buyldynge theye nestes, as also by theye owne defence. And therfore when theye perceauie that the catteres approche towarde them, theye enter into theye nestes: and holdynge theye beakes towarde thentrance of the same, stande at theye defence, and so bere the catteres that theye cause them to leaue theye enterpise.

There are also other byrdes or sparowes, whiche the Christians

## The hystorie

Foly the spa-  
rowes.

Christians by contrary effect caule *Math.* that is fooles. Where as neuerthelesse there is no byrde that sheweth more wyt and craft in defendynge her younge from perell. These byrdes are lyttle and in maner blacke, and somewhat bygger then owre thyrushes. They haue certeyne whyte feathers in theyr neckes, and the lyke sagacitie or sharpnes of sense as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gaxxuoles*. They seldome tymes lichte vppon the earth. They make theyr nestes in trees separated from other, because the wyldc cattles (cauled *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape frome tree to tree, not descendynge to the grounde for feare of other beastes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrste to coomme downe to drynke at suche tymes as they are sure not to bee molested. And for this cause doo not these byrdes make theyr nestes but in trees farre diuyded from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lyttle sackes, large at the bottome, and growynge narrower and narrower toward the mouth whereby they are fastened: haupnge the hole whereae they enter into the sacke, of such byggenes as may onely suffice to receaue them. And to thende that the cattles maye not deuoure theyr younge yf they chaunce to mounce vppon the trees where they haue theyr nestes, they vse an other craft, which is, to make theyr nestes in thicke bzaunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and stronge thoznes implycate and set in such order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattles can by no meares put theyr legges into the hole of the neste to take owt the younge byrdes, as well for the sharpnes of the thoznes as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the younge birdes rest with owt daunger of theyr enemye. For sum of theyr nestes beynge thzee or foure spannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vse also an other pollicie: which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree. The which they doo for one of these two causes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to go in great multitudes, & reioyse in the company of theyr owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule stares, or elles to thintent that yf it shoulde so chaunce that the cattles shoulde clyme the trees where they make theyr nestes, they might bee a greater company to resyste and molest the cattles.

at whose approach they make a feareful and terrible cry, wher by the cattles are put to flyght.

Furthermoze, in the firme land, and in the Flaudes, there are certeyne byzdes cauled *Piche* or *Gaxzuole*, somewhat lyke vnto those which we caule woodwaules, or woodpeckes, beinge lesse then owes of Spayne. These are altogether blacke, and go hoppynge and leappng. Theyr beakes are also blacke and of the same fallhyon as are the poppingiays beakes. They haue longe tayles, and are sumwhat bygger then stares.

There are other byzdes cauled *Fintadelli*, whiche are lyke vnto certeyne greene byzdes whiche the Italyans caule *Fringuelli*: and are of seuen coloures. These byzdes for feare of the cattles, are euer woonte to make theyr nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers of the sea, where the braunches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a lytele weyght they maye bowe downe to the water. Theyr nestes are made so neare the topes of the braunches that when the cattles coome theron, the braunches bende towarde the water, and the cattles turne backe ageyne for feare of saulynge. For althoughe no beaste in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the mooste parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to swimme, this catt hath no maner of aptenesse thereunto, and is therefore soone drowned or stranged in the water, and by a pyruie sense of nature feareth the daunger which he can not escape. These byzdes make theyr nestes in suche sorte, that althowgh they bee wette and fylled with water, yet doo they so sudderly ryse vp ageyne, that the younge byzdes are not thereby hurte or drowned.

There are also many nyghtyngales and other byzdes whiche synge maruelously with great melodie and dyfference in synngng. These byzdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures the one from the other. Sum are altogether yelowe, and sum other of so excellent, delectable, and hygge a coloure as it weare a rubye. Other are also of dyuers and variable coloures: sum of fewe coloures, and other sume all of one coloure: beinge all so fayre and bewtifull, that in byghenesse and synngng they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy or other prouinces of Europe. Many of these are taken with nettes, lime twygges, and sprynges of dyuers sortes.

Dyuers other sortes of greate foules lyke vnto Eagles,

*Gaxzuole*

*Fintadelli*

Great fowles

## The hystorie

And suche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of suche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to describē them all particularly. And forasmuche as I haue moze largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requysite here to make anye further mention of the same,

### ¶ Of trees, fruites, and plantes,

*Cocus,*



Here is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilandes a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynd of date trees and hauynge theyr leaues of the selfe same greatenesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growynge. For the leaues of this *Cocus* growe oute of the trunkes of the tree as doo the syngers out of the hande, wreathynge them selues one within an other and so spreadynge abroad. These trees are hygh and are founde in great plentie in the coaste of the sea of *Ser*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chimar*. These date trees bynne forth a frute after this sorte. Beinge altogither vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And fro the superficiall parte to the myddest which is the frute, it is inuolued and covered with many webs much lyke vnto those hyrdes of towne whiche they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towne or webbe, the East Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure sortes, and cordes for the sayles of shippes. But in these Indies of yowr maiestie, they passe not for these cordes or this clothe that maye be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the gossampine trees. The frute which is in the myddest of the sayde towne, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans syde, and sumtymes thye as bygge and moze. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or sum other rounde thyng somewhat moze longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thicke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleauerh faste to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of cooznel, of the thychkenesse of halfe a synger or of the least synger of the hande: And is verye whyte, lyke vnto a sayre Almonde, and of better taste

AND

and more pleasaunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remaine certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. yet if it bee swallowed downe, it is not vnpleasaunt. For although that after the iculse or moysture bee gonne downe the throte befoze the sayde crummes bee swallowed, the reste whiche is eaten seeme sumwhat sharpe or sower, yet doth it not so greatly offende the taste as to bee cast away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the trec, they vse not to eate of the sayde carnositie and frute: But fyrste beatynge it very much, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substance: The which the Christian men of those regions put in the coztes or cakes which they make of the grayne of *Maizium* wherof they make theyr breade, or in other breade as we put breade in porrage: So that by reason of the sayde mylke of *Cocus*, the coztes are more excellent to be eaten with out offence to the stomake. They are so pleasaunte to the taste, and leaue it as well satisfied as thowghe it had byn delected with many delicate dysthes. But to proceade further, wholore maicstie shall vnderstand, that in the place of the stone or cooznell, there is in the myddell of the sayde carnositie, a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a moste cleare and excellent water, in such quantitie as maye fyll a greate egge shell, or more or lesse accordynge to the byggenesse of the *Cocus*. The which water surely, is the moste substantial, excellent and precious to be dronke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In so much that in the momente when it passeth the palate of the mouth and begynneth to goo downe the throte it seemerhe that frome the sole of the foote to the crowne of the head, there is no parte of the boddye but that feelerhe great cōfort therby: as it is doubtlesse one of the most excellent thynges that may be tasted vpon the earth, and suche as I am not able by wyptyng or toonge to expresse. And to proceade yet further, I say that when the meate of this frute is taken from the vessell thereof, the vessell remaineth as fayre and netre as though it were pullyshed: and is without, of colour inclynng towards blacke, and shyneth or glystereth very fayre. And is within of no lesse delicatenesse. Suche as haue accustomed to drynke in these vesselles, and haue bynne troubled with the disease cauled the freyng of the guttes,

I haue seene one of these frutes opened, the which when it was hole, yf it were shake the water was harde shogge there in as it were in a bottle, but in tyme it consumed and was partly congeled in to a saite substance.

## The hystorie

say that they haue by experience founde it a maruelous remedie ageynst that disease: And that it breakethe the stone and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cause, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faste to the tree, there are seene two holes, and aboute them two or ther naturall holes, which altogpyther, doo represent the giers sure and fygyure of the carttes cauled *Munnone*, that is, *munkeys*, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the same effecte to heale freyng of the guttes, that *Plinie* describeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

great trees.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of suche byggenesse that I dare not speake thereof but in place where I haue so many wytnesses which haue seene the same as well as I. I say therfore, that a league from *Dariena* or the citie of *Sancti Maria Antiqua*, there passeth a ryuer very large & deepe, which is cauled *Cuni*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a greate tree so trauersinge the same that it was in the steade of a bydge, the which I my selfe with dyuers other that are at this present in your maiesties courte, haue often tymes passed ouer. And forasmuch as the sayde tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight thereof was so shonke downe ward and partely couered with water that none could passe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeare 1522. thofficial of Justice in that citie at your maiesties appoyntemente, caused an other greate tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauersed the ryuer and reached more the fiftie foote ouer the further syde. This tree was exceeding greate, and rested aboute the water more then thood cubytes. In the faule, it cast downe all suche other trees as were within the reache thereof: And discovered certeyne bynes whiche were so laden with blacke grapes of pleasaunte taste, that they satysfied more then fiftie persons whiche eate theyr fylle thereof. This tree in the thickest parte thereof, was more then syxtene spannes thicke: And was neuerthelesse but lyttle in respect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Carengia*, make barkes or boates thereof (whiche they caule *Canoas*) of such byggenesse, beinge all of one hole tree, that some conteyne a hundreth men, some a hundreth and thirtie, and some

time more, hauynge neuerthelesse suche boyde space within the same, that there is lesse sufficiente roome to passe to and fro through oute all the *Canoa*. Sum of these are so large by: syde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelue spannes in breadth, and sayle with twoo sayles as with the master sayle and the trinkette which they make of verrey good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue scene in these partes or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Quatro*, the kynge wherof rebellynge from thobedience of yowre maiestie, was persued by me and taken prysoner: At whiche tyme I with my company, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne ful of great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche had three rootes or rather diuisions of the roote aboute the earth in foyme of a tryangle or triuette: so that betwene euery foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a space of twentic foote betwene euery foote. And this of such heyghe aboute the earth, that a laden carte of those wherewith they are accustomed to hyngge home corne in the tyme of harvest in the kyngedome of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght easely haue passed through euery of those particions or wyndowes whiche were betwene the three feete of the sayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunk of the tree, the open places of the diuisions betwene these three feete, were of suche heyghe from the grounde, that a footeman with a iuelyn was not able to reache to the place where the sayde feete ioynd together in the trunk or body of the tree which grew of great height in one piece and one hole body, or euer it spredde in bzaunches, which it did not befoze it exceded in heyghe the towre of saynt Romane in the cite of *Toledo*: from whiche heyghe and vpwarde, it sprede very greate and stronge bzaunches. Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I myselfe was one. And when I was ascended to the place where it begunne to sprede the branches, it was a maruelous thing to beholde a greate countrey of suche trees towarde the prouince of *Abzayme*. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certeyne *Besubi* (wherof I haue spoken befoze) which grewe wreathed aboute the tree in suche foze that they seemed to make a scalyng ladder. Euery of the foresayde three feete which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentic spannes in thychkenesse. And where they ioynd al together aboute in the

A maruelous  
tree.

trunks

## The hystorie

trunke or boddye of the tree, the principall trunke was more then fortye and fyue spannes in circuit. I named the mountayne where these trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue nowe declared, was seene of all the companie that was there with me when (as I haue sayde befoze) I tooke kynge *Guaturo* prisoner in the yeare 1522. Many thynges more myght here bee spoken as touchyng this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers sortes and difference, as swete Cedar trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which sum are so heauy that they can not stowe aboute the water but synke immediatly to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a cozke. As touchyng all whiche thynges I haue wypten more largely in my generall hystorie of the Indies.

kyndlyng of  
fyre without  
fyre.

And forasmuch as at this present I haue entered to intreate of trees, befoze I passe any further to other thynges, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a peece of woodde of two spannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leaste fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well gullyshed, and of a stronge kynde of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpose. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other peeces of woodde of the dryest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast together one with an other as close as two fyngers toynded. In the myddest or betwene these, they put the poynt of the fyrste lyttle staffe made of harde and stronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two peeces of woodde which lye bounde together vppon the earthe, which by that incessant rubbingge and chafyngge, are in short space kyndeled and take fyre.

putrified  
woodde shy-  
nyng in the  
nyght.

I haue also thought good here to speake somewhat of such thynges as comme to my remembraunce of certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and sumeryme also the lyke haue bynne seene in Spayne. These are certeyne putrified troonkes which haue lye so longe rottyng on the earth that they are verie whyte and shyne in the nyght lyke burnyng fyrebrandes. And when the Spanyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende pryncipally in the nyght to make warre and

inuade

inuaide any prouince when case so requyrezeth that it shalbe necessary to go in the nyght in suche places where they knowe not the way, the formost Christian man whiche guydethe the waye, associate with an Indian to directe hym therein, takech a lyttle starre of the sayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangynge behynde on his shouldders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre behynde hym, by the shynynge wherof the thyrde foloweth the same waye, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this meanes none are losse or stragle owte of the way. And sozasmuche as this lyght is not seene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Christians because they are not thereby disclosed befoze they inuaide theyz enemies.

Furthermoze as touchynge the natures of trees, one particular thynge seemeth woorthy to bee noted, wherof Plinie maketh mention in his natural hystoie where he saythe that there are certeyne trees which conserue euer greene and neuer lose theyz leaues, as the baye tree, the Cedar, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with such other, of the whiche in all togyther he nameth not passe fyue or syxe. To this purpose, I saye, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the firme lande, it is a thynge of muche difficultie to fynde wood trees that lose or cast theyz leaues at any tyme. For althowgh I haue diligently searched to knowe the trowthe hereof, yet haue I not seene any that lose theyz leaues, eyther of theym which we haue brought owte of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Ceders, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions excepte onely *Cassa*, which looeth his leaues and hath a greater thynge appropriate to it selfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade theyz rootes no deeper in the earth then the depth of a mans heygth or sume what moze, not descendyng any further into the ground by reason of the greate heate which is found beneath that depth, yet dooth *Cassa* pearce further into the grounde vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Philosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radycall moyster to suche thynnges as drawe theyz nuryshment therof, as far and vncynuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast & firme moysture

*Plinie*

Trees which  
continue euer  
greene.

*Cassa.*

A secreate  
thynge.

Radycall  
moysture.

## The hystorie

to suche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that suche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the sayde thynne and water. The moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde effecte which is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none of her tree or plance in all these parties.

### C Of Reedes or Canes.



Haue not thought it conuenient in the chapture befoze to speake of that whereof I intende nowe to intreate of reedes or canes to thincnte that I woolde not mengle theym with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of the selues woorty to bee particularly obserued. So it is therfoze, that in the firme land there are many sortes of reedes, so that in many places they make theyr houses therof, couerpyng them with the toppes of the same, and makynge theyr waules of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde befoze. And amonge these kyndes of reedes, there is one so greate, that the canes therof are as bygge as a mans legge in the knee, and thzee spannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or moze: in so much that euery of them is of capacitie to conteyne a lyttle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde sum greater and sum lesse, of the which sum they vse to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde another kynde which suerly is marueplous, beyngge lyttle bygger then a Faucen, the canes whereof are longer then twoo spannes. These reedes growe one farre from an other, as sum tymes twentie or thirtie paces, and sumetymes alio twoo or thzee leagues. They growe in maner in all prouynces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees whereunto they leane, and creepe by to the toppes of theyr braunches, which they imbrase and descende ageyne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of mosse cleare water without any maner of salt or sauoure eyther of the canes or of any other thyng: And suche as yf it were taken owte of the freesthelle spryng in the woorld. Noz yet is it knowen that euer it hurte any that dronke therof. For it hath oftentymes so chaunced that as the Thyssten men haue traauyled in these regions in desolate wyges where for lacks of water they haue byn in great daunger

ger to dye for thyrste, they haue escaped that perell by reason that they founde the sayde reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue dronke a great quantitie without any hurte thereof enstoyng. Therefoze when they fynde these in any place, they make water vesselles of the canes therof, and carry as many of them full of water as may suffice for one dayes ior nay. And sumtyme they carry so many, that they take for euery man two or thre quartes of water which may serue them for many dayes bycause it doth not corrupte, but remayne the selfe fresh and good.

There are also certeine plantes which the Christians call *Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as bygge in the trunk as the knee of a man or more. From the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then thre spannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalk remayneth hole in the myddest. In the myddeste of this plant in the hyghest parte thereof, there groweth a cluster with forty or fyfte *Platans* about it, euery of them beinge a spanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the smaile, or more or lesse accordyng to the goodnesse of the soyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thicke, and easy to be broken: being within altogether full of a substance lyke vnto the marve of the bone of an ore as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken from the same. This cluster owght to be taken from the plant, when any one of the *Platans* begynne to appere yelow. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houses where all the cluster wareth ripe with all his *Platans*. This cluster is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beinge roasted or stewed in an oven in a close pot or sum such other thynge, are of pleasaunte taste muche lyke the conserve of hony. They putrifie not on the sea so soone as sume other frutes do: but continue fyfteen dayes and more yf they be gathered sumwhat greene. They seeme more delicate on the sea then on the lande, not for that they any thynge increase in goodnesse on the sea, but bycause that whereas on the sea or ther thynge are lackyng wherof is plentie on the land, those wares seeme of beste taste which satisfie present necessity.

*Platani**Figges.*

## The hystorie

This troonke or spygge whiche byngeth forth the sayde cluster is a hole yeare in growyng and bynging forth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put forth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue spygges as bygge as the fyrst or principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the principall in byngyng forth the clusters with frutes lyke wyse at theyr tyme, and also in byngyng forth other and many spygges as is sayde befoze. From the whiche spygges or trunkes, as soone as the clusters of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to dye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycause it doth none other then occupie it in vayne and without profyte. They are so many and doo so maruelously increase and multiplye, that it is a thyng in maner incredible. They are exceedyng moyste. In so much that when they are plucked by frō the place wher they grow, there istherewith forth a great quantitie of water as well owt of the plante as owt of the place wher it grewe: In suche sorte that all the moyste of the earth farre abowte, myght seeme to bee gathered to gyther abowte the trunkes or blocke of the sayde plante: with the frutes wherof, the artes are so farre in loue, that they are seene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it sumertyme so chauncerh that men are inforced to take away the platans frome theyr possession. These frutes are founde at all tymes of the yeare.

*Tunas.*

There is also an other kynd of wylde plantes that groweth in the fyeldes: which I haue not seene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, althowgh they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. These they caule *Tunas*. They growe of a thistle full of thornes, and bynge forth a frute muche lyke vnto great spygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hygge coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a spygge. They are of good taske: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woork a straunge effecte in suche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or three or more, they cause his vrine to bee of the verye coloure of bludde, which thyng chaunced vnto me. At whiche tyme as I made water and sawe the colour of my vrine, I entered into a great suspicion of my lyfe, beinge so astonysht for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to me vpon some other cause. In so much that lyce my imagination myght

myght haue doene me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd conforzte me immediatly, declarynge the cause therof as they knewe by experyence beynge auncient inhabitants in those regions.

There groweth also an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bibaos*. This putteth forth certeyne greight branches and very brode leaues whiche the Indians vse for dyuers purposes. For in sum places they couer theyr houses with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of ghetche, wherunto it serueth very well. Sumtymes also whē it rayneth, they cast these ouer theyr heades to defende them from the water. They make also certeyne chestes whiche they caule *Hauas*, weaued after a straunge sorte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bibaos*. These chestes are wrought in such sort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not such thynges wette as are within them. They are made of the branches of the sayde *Bibaos* with the leaues weaued togyther therewith. In these they keepe salte and other subtyle thynges. They vse theym also for an other purpose, which is this: That findyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarceneste of vyttayles, they dygge vp the rootes of these plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it selfe in that parte where it is moste tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a recde or bulrush.

And forasmuch as wec are nowe comme to the end of this narration, it commeth to my remembraunce to make mentiō of an other thyng which is not farre from my purpose. And this is howe the Indians do stayne or dye cloth of borne hage cotton, or any other thyng which they intende to dye of dyuers coloures: as blacke, tawny, greene, blew, yelowe, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees, whiche they knowe by experyence to bee good for this practise. And by this arte they make coloures in such perfection and excellencie that no better can bee dyuyced. But this seemeth a straunge thyng, that they doo all this in one selfe same vessel: So that when they haue caused the sayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togyther, they make in the same vessel without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many coloures as them lysteth. Whiche thyng I suppose to

*Bibaos.**Hauas.*

Dying of cotton.

A strange thyng.

## The hystorie

coomme to passe by the disposition of the colour whiche they haue fyrste gyuen to the thyng that they intende to dye or colour, whether it bee threede, webbe, or clothe, or any thyng that they intende to colour.

**O**f venemous apples wherewith they  
poyson theyr arrowes.



**L**he apples wherewith the Indian Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees covered with many braunches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of these euyl frutes, and haue theyr leaues lyke the leaues of a pearce tree, but that they are lesse and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muscadell pearces of the Islande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggenesse: And are in sum partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweete sauoure. These trees for the moste parte, growe euer by the sea coastes and neare vnto the water: And are so fayre and of pleasaunte sauour, that there is no man that see the theym but wyll desyre to eate therof.

Note.

Canibales ar  
chiers.

wherewith  
they inuenym  
theyr arrowes

Petrus Aris.

In so much that if it may bee spoken of any frute yett growyng on the earth, I wolde saye that this was the unhappy frute wherof oure fyrste parentes Adam and Eue tasted, wherby they both lost theyr felicitie and procured death to them & theyr posteritie. Of these frutes, and of the greate antes whose byrnyng causeth swellynge (whereof I haue spoken els where) and of the cutes or lylartes, and byppers, and such other venemous thynges, the Canibales which are the chyefe archers amonge the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes wherewith they kyll all that they wounde.

These venemes they mengle together and make thereof a blacke masse or composition which appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyson I caused a great quantitie to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leagues and more within the lande, with a greate multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with also the house wherein they were reserued. This was in the yeare. 1514. at suche tyme as tharmy arriued there with capitayne *Pedro Arias de uilla* at  
the

the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the hystory. These apples (as I haue said) growe neare vnto the sea. And wheras the Christians which serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profytable for such as are wounded with these arrows, as is the water of the sea if the wounde be much walshed therewith, by which meanes sum haue escaped although but fewe, yet to save the trowth, albeit the water of the sea haue a certeyne causlike qualitie agaynst popson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case: nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceaued that of fishe that haue byn wounded, thre haue recovered. But that your maiestie may the better consider the force of the veneme of these trees, youe shall further vnderstande that yf a man doo but repose hym selfe to sleepe a lyttle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head and eyes so swollen when he wakeneth, that the eye lyddes are toynd with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the sayde tree to faule into the eye, it vterly destroyeth the syght. The pestilent nature of this tree is such that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of these there groweth greate plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towards the North coast on the Weste and East side. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so greate a stynke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so greate a payne in the headde.

The water of  
the sea.

The goulfe of  
*Vraba*.

Amonge other trees which are in these Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xigua*, wherof there is greate plentie. They are very hygh and streyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes and saucyls of dyuers lengthes and byggenesse. They are of a fayre colour betwene russette and whyte. This tree byngeth forth a greate frute as bygge as papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is ripe. Swete of this they gette a very cleare water wherewith they washe theyr legges and sume tymes all theyr boddys when they seele theyr fleshe werpe, fayne, or loose. The which water, bysides that it hath a very dyngne qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that what so euer it toucheth, it scyneth it blacke by lyttle and lyttle vntyll it be as blacke as giete, which colour can not be taken away

*Xigua*

## The hystorie

in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes. And if the nayle bee but touched therewith, it is so steeind that it can by no meanes bee taken away vntyll it epyther faule of, or growe owtre and bee clypped away by lyttle and lyttle, as I my selfe haue oftentimes scene by experience.

Hobi,  
Sum thynke  
these to be mi  
robalaues.

There is an other kynde of trees which they caule *Hobi*. These are very great and fayre, & cause holtsome ayer where they growe and a pleasaunt shadow, and are founde in great abundaunce. Theyr frute is very good, and of good tast and sauoure, and much lyke vnto cerreyne damsons or prunes beinge lyttle and yelow. But theyr stone is very great: by reason wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rinde boyled in water, maketh a holtsome bathe for the legges, by cause it bindeth and steperth the loosenesse of the flesshe so sensibly that it is a marueyle to consyder. It is suerly a holtsome and excellent bathe ageynst such fayntnesse: And is the beste tree that may bee founde in those parties to sleepe vnder. For it causeth no heauinesse of the headd as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thynge I speake bycause the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the speldes. It is therfoze a common practise amonge them, that where so euer they fynd these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherin they sleepe.

Date trees,

There are also a kynde of hygge date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of these is moste excellent: beinge very blacke, and thynnyng, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swimme aboute the water, but synketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Also iauelyns, speares, and pykes. And I saye pykes, bycause that in the coastes of the sea of *sur*, beyonde *Esquegué* and *Vracha*, the Indians vse great and longe pykes made of the woodde of these date trees. Of the same lykewyse they make clubbes and swoordes and dyuers other weapons. Also bestelles and houssholde stuffe of dyuers sortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermoze of this woodde the Christians vse to make dyuers muscalle instrumentes, as clarifimbals, lutes, gytterns, and suche other, the whiche byspide theyr fayre thynge colour lyke vnto giere, are also of a good sounde and very durable by reason of the hardenesse of the woodde.

Thinhabitantes  
of the sea  
of Sur.

After that I haue sayde thus much of trees and plantes,  
I haue

I haue thought good also to speake sumwhat of herbes. you shall therefore vnderstande that in these Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yelowe lylie, abowte whose leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes oz laces. as the lyke is partly seene in the herbe which we caule lased saucry. But these of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer: and so stronge that they tye they hangynge beddes thereby whiche they caule *Namacas* wherof we haue spoken elswhere. These cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing sauyng that *Henequen* is lesse and of a fyner substaunce as it were line: And the other is grosser lyke the wycke oz thopte of hempe, and is imperfecte in comparison to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yelowe lyke vnto abarne, and sum also whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the moste subtyle and fyne threede, the Indians sawe in sunder fetters, cheynes, oz barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to sawe oz cutte, drawynge the one hande after the other as doo they that sawe, putynge cuer nowe and then a portion of fyne sande vppon the threede, oz on the place oz parte of the Iren where they continue rubbyng the sayde threede. So that yf the threede be worne, they take an other, and continue in they woork as befoze vntyl they haue cutte in sunder the iren although it bee neuer so bygge: and cut it as yf it were a tender thyng and easye to bee sawne.

And for asmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amonge herbes, I wyll here speake sumwhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thoznes, that there is no tree oz plante that seemeth moze wyld and deformed: so that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees oz plantes. They haue certeyne bzaunches full of large and deformed leaues, which bzaunches were fyrste leaues lyke vnto the other. As the bzaunches made of these leaues growe foorth the inlength, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a difficult thyng to describethe the forme of these trees except the same shulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the tooonge sayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of such vertue, that beyng well beagen and spreaddde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playster

An herb that beareth the cordes.

*Cabuia* & *Henequen*.

A straig thinge.

Leaves.

A leafe of Great Vertue.

## The hystorie

playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in fyfene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had neuer byn broken. Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the flesh that it can not without much difficultie bee taken away. But as soone as it hath healed the soie and wrought his operation, it looseth it selfe from the place wher it was layde, as I my selfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experience

### Of fyshes and of the maner of fyshynge.



In the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and sundry kyndes of fyshes muche differynge in shape and forme. And althoughe it be impossible to speake of all, yet wyl I make mention of sum. And fyrst to begynne at Sardynes, yowre shall vnderstande that there is founde a kynde of these fyshes very large and with redde tayles, beinge a very delicate fysh. The beste kyndes of other fyshes are these: Moxarre, Diabace, Bzettes, Dabaos, Thourbackes, and Salmones. All these and dyuers other which I don or now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are lykewyse taken very good creuyshes. There are also founde in the sea, certeyne other fyshes: as soles, mackelless, turbuttes, Palamite, Lixze, Polpi, Chieppe, Xaibas, Locustes, Dysters, erccadyng great Tortoyles, and Tiburoni of marvelous byggennesse: Also Manates, and Murene, and manye other fyshes which haue no names in oure language. And these of such diuersitie and quantitie as can not bee expressed without large wyrtynge and longe tyme. But to let passe to intreate particularly of the multitude of fyshes, I intende to speake chiefly and sumwhat largely of thre soies of most notable fyshes: wherof the fyrst is, the great Tortoyles, the seconde is cauled Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the fyrst, I saye that in the Ilande of Cuba, are founde great Tortoyles (which are certeyne shell fyshes) of such byggennesse that tenne or fyfene men are scarcely able to lyfte one of them out of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible persons dwellynge in the same Ilande. But

Tiburons.  
Manates

Great Tortoyles,

of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie that in the firme lande in the byllage of Acla there are of this sorte sum taken and kylled of suche byggenes that sixe men with much difficultie coulde scarcely drawe them owt of the water. And commonly the least sorte of them are as much as two men may carry at a burden. That which I sawe lifted by by fyre men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth moze then fyve yardes. The maner of takynge them. is this. It sumtymes chaunceth that in theyr greate nettes (whiche they caule shoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Toxoyles of the common sorte in great quantities. And when they coome owt of the sea and bringe forth theyr egges and go rogyther by companies from the sea to scade on the lande, the Christians or Indians folowe theyr steppes whiche they fynde in the lande, and soone ouertake them bycause they are very heauy and slowe in goynge, although they make all the haste they can to returne to the sea as soone as they espie any boddie. When they that pursue them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or stake vnder theyr legges and ouerturue the on theyr backes as they are yet runnyng, so that they can go no further nor yet ryle ageyne or turne. And thus they suffer them to lye styll whyle they folowe after the reste whiche they ouerturue in lyke maner: And by this meanes take very manye at suche tymes as they coome furth of the sea as I haue sayde. This fysh is very excellent and holsome to be eaten, and of good taste. The seconde of the thre fyshes wherof I haue spoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fysh and very quicke and swyfte in the water, and a cruell deuourer. These are often tymes taken, as well when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at any other time, and especially the leaste kynd of these fishes. When the shippes are vnder sayle, the biggest sorte are taken after this maner. When the Tiburon seeth the shippe sailinge he foloweth it stoppynge behynde. The which thinges the mariners seeinge, cast furthe all the fysh of the shippe into the sea for the fysh to eate, who neuerthelesse foloweth the with equal pace although they make neuer suche haste wyth full wynd and sailes, and waloweth on euery syde and about the shippe: And thus foloweth it sumetyme for the space of a hundredth and fyftie leaques and more. And when the mariners

## The hystorie

riners are disposed to take them, they cast doone by the sterne  
 of the shippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggest finger of  
 a mans hande of thre spannes in lengthe and crooked like a  
 fyfthe hooke with beardes accordinge to the bignesse thereof,  
 and fastened to an iren chayne of fyue or fyxe linkes neare vnto  
 to thende, and from thense tyed with a greate rope, fastening  
 also on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of sum fyfthe, or hogges  
 flesh, or sum other fleshe, or the bowelles and intralles of  
 an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may  
 easely bee doone, for I haue seene nyne taken in one day.  
 And if they wold haue taken moze, they myght also. Thus  
 when the Tiburon hath pleasauntly folowed the ship a longe  
 biage, at the lengthe he swalloweth the baite with the hooke.  
 And at well by his stryuinge to flye or escape, as also by the  
 swyfte passage of the shippe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and  
 catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fyfthe whē it is take,  
 it is of suche huge biggenesse that twelue or fyfeteene men  
 are scarcely able to drawe it out of the water and lifte it into  
 the shippe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knoe-  
 kes on the headde with a clubbe or beetle vntill he haue slaine  
 it. They are sumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long,  
 and of fyue, fyxe, or seuen spannes in breadth where they are  
 broadest. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the pro-  
 portion of the reste of theyr boddies, and haue two rowes of  
 teethe the one sumewhat separate from the other, of cruell  
 shape & standing veyr thicke. When they haue slayne this  
 fyfthe, they cutte the boddy therof in smaule pices, and put  
 it to drye, hangynge it thre or foure dayes at the cozdes of  
 the sayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eate it. It  
 is doubtellesse a good fyfthe and of greate commoditie to serue  
 the shippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaste of these  
 fyfthes are mosse holsome and tender. It hath a skinne much  
 like to the skynne of a sole, wherunto the sayde Tiburon is  
 like in shape. Which I saye bycause Plinie hath made men-  
 tion of none of these thre fyfthes among the number of them  
 wherof he wyreth in his natural hystorie. These Tiburons  
 coomme furch of the sea and enter into the ryuers, where they  
 are no lesse perelous then greate lifartes or Crocodiles wher-  
 of I haue spoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine,  
 and hoyses, euen as doo the Crocodiles. They are very daun-  
 gerous

Plinie.

Crocodyles.

getous in certeyne wasthyng places or pooles by the ryuers  
 sydes, and wher they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dy-  
 uers other fyshes both greate and smaule, of sundry sozes  
 and kyndes are accustomed to folowe the wyppes goynge by:  
 der sayle, of the which I wyl speake sumwhat when I haue  
 wyrtten of Manate which is the chyfde of the thre wherof. Manates.  
 I haue promysed to entreate. Manate therfore, is a fysh  
 of the sea, of the byggest soze, and muche greater then the  
 Tburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyshe and  
 vyle, so that it appeareth in forme lyke vnto one of those  
 great vesselles made of goates skynnes wherin they vse to ca-  
 ry newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Arendo*. The headde of  
 this beaſt is lyke the head of an oxe, with also lyke eyes. And  
 hath in the place of armes, two great stumps wherwith he  
 swymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaſt: And cometh  
 oft tymes out of the water to the next shoze where if he find  
 ny herbes or grasse, he feedeth therof. Dvce men are accusto-  
 med to kyl many of these and dyuers other good fyshes with  
 theyr crossebowes, pursuinge them in barkes or Canoas, by  
 cause they swymme in maner aboute the water. The whiche  
 thynge when they see, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at  
 a smaule corde, but sumwhat stronge. As the fysh syeth a-  
 way, the archer letteth go and prolongeth the corde by lyt-  
 tle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the  
 ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a piece of lyght  
 woodde. And when the fysh is goone a lyttle way, & hath  
 coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym selfe to  
 faynt and drawe towarde thende of his lyfe, he resorteth to  
 the shoze, and the archer foloweth gatherynge vp his corde:  
 wherof whyle there yet remaine sixe or epyght fathams or sum  
 what more or lesse, he draweth it towarde the lande, and  
 draweth the fysh therwith by litle and lyttle as the waues  
 of the sea helpe hym to doo it the more easely. When with  
 the helpe of the reste of his companie he lyfteth this greate  
 beaſt out of the water to the lande, beinge of such bygnelle  
 that to conuey it from thense to the citie, it shalbe requisite to  
 haue a cartte with a good yoke of oxen, and sumtymes more,  
 accordyng as these fyshes are of bygnelle, sum beinge much  
 greater then other sum in the same kynde as is seene of other  
 beaſtes. Sumtymes they lyft these fyshes into the Canoas or  
 barke

The hystorie

barke, without drawynge them to the lande as before. For as soone as they are slayne, they flote aboue the water. And I beleue verely that this fythe is one of the best in the world to the taste, and the lykett unto scethe. Especially so lyke unto bieffe, that who so hath not seene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he seerthe it in pieces then verpe bieffe of beale. And is cerreynly so lyke unto scethe, that all the men in the worlde may herein bee deceaued. The taste lyke wyffe, is lyke unto the tast of very good beale, and lasteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in fine, the base of these parties, is by no meanes lyke unto this. This Manate, hath a cerreine stone oz rather bone in his headde within the bryne, which is of qualicie greatly appropriate ageynste the disease of the stone, if it bee burnt and grounde into smaule powder, and taken fastynge in the morninge when the payne is felte, in such quantitie as may lye vppon a penne with a drawght of good wythe wyne. For beyng thus taken three oz foure morninges, it acquietereth the greife as dyuers haue tolde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my selfe by testimonie of sight, doo wyrenesse that I haue seene this stone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

The fythe  
Manate.

A remedy a-  
geynst the  
stone.

The sworde  
fythe.

Tunnye.

Turbut.

There are also dyuers other fythes as bygge as this Manate: Amonge the which there is one cauled *Vibullus*. This fythe beareth in the toppe of his headde, a woorde beinge on euery syde full of many sharpe teeth. This woorde is naturally very harde & stronge, of foure oz fyue spannes in length and of proportion accordynge to the same byggenes. And for this cause is this fythe cauled *Spada*: that is the sworde fythe. Of this kynde sum are found as lytle as sardines: and other so greate, that two yokes of oxen are scarcely able to drawe them on a cartte. But whereas before, I haue promysed to speake of other fythes which are taken in these seas whyle the shippes are vnder sayle, I wyl not forget to speake of the Tunnye which is a great and good fythe, and is of entymes taken and kyde with troute speares and hookes cast in the water when they play and stromme aboute the shippes. In lyke maner also are taken many turbuts which are very good fythes as are lyghly in all the sea.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean sea, there is a straunge thyng to bee considered, whiche all that haue

haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee true. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are sum prouinces fertile and fruitfull, and sum barren, euen so dooth the lyke chaunce in the sea: So that at sum wyndes the shippes sayle fytte or a hundred, or two hundred leagues and more, without taking or seinge of one fythe. And ageyne in the selfe same Ocean, in sum places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouyng of the fythes, where they are taken abundaunly.

It commeth further to my remembraunce to speake somewhat of the flyinge of fythes, which is doubtlesse a straunge thyng to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shippes sayle by the greate Ocean folowynge theyr wyage, there yfelych sumtymes on the one syde or on the other, many companies of certeyne lytle fythes, of the which the byggest is no greater then a sardyne: and soo dimynish the lesse and lesse from that quantitie that sum of them are very lytle. These are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyinge fythes. They ryse by great companies and flockes in such multitudes that it is an astonishment to beholde them. Sumtymes they ryse but lytle from the water: & (as it chaunceth) continew one syght for the space of a hundred pases and sumtymes more or lesse before they faule ageyne into the sea. Sumtymes also they faule into the shippes. And I remember that on an encuyng when all the company in the shippe were on theyr knees syngynge *salve regina* in the highest parte of the Castell of the poope, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a flocke of these flyinge fythes: and came so neare vs that many of them fell into the shippe, amonge the which, two or thre fell hard by me which I tooke alvne in my hande: so that I myght well perceaue that they were as bigge as sardynes and of the same quantitie, haunye two wynges or quylles growyng out of theyr synnes, lyke vnto those wherewith all fythes swimme in ryuers. These wynges are as longe as the fythes theym selues. As longe as theyr wynges are moyste, they beare them vp in the ayer. But as soone as they are drye, they can continew theyr syght no further then as I haue sayde before, but faule immediatly into the sea, and so ryse ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

Note.

flyinge fythes,

It

The hystorie

The Iland of  
Bermuda.

Not to hie for  
the pye, nor to  
lowe fro: the  
crowe.

In the yeare, A thousand fyue hundred, xij. ffiftene, when I came fyrst to informe your maiestye of the state of the chynges India, and was the yeare folowynge in Flaunders in the tyme of youre moste fortunate successe in these youre kyngdomes of Aragonie and Castyle, wheras at that byage I sayled aboute the Iland <sup>Bermuda</sup> otherwyse cauled <sup>Garza</sup>, beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at thys daye in the worlde, and arryvyng there at the deapthe of eichte ycardes of water, and dystant from the land as farre as the shotte of a piece of ordynance, I determined to sende some of the shyppe to lande as well to make searche of suche chynges as were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increase. But the tyme not seruyng my purpose by reason of contrarve wynde, I could byng my shippes no nearer the Ilande beinge twelue leagues in lengerhe and fyve in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrty thre & degre of the northe syde. Whyle I remayned here, I sawe a styffe and combatte betwene these sypinge fyshes and the fyshes named gyfte heades, and the foules cauled seamewes and cozmozantes, whych suerlye seemed vnto me a chyng of as greate pleasure and solace as coulde bee deuysed, whyle the gyfte heades swamme on the bynne of the water and sum tymes lyfted their shulders aboute the same to rayse the swymmyng fyshes out of the water to dyspue them to flyght, and folowe them swymmyng to the place where they faule to take and eate them sodaynlye. Agayne on the other syde, the seamewes and cozmozantes, take manye of these sypinge fyshes: so that by thys meane theye are nother safe in the ayre nor in the water. In the selfe same perrell and daunger doo men lyue in thys mortall lyfe wherin is no certayne securtye neythre in hygh estate nor in lowe. Whych chyng suerlye ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe restyng place whych god hath prepared for such as loue hym, who shall acqyete and syphe the trauayles of thys troublous worlde wherin are so manye daungours, and byng them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securtye and reste. But to retorne to the hystorie: these byrdes and foules whych I sawe, were of the Ilande of <sup>Bermuda</sup> nere vnto the whych I sawe these sypinge fyshes. For they coulde bee of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed

to wander farre frome the coastes where they are bredde.

Of thincrease and decrease, (that is) rpsynge and  
faullynge of our Ocean sea and Southe sea  
caulled the sea of *sur*.



Wyll nowe speake of certeyne thynges whi-  
che are secne in the Prouynce, or at the leaste  
in the citie of golden Castyle or her tynse cau-  
led *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea  
and of the South sea caulled the sea of *sur*.

*Beragua*

Not omitting to note one synguler and merc-  
uelous thyng which I haue considered of  
the Ocean sea. wherof hitherto no cosmogra-  
pher, pylote or maryner or any other haue satisfed me.

I say therfore as it is well knowen to your maiestie and all  
such as haue knowlege of the Ocean sea, that this greate  
Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe  
of the straight of *Sibilia*: in the which the water from thend  
and furtheste parte of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the  
sayde straight, eyther in the East towarde the coaste common-  
ly cauled *Leuante*, or in any other parte of the sayde sea *Me-  
diterraneum*, the sea doothe not so faule nor increase as reason  
wolde iudge for so greate a sea. But incresethe verrye litle  
and a smaule space. Neuerthelesse, withoute the mouthe of  
the straight in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and fauleth  
verrye muche and a great space of grounde from syxe houres to  
syxe houres, as in all the coastes of Spayne, Britannye, Flan-  
ders, Germanye and England. The selfe same Ocean sea in  
the tynse lande newly founde, in the coastes of the same ty-  
pynge towarde the North, dothe neyther rpsle nor faule, nor  
lykewise in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other  
Ilandes of the same sea lyinge towarde the north, for the  
space of thye thousande leaques, but ouelye in lyke maner as  
doothe the sea *Mediterraneum* in *Italye*: whiche is in maner no-  
thyng in respectre to that increase and decrease whiche the  
sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and *flaunders*.  
But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same  
Ocean in the coastes of the sayde tynse lande lyinge towarde  
the South in the citie of *Panama*, and also in the coaste of that  
land

The West  
Ocean.  
The sea *Me-  
diterraneum*.

*Hispaniola*  
*Cuba*,

lande whiche lyethe towarde the East and Weste frome that  
 citie, as in the Ilande of pearles oz *Margarita* whiche the In-  
 dians caule *Tirarequi*, and also in *Taboga* and *Oroque*, and in all  
 other Ilandes of the southe sea of *sur*, the water rylseth and  
 fauleth so much, that when it fauleth it goth in maner owr of  
 syghte, which thyng I my selfe haue scene oftentymes.  
 And here poure maiestie may note an other thyng, that from  
 the north sea to the southe sea beyng of luche dyfference  
 the one from the other in rylsyng and faulyng, yet is the lan-  
 de that deuydeth theym not paste eyghtene oz twente lea-  
 ques in breadthe frome coaste to coaste. So that bothe the  
 sayde seas beyng all one Ocean this strange effecte is a  
 thyng worthy greatly to bee considered of al luche as haue  
 inclination and desyre to knowe the secrete woorkes of na-  
 ture wherin the infinite powre and wysedome of god is scene  
 to bee such as may allure all good natures to reuerence and  
 loue to diuine a maiestie. And wheras by the demonstracions  
 of lerned men I am not satisfyed of the natural cause hereof,  
 I content my selfe to knowe and beleue that he which hath  
 made these thynges, dooth knowe this and many other whi-  
 che he hath not granted to the reason of man to comprehend,  
 much lesse to so base a wyl as myne is. They therefore that  
 are of greater vnderstandyng, shall searche the cause hereof,  
 for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the mat-  
 ter in question as a wytnesse that haue scene the experience of  
 the thyng.

The South  
sea.

The power  
and wisdom  
of god is scene  
in his crea-  
tures.

Of the straght or narrowe passage of the lande lpyng be-  
 twene the North and South sea, by the whiche lpyces  
 way much sooner and callier be brought from the I-  
 landes of *Molucca* into Spayne by the West Ocea-  
 an then by that way wherby the *Dozengales*  
 sayle into East India.



I hath byn an opinion amonge the Cosmogra-  
 phers and pylottes of late tyme, and other  
 which haue had practise in thynges touchyng  
 the sea, that there shulde bee a straght of wa-  
 ter passyng from the North sea of the firme, in  
 to the South sea of *sur*, whiche neuerthelesse  
 hath

hath not byn seene nor founde to this daye. And suetlye yf  
 there be any suche straght, we that inhabite thole partes do  
 thinke the same shoulde bee rather of lande the of water. For  
 the fyrme lande in sum partes therof is so straght and nar-  
 rowe that the Indyans saye that frome the mountaynes of  
 the prouynce of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca*, (whych ate betwene the one *Esquegua*  
 sea and the other) If a man ascend to the toppe of the moun- and *Vrraca*.  
 taynes and looke towarde the North, he maye see the wa-  
 ter of the North sea of the prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne  
 lookynge the contrarpe waye, may on the other syde towarde  
 the Southe, see the sea of *sur* and the prouynces whych  
 confyne with it, as doo the retritoyes of the twoo Lordes  
 or kynges of the sayde prouynces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I  
 beleue that if it bee as the Indyans saye, of al that is hether-  
 to knowne, this is the narrowest straght of the fyrme lande,  
 whiche some asseyme to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet  
 doo I not take it for a better waye, or so shorte as is that  
 whych is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in  
 the North sea) vnto the newe cite of *Panama* beyng in the *Panama*.  
 coaste and on the banke of the sea of *sur*. Whiche waye is like  
 wyse very rough ful of thicke wods, mountaynes, ryuers, bal-  
 leys, and verrye diffyculte to passe through, and can not bee  
 doone withowt greate labour and trauayle. Sum measure  
 this waye in this part, to bee from sea to sea .xxviii. leaques,  
 whych I suppose to bee rather .xx. nor for that it is any moze  
 by measure, but bicause it is rough and dyffyculte as I haue  
 sayde, and as I haue founde it by experyence hauynge nowe  
 thysle passed that way by foote: countynge from the porte and  
 byllage of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the Cacique of *Iuana*  
*ga* otherwyse cauled *Capira*. viii. leaques: And frome thense  
 to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other .viii. leaques. So that at this  
 ryuer beinge .xvi. leaques from the sayde porte, endeth the  
 roughnesse of the way. Then from hense to the maruelous  
 bydge are two leaques: And beyonde that, other twoo vnto  
 the porte of *Panama*: So that all together in my iudgemente,  
 make .xx. leaques. And if therfore this nauigation may bee  
 founde in the South sea for the trade of spices (as we trust in  
 God) to bee brought from thense to the sayde porte of *Panama*  
 (as is possible enough) they may afterwarde easly passe to the  
 North sea nor withladdynge the difficultie of the waye of  
 the

## The hystorie

the .xxx. leagues aforesayde. Whiche thynge I affirme as a man well trauayled in these regions, hauinge twyle on my fete passed ouer this straght in the yeare .1521. as I haue sayde. It is furthermore to bee vnderstode, that it is a marueilous facilitie to byng spices by this way which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure leagues of good and sayre way by the which cartes may passe at pleasure by reason that the mountaynes are but fewe and lytle, and that the greatestte parte of these foure leagues is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the cartes are coomme to the sayde ryuer, the spices may bee carped in barkes and pinnacles. For this ryuer entereth into the North sea spue or .vi. leagues lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Your maiestie may now therfore consider howe great a thynge and what commoditie it maye bee to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauyng his originall only two leagues from the South sea, contineweth his course & emptieth it selfe into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast and is very greare, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought or desyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leagues beyonde the sayd ryuer, and other two leagues on this syde the porte of *Panama*, so lyinge in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in such sort that none which passe by this viage see any such bridge or thynke that there is any such buyldyng in that place vntyll they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as soone as they are on the bydge, lookynge toward the ryght hande, they see a lytle ryuer vnder them which hath his chauncell distant from the fete of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or moze. The water of this ryuer is very shallowe, not passyng the depth of a mans legge to the kneec: and is in breadth betwene thyrtye and fortye pases: and faulthe into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand standyng on this bydge, there is nothynge scene but great trees. The largenesse of the bydge, conteyneth .xv. pases: and the length thereof about threescore or fourescore pases. The arche is so made of moste harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent

The Ilande  
Bastimento.

The marue-  
lous bridge.

rent creature of all thynges. But to retorne to speake sum-  
 what more of the conueying of spices, I say that when it shal  
 please almyghy god that this nauigation aforesayde shal bee  
 founde by the good fortune of your maiestie, and that the  
 spices of the Ilandes of the South sea (which may also bee  
 otherwyse cauled the Ocean of the East India in the whiche  
 are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the sayd coaste  
 and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thence (as we  
 haue sayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of  
*Chagre*, and from thence into this ovr other sea of the North,  
 from whence they may afterward bee brought into Spayne,  
 I say that by this meanes the vyage shal bee shortened more  
 then seven thousande leaques, with muche lesse daunger then  
 is by the viage now vled by the way of Commendator of *Ap-  
 sa* capitayne vnder your maiestie, who this present yeare at-  
 tempted a vyage to the place of the sayde spices. And not on-  
 ly the way is thus much shortened, but also a thyrde parte of  
 the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therfore, if any had he-  
 therto attempted this vyage by the sea of *sur*, to seeke the I-  
 landes of spices, I am of firme opinion that they shuld haue  
 byn founde longe sence, as doubtlesse they maye bee by the  
 reasons of Cosmographie.

The Ilandes  
 of *Molucca*.

The comm-  
 ditie of this  
 viage.

Howe thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme  
 and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place  
 where they are engendred or growe. And of the  
 beastes cauled Tygers.



In the firme lande are founde many terribly  
 beastes which sum thinke to be Tygers. Which  
 thyng neuerthelesse, I dare not affirme, con-  
 sideryng what auctoures doo wyte of the  
 lyghenes and agilite of the Tyger, whereas  
 this beast beyng other wyse in shape very like  
 vnto a Tyger, is notwithstanding very slowe. Yet trwe it  
 is, that accordyng to the maruayles of the worlde and diffe-  
 rences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder  
 heauen and dyuers constellationes of the same vnder the whi-  
 che they are created, wee see that sum suche plantes and her-  
 bes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmelesse and hol-

Tigers.

plantes and  
 herbes.

FF. ii.

Some

## The hystorie

Some in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnlausery that they may not bee eaten. Euen likewyse which in sum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.

Euen so may it bee that Tygers are lyght in sum region as they whyte, and maye neuerthelesse bee slowe and heauy in these Indies of your maiestie wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabie drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growynge towarde theyr headdes: yet are those sheepe and these bulles. Euen in sum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyshe. All these thynges and many more which may bee sayde to this purpose, are easy to bee proued and woorthy to bee beleued of suche as haue redde of the lyke in autours oz trauayled the world, wherby theyr owne syght may teache theym the experience of these thynges wherof I speake. It is also manifest, that *Iucca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is deadly payson yf it bee eaten greene with the iuse: And yet hath it no suche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times & found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne al though they bite, yet are they not venemous. But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may so many thynges bee sayde that tyme shall not suffice to wyte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beast may be a Tiger oz of the kind of Tigers although it be not of such lyghtnesse and swiftnes as are they wherof Plinie and other autours speake, discrybynge it to bee one of the swyfteste beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swifte course therof was cauled by that name. The first Spaniardes which sawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd so name it. Of the kynde of these was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall sent your maiestie owre of newe Spayne to Toledo. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons oz Lions, but greater. The rest of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one nere unto an other and diuided with a circumference oz frynge of redde colour shewing as it were a fayre woork and correspondente picture. About theyr croopes oz hynder partes, they haue these spots bydgest: and leste and leste towarde theyr bellies, legges, and heades

heades. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lytle, and by my estimation, of thage of thre yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie. For I haue scene sum of thre spannes in heygth, and moze then fyue in length. They are beastes of greate force, with strong legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which we caule dogge teeth. They are so fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggest sorte is so stronge or fierce. Of these, there are many founde in the firme land whiche deuour many of the Indians & do much hurte otherwyle. But syne the comming of the Christians, many haue byn kylde with Crossebowes after this maner. As soone as the archer hath knowlege of the haunt of any of these Tygers, he gothe searchoyng theyr trafe with his crossebowe and with a lytle hounde or beagle and nor with a greehounde, because this beaust wolde soone kyl any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayng continuallly, and approcheth so neare hym snarpyng and grynnynge with so quicke flyng and returnyng, that he hereby so molesteth this fierce beaust that he dzyueth hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remaineth styl bayng and the Tyger grynnynge and shewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and .xii. or .xiiii. pases of, strykerh hym with the queuel of his crossebowe in the breste, and styeth inconciuent, leauynge the Tyger in his trauayle for lyfe and death, byrnyng the tree and earryng earth for fiercenesse. Then within the space of twoo or thre hours or the day folowynge, the archer returneth thither, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyeth deade.

In the yeare, 1522. I with the other rulers & magistrates of the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in our counsaile, A rewarde of foure or fyue pieces of golde to be giuen to every man that kylde any of these Tygers: by reason whereof many were kylde in shorte space both with crossebowes and also with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not obstynately stand in opinyon whether these beastes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other such beastes of sported heare, or also peradventure sum other newe beaust vnknewen to the owlde wytters as were many

The huntynge  
of tigers.

A rewarde for  
kyllynge of ti  
gers.

## The hystorie

many other wherof I haue spoken in this booke. Of which chynge, I doo not greatly meruaile, for asmuche as vnto owt tyme thys greate parte of the woꝛlde was vnknoꝛen to the antiquitie: In so muche that none of the wyꝛters of that age, noꝛ yet Ptolomic in his Cosmographie, oꝛ any other sence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the yeaꝛ Ad myꝛall Don Chrystopher Colonus discovered the same.

Colonus com-  
pared to her-  
cules.  
The pillars  
of hercules.

the straighes  
of Sibilterra.

Note.

PLVS VLTRA.

howe farre  
The mperous  
maiestie exel-  
letly hercules.

A chynge doutelesse without comparyson muche greater then that whiche is sayd of Hercules, that he sꝛke gaue thence- rance of the sea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coule neuer doo befoze hym. And herof rplethe the fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (whiche are di- rectly one agaynst an other in the straight of *Sibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne and the other in Aſtyke) were iopned togi- ther befoze they were opened by Hercules, who erected those hys pylles whiche your maiestie gyue in token of pychme- nence and lyke enterpyles with lykewyse these hys woꝛdes PLVS VLTRA: woꝛdes doutelesse woꝛthy for so greate an vniuersall an Emperoure, and not conuenient for any other Spynce. Forasmuche as your holy Catholyke Maiestie haue spredde them in so straunge and remote regyons, so manye thousande leaques further than euer dyd Hercules. And cer- teynlye sꝛ, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the prayse and fame of *Colonus*, he had as well deserued it as any of those men to whom for theyr noble enterpyse the antiquy- tie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But to returne to the matter wherof I began to speake: I neede say no more of the forme of thys beaste, for as muche as your Maiestie haue scene that whych is yet alyue in *Toledo*. And suerly the keper of your Maiesties Lyons, who hath taken vp- pon hym the charge to tame this beaste, myght better haue be- stowed his paynes in an other chynge that myght haue bynne moꝛe profitable for the safe garde of his lyfe bycause this Ty- ger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee stronger and fiercer and increase in malyce. The Indians (and especially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng Don Ferdinando commaunded to bee cauled golden Castyle) caule this beaste *Ochi*. This thinge is straunge that chaunced of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention befoze, wolde haue kylde his keper: that then kept hym in a cage

A tiger made  
same.

cage, was in fewe dayes after made so tame that he ledde her  
 ryed only with a smaule corde and playde with her so family-  
 arly that I maruayled greatly to see it, yet not without cer-  
 teyne beleefe that this frendshyp wyl not laste longe without  
 daunger of lyfe to the keeper, forasmuch as suerly these beas-  
 tes are not meete to bee amonge men for they? fiercesnes and  
 cruell nature that can not bee tamed.

¶ Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the  
 firme lande, and of they? women.

**T**he maners and customes of these Indians, are  
 dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take  
 as many wyues as them lyke, and other lyue  
 with one wyfe whome they forsake not with-  
 out consent of both parties, which chauncethe  
 especially when they haue no chyldren. The no-  
 bilitie aswel men as women, repute it infamous to toyne with  
 any of base parentage or strangers, except Christians, whom  
 they count noble men by reason of they? babilinties, although  
 they put a difference betwene the common sorte and the other  
 to whom they shewe obedience, countynge it for a great mat-  
 ter and an honorable thyng yf they bee beloued of any of the.  
 In so much that yf they knowe any Christian man carnally,  
 they keepe they? sayth to hym, so that he bee not longe ab-  
 sent farre from them, for they? intent is not to bee widewes  
 or to lyue chaste lyke religious women. Many of theym haue  
 this custome, that when they perceaue that they are with  
 chyld, they take an herbe wherwith they destroy that is con-  
 ceaued. For they say that only wel aged women shulde beare  
 chyldren, and that they wyl not so beate they? pleasures and  
 befozne they? boddies with bearynge of chyldren, wherby  
 they? teates becoome loose and hangynge which thyng they  
 greatly dyspraysle. When they are deliuered of they? chyldren  
 they go to the ryuer and washe them. Whiche doone, they?  
 bludde and purgation ceaseth immediatly. And when after  
 this they haue a fewe days absteyned fro the company of men,  
 they becommen so straght as they say which haue had carnall  
 familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not with-  
 out much difficultie satisfie they? appetite. They also whiche  
 neuer had chyldren, are euer as byrgins. In sum partes they  
 weare

The Indian  
 women.

The men of  
 India.

beare certeyne litle apertis rounde about them befoze and behynde as lowe as to theyr knees and hammes, wherewith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all theyr boddie bysye. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a holte wyppye of golde: but the common sorte haue them inclosed in the shelles of certeyne great welkes, and are bysye bitterly naked. For they thynke it no more shame to haue theyr cods seene then any other parte of theyr boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go bitterly naked without any such couerture at al. In the prouince of *Ciuea* they call a man *Obuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of owtres.

These Indians geue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his most stronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abzod for his pleasure. Two of them cary hym lpytyng vppon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lpyght as they can fynd. The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottyng pace with hym on theyr shulders. When the twoo that cary hym are weery, other twoo cocomme in theyr places without any disturbance or stay. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the space of .xv. or .xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the moste parte slaues or *Naboriti*, that is, such as are bounde to continuall seruice.

I haue also noted that when the Indians perceauce them selues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette them selues blud in the calves of theyr legges & byawnes of theyr armes, This doo they with a very sharpe stone, and sumtymes with the smaule toothe of a byper, or with a sharpe recde or thorne.

All the Indians are commonly without beardes: In so much that it is in maner a maruayle to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces or other partes of theyr boddies. Albeit, I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had also his wyfe in suche places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blache colour which neuer fadeth: And is much lpyke vnto that wherewith the *Moyses* paynt them selues

The kynge is borne on mens backs.

Lettinge of bludde.

They haue no beardes.

They paynt theyr boddies.

selues in Barbérie in token of nobilitie. But the Moozes are paynted specially on theyr bysage and throte and certeyne other partes. Likewyse the principall Indians vse these payntynges on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr bysages, bycause amonge them the slaues are so marked. Wher the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (respectably the Caniball archers) they carry certeyne shelles of greate welkes of the sea which they blowe and make therewith greate sounde muche lyke the noyse of hornes. They carry also certeyne tymbrels which they vse in the steade of drummes. Also they carry plumes of feathers, and certeyne armure of golde: especially great and rounde pieces on theyr brestes, and Collerets on there armes. Likewyse other pieces whiche they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodyes. For they esteeme nothyng so much as to appeare galante in the wars, and to go in most comely order: that they can deuyse, glyscerunge with precious stones, iewelles, golde, and feathers. Of the leade of these welkes or perewincles, they make certeyne lytle beades of diuers soztes and colours. They make also lytle brasselers whiche they mengle with gaudes of golde. These they rowle about there armes from the elbowe to the wryste of the hande. The lyke also doo they on theyr legges from the knee to the soles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie. Especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accustomed to weare such Jewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therewith. These beades and Jewels and such other trynkettes, they call *Caquiras*. Whylde these also, they weare certeyne ruynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrilles whiche they boze ful of holes on both sides, so that the ringes hange vppon theyr lippes. Sum of these Indians, are poude and rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to weare longe haire, which the women weare to the myddel of theyr shulders and cut it equally, especially about theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne harde stones which they keepe for the same purpose. The principall women when they reates faule or become loose, beare them vp with barres of golde of the length of a spanne and a halfe, well wrought, and of such byggeneite that ium of them way more then two hundred Castilians or ducades of golde. These barres haue holes at both hendes, wherewith they tye

The Canibals,

Armure of golde,

Their galantes in the warres,

Their Jewels

howe the women beare vpon their eares, with barres of golde.

two small cordes made of cotton at every ende of the barres. One of these cordes gorch over the Sulder, and the other under the arme holes where they tye both together, so that by this meanes the barre beareth by theyr teates. Sum of these chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr husbandes, or when theyr hem selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the which they haue all thynges at commandement and execute the office of generall capitaynes, and cause them selues to be carryed on mens barks in lyke maner as doo the Laciques of whom I haue spoken before.

1577

The stature and coloure of the Indians.

The Indians cauled Coronati.

The Glannde of gigantes.

Lucatos.

1577

The scullies of the Indians heades.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and coloure as are they of the Glannde. They are for the most part of the coloure of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is moze in byggennesse then otherwoyse. And especially they that are cauled Coronati, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Glannde of gigantes which are on the south syde of the Glannde of Hispania nere vnto the coastes of the firme lande: And lykewyse certeyne other which they caule Yucatos which are on the north syde. All which chieffely, although they bee no gigantes, per are they doubtlesse the byggest of the Indy: and that are knowen to this day, and commonly bygger then the Flemynges: and especially many of them as well women as men, are of very byghe stature, and are all archicers bothe men and women. These Coronati inhabite thirtie leaques in length by these coastes from the poynnt of Canos to the greete ryuer which they caule Guadachibir nere vnto Sancta Maria de grazia. As I trauesed by those coastes, I fylled a butte of frethe water of that ryuer fyre leaques in the sea frome the mouthe therof where it fauleth into the sea. They are cauled Coronati (that is crowned) because theyr heare is entere round by theyr teates, and pouldde lower a great compasse abowte the crowne much lyke the fryers of saynt Augustines order. And because I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here cometh to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the scullies of theyr heades foure tymes thycker and much stronger then owres. So that in comyng to hand strokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heades with wooddes, for so haue many wooddes bynne broken

broken on theyr heades with litle hurt doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shal suffice for this tyme, because I haue more largely treated herof in my generall hypozie of the Indies. yet haue I nocher there nor here spoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Nova Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne whereof the Ilande of *Lucatana* is part) forasmuche as *Ferdinando Cortese* hath wyrtten a large booke thereof.

Of the houses of these Indians, I haue spoken sufficient ly elswhere. yet haue I thought good to informe your ma iestie of the buyldynge and houses which the Chyrians haue made in theyers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe thetfoze with tynne solars or loftres, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte. Also with strange rybber and very fayre bozdes. In suche sorte that any noble man maye wel and pleasantly bee lodged in sum of them. And amonge other, I my selfe caused one to bee builded in the cite of *Santa Maria Antigua* in *Darien* whiche coste me more then a thousande and fyue hundredeth Castellians: being of such sort that I may well interceyne and commotionly lodge any Earle or noble man, referynge also a parte for my selfe and my famelye. For in this may many householdes bee kepte both aboue and beneath. It hath also a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe sweete and soure: Ceders also, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houses of the Chyrians. On one syde of the garden, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The situation is very pleasant, with a good and hot some aper, and a fayre prospecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, wher trulle is that in fewe yeares at thynges in these regions shall growe to a better state acco:dyng to the holy intention of your ma iestie.

Of the chiefe Ilandes *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*.



The Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Chyrians not so many as they ought to bee forasmuche as many of them that were in this Ilande, are gonne to other Ilandes and to the fyre lande. For beyng so the

B B g . ii .

molle

*A: w Spaine.*

*The houses of the Chyrians in Hispania*

*Darien*

*Garden*

*The chiefe Ilandes*

*Hispaniola and Cuba*

## The hystorie

Men are desirous of newe things.

The commonities of Hispaniola, Englande and Sicilie.

Gold mines, Cotton, Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes.

Great things hindered by respecte of present gaires.

moste parte younge men by married, and desirous dayly to see newe thyngs wherin mans nature deliecth, they were not willinge to continue longe in one place: especially seeinge daile other newe landes discovered where they thought they might sooner fynde their parties by beinge present at the firste spoyle. Wherin neuerthelesse their hope deceaued many of them, and especially suche as had houses and habitacions in this Ilande, For I certepnly beleue, conyngunge my selfe hererin with the Iudgement of many other, that if any one Prince had no more sightozes then only this Ilande, it shuld in shorte tyme bee suche as not to giue place eyther to Sicilie or Englande: wheras euen at this present there is nothyng wherefo:e it shulde malice their prosperitie not beinge inferioure to them in any silcrite that in manner the heaucus can graunte to any lande: beinge further more suche as maye enrichie many principers and byngdomes by reason of manye riche golde mines that are in it of the beste golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantite.

In this Ilande, nature of her selfe byngeth furthe suche aboundance of cotton that if it were wroughit and maynteyned there shuld be more and better then in any parte of the worlde. There is so greate plentye of excellent Cassia that a greate quantite is brought from thence into Spayne: from whence it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde: It increaseth so muche that it is a marvelous thyng to consider. In this are many ryche sheppes wher suger is wroughit: and that of such preferrenes and goodnes, and in suche quantitie that shippes come laden therewith yearly into Spayne: All suche seedes, settes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becommune muche better, bygger, and of greater increafe then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyle that sumetymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they which shulde tyll and husband the grounde, and sowe and plant in dewe seasons, haue no respect hereunto, beinge impacient whyle the wheate and bynes were ripe, beinge gyven to wanderynge and other affayres of present gaires (as I haue sayd) as searchyng the gold mines, fyshyng for pearles, and occuppyng marchaundises, with such other trades, for the greedy folowynge wherof, they neglecte and contempne both sowynge and plantynge. Suche frutes as are brought out of Spayne, into this Ilande, prof-

per maruelously and waxe ripe all tymes of the yeare: as herbes of all sortes very good and pleasaunt to bee eaten. Also many pomegranates of the best kynde, and ozanges bothe swete and sowre. Lykewylse many fayre Lymones & ceders: and a great quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, sowre, and bytter taste. There are also many fygge trees whiche bynge furth theyr frute all the hole yeare. Lykewylse those kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thither.

Beastes doo also increase in lyke abundaunce: and especially the herdes of kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are nowe many pastures of cattayle that haue more then two thousand heades of neat: and sum thre or foure thousande, and sum more. Wylde these, there are very many that haue herdes of foure or fyue hundrethe. And trewth it is, that this Island hath better pasture for such cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: also holseome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reason wherof the herdes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better taste then owt in Spayne bycause of the ranke pasture whose moysture is better digested in the herbe or grasse by the continuall and temperate heate of the soonne, wherby being made more fatte and vncuous, it is of better and more redfast nuryshment. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche moysture owt of the earth to the nuryshment of such thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth also by moderation preserve the same from resolution and putrefaction, digestynge also and condensinge of thyskenynge the sayde moyste nuryshment into a gumme and vncuous substance as is scene in all suche thynges as growe in those regions. And this is the only naturall cause as well that beereyne great brastles and of longe lyfe (as the Elephante and Rhinoceros with such other) are engendered only in regions nere vnto the Equinoctiall, as also that the leaues of such trees as growe there, doo not wither or faule, vntyll they bee thurst owt by other, accordynge to the verbe of the poete which sayth: *Et nata per apris, et ficus in ficibus exiunt.* That is in effecte: peares growe vpon peares, and fygges vpon fygges. Plinie also wyreth, that suche trees are neuer infected with the disease of trees that the Latines

Ozanges.  
Pomegranates.

Fygges of the  
yeare.  
Dates.

Beastes.

Great herdes  
of cattail.

Good pasture.

The effecte of  
continuall and  
moderate  
heate.

The cause of  
fatte nuryshment.

Beastes of  
longe lyfe in  
regions a  
bowte the  
Equinoctiall  
line  
Trees whose  
leaves doo  
not wither

caule

The cancer  
of the tree

Longe hynde  
men in India.

Paradise  
neare the e  
quinocctial line

Shepee and  
hogges

Dogges and  
cattes becom  
wyld

The situation  
of hispaniola.

The citie of  
sandomenico

caule <sup>causes</sup> which we may cause the moyme of cancer, being  
but a certeyne putrefaction by reason of a water the nurysh-  
ment not well consolidate. The same thyng backe bynne the  
cause that certeyne Philosophers considerunge also that  
man is the hottest and moystest beast that is (which is the best  
complexion) as also that men lyue longeste in certeyne partes  
of India nere the Equinoctiall (where per to this day sunime  
liue to thage of a hundred and fiftie yeares) were of opinion  
that yf mankynde had any begynnyng on the earth, that  
place owght by good reason to be vnder or not farre from the  
Equinoctiall lyne for the causes aforesayde. Sum of the di-  
uines also bypon lyke consideration haue thought it agreeable  
that theyr Paradise shulde bee about the same within the pre-  
cincte of those cyties which are named in the booke of Gene-  
sis. But to lette passe these thynges and to returne to the  
hystorie.

In this Islande furthermore, are many sheepe and a great  
number of hogges: of the which (as also of the wyne) manye  
are become wyld: And lyke wyse many dogges and cattes of  
those which were brought out of Spayne. These (and espe-  
cially the dogges) doo much hurte amonge the cattayle by rea-  
son of the negligence of the herde men.

There are also many hories, mares, and mules, and such  
other beastes as serue thuse of men in Spayne, and are much  
greater then they of the fyrr: hode brought thither out of  
Spayne. Sum places of the Islande are inhabited, although  
not so many as were requisite: Of the which I wyl saye no  
more but that all the regions of the Islande are so well situate  
that in the course of tyme all thynges shall comme to grea-  
ter perfection by reason of the rychesse and pleasantnesse of  
the countrey and fertilitie of the soyle.

But nowe to speake sumwhat of the principall and chiefe  
place of the Islande, which is the citie of San Domenico: I saye  
that as touchyng the buildynges, there is no citie in Spaine  
so muche for so muche (no not Barcelona whiche I haue often  
tymes seene) that is to bee preferred before this generallye.  
For the houses of San Domenico, are for the most parte of stone  
as are they of Barcelona: or of so strong and well wrought  
earth that it maketh a singular & stronge byndyng. The situa-  
tion is muche better the than of Barcelona by reason that the  
Arcades are

are much larger and playner, and without comparisson indre  
directe and directe furth, for beinge buylded nowe in othe  
tyme, by lye the commoditie of the place of the foundation,  
the streates were also directed with corde, compasse and mea-  
sure, wherein it excelleth al the citie that I haue seene. It hath  
the sea so nere, that of one lye there is no more space betwen  
the fra and the citie then the waules. And this is about syrie  
pales where it is furthest of. On this lye, the waters of  
the sea beare vpon the naturall stones and saye coaste. On  
the other parte, harde by the lye and at the foote of the hou-  
ses, passeth the ryuer *Oxama* whiche is a marueylous poze  
wherin laden shippes rye beey nere to the lande and its ma-  
ner vnder the house wynd wes, & no further from the mouth  
of the ryuer where it entereth into the sea, then is from the  
foote of the hyll of *Monysye* to the monastery of saynt frances  
o: to the lodge of *Barcelona*. In the myddest of this space in  
the citie, is the fo:ressle and castle, vnder the which and iwen-  
tic paces distant from the same, passe the shippes to arple sum  
what further in the same ryuer. From the enteraunce of the  
shippes vntyll they cast anchor, they sayle no further from the  
houles of the citie then thyrtye o: foztie paces, because of this  
lye of the citie the habitation is nere to the ryuer. The port  
o: hauen also, is so saye and commodious to defraight o: bus-  
lades shippes as the lyke is founde but in fewe places of the  
worlde. The chimneyes that are in this citie, are aboue syre  
hundred in number, and such houles as I haue spoken of be-  
fore: Of the which sum are so saye and large that they maye  
well receave and lodge any lozde o: noble manne of Spayne  
with his trayne and famelic. And especially that which Don  
Diego Colon viceroi vnder your maiestie hath in this citie, is  
suche that I haue no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by  
a quarter in goodnesse comyderynge all the commodities of  
the same. Aske myle the situation thereof, as beinge  
aboue the sayde poze and altogether of stone and hauryge  
many saye and large roomes with as goodly a p:spere of the  
lande and sea as may be deuyled, seemeth vnto me so magni-  
ficall and princelyke that your maiestie maye bee as well lod-  
ged therein as in any of the mooste exquisite builded houses of  
Spayne. There is also a cathedrall churche buylded of lye  
where alwell the byshop accordyng to his rightie, as also the  
canones are wel inducd. This church is wel buylded of stone

The river of  
sama

The hauen

A cathedrall  
church and  
monastery in  
spania.

and lyme, and of good workman shyppe. There are further  
more three monasteries bearing the name of saynt Dominike,  
saynt Francis, and saynt Marie of Mercedes: The which  
are all well builded although heere so farre offe as they of  
Spayne. But speakinge with our preiudice of any other reli-  
gious monasterie, your maiestie may bee well assured that in  
these three monasteries, god is as well serued as in any other  
religious house with men of holy lypunge and vertuous exem-  
ple. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and suc-  
cour of poore people, which was founde by Michaell Balla-  
mer theasurer to your maiestie. To conclude, this cite fro  
day to day increaseth in welth and good order, as wel for that  
the sayde Admirall and viceroy with the lord Chauncelour  
and counsaile appoynted there by your maiestie, haue they  
continuall abydinge here, as also that the richest men of the  
Ilande resort hither for theyr moste commodious habitation  
and trade of such marchaundies as are either brought out of  
Spayne or sent thither from this Iland which nowe so abun-  
deth in many thynges that it serueth Spayne with many com-  
modities, as it were with vsury requirynge such benefites as  
it first receaued from thence.

An hospitale.

The people of this Ilande are commonlye of somewhat  
lesse stature then are the Spanyardes, and of a lypunge or  
cleare browne colour. They haue wyes of theyr owne, and  
absteyne from theyr dowghters, sisters, and mothers. They  
haue large forheades, longe blacke heare, and no beades or  
heare in any other parts of theyr bodies as wel me as women,  
except very fewe as perhaps scarcely one amonge a thousand.  
They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the  
partes which may not with honestie bee seene, they weare a  
certeyne lease as brode as a mans hande, which neuerthelesse  
is not kepte close with suche diligence but that somtymes a  
man may see that they thynke sufficientlye hypde.

The people

In this Ilande are certeyne glo woormes that wyne in the  
nyght as doo otters. But are muche bygger and gyue a grea-  
ter lycht: In so much that when the men of the Ilande goe  
any iorneyes in the nyght, they beare summe of these woormes  
made fast abowt theyr fiere and beade, in suche sorte that he  
that shulde see them a farre and ignorant of the thinge, wolde  
bee greatlye astonysht therat. By the lycht of these also, the  
women

No wormes

Women woozke in theyr houses in the night. These woozmes they caule *Cicuis*: Theyr lyght lasteth for the space of thre dapes, and diminisheth as they begynne to dye vp.

There is also a kynd of crows whose breath synkereth in the moynge and is sweete at after noone. The excrement which they auoyde, is a lpyunge worme.

Crowes kynne  
kynge and  
sweete.

As touchynge other thynges of this Ilande wherof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeat the same ageyne owte of this hypoxie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*: but haue here gathered only suche thynges as epyther are not touched of Peter Martyr, or not so largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owte of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

**C** Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.



Of the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *sancti Iohannis* and *Iamaica*, the same maye bee sayde in maner in all thynges as befoze of *Hispaniola* although not so largely. yet in lesse quantitie doo they brynge forth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees plantes, fyshes, and such other of the whiche wee haue spoken there.

Sayne Iohn  
his Ilande.  
*Iamaica*.

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of *partiches* beinge verpe little, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle dooues: but are of muche better taste to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wyld into the houses, they becoome as tame within the space of thre or foure dapes as though they had byn hatched there. They becommme exceadynge fatte in thoz space, and are doubtelesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght here bee sayde, and to speake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynynge two or thre leagues in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde stones of suche perfecte roundenesse and lyke vnto pelletes of gunnes that no arte can make better or moze exactly pollyshed. Of these, sum are as smaule

*partiches*.

pelletes for  
gunnes  
wrought by  
nature.

## The hystorie

as pelletes for handegunnes : and other so increasynge bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may serue for all sortes of arcyllerie althoughe they bee of byggenesse to receaue one or two or moze quintales of powder, euery quintale conceyning one hundredth weyght : or of what other quantitie so euer they bee. These pelletes are founde through oute al the balley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take oute such as they neede of all sortes.

A fountayne  
of the pytche  
of Bitumen.

The other marueylous thinge of this Island is this : That farre from the sea, there stheweth out of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the cley of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and such as is very commodious for the calkyng of shippes. This faulteth continually from the rocke and runneth into the sea in suche abundance that it is seene flotynge aboute the water on euery side of the sea there aboute as it is dyuen from place to place by the wynde or course of the water.

Quintus Curtius

Bitumen of  
Babilon.

Panuco

Quintus Curtius wyrteth in his hystorie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi* where is a great caue or denne in the which is a sprynge or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in such sort that it is an easy thing to beleue that the stones of the walles of Babilon myght be layde therwith accordynge as the sayde auctoure wyrteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Island of *Cuba*, but also such an other in newe Spayne, which was founde of late in the prouince of *Panuco* where it is much better then the other of *Cuba*, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng of shippes.

Of the lande of *Bacaleos* cauled *Terra Bacaleorum*, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.



Bacaleos.

Shortly after that your Maiestie came to the citie of *Toledo*, there arryued in the moneth of *November*, *Steven Bomes* the pylot who the yeare befoze of 1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie sayled to the North partes and founde a greate parte of lande continuinge from that which is cauled *Bacaleos* discoursynge towarde the West to the .xl. and .xli. degree, fro whence he broughte

Certeine Indians (for so caule wee all the nations of the newe founde landes) of the whiche he brought sum with hym from thense who are yet in Toledo at this present, and of greater nature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke thother of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of dyuers beastes both wyld and tame. In this lande are many excellent furre, as martens, sables, and such other ryche furre of the which the sayde pilote brought summe with hym into Spayne. They haue syluer and copper, and certeine other metalles. They are Idolaters and honour the soonne and moone, and are seduced with suche superstitions and errors as are they of the firme.

Indians.

Ryche furre  
and syluer.

Idolaters.

And to haue wyrtten thus muche, it maye suffice of suche thinges as haue semed to me most woorthy to be noted in the Sumarie of Gonzalus Ferdinandus wyrtten to Theperoursmalesie

**O**f other notable thynges gathered owte of dyuers autours: And fyrste of the vniuersal carde and newe worlde.



The hole globe or compase of the earth was dyuided by the auncient wyrtters into thre partes, as *Europa*, *Africa*, and *Asia*: whiche partes conteyne in longitude .180. degrees, begynnyng the fyrst degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude toward the North .63. degrees, begynnyng the fyrste degree frome the Equinoctiall: And .10. degrees toward the South. All the reste of the longitude whiche conteyneth other .180. degrees, is discovered of late tyme, as the West India cauled the newe worlde, bycause none of the owlde autours had any knowlege or made any mention therof. All that therfore is cauled newe which is Westwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accompyng these .180. degrees toward the East discovered in owlde tyme, with the other .180. degrees discovered of late dayes, they make .360. degrees, which is al the circle of the Equinoctiall in the spher. Also the part about the .63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Brutlande with many other provinces

west India  
the newe  
worlde.The circums-  
ference of the  
Equinoctiall  
lyne.  
The North  
regions.

## The hystorie

The South  
regions.

vinces. Likewise the part more south then 15. degrees of latitude, was discovered of late dayes, although Ariane and Plinie say that it was known in olde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no suche particular description thereof as we haue in these dayes.

**A** discourse of the vyage made by the Spanyarde  
rounde aboute the worlde.



The vyage made by the Spanyarde rounde aboute the worlde, is one of the greatest and moste marueplous thynges that hath bynne known to olde tyme. And although in many thynges we excell olde aunciente predecessors, in this especiall wee so farre exceede all they inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn known to this day. This vyage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counsaile of Theemperours Indies, to whom also was committed the wytyng of the hystorie and examination of all suche as returned from thense into Spayne to the cite of Situlle, in the yeare. M. D. xxii. But sendyng it to Rome to bee prynted in that miserable tyme when the cite was sacked it was lost and not founde to this day or any memory remaynyng thereof, sayng such as sum that redde the same haue bozne in mynde. And amonge other notable thynges by hym wytten as touchyng that vyage, this is one, that the Spanyarde hauyng sayled about thre yeares and one moneth, and the most of them notyng the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that sayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had loste one daye: So that at theyr arryual at the porte of Situlle beinge the seuenth day of September, was by theyr accompt but the sixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the strange effecte of this thyng to a certeyne excellent man who for his singuler lernyng was greatly aduanced to honoure in his common welthe and made Theemperours ambassadoure, this woorthy gentelman who was also a greate Philosopher and Astronomer, answered that it coulde not otherwyse chaunce into them hauyng sayled thre yeares continually, euer followinge

Don Peter  
Martyr.

Don. sacked

A day lost in  
three yeares  
and one mo.  
month.

lowynge the soonne towarde the West. And sayde furthermo<sup>re</sup>  
 that they of owlde tyme obserued that all suche as sayled be-  
 hynde the soonne towarde the West, byd greatly lengthen the  
 day. And albeit that the sayde booke of Peter Martyr is pe-  
 rished, yet hath noe fortune permitted that the memorie of  
 so woorty and marueylous an enterpryse shulde viterly bee  
 extincte: forasmuch as a cerreyne noble gentleman of the cy-  
 tie of Vincenza in Italic, cauled master Antonie Bigafetta  
 (who beinge one of the companie of that vyage and after  
 his returne into Spayne in the Gyppie Victozia, was made  
 knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke  
 thereof which he gaue to Themperours Maiestie, and sente a  
 coppie of the same into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother  
 vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent phi-  
 losopher cauled master *Jacobus Faber*, hauyng longe studied in  
 Italy, wyllynge him to translate it into the frenche toonge.  
 This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the frenche toonge  
 and then in the Italien, with also an epistle to the Cardinall  
 of Salsepurge as touchyng the same viage, written by *Mar-*  
*imilian Transiluan* secretarie to Themperours Maiestie, in  
 the yeare .1522. And doubtelesse amonge al the cities of It-  
 talie, the citie of Vincenza may herein much glozie, that beside  
 the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whi-  
 che it hath bred, it hath also had so woorty and valiaunt a gentle-  
 man as was the sayde master Antonie Bigafetta, who hauing  
 compased abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lyke-  
 wyse described that vyage particularly. For the whiche his  
 so noble and woonderfull an enterpryse so happily achieved,  
 if the same had byn doone in the owlde tyme when the myrre  
 of the Grekes and Romans flozished, he shulde doubtelesse  
 haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erect-  
 ed in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a sin-  
 gular exemple of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may  
 we boldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer such know-  
 lege of the worlde whiche the soonne compaseth abowte in  
 xxiiii. houres, as we haue at this presente by churdustrye of  
 men of this owre age. But before I speake any thyng of the  
 viage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto, the E-  
 pistle of *Marimilian Transiluan* which he wrote to the Car-  
 dinall

Antonie Bigafetta.

*Jacobus Faber*,

*Marimilian Transiluan*

The reward  
of noble en-  
terpryse.

The antiqui-  
tie had no  
such know-  
lege of the  
worlde as  
we haue.

## The vyage rounde

of small of Salſepurge as a p̄face to his ſayde booke,

**T**he Epistle of Maximilian Trankilmane, ſecretarie to The Emperours maieſtie: wyrtten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lord, the lord Cardinall of Salſepurge, of the marueplous and woonderfull nauigation made by the Spanyardeſ rounde about the worlde in the peare of Chriſt, M. D. xix.



The Ilandes  
of Wolucca.

Aurea Cherſo-  
neſus.

Malacca.  
Spyces.

In theſe daies my moſt honorable and reuerend lord, returned one of thoſe fine ſhippes which the peare befoze Themperours beinge at Saragoſa in Spayne, were at his maieſties commaundement ſent to the newe worlde heretofore vnknowne vnto vs, to ſeeke the Ilandes of ſpyces. For albeit the Portugales bynge vs great quantitie of ſpyces from that parte of Eaſte India which in olde tyme was cauled Aurea Cherſoneſus (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche citie of Malacca) yet in Eaſte India growe none of thoſe ſpyces excepte pepper. For other ſpyces, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and mafe, (which is the huſke that couereth the ſhell of the nutte) are brought frome other farre countreys & fro Ilandes ſcarſely knowne by theyn names. From the which Ilandes they are brought in ſhipps or barkes made without any iren tooles, and tyed together with cordes of date trees: with rounde ſayles lykewiſe made of the ſmaule twigges of the branches of date trees weaved together. Theſe barkes they caule *Giunobe*: with the which barkes and ſayles, they make theyn vyages with onely one wynde in the ſearne or contrary wyſe.

The Ilandes  
of Spyces vn-  
knowne in  
owld tyme.

Neither yet is it a thyng greatly to bee maruepled at that theſe Ilandes where the ſpyces growe haue byn vnknowne ſo many worldes paſt vnto owre tyme, forasmuch as all ſuch thynges as vnto this day haue byn wyrtten of owld autours of the places where ſpyces growe, are all fabulous and falſe: In ſo muche that the countreys where they affirme theyn to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further frome the place where they growe in dedde, then we are from them. For lettynge paſſe many other thynges that are wyrtten, I will ſpeake

speake only of this which *Herodotus* (other wise a famous au-  
 tour) affirmeth that *Sinamome*, is founde in the toppes of  
 the nesles of certeyne byrdes and foules that bynge it frome  
 farre countreys, & especially the *Phenyx*, the which I knowe  
 no man that euer hath seene. But *Plinie* who myght moze  
 certeynely affirme thynges by reason that befoze his tyme ma-  
 ny thynges were knowen and discovered by the nauigations  
 of great *Alexander* and other, sayth that *Sinamome* groweth  
 in that parte of *Ethiope* which the people inhabite cauled *Tro-  
 gloditi*. Neuerthelesse it is neuer founde that *Sinamome* grow-  
 eth very farre from all *Ethiope* and muche further frome the  
*Trogloditi* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to  
 othere men which are nowe returned from those partes and the  
 Ilandes of spices, hauynge also good knowlege of *Ethiope*, it  
 was necessarie to passe farre beyonde *Ethiope* becoze they  
 coome to these Ilandes, and to compasse abowte the whole  
 worlde, and many tymes vnder the greatest circumference of  
 heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the most  
 marueylous thyng that euer was doone by man vpon the  
 earth sence the fyrst creation of the worlde, and neuer founde  
 befoze, or knowen, or attempted by any other, I haue delibe-  
 rated faithfully to wyrite to powre hono:able lordshippe and  
 to declare the hole successe therof. As touchynge which mat-  
 ter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the  
 trewth aswell by relation of the *Capitayne* of that shyppe as  
 also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned  
 with hym. All which, gaue the selfe same information both  
 to *Emperours* mateste and diuers other: And this with  
 such faythfulnesse and sincerities, that not only they are iud-  
 ged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but  
 haue thereby also gyven vs certeyne knowlege that all that  
 hath byther to byn sayde or wyritten of owlde autours as tou-  
 chynge these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyll  
 beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with such  
 fiere whole shadowe couereth theyr bodes? Or men of a cu-  
 bite height, and other such lyke, beinge rather monsters then  
 men? Of the which, neyther the *Spanyarden* who in othere  
 tyme saylyng by the *Ocean* sea, haue discovered al the coastes  
 of the lande toward the West both vnder and aboute the *Equi-  
 noctiall*, nor the *Portugales* who compassynge abowt al *A-  
 sye* haue passed by all the *Easte* and lykewyse discovered all  
 those

*Herodotus*.  
*Sinamome*.

The *Phenyx*.  
*Plinie*.

The nauigati-  
 ons of great  
*Alexander*.  
*Ethiope*.  
*Trogloditi*.

The nauigati-  
 on abowt the  
 worlde.

The owlde  
 autours res-  
 proued.

monsters.  
 The vyages  
 of the *Spany-  
 ardes* and  
*Portugales*.

## The vyage rounde

*Sinus Magnus.*

those coastes into the great goule cauled *Sinus Magnus*, no; yet the Spanyardes in this they; laste nauigation, in the which they compaled abowt the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wytte of such monsters: which doubtlesse they wold not haue ompted if they myght haue had certeyne knowelegetherof. But nowe intendynge to speake of the whole world, I wyll not bee longe in my p;eface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

A b;efse declaration of the vyage or nauigation made abowt the world. Gathered out of a large booke wyrtten hereof by master Antonie Dygafeta Vincentine, knyght of the Rhodes and one of the companye of that vyage in the which, *Ferdinando Magellanes* a Portugale (whom I am caule *Magellanus*) was generall Capitayne of the nauie.

Sebastian Munster.



The Ilandes of Molucca.

Although Sebastian Munster in his vniuersall Cosmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Asia (which I translated into Englyshe abowt two yeares since) hath wyrtten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declaring therein howe the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the East, layyng to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compaled the hole globe of the world betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a b;efse repetition of this vyage, addynge herunto byuers notable thynges which were not touched of Munster, as I haue gathered them out of the bookes of Antonie Dygafeta and *Tranfluianus* wyrtten of the same vyage. For altho; it in deede it was a straunge and woonderful thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compaled the hole circumference of the world betwene them, yet is it moze marueylous that the same was doone with one shippe and one companye of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepynge they; continuall course by the Weste, returned into Spayne by the East. A thyng doubtlesse so much moze woonderfull and Strange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went. In howe muche they were ignozante

Ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted before, belyde the thousande daungtours and perylls whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, alwell by wanderynge in vnknowen coastes as also by faulynge into the hands of the Portugales by whose dominions in the Easte, they shulde needes passe of necessite, not trustynge to theyr gentelnesse for the controuersie which had byn longe betwene them for the Ilandes of Molucca. I wyll therefore (as I haue sayde) make a brieve rehearsall of this vyage from the begynnyng to the endynge: Dmptynge neuerthelesse many notable thynges whiche are moze largely described in the bookes of Maximilianus Transiluanus and Antonius Pigafetta.

Controuersie betwene the Spanyardes and Portugales.

The tenth day of August, in the yeare of owre lorde M. D. xix. Ferdinando Magalanes departed from the porte of Suiile in Spayne with a nauie of syue shyppes and two hundredeth thirtie and seuen men, wel furnished with all thynges necessarie. And saylynge sorye doborne by the ryuer of Guadachiber which runneth from the sayde porte into the sea, they came sorye to a place named Ciouan Dulsarix where are manye byllages of the Moores: And from thense arryued at a castel of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, where is the porte from whiche they enter into the sea and to the cape saynte Vincent beinge distant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and from the sayde port .x. leaques, and is from thense to Suiile betwene xvii. and .xx. leaques. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe prouision of such thynges as they lacked.

Ferdinando Magalanes.

The Cape of saynt Vincent

Departynge from hense the .xx. daye of September, they arryued the .xxvi. day of the same moneth at one of the Ilandes of Canarie cauled Tenerife, beinge .xxv. degrees about the Equinoctiall. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyme as though it descended from heauen and compasseth about a certeyne great tree from whose branches distilleth greate abundaunce of water, and fauleth in streames from the roote of the same into certeine trenches and cisternes made and placed to receaue it. This water serueth sufficiently all thynhabitaures and cattayle of the Ilande. The lyke thinge is also seene in the Iland of saynt Thomas, lyinge directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The Ilandes of Canarie.

water engendered of a clowde.

The Iland of saynt Thomas.

The thyrde day of October about mydnyght, the capytayne

III. i.

rayne

## The vyage founde

Capo verde.

Guinea in  
Ethiophe.  
Serradions.

Fysshes and  
monsters of  
the sea.

The fyers of  
saints helene  
& S. Nicolas.  
& tempest.

The naturall  
cause of such  
fyers as faule  
in the shypes.

Cardanus.

Two kyndes  
of fyers engē  
dered of exha  
lations.

Trewe fyer  
& false fyer.

sayne commaunded them to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoyle  
up theyr sayles directyng theyr course towarde the South,  
saylunge betwene Capo Verde of Affyke and the Ilandes ly-  
inge abowe the same, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xiiii. de-  
grees and a halfe. They sayled thus, manye dayes in the  
syght of the coaste of Guinea, of Ethiophe, where is the moun-  
tayne cauled *Serra Ligna* beinge .viii. degrees above the Equi-  
noctiall. In this coast they had no maner of contrary wynde  
but a great calme and sayre wether for the space of thre score  
and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoct-  
tiall lyne. In this vyage they sawe manye straunge fysshes  
and monsters of the sea, besyde an ocher straunge thynge whi-  
che appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theyr shypes  
certeyne flames of fyre burnynge very cleare, which they caul  
saynt Helen and saynt Nicolas. These appeared as though  
they had byn vpon the mast of the shypes, in suche cleare-  
nesse that they tooke away theyr sight for the space of a quar-  
ter of an houre: by reason wherof, they so warded awte of  
theyr course and were dyspersed in sunder, that they in maner  
dispayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the sea and  
tempest beinge quieted, they came safely to theyr determyned  
course. And before I speake any further of the vyage, I haue  
here thought good to saye sumewhat of these straunge fyers,  
which sum ignorant folkes thynke to bee spirites or suche o-  
ther phantasies wheras they are but naturall thynghes proce-  
dyng of naturall causes and engendered of certeyne exhalat-  
tions. Of these therfore, the greate philosopher of olde  
tyme Hieronimus Cardanus in his seconde booke *de subtilitate*, wy-  
teth in this maner.

There are two maner of fyers engendered of exhalations  
wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That  
which is hurtful, is fyre in dedde, engendered of malicious &  
venemous vapours which in successe of tyme take fyre as apt  
matters to be kyndeled. The other kynd, is no trewe fyre, but  
lyke the matter that is in such owle putrified wod as giueth  
the thynge of fyre without the substance or qualitie ther-  
of. Of the kynde of trewe fyre, is the fyre haule or starte com-  
monly cauled saynt Helen which is sumtyme scene abowe the  
mastes of shypes, beinge of suche fyery nature that it sume-  
tyme melteth brassen vessels, and is a token of downyng,  
so

Forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dyuient together or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a grosse vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therfore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyres cauled in owlde tyme *Castor and Pollux*, and nowe named the two lyghtes of saynt Peter and saynt Nicolas whiche for the most parte faule on the cables of the shippes, leapinge from one to an other with a certeyne flutteryng noise lyke byrdes, are a token of securitie and of the tempeste ouerpassed. For they are but vapoures cleauynge to the cables: which in successe of tyme, the fyre passyng from one to an other, appere in the similitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of securitie because they are lytle, not slowe or grosse, whereby they myght haue toyued altogether in one, and byn thereby more malicious and lasted longer, wheras beinge many and but lytle, they are the sooner consumed. Bertherto *Cadanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vpage.

When they had sayled passe the Equinoctiall lyne, they lost the syght of the north starre, and sayled by southwesterly vntill they came to a lande named the lande of *Bresil* whiche sum caule *Bresilia* beinge .xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the south pole or pole Antarepke. This lande is continuat and one firme lande with the cape of saynte Augustine whiche is .viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refreshed with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here also very good sugar canes and diuers kyndes of beastes and other thynges which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on saynt Lucies day: where the sonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynt of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of *Brasile* is very large and great: and bygger then all Spayne, Portugal, Fraunce, and Italie: and is moste abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this countrey praye to noo maner of thinge: but liue by thynstincte of nature, and to thage of .Lxx. and .L. ii. yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houses. They are very docible, and soone allured to the Chyistian fayth.

Thertene dayes after that they arriued at the sayd port,

III. ii. they

Castor and  
Pollux.  
The lyghtes  
of saynt Peter  
and saynt  
Nicolas.

They lost the  
syght of the  
North starre.  
The lande of  
Bresile.  
The South  
pole.

Sugar.

The greater  
nesse of the  
land of Brasile.

## The vyage rounde

**Canibales.**

**Giantes.**

**Insula gemmarum.**

**Cap. S. Marie.**

**The pole In  
arctike.  
Seele:  
Sea woolues**

**The .xlii. de-  
gree of the  
south pole.**

**Giantes.**

they departed from this lande and sayled to the .xxviii. de-  
gree and a halfe toward the pole Antartike where they founde  
a great ryuer of fre the water and certeyne Canibales. Of  
these they sawe one owte of theyr shippes, of stature as bigge  
as a gigante, hauynge a voyce lyke a bul. Dore men pursued  
them, but they were so swyfte of foote that they coulde not  
ouertrake them. About the mouth of this ryuer, are seuen I-  
landes, in the byggest wherof, they founde certeyne precious  
stones, and cauled it the cape of saynt Marie. The Spany-  
ardes thought that by this ryuer they might haue passed into  
the south sea. But they were deceaied in theyr opinion. For  
there was none other passage then by the ryuer which is, xviii  
leagues large in the mouth.

Thus folowynge this coaste by the tracte of the lande to-  
warde the pole Antartike, they came to a place where were  
two Ilandes replenyshed with giese and woolues of the sea  
which sum thynke to bee those wythes that wee caule pikas.  
These were in such number that in an houre all the fyue ship-  
pes myght haue byn lade with giese beinge all of blacke co-  
loure, and such as can not flye. They lyue of fythe and are so  
fat: that they coulde scarcely se them. They haue noo fe-  
thers but a certeyns downe: and theyr byls like rauens byls.  
These woolues of the sea are of dyuers coloures, and of the  
byggeneite of calues, with theyr heades of golden coloure.  
Here were they in great daungour by tempest. But as soone  
as the thre spers cauled saynte Helen, saynte Nicolas, and  
saynt Clare, appered vpon the cabels of the shippes, sud-  
deynly the tempeste and furye of the wyndes ceased.

Departynge frome hence, they sayled to the .49. degree  
and a halfe vnder the pole Antartike: where beinge wynter-  
ed, they were inforced to remayne there for the space of two  
monethes, all which tyme they sawe no man except that one  
daye by chaunce they espyed a man of the stature of a gigante,  
who came to the hauen daunsyng and syngynge, and shortly  
after seemed to cast dust ouer his head. The capitayne sente  
one of his men to the shore with the shyppe boate, who made  
the lyke signe of peacc. The which thynge the gigante seinge,  
was owte of feare and came with the capitaynes seruaunte to  
his presence into a lyttle Ilande. When he sawe the capi-  
tayne with certeyne of his company aboute hym, he was  
greatly

greatly amazed and made signes beloynginge byppe his hande to heauen, signifyinge thereby that oure men came from thence. This giante was to bygge, that the heade of one of oure men of a meane stature, came but to his waste. He was of good corpozature and well made in all partes of his bodie, with a large bysage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the most parte yelow. Upon his cheekes were paynted two hartes, and redde circles about his eyes. The heare of his headde was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the skynne of a beaste sowde togyther. This beaste (as seemed vnto vs) had a large heade and great eares lyke vnto a mule, with the body of a camel and taylor of a horse. The feete of the giant were foulded in the sayde skynne after the maner of shoes. He had in his hande, a bygge and shorte bowe, the stringe whereof was made of a synewe of that beaste. He had also a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes feathered after the maner of swes, typte with sharpe stones in the steade of iron heades.

The Capitayne caused him to eate and drynke, and gaue him many thynges, and amonge other a greate lookynge glasse: In the which as soone as he sawe his owne lyknesse, was suddenly afrayde and started backe with such violence that he ouerthrewe two that stode nearest abowre hym. When the Capitayne had thus giuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with also a lookynge glasse, a combe, and a payre of beades of glasse, he sente hym to lande with foure of his owne men well armed.

Shortely after, they sawe an other giante of sumwhat greater stature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande. As he drye neare vnto oure menne, he layde his hande on his heade and poynted by towarde heauen, and oure men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne sente his shyppe boate to bygge him to a litle Islande beinge in the haven. This giante was verye fraccable and pleasaut. He loonge and daunsed: and in his daunsynge left the printe of his feete on the grownde. Here mayned longe with oure men who named hym *Iohan*. He coulde wel speake and playnely pronounce these wordes: *Iesus Ave Maria, Iohannes*, euen as we doe, but with a bygge voyce.

The capitayne gaue hym a shert of lynnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Also a cappe, a combe, a lookynge glasse, with dyuers suche other thynges, and so sente hym to his company. The day folowyng, he reioyced ageyne to the

The bygges  
of the giants.

In other  
giants.

shyppe.

## The vyage rounde

Gyppes, and brought with hym one of those greafe beastes, which he gaue the capitayne. But after that daye they neuer sawe hym moze, suppolynge hym to bee starue of his owne companye for the conuersion he had with owre men.

Foure other  
giantes.

Two gigantes  
are taken by  
a pollicie.

The deuyl  
Setebos.

Deuyls ap-  
pere to the Gy-  
antes when  
they dye.

Patagoni.

After other .xv. dayes were paste, there came foure other gigantes without any weapons, but had hydde theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne bushes. The capitayne returned two of these whiche were youngest and beste made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that gyuynge them knyues, heares, lookynge glasses, belles, beades of crytall, & suche other tryfels, he so fylled theyr handes that they coulde hold no moze. Then caused two payre of tyachels of iren to bee put on theyr legges, makynge signes that he wold also gyue them those chaynes; which they loked very wel bycause they were made of byght and shynynge metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycause theyr handes were full, the other gigantes wolde haue carped them: but the Capitayne wold not suffer them. When they felte the shakels faste abowte theyr legges, they begunne to doubt: but the Capitayne dyd put them in comferte and badde them stande still. In tyme when they sawe how they were deceaued they rored lyke bulles and cryed vpon theyr greafe deuyl *Setebos* to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly seperate and put in sundry Gyppes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two, Yet was one of them with much difficultie ouerthrowne by nyne of owre men, and his handes bownde: but he suddenly looked hym selfe and fledde, as dyd also the other that came with them. In theyr flying, they shot of theyr arrowes and slawe one of owre men. They say that when any of them dye, there appere .x. or .xii. deuyls leapyng and daunsynge about the bodye of the deade, and seme to haue theyr boddyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one scene bygger then the residue, who maketh great mirth and reioysynge. This greafe deuyl they caule *Setebos*, and caule the litle *Cheleule*. One of these gigantes which they toke, declared by signes that he had scene deuyls with two hornes abowte theyr heades, with longe heare downe to theyr feete: And that they call furth fyre at theyr throtes both befoze and behynde. The Capitayne named these people *Patagoni*. The most part of them weare the skynnes of suche beastes wherof I haue spoken befoze: And haue no houses of continuance but,

but make certeyne corages whiche they couer with the sayde  
skynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of rau-  
fleshe and a certeyne swete roote whiche they caule *Capar*.  
One of these which they had in theyr shippes, byd eate at one  
meale a basket. of byskette, and drunke a howle of water at a  
draught.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of saint Jult-  
an, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conspirynge the  
death of theyr general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge  
whom the treasurer Luigo of Mendoza was one. Certeyne  
of the ocher conspiratours, he left in the sayd land of *Patagonia*

Departynng from hense to the .52. degree toward the pole  
Antarlike lackynge a thyrde parte, where they founde a ry-  
uer of freshe water and good fysh. Theyr shippes were  
here in great daungion. They remayned twod monethes in  
this porte where they made newe prouision of freshe water,  
fuell, and fysh. Here the Capitayne caused all his men to  
bee confessed.

Approchynge to the .52. degrees, they founde the straighe  
nowe cauled the straighe of Magellanus, beinge in sum place  
.x. leagues in length: and in breadth sumwhere very large  
and in ocher places lyttle more then halfe a league in bredth.  
On both the sydes of this straighe, are great and hygh moun-  
taynes couered with snowe, beyonde the whiche is the ente-  
raunce into the sea of *sur*. This enterauce the Capitayne na-  
med *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the shippes stole away prui-  
lie and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the gigantes  
who dyed as soone as he felt the heate that is abowte the E-  
quinoctiall lyne.

When the Capitayne *Magallanes* was past the straighe and  
sawe the way open to the other mayne sea, he was so gladde  
therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named  
the poynt of the lande from whense he fyrst sawe that sea, *Ca-  
po Desiderato*.

Supposing that the shyp which stole away had byn losse, they  
erected a crose vppon the top of a hyghe hill to directe their  
course in the straighe yf it were theyr chaunce to coome that  
way. They founde that in this straighe in the moneth of Oc-  
tober the wyghte was not past foure houres longe. They found  
in this straighe at euery thre myles, a safe haven and exel-  
lent

The gigantes  
feedynge.

They conspire  
ageynst theyr  
Capitayne.

Confession.

The straighe  
of Magella-  
nus.

The South  
sea.  
*Mare pacificum*.

The gigantes  
died for heat.

*Capo Desiderato*.

Short nights  
in the moneth  
of October.

## The vyage rounde

cellent water to drynke: woodde also and fythe, and greate plentie of goo herbes. They thynke that there is not a sayree strayght in the worlde. Here also they sawe certeyne flynge fythes.

Flyng fythes

The gyantes  
language.

The gyant is  
baptised.

Three mo-  
nethes sayt  
lyng without  
the syght of  
lande.  
Extreme fa-  
men.

Diseases of  
famen.

The other gigante which remayned with them in the shyp, named breade Capar: water, Oli: redde clothe, Thereraredd colour, Cheiche: blacke colour, Amel: And spoke at his woordes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a crosse before him and kyted it, shewynge it unto hym, he suddely cryed se-  
ses, and declared by signes that if they made any more crosses, seles would enter into his body and make him bynd. But when in fine he sawe no hurte come thereof, he tooke the crosse and imbrased and kyted it oftentimes, desyringe that he myght see a Chyrsian before his death. He was therfore baptised and named paulc.

Departynge out of this strayght into the sea cauled *Mare Pacificum* the .xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1520. they sayled thre monethes and. xx. dayes before they sawe any lande. And hauynge in this tyme consumed all theyr bytkec and other byttayles, they fell into suche necessitie that they were inforced to eate the poudre that remayned therof beinge nowe full of woodmes and synkyng lyke posse by reason of the salte water. Theyr freshe water was also putrified and become yelowe. Theyr dyd eate skynnes and pieces of lether which were foulded abowe certeyne great ropes of the shypes. But these skynnes beinge made verye harde by reason of the soonne, rayne and wynde, they hunged them by a corde in the sea for the space of foure or fve dayes to mollifie them, and sodde them and eate them. By reason of this famen and vncleane feedynge, summe of theyr gummes grewe so ouer theyr tceche, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this occasion dyed .xix. men, and also the gianc with an Indian of the lande of Brasile otherwyse cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is the lande of poppingayes. Besyde these that dyed .xxv. or .xxx. were so sicke that they were not able to doo any seruice with theyr handes or armes for feeblenesse: So that there was in maner none without sum disease. In these thre monethes .xx. dayes, they sayled foure thousande leaques in one goulfe by the sayde sea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche may well see so cauled forasmuch as in all this tyme hauynge

no spghe of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempest. Durynge this tyme also, they discovered only two litle Ilandes inhabited, where they sawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named them misfortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundred leaques distante. The firste of these Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antarctike, .xv. degrees, and the other spue. Theyr sailinge was in suche sorte that they sailed daily betweene .l. lx. to .lxx. leaques. So that in time, if god of his mercy had not gyven them good wether, it was necessary that in this too greate a sea they shuld all have dyed for hunger. Whiche nevertheless they escaped soo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether ever the like viage may be attempted with so good successe.

Unfortunate Ilandes.

what they sayled dayly

They considered in this navigation that the pole Antarctike hath no notable starre after the sorte of the pole Arctike. But they sawe many starres gathered together, whiche are like two cloudes one separate a litle from an other, and sum what darke in the myddest. Betweene these, are two starres not very bigge, nor muche shynninge, whiche moue a litle: And these two are the pole Antarctike. The needell of theyr compasse varied sumwhat, and turned ever toward the pole Arctike. Antarehelelle, had no suche force as when it is in these partes of the pole Arctike. In so muche that it was necessary to helpe the needle with the lode stone (commonly called the adamant) befoze they could saile therewith, because it moued not as it doothe when it is in these ower partes. When they were in the myddest of the goulfe, they sawe a crosse of five cleare starres directly toward the West, and of equall distance the one from the other.

The starres abowt the south pole.

The needle of the compasse.

The lode stone.

The vyage rounde

The order of the Starrs about the pole Antartike, summe haue figured in this maner.



The pole Antartike, B, The Cross

In these dayes they sayled betwene the West and South  
 so farre that they approached to the Equinoctiall line, & were  
 in longitude from the place from whence they first departed,  
 a hundredeth and twentic degrees. In this course they sayled  
 by two Ilandes of exceedynge height, wherof the one named  
 Cipanghu, is .xv. degrees from the pole Antareike: And the o-  
 ther named Sumbdit .xv. degrees. When they were past the  
 Equinoctiall line, they sayled betwene the West and South-  
 west at the quarter of the West towards the South west more  
 then a hundredeth leagues, changinge theyr sayles to the quar-  
 ter of the South west butyll they came to the .xiiij. degrees a-  
 boue the Equinoctiall towards the pole Artyke, intending as  
 much as were possible, to approche to the cape cauled of the  
 olde mysters *Canigara*: The whiche is not founde as the  
 olde Cosmographers haue discribed it, but is towards the  
 north about .xiiij. degrees as they afterwarde vnderstode.

When they had thus sayled lxx. leagues of this vyage in  
 the .xiiij. degree about the Equinoctiall, and .lxx. degrees of  
 longitude (as I haue sayde) the xij. day of March they dis-  
 covered a xij. Ilande towards the north west, and two or  
 ther towards the south west: but the one was hygher and  
 bygger then the two other. In the byggest of these, the gene-  
 rall capitayne wolde haue rested hym selfe a while: but he  
 coulde not by reason the people of these Ilands resorted con-  
 tinually to the shippes with theyr canoas, and stole nowe one  
 thyng and nowe an other, in such sorte that our men coulde  
 take no rest, and therfore demaunded of the capitayne that  
 they myght stryke theyr sayles to bynne the shippes to land.  
 But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande  
 with forty armed men, and burnt about fiftie of theyr hou-  
 ses with many of theyr Canoas: And slew also about fuen-  
 men, and recouered a shyppe boare whiche the Barbarians  
 had stole, and so departed solowynge his vyage. The Capi-  
 tayne named these Ilands *Insule Latronum*, that is, the Ilands  
 of theues. When our men had so wounded summe of thym  
 with arrowes that they were stryken throughe bothe sydes,  
 they pulled furth the arrowes not ceasynge to marueyle at the  
 tyll they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other so de-  
 part, but still followed the shippes with more then two hun-  
 dret of theyr boates, approachynge as nere to the shippes as  
 they

The Equi-  
 noctiall line.

The Ilandes  
 of Cipanghu  
 and Sumbdit

*Insule Latronum*

The vyage rounde

they coulde, and proferinge ome men certeyne sylthes. As the stypes passed with full sayle in the myddle of theyr boates, they sawe in sum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearynge theyr heare, which ome men thought they did for the death of theyr husbandes. As farre as they could perceave, these people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouvernour. They go naked and have blacke beardes and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr waistes. They are of the same stature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyk unto an olynne. Theyr women are well favoured with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachynge to the grotonde. The menne coloure theyr teeth redde and blacke, which they esteeme a comely thyng. They annoynt theyr bodies and heare with the oyle of Cocus. Theyr boates are sum all blacke, sum whytte, and sum redde, and have sayles made of the broade leaves of date trees sowd together. In the steade of a rudder, they vse a certeyne brode boorde with a stafe in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the sterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the sterne. They sayle so swyftely that they seeme a farrre of, lyke Delphyns swymynge above the water.

people with  
longe heare

Their coloure  
theyr teeth.

The Ilande  
of Jamall.

The tenth day of March, in the yeare. 1521. they wente a lande bypon a lytle Ilande named *Zamal*. xxx. leaques distant from the Ilande of theues. Bycause this Ilande was not inhabited, they rested here a whyle, where the capitayne caused a pavilion to bee pyched for the sicke and crazed men, and a hogge to bee kylde.

Wyne of date  
trees.

The xviii. day of Marche, they sawe a boate with nyne men comynge towarde them, shewynge them selves ioyfull and reioysynge of theyr comynge. They brought many presentes with them, and seemed to bee people of much humanitie. They gaue the capitayne a great sylthe, and a great vessel of the wyne of those date trees whiche beare the frute *Cocus*. They made also signes that within the space of foure dayes, they wolde bringe sylthe and dyvers soules and beasts as they had in dedde.

The marvellous  
frute  
Cocus.

This *Cocus* is a frute of certeyne date trees wherof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineget. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, & hange therat a redde as bigge as a mans legge, into the which drop

pech

geth a sweete licour from the tree lyke unto newe wyhte wine  
 sumwhat tart, After the reede contineth there from moynynge  
 tyll eueninge, and from eueninge to moynynge. The frute of  
 this tree cauled *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man or  
 more. The fylle rynde of this, is greene and of the thicke-  
 nesse of two syngers, haupnge in it certeyne threedes wherof  
 they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Un-  
 der this rynde, there is a thicke shell whiche they burne and  
 make powder therof and vse it as a remedie for certeyne disca-  
 ses. Under this shell, is a wyhte substaunce lyke the carnell  
 of a nutte being a synger in thickenesse, which they eat with  
 the and fylle as wec doo breadye. It hath the taste of an  
 almonds, and is vled in the steade of breadye when it is bryed.  
 In the myddest of this carnell, is a cleare and sweete water,  
 beinge very holosome and cordiale. This water somtyme con-  
 geleth and lyeth within the shell lyke an egge. When they in-  
 tende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrisie in water, and  
 boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they  
 intende to make vineger, they suffer only the water to putris-  
 sie, and then set it to the soonne where it becommeth vineger  
 lyke vnto that which is made of wyhte wyne. And when they  
 mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddest of  
 the frute, and streyne it thowre a cloth, they make a mylke  
 therof lyke vnto goates mylke. These date trees are lyke vnto  
 them that beare dates, but are not so full of knottes. With  
 the wyse of two of these date trees, a hole familie of tenne peo-  
 ples may bee maynteyned with wyne bynge one hū. dayes,  
 and the other, other. hū. dayes: for they shulde els bee dyed  
 and wythered. These trees continue for the space of a hū.  
 dreth yeares. This Ilande where they founde this humane  
 and gentell people, is cauled *Zuluau*, and is not verye bygge.  
 About this Ilande they founde manye other Ilandes, and  
 therefore named this sea *Archipelago di S. in Lazaro*, that is, the  
 great sea of saynte Lazarus, beinge tenne degrees about the  
 Equinoctiall towarde the pole, and. C. lxi. frome the place  
 from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are  
*Cyprianite* theye is gentles. They go naked saynge that they  
 couce theyr priuie partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a  
 certeyne tree. The chiefest men, haue abowre theyr heades a  
 splken cloth of needle woork. They are grosse and hode see  
 and

The Ilande of  
*Zuluau*.

The sea caule-  
 ted *Archipe-  
 lago di San  
 Lazaro*.

*Senylea*.

## The vyage rounde

and of the coloure of an oliue. They annoynte theyr bodys  
with the oyle of Cocus to defend the nageynst the heate of the  
soonne and dyne te of the wynde. The xxv. day of Marche,  
they departed from hense and directed theyr course betwene  
the Weste and south west, and sayled betwene foure Ilandes  
named *Cendlo, Huinangban, Sibuson, and Abarien* &c.

The Iland of  
Buthuan.

The xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of  
*Buthuan* where they were honorably interceyned of the kynge  
and the prince his soonne who gaue them muche golde and  
spices. The capitayne gaue the kynge a vesture of red clothe  
and an other of yelow made after the Turke the sathyon,  
and also a red cappe. And gaue likewise to other that came  
with hym, certeyne knyues, glasses, and beades of cristalle.

After that, the capitayne had shewed the kynge the secretes  
of his shippe and suche marchaundies as he had therein, he  
caused a piece of ordinaunce suddenly to bee shot of, wherewith  
the kynge was greatly amased until the capitayne comforted  
hym. Then the Capitaine commaunded one of his men to be  
armed from the heade to the foote, and caused three other to  
strike hym with theyr swordes, wherewith the kynge maruailed  
greatly, and sayde to thinterpretoure (who was a slave  
borne in Malacha) that one of those armed men was able to  
encounter to th a hundred of his men. But he maruailed  
muche moze when the capitaine told hym by thinterpretoure  
howe he founde the straight by the compasse and lode stone,  
and howe many dayes they were without sight of any lande.  
Then askynge licence to departe, the capitayne sente two of  
his men with him, of the whiche *Antonie Digafetta* was one.  
When the kynge sawe *Antonie Digafetta* write the names of  
many thinges, and afterwarde rehearse them ageyne, he mar-  
uailed yet moze, makynge spynes that suche men descended  
from heauen. The kynge brought them firste to his palleice  
where he interceyned them honorably and gaue them manye  
gyftes, as byd also the prince in his palleice beyng in an o-  
ther Ilande named *Caleghan*.

The Iland of  
Caleghan.

plente of  
golde.

As they spsted a certeyne myne of earthe in the kynges  
Ilande, they founde pecies of golde, sum as bigge as nuttes  
and other as bigge as egges. All the kynges vessels were  
of golde, and his house well furnysshed. In all the hole na-  
tion there was no man of coomlier personage then the kynge.

De

He had his heare long downe to his sholders, and very blake, with a baile of silke rowled aboute his head, and two greates ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had aboute his myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and silke impaled with golde, and reacheing downe to his knees. On his one syde, he had a long dager with a haffe of golde, and the other the of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on euery finger, thre ringes of golde, and had his bodie annoynted with oyle of Roza and Benjamin. The natural coloure of his face was like vnto the coloure of an oliue: And all his bodye by lye paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was Rara Colambu, and the Prince was cauled Rara Siagu.

The kyng of  
Suihua.

The laste day of Marche neare vnto Easter, the capitaine caused his preesse to say masse, and sente to the kyng by thyn-  
terpreter, that his commyng a lande at that tyme was not  
to dyne with hym, but only to heare masse. The Capitayne  
came alande with syete of his men in theyr best apparel with  
dote weapons or harnessse, and all the resydue well armed.  
Befoze the boates came to lande, he caused sixe pieces of or-  
dinaunce to be shotte of in token of peace, and so came aland,  
wher the two kynges embrased hym, and accompanyd hym  
to the place appoynted for masse to be sayde not farre frome  
the sea syde. Sun what befoze the beginnyng of masse, the  
Capitayne sprynkeled the kynges with damaske water.

masse.

When the preesse was at mid masse at the officorie, the kings  
profered them selues to go to kysse the crosse with the capy-  
taine, but offered nothynge. At the tyme of sacringe when  
the preesse lifed vpp the bodie of Christ, and the Christians  
kneeled downe and helde vpp their handes ioyned together,  
the kynges dyd the like also with greare reuerence. In the  
meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Christians were at the com-  
munion, a haunt egunne was shotte of to signifie vnto them  
that were in the shippes, to discharge all theyr ordinaunce.

When masse was tynped, the Capitaine caused certeyne of  
his men to put on theyr harnessse and to make a combat with  
theyr naked wooddes, wherat the kynges tooke great plea-  
sure. This doone, the Capitaine cauld a crosse to be broughte  
surely, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, geyng com-  
maundement to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and  
signyfyinge to the kynges by thyn-  
terpreter that that banner  
was

A combatte,

The Crosse  
and crowne  
of thornes.

The vyage rounde

Was gyven hym by The emperoure his lord and master, with commaundment to leaue the same in al places where he came to the great commeditie and profits of all such as wolde reuerently receaue it as an assured token of frendship: And that he wold therfore leaue it there awhel to accomplysh his lordes commaundment, as also that if at any tyme any wyppes of Chyrtians shulde chauce to come that way, shulde by seing that crosse perceaue that euer men had byn well enterpeyned there, and wolde therfore not onely absteyne from doing them any hurte or displeasure, but also helpe to ayde them agynste theyr enemies. And that therfore it shulde be requyre to erecte that crosse vpon the topp of the hyghesse mountayne that myght be seene from the sea on euery syde. Also to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in so doinge, they shulde not be hurte with thunder, lychtynge, or tempestes. When the kynge's harde these wordes, they gaue the Capitayne great thankes, promysinge gladly to obserue and fultyll all suche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaunded whether they were Moores or gentyles. They answered that they had none other kynde of religion, but that lychtynge byppe theyr handes togeder and theyr faces toward heauen, they called vpon theyr god *Abba*, whiche answere lyked the Capitayne very well, because the gentyles are sooner perswaded to oure sayth then the Moores, &c.

Moores and gentyles.

many Ilands

The Iland of Messana.

battes as bygge as Eagles. Fowles with bones.

Departynge frome hence, they came to the Ilandes of *Zeilon*, *Zubuth*, *Messina*, and *Calaghan*, by the conducte of certeyne pylottes of the sayde kynge. Of these, *Zubuth* is the beste, and hath the trade of beste traffique. In the Ilande of *Messina*, they founde dogges, cattles, hogges, hennes, goates, rye, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panyke, barleye, bygges, oranges ware, and golde in greate quantitie. This Ilande is aboute the Equinoctiall towarde oure parte, is. degrees twoo thyrde partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whense they departed. They remayned in this Iland for the space of. viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the north west, and passed betwene these fyue Ilandes, *Zeilon*, *Bobol*, *Cangbu*, *Bahai*, and *Calaghan*. In this Ilande of *Calaghan*, are certeyne great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to be eaten, and of taste muche lyke a henne. There are also stocke dooues, turtle dooues, poppingtaves, and certeyne foules as bygge as hennes. These foules haue lytle bones

boyses, and lay great egges, which they couer a cubit depe in the sande, by the heate whereof and berme of the soones they are hatchyd, and the younge byrdes creepe owte of the sande by them selues. From the Ilandes of Messana to Catighan are .xx. leaques laylynge towarde the West. And by cause the kynge of Messana couide not folowe the shippes, they taryed so; him about the Ilandes of Polo, Nicobon, and Poxon, whiche the Capitayne tooke hym into his shippe with certeyne of his principall men, and so folowed they; by age towarde the Ilandes of Zubur, whiche is aboute fiftie leaques distante from Catighan.

The .viii. day of Apryll abowte noone, they entered into the porte of Zubur: And passynge by many byltages and habitacions in trees, they came to the cite, where the Capitayne haue commaundement to the maryners to stryke they; sayles & to set them selues in order in maner of battayle ray, causing all the ordinaunte to bee shorte of, wherewith all the people were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitayne sent an ambassadoure with thinterpretoure to the kynge of Zubur. When they approached nere to the cite, they sounde the kyng with a great company of men so; astonysed at the noyse of the gannes, But thinterpretour aduertised them that it was the custome of owre men in al suche places wher; they coome, to discharge they; ordinaunce in token of frendshyppe and to honour the lo;de of the cite. With which wordes the kyng and his company were well quicted. After this, thinterpretour declared that his master was the Capitayne of the ships of the greates; Prince in the worlde, and that they were to discover the Ilandes of Malucca: And further; that hearyng of his good name and fame by the re;porte of the kyng of Messana, they determyned to visite hym and to haue byttayles so; exchange of they; marchaundies. The kyng answered that he was well contented therwith, and that they were hartely welcoome. Nowe thelke, that it was a custome in that place, that all such shippes as entered into that haven, shuld pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes passe, sence a shyppe laden with golde and slaues dyd so paye. In token wherof, he caused to coome before hym certeyne marchauntres of that company whiche yet remayned with hym. To this thinterpretour answered, that so;asmuch as his lo;de was the Capitayne of so; many a Prince, he neuer paye tribute

Egges hatchyd in sand.

The Ilandes of Zubur.

The kynge of Zubur.

A shyp laden with gold and slaues.

## The vyage rounde

to any kyng in the worlde, and wolde not nowe begynne. **W**yllynge hym to take this for a resolute answer, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he shulde enjoy it, And if he rather desyred warre, he shoulde haue his handes full. **W**hen thinterpretour had sayde these woordes, one of the sayde marchauntes (who was a **Moore**) spake to the kyng in this maner. **CATAIA** *China*: that is, Take heed sy. For these men are they that haue conquered **Calicut**, **Malaca**, and all the greater **India**: and are of suche poure that yf yowre intreate them otherwyle then well, yowre may to late knowe what they are able to doo more then they haue doone at **Calicut** and **Malaca**. **W**hen thinterpretour harde these woordes, he sayde that the kynges lorde was of much greater puiſſaunce and more dominions, and lorde of more shippes then was the kyng of **Portugale**: declarynge further that he was kyng of **Spayne** and **Emperour** of all **Christendome**. **A**ddynge hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter sende thither suche a poure of armed men as shulde destroy his countrey. **T**he **Moore** conferred all these woordes with the kyng, who sayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counsaile, and gyue them a full answer the dape folowynge. **I**n the meane tyme he sente them certeyne byttayles and wyne. **W**hen all these thynges were declared to the kyng of **Malaca** who was the chiefest there about nexte unto hym, and lorde of many **Islandes**, he wente alande and repayred to the kyng of **Zubut** and declared unto hym the great humilitie and curtesie of the generall **Capitayne**. **S**hortely after, the **Capitayne** sente certeyne of his men with thinterpretour to the kyng of **Zubut** to knowe his pleasure and what answer he wolde make them. **A**s they wente towarde the court, they mette the kyng commynge in the **Streete** accompanied with many of his chiefe men. **H**e caused ovr men to sit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one **Capitayne** in theyr company: **A**nd whether it were they requeste that he shulde pay tribute to **Themperour**. **T**hey answered that they desyred none other thyng but that they myght exercise marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. **T**he kyng made answer that he was well content therewith: **W**yllynge the **Capitayne** in token of frendshipp to sende him a litle of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmynge that he wold do the lyke. **A**fter

Calicut.  
Malaca.

Shedding of  
bludde is a token of frendshyppe

After this the kynge of Messana with the kynge of Zubu his neute (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylmen, came to the Syppes and brought the Capitayne many goodly presentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perswaded them to the Christian fayth, which they gladly embraced, and tooke suche pleasure in hearynge the articles of owtre belife, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptised, and shortly after all the people of the Ilande. They esteeme nothyng more precious then drynking glasses of Venice worke.

When they came to the cite, they founde the kynge in his pallatice sittynge vppon a floure or fluozie made of the leaues of date trees brought after a curious diuise lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vppon his body, none other apparel but only a cloth of bombasine cotton hangyng befoze his priuite partes. On his heade, he had a bayle of needle worke; and abowte his necke a chaine of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynges of golde whererein were inclosed many precious stones. He was but of smaule stature, but somewhat grosse, and had the residue of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof sum were lyke vnto flamyng fyre. Befoze hym, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth cauled *Porcellina*, with sodden egges. Also four vesselles of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his house, where he had foure daughters verie well fauoured and whyte lyke owres. He cauled them to daunce all naked, and therewith to synge, and play on certeyne tymbzelles made of metall.

At this tyme it so chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the Syppes. And when certeyne of theyr coompany desired the kynge to gyue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he answered that forasmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kynge and master, how much more ought the grounde so to bee.

They greatly marueyled at the ceremonies perteynyng to the maner of owtre funeralles, and honoured the crosses whiche were set at bothe thendes the graue.

They lyue with iustice, and vse waighres and measures. Theyr houses are made of Timber and sawne boordes: and

III. ii.

are

The kynge of  
Zubut is bap-  
tised.

The kynge of  
Zubut his ap-  
parell.

well fauored  
women.

## The vyage founde

are so buylded aboue the grownde vpon proppes and pylles, that they ascende to the same by certeyne staires. Under theyr houses, they keepe theyr hogges and heunes.

Barterynge

When they came to barterynge, they gaue golde, rybe,

Pesus what.

hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for sume of there

treasures of maner value. They gaue tenne pesos of golde for

xvi. poundes weyght of iren. One pesus is in halfe a ducate

They breake  
theyr Idoles  
and erecte  
the crosse.

and a halfe. The Sunday folowynge, the kynge was bapty-

sed with great solemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne ad-

Fyue hun-  
dred men  
baptised.

monyfied him before not to bee afrayde at the shooing of of

the ordinaunce, because it was theyr custome to doo as such

solemne feastes. After this, the Capitayne caused theym to

breake all theyr Idoles, and to set vpp the crosse in diuers

The queene  
of Zubur.

places, prayinge to the same bothe morninge and euenynge

kneelynge on theyr knees and holdynge vp theyr handes ioy-

ned together. The kynge in his baptyse, was named Char-

les after the Emperours name, and the prince, Ferdinando

after the name of his maiesties brother. The kynge of Mal-

lana was named John, and the Moore Christopher. To all

other they gaue such names as are commonly vsed in Christen-

domes. And thus befoze made was begunne, were fyue hun-

dred men baptised. When masse was sayed, the Cap-

itayne inuited the kynge to dyne with him in his shyppe, and

at his commynge, caused the ordinaunce to bee discharged.

The queene was also baptised with fortye of her gentilewo-

men, and her daughter the princes wife. The queene was be-

ty younge and saye, haunynge her body couered with a white

cloth. Her shypes were redde, and she had on her head a hat,

on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes

This crowne & the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

Within the space of viii. dayes, thynhabitauntes of the Is-

lands were baptised excepte one byllage of Idolaters who

wolde not herein obey the kynges commaundment. Wherup-

pon the Capitayne sent certeyne of his menne thither, who

burnt the towne and erecte a crosse in that place because the

people of the byllage were gentyles (that is) Idolaters. But

if they had byn Moores (that is) Machumeticus, they wolde

haue erecte a pyller of stone, because the Moores are more

hooborne and harder to bee conuerred then are the gentyles.

When the queene came to the place where she shuld heare

masse

masse, they came furth with great pompe, and solemnitie, ha-  
 yunge goinge before her three younge damoyselles, and three  
 men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom shee solinged  
 apparellled in white and blacke, with a great bayle of silke  
 vpon her heade fringed aboute with golde, whiche covered  
 her harte and hunge downe to her shoulvers. Shee had also  
 a great traine of women followinge her, bringe all barefoot  
 red and naked, excepte that vpon theyr heades and priue  
 partes, they wore certeyne bayles of silke, and hadde theyr  
 heare spredd.

Before the kynge of *Zubut* was baptised, he was nam'd  
*Raia* *Bunabun*. When the Capitayne demaunded of hym  
 why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng  
 to his promise, he answered that they esteemed the no more  
 as goddess, but only made sacrifice to, theym for the Idoles  
 bother who was very sycke, and as noble and mystie a  
 man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne answered that if  
 he wolde burne all his Idoles and beleue faythfully in Christ,  
 and bee baptised, he shulde be immediately restored to health,  
 and that he wolde els geue them leave to stroke of his heade.  
 By these mooydes and persuasions of the Capitayne, he recei-  
 ued such hope of health, that after he was baptised he felt  
 no more grieue of his disease. And this was a manifest myra-  
 cle wrought in owre tyme whereby dyuers infidels were con-  
 uerted to owre fayth, and theyr Idoles destroyed, and also  
 theyr altars ouerthrowen on the wyche they were accus-  
 tomed to eate the sacrificed beeste. The people of the Ilande  
 pay the kynge a portion of vitayles for theyr tribute by all  
 theyr cities and bylages.

Not farre from this Ilande of *Zubut*, is the Iland of *Ma-*  
*than*, whose inhabitants vse maruelous ceremonies in theyr  
 sacrifices to the soone and burying the deade. They weare  
 rynges of golde about theyr priue members. The Ilande is  
 gouerned by two princes wherof the one is named *Zill*, and  
 the other *Cilapulan*. And whereas this *Cilapulan* refused to pay  
 tribute to the kynge of Spayne, the Capitayne went agaynst  
 hym in his owne person with 12. of his menne armed with  
 coates of mayle and helmetes. *Cilapulan* diuided his army  
 into three battayles, hauyng in every battaille two thousand  
 and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, dartes and saue-  
 lins.

The queene  
 of *Ma-*  
 than  
 is called

to be the  
 . . . . .

and the  
 . . . . .

A miracle.

to be the  
 . . . . .

The Iland of  
*Ma-*  
 than.

to be the  
 . . . . .

to be the  
 . . . . .

## The vyage rounde

The capitaine  
Magellanus  
is slayne.
 his hardened at the poyntes with syer. This continued longe  
 and Garpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and pre-  
 sponge hym selfe in the brunte of the barrayle, was soze woun-  
 ded and slayne, forasmuch as the mooste of the Barbarians di-  
 rected all theyr force agaynst hym. Besyde the Capitayne,  
 were slayne of owre men abowt. viii. or. ix. Of the Barba-  
 rians, were. xv. slayne and many soze wounded. After the deach  
 of the Capitayne, they chose two other in his place, of the  
 which one was Doardo Barbella a Portugale, and the o-  
 ther John Serrano who was shortly after betrayde by thins  
 treproure and taken prissoner with dyuers other.

The Island of  
Bobol.
 Certeyne dayes before the Capitaynes deach, they hadde  
 knowlege of the Islandes of Molucca whiche they chiefly  
 sought. Departynge therfore from the Islande of Machan,  
 they sayled farre and came to the cape of an other Islande na-  
 med Bobol. In the myddest of this mayne sea (whiche they

They burne  
one of they  
shyppes.
 named Archipelagus) they consulted to burne the shyppe named  
 Conception, bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to  
 furnishe the other two shyppes with thartillerie therof. Thus  
 directynge theyr course towarde Southewest, they came to

Blacke men.
 an other Islande named *psuloghon*, where they founde blacke  
 men lyke vnto the Sarasins. Shortly after, they arriued at  
 an other great Island, whose kyng named Raia Calauar, in-  
 treated them very frendely in all thynges as dyd the kyng of  
The Islande  
of Chippit.
 Mellana. This Islande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of  
 ryffe, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other  
 thynges. It is named Chippit, and is. viii. degrees aboute the  
 Equinoctiall line towarde our pole: And in longitude from  
 the place from whense they first departed. 170. degrees: And  
 abowt. 50. leaques from Zubu.

The Island of  
Caghan.
 Departynge frome hense they came to an other Island na-  
 med Caghan beinge 40. leaques frome Chippit as they sayled  
 betwene the weste and Southe weste. This Islande is ve-  
 ry greate, and in maner unhabited. The people are moozes,  
 and were banysht out of the Islande of Burnei whiche sum  
 caule *Porne*.

The Island of  
Pulaoan.
 Frome this Islande aboute xxv. leaques betwene the west  
 and northe weste, they founde a maruelous fearefull Islande  
 named Pulaoan, beinge towarde oure pole aboute the Equino-  
 ctiall ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C. lxxix. degrees and  
 a thyfde

a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.

Frome this Ilande .x. leagues towarde the South weste, they sawe an other Ilande whiche seemed to them sumtymes to mounce as they sayled by the coastes therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there arose a boytious and darke tē-  
pelle which ceased as soone as the fiere of the thre sayntes (wherof we haue spoken befoze) appeared vppon the cabells. Frome the beginnunge of this Ilande to the porte, are fyue leagues. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth .xxv. thousande houses. The kynge inre-  
teyned oboze men very frendlye, and sent them byslyde many other presentes, two elephantes trapped with silke to bring them to his pallace that brought the presentes which the Ca-  
pptaynes sent hym. He hath a magnyfycalle courtte and a greate garde. Also a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named Raia Siripada. He is a kynge of great pouer, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of Burnei is aboute the Equinoctiall toward oboze pole fyue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departing .C. lxxvi. degrees and two thirde partes.

Departinge frome Burnei, they came to an Ilande cauled Cimbubon, beinge .viii. degrees aboute the Equinoctiall lyne. Here they remayned .xl. days to calke theyr shippes and furnyssh them with freische water and fuell whiche was to them great payne and frauayle because they were in maner all bare footed, theyr shoes and in maner theyr other apparell beinge wozne by reason of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whose leanes as soone as they faule on the grounde, doo stirre and remoue frome place to place as though they were alyue. They are muche lyke the leanes of a mulbery tree: And haue on euery syde as it were two short and blunt fiere. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde scene come furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they suddenyely moue and starte away. Antonie Pigafetta kepte one of them in a platter for the space of .viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde aboute the platter. He supposeth that they lue only by ayre.

Departynge from hence, they directed theyr course by the Weste quarter towarde the Southeaste, to fynde the Ilandes

The Ilande of Burnei or Burne.

A great citie.

Elephantes.

The Ilande of Cimbubon.

Leanes of trees which seeme to lue.

of

of Molucca, and Taples not farre from Certeyne mountaynes  
 where they founde the sea full of great weedes and herbes.  
 A sea full of  
 weedes and  
 herbes. . . .  
 From hence, they came to the Ilandes of Zola and Taghima,  
 in the which they founde peccles of exceeding biggenesse.  
 Following they coude toward the north East, they came  
 to a great Iland named Manglano, lyinge above the Ilandes of  
 Maluan and Callian where they tooke a number of Certeyne of  
 this habitantes: by whome being informed of the Ilandes of  
 Molucca they lefte they coude towarde the north East, and  
 followed the South easte nere unto a cape of the Iland of Bu  
 thian, they were aduertised for certeyne that on the bankes of  
 a certeyne vnyer, there dwelte men ouergrowen with heare,  
 and of high stature.  
 Men ouer  
 growen with  
 heare.  
 Following till they coude by the south easte, and past  
 by many small Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of  
 Molucca the xxij. dayes of Nouember and the xxvii. moneth  
 after they departure out of Spayne. Beinge therfore ioy  
 full and givinge thanks vnto god, they discharged all they  
 ordynance. In the coaste of all these Ilandes, euen vnto  
 the Ilandes of Molucca, soundyng with theyr plummets, they  
 founde the deapthe of the sea to bee no lesse then a hundred  
 and thys paces, which is contrary to the sayinge of the Por  
 tugales who affirme that no shyppe can passe that way with  
 out great daungionce by reason of the halowines and rockes  
 or helmes: and for the darkenelle which the cloudes cause in  
 the heauen. All which thyngs they sayned to thynke that  
 none other shoulde haue knowellege of theyr vyages.  
 The xxviii. day of Nouember in the yere .1521. before  
 the settinge of the sonne, they entered into the poynt of the  
 Ilande of Molore, beinge one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca,  
 where they were honorably receyued of the kynge who de  
 clared that he had longe before seene a signe in heauen that  
 certeyne shippes shuld comie from a farre contrey to the I  
 landes of Molucca: And that wheras for the better certificat  
 therof he considered the signons of the moone, he sawe theyr  
 in the companyng of owle shippes, and that he were the men  
 whome he seemed to see in the same. Whereupon he profered  
 hym selfe to enter into league of frendshyppe with the kynge  
 of Spayne, and to accepte owle men as his brotherne and  
 chyldren: wyllyng them to come abande as into theyr owne  
 houses.

The Ilandes  
 of Molucca.

The Portu  
 gales are re  
 proued.

Didde one of  
 the Ilandes  
 of Molucca.

A vision in  
 the planettes

houses. Also that for theyr comynge, that Ilande shulde no moze bee cauled *Tidore*, but *Castile* for the great soue whiche he boze to theyr kynge whom he reputed as his lo:de and master. This kynge is a *Mooze*, and is named *Kata Sultan Mauzo?*.

The Ilandes of *Molucca* are fve in number, & are thus named: *Tarenate*, *Tidore*, *Mutir*, *Maccian*, and *Bacchian*. Of these, *Tarenate* is the chiefest.

Directly ageynste the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande named *Silolo*, inhabited of *Moozes* and *Genryles*. The *Moozes* haue two kynges, of the which one hath fyre hundred chylzen, & the other fyre hundred and fiftie. The *Genryles* kepe not so many women as doo the *Moozes* noz yet lyue in suche superstitions. They praye to the fyre thynge that they meete in the moynynge when they go furth of theyr houses, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kynge of the *genryles* is very ryche in golde. In the sayde Ilande of *Silolo*, are recedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holsome to bee drunke.

The xii. daie of *November*, the kynge of *Tidore* appointed oovre men a ware house in the citie where they might sell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this sort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one *Bahar* of cloves, whiche amounteth to foure *Cantari* and fyre pounde weight: And one *Cantar* is a hundred pounde weight. For. x. yardes of cloth sumwhat woorse then the other, they receaued in *Lambie*, one *Bahar*. For. xxx. dynt kynge cuppes of glasse, they had one *Bahar*. For. xvii. *Cathyls* of quicke syluer, one *Bahar*. They came dayly to the *Shyppes* with many of theyr barkes full of geates, hennes, fygges of a spanne longe, also the frute cauled *Cocus*, with dyuers other kyndes of by trayles in such quantitie that it was a maraculous thynge to beholde. They furnyshed also theyr *Shyppes* with freshe water which is hotte as it is theweth owt of the sprynge, but is very coulde when it hath stooode a while in an other place. It spryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the clove trees growe. They sawe a cloude ryle in maner dayly, which compaseth about the sayde mountaynes.

The kynge of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, sente the kynge of *Spayne* two deade byrdes of straunge forme. They were of the byggenes of turtle doues, with lyttle heades and longe

The fyve Ilandes of *Molucca*.

*Tarenate*.  
The Iland of *Silolo*.

*Moozes* & *Genryles*.

Golde.  
water in recedes.

Theyr maner of bartering.

water of a straunge qualitie.

Byrdes of a straunge forme.

bylles:

## The vyage rounde

bylles: also longe and smaule legges and no wynges, but in the strade therof certeyne longe feathers of diuers colours, and rayles lyke turtle dooues. All the other feathers are of one colour much lyke unto raven, except those of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. These Moores are of opinion that these byzdes coome frome the heauenlye Paradyse, and therfoze caule them *Manuccodiata*, that is the byzdes of god.

When they were determyned to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynge of the Ilandes accompanied the with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande cauled *Mare* where they refreshed theyr wyppes with fre the water and fuel. The kynge sent the myprouis maistric matly presentes: and embzalsynge e wore menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And e wore men for theyr last farewell, thotte of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of theyr wyppes leached and toke water very soze: wherby they were inforced to tary there thre dayes. But seinge that they coude fynde no remedie for the same but in longe tyme, they determined to leaue it: by wynges order that if afterwarde it coude bee repayed, they shuld re turne into Spayne as well as they coude.

They leaue  
one of theyr  
wyppes be-  
hynd them.

The Ilandes  
of Molucca.

Bony of Ayas.

Poppinglayes.

The Iland of  
Tidore.

Ternate,  
Mutir.

Machian.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloves, ginger, bycade of the roote of *Sagu*, ryle, goates, weepe, hennes, sygges, almondes, sweete pomegranates and sowre, oranges, lemondes, and hony which is made of certeyne flies like then antes: Also canes of suger, oyle of *Locus*, mellons, gourdes, and a marvellous sculde frute which they name *Cas mulicai* and dyuers other frutes. Furthermoze whyte and redde poppinglayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paste litle yeares sence the moores byrte inhabited anye of these Ilands, which were befoze inhabited only with getyles.

The Ilande of *Tidore*, is about the Equinoctiall line toward the pole, about 27. minutes: And in longitude frō the place from whence they departed, 171. degrees. And from the *Archipelagus* in the which is the Iland of *Zamal* which our men named the Iland of theeues, 17. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of south south west, and north north east. *Ternate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall line foure minutes vnder the pole Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line, *Machian* is, 36. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and

And *Bacchan* one degree. These Ilandes are lyke foure sharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not sharpe. The byggest of all these, is *Bacchan*.

Departynge from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng the course towarde the south west, with onely .xlvi. men in theyr shyppe and .xiii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of *Chacouan*, *Agoma*, *Sico*, *Bioghi*, *Laphi*, *Sulacho*, *Lumarola*, *Tenerum*, *Buru*, *Ambou*, *Budia*, *Celaturi*, *Benaia*, *Ambalao*, *Bandan*, *Zorobua*, *Zolot*, *Rocenamor*, *Galian*, and *Mallua*, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and smalle, of *Moores*, *Gentyles*, and *Canibales*. Diuere men remayned .xv. dayes in the Ilande of *Mallua* to repayze theyr shyppe in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the fieldes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is situate toward the pole Antarricke vnder the Equinoctiall line, .viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of .169. degrees and 40. minures.

*Bacchan*

many Ilands

The Iland of *Mallua*.  
Pepper.

The pilote which diuere men brought owt of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, toulde them that not farre from thense, was an Iland named *Arucetio* in the which are men and women not pass a cubite in height, hauninge eares of such byggenesse that they lye vpon one and couer them with the other. But diuere men wolde not sayle thither, bothe bycause the wynde and course of the sea was ageynste theym, and also for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

Lyttle men  
with longe  
eares.

The .xxv. day of January in the yere .1522. they departed from *Mallua*, and the day folowynge, arriued at a greate Iland named *Timor*, beinge fife leagues distant from *Mallua* betwene the south and south west. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte sanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Also sundry kyndes of beastes, and plentie of byrtayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giua*, *Molucca*, and *Loxon*, resort to this Ilande for sanders. The inhabitants are gentyles. They say that when they go to cut the woodde of sanders, the deuyl appeareth to them in dyuers formes and asketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this vision, many of them are longe sicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the disease of saynt Job (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) moze then in any other place in the worlde.

The Iland of  
*Timor*.

whyte sanders and ginger.

The deuyl  
appeareth.

Saynt Job  
his disease.

## The vyage rounde

Farre from this Ilande betwene the west and north west they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe great plentie of *Sinamome*. In this tracte are founde many Ilandes lying in order as if were one directly behynde, an other, even unto the Ilande of the greater *Ciaua*, named *Ciaua maior*, and unto the cape of *Malaccha*, beinge in East India. *Ciaua* the lesse, is as hygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a league distant from *Ciaua maior*. Here they were informed that about *Ciaua maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *ebina*, in the which are trees of exceeding byggensite, inhabited with foules of such greatenes that they carry great beastes in the ayer. The frutes of these trees are as hygge as cucummers.

*Cinamome*

The Ilandes  
of *Ciaua*,  
*Malaccha*.

The greate  
goulfe of  
*China*.

The cape of  
*Malaccha*.

The names  
of many regi-  
ons.

*Reubarbe*.

The greate  
kynge of *Chi-  
na*.

The greater  
*India*.

The cape of *Malaccha* is one degree and a halfe about the Equinoctiall line toward the pole Arctike. On the East side of this cape, runneth a very longe coaste in the which are many regions and cities wherof sum are cauled by these names, *Cingiporla* which is the cape. Also *Paban*, *Calantan*, *Pakani*, *Bradlin*, *Bencu*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the cite in the which dwel- leth the kynge of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. Theyr cities are builded as towres are, and subiecte to the kynge of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Lingoma* & *Campsa* wher *Reubarbe* groweth, of the which are dyuers opinions, some supposynge it to bee a roote, and other a putrifed tree, affirm- yng that yf it were not putrified, it shulde not haue so great a sauour. They caule it *Calama*. Next unto this, is found the great *China*, whose kynge is thought to bee the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kynge and these regions, theyr learned by thinformacion of a *Moore* that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the sayde kynge hath threescore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hath a port in the sea named *Canthan*; And two principal cities nam- ed *Naubin* and *Commulaba* where he remaineth hym selfe, and hath ever foure of his chiefe princes lying about his pallace on euery syde, toward the East, Weste, Northe, and South giuinge dyligence attendaunce what is doone in euery of theyr quarters. All the prynces of the greater India (cau- led *India Maior*,) and of that wherof I haue spoken befoze, are obedient to this kynge. And in token that they are trewe subiectes

Subiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the middest of theyr cities, the beaste cauled *Linx*, being sayer then a lyon, And is the great kynges signette, whiche all suche as intende to go to *China*, beare with them sealed in waxe or on a piece of Iuerye for theyr safe conducte, without the which they may not enter into the haven.

When any of his kyngs rebell or are disobedient, he causeth them to bee slaine, and salted and dyled at the soonne: Then to bee stuffed with chaffe, and sette vppon sum hygh thyng in the myddest of the chiefe Arcade of the citie where all the people may see it. He neuer suffereth his owne person to bee openly seene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are desyrous to see hym, he commeth downe frome hys pallaice into a ryche pauplyon accompanied with syxe of hys principall concubynes appareyled with lyke vestures as is he hym selfe. All thys way he is not seene by reason of the pauplyon. When he hath passed through the pauplyon, he entereth into a serpent named *Nagba*, being the most marueylous and ryche woork of the worlde, and placed in the greatest courte of the pallaice. When the kyng entereth in to this with the womē, to thintent that he may not be knowē among them, he causeth the sayd noble men only to looke in at a glasse which is in the breste of the serpente, where they see the kyng amonge the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioynech in marriage with hys syster that the blud royall bee not myrre with any other. His pallaice is emirowned with seuen large walles, the one being farre dystant frō the other: And hath in euery such circuite tenne thousande men for the garrison of hys pallaice, who haue theyr waytinge dayes appoynted them course by course with freshe me in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are .lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that serue the kyng hauyng euer lyght tozches in theyr handes for the greater magnyficence. He that wolde see all the pallaice, shoulde spend a hole day therein. Amonge other, there are foure principal haules where sumtymes the kynge gyueth audience to hys noble men. Of these, one is couered both about and beneath with metall, an other all ouer with syluer, the thyrde with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious stones.

These

The beaste  
cauled *linx*.

The punishement of rebellles.

The kyng is not seene but at a glasse.

A thyng of strange woorkmanshyypp.

The kyng marryeth his syster.  
his pallaice.

A marueylous garde.

women serue the kyng.

Foure marueylous haules

## The vyage rounde

The people  
of China.

The Crosse.

The greate  
kyng of mien  
CATHAY.

The sea of  
Lanchidol.

Malacca.

The Island of  
Sumetra.

Pegu.

Bengala.

Calicut.

Canonor.

Goa.

Cambala.

Ormuz.

East India.

Cap. de Buona  
Speranza.

The port of  
Mozambique.

These people of *China* are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the crosse in sum estimation, but knowe not the cause whye.

Beyonde the coaste of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people as *Chenchii* where pearles and cynamon are founde. Also the people named *Lichii*, where reyneth the great kyng of *Chien*, haung vnder hym .xxii. kynges, and is subiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is also founde the great cite of *CATHAY* in the East, and dyuers other nations in the sayd firme land, of the which sum are byrysthe and bestiall which vse to kyl and eate theyr parentes when they are owld, thinking thereby that they shall reuue in them. All these people are gentles.

The .xi. day of February in the yeare .1522. they departed from the Island of *Timor* and were ingulged by chance in the great sea cauled *Lanchidol*, and tooke theyr course betwene the weste and south weste, leaunge the northe coastes on theyr ryght hand, fearyng least if they shuld sayle toward the firme land, they myght bee scene of the portugales who are of great power in *Malacca*: and therfore dyrected theyr course withoute the Island of *Sumatra* cauled in owld tyme *Taprobana*: Leaung also on theyr ryght hand vpon the firm land, the prouinces and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calicut*, *Canonor*, *Goa*, *Cambala*, the goulfe of the Islande of *Ormuz*, and all the coastes of the greater *India*. And more safely to passe the cape of *Buona Speranza* beinge aboute *Astrike*, they sayled about .xlii. degrees toward the pole *Arctike*, and remayned seuen weekes aboute that cape with many fetches compassyng the wynd with theyr sayles continually alofte, because they had a west and north weste wynd in the proos of theyr shyppe which wolde not suffer them to passe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole *Arctike* beneth the *Equinoctiall* line .xxxiiii. degrees and a halfe: and .1600. leaques from the cape of *Malacca*: And is the greatestte and moste daungyerous cape that is founde at thys day in all the worlde.

When they had by these perels ouerpassed thys cape, certeyne of them as well for lacke of byracles as also by reason of sykenesse, were mynded to sayle to a haue of the *Portugales* named *Mozambique* aboute *Astrike*. But the other answered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to *Spayne*. They folowed theyr course therfore saylunge

saylinge towarde the Southweſt two monethes continually without touchyng at any port: In whiche tyme there dyed abowte .xxi. of theyr company, whom they caſt into the ſea. And ſurely if god of his infinite mercie had not preſerued the reſidue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famine.

In ſine, beinge informed of neceſſitie, and halfe of theyr company deade, they ſayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo Verde* cauled *Infula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, ſaynte James Ilande, pertaininge to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as loone as they arriued, they ſent certeyne alande in the ſhippe boate for byt rayles, declaringe to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what neceſſitie they were dyuen to and what miſeries and trauayles they had ſuſtyned, informinge them further of theyr marueylous viage and ſuche thynges as they hadde ſcene in both the Eaſt and Weſt India, with ſuch other gentle woordes wherby they obteyned certeyne meaſures of riſe. But when afterwarde. xiii. of theym returned for moze ryſe, they were deteyned: Whereuppon the reſte whiche remayned in the ſhippe, fearyng the lyke chaunce, departed with full ſayles, and the .vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the haven of *San Lucas* nere vnto *Siuile*, where diſcharginge all theyr ordinaunce for ioy, they wente in merryly to the greate churche in theyr ſherthes and barefooted with a torche before them to gyue thankes to almpghyie god who had brought them ſafe to theyr owne countrey, and reſtozed them to theyr wyues and chyldren.

As touchyng theſe of this viage, *Transiluanus* wyreth ſun: what moze largely as ſoleweth.

The other ſhippe which they lefte behynde them to bee repayred, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforeſayde and by the great ſea to the coaſtes of the firme of the weſt India, and arriued at a region of the ſame beinge ageynſt *Dariens*, where the South ſea of *Sur* is ſeperate but by a lyttle ſpace of lande from the Weſte Ocean in the which are the Ilandes of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other ſhippe which returned into Spayne by compaſing about the hole bowle of the worlde by the coaſtes of Eaſt India and Affrike, departinge from the Iland of *Tidore*, and ſaylinge euer on this ſyde the Equinoctiall, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboute *Asia*, and (by the deſcription

*Famen,*

*Capo Verde,*  
*S. James*  
*Ilande.*

The ingratitude of the Portugales.

The port of *ſaynt Lucas* nere vnto *Siuile.*

what became of the other ſhippe, *Dariens*

The cape of *Cattigara,*

of

## The vyage rounde

**Ptolome.**

**The vyage  
hardly per-  
formed.**

**They bye  
slaves for  
lacke of helpe**

**wariners  
woorthy im-  
mortal fame.  
Argonauti.  
The viage of  
Jason to wyn  
the golden  
fleese.**

**The shyppe  
more woorthy  
fame then  
owld Argo  
of Grecia.  
The vyage**

of Ptolome) rechynge many degrees beyonde the Equinoctial. But hauynge sayled many dayes by the marne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thence to the *Ilandes* of *Capo verde*, where their shyppe beinge sooze brooled by reason of the longe biage, leaked and tooke water, in suche sorte that the mariners beinge nowe but fewe in number, and those also weake and feeble by reason of longe sickenesse and hunger, were not able both to dzye the pooimpe continually and otherwyle gouerne the shyppe: and were therfore of necessite inforced to goo alande at the *Ilande* of *Sainte James* to bye them certeyne slaves to helpe them. But beinge destitute of money, according to the custome of the mariners, they profered them cloues for theyr slaves. The which thynge when it came to the eares of the *Portugale* that was Capitayne of that *Ilande*, he cast. xlii. of them in prison. Wherby the residue that remainned in the shyppe (beinge nowe but. xliii. in number) were put in such feare that they departed immediately without rescuing theyr felowes, and sayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coastes of *Affrike*, and came in fine to *Spayne* the. vi. day of *September* in the yeare, 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto *Stulle* the. xvi. moneth after they departed from the *Ilande* of *Tidore*. Mariners doubtlesse more woorthy to bee celebrazed with eternal memozie then they whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that sayled with *Jason* to win the golden fleese in the region of *Cholebis* and the riuer of *Phasis* in the great sea of *Pontus*. And the shyppe it selfe, more woorthye to bee placed amonge the starres then that owlde *Argo* which departynge out of *Grecia*, sayled to the ende of that great sea. For this owre marueylous shyppe, takynge her byage from the straightes of *Sibilterra* and saylynge by the great *Ocean* towarde the South and pole *Antarctike*, and turnynge from thence to the Weste, folowed that course so farre that passynge vnder the great circumference of the worlde, shee came into the *East*, and frome thence ageyne into the *Weste*, not by returnynge backe warde, but still saylynge forwarde, so compasyng abowt the hault of the worlde vnder the hole circumference of heauen vntill shee were miraculously resozed to her natue region of *Spayne* and house of *Stulle*.

Of the prices of precious stones and Spices, wch they  
 weightes and measures as they are accustomed to bee  
 soulede bothe of the Moores and the gentyles:  
 And of the places where they growe.



As much as in dyuers places of this historie,  
 mentlon is made of precious stones, I haue  
 thought good to declare sumewhat aswell of  
 theyr prices as of the places of theyr generattion,  
 that wee may not utterly bee ignorant of  
 the thinges which we so greatly esteeme and  
 bye so deare.

Of the Rubie.

The Rubies growe in India: and are founde for the most  
 parte in a ryuer named Pegu. These are of the best kind  
 and finest, whiche they of the lande of Malabar caule  
 Runpelo, and are well soulede if they bee fayre and cleane  
 without sportes. The Indians to know theyr finenesse, put  
 them vppon theyr toonges, coumpynge that to bee best that  
 is couldest and most harde. And to see theyr finenesse, they  
 take them by with a piece of ware by the sharpest point: and  
 lookynge ageynst the lyght, espie in theim euery smaule spot  
 or flake. They are also founde in certeyne diepe fosses or pit  
 res which are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the said  
 ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrey of  
 Pegu. Yet can they not square and polyshe them. But for  
 this purpose sende them to dyuers other contreys, and espec  
 ally to Malacate, Malinga, Calicut, and the region of Ma  
 labar, where are many cunnynge Lapidaries.

And to gyue you intelligence of the value of these stones,  
 ye shall vnderstande that this woorde Fanan, signifieth a  
 weyght sumwhat moze then two of owre carattes: And .xi.  
 Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And .vi. Mitigales  
 and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is also a kynde of  
 money which is in value, one ryale of syluer. And therefore  
 after this accompte I say that

Eyght fine rubies of the weyght of one Fanan (which are in  
 all, aboue two carattes) are in value. Fanan x.  
 Foure Rubies that wey one fanan, are worth Fanan xx.  
 Two that wey one fanan Fanan xl.

One caratte  
 is .iiii. graines

which is  
 one crown  
 of golde

R R n, 1,

Due

The prices of

One that weyth thre quarters of one fanan	Fanan xxx.
One that weyth one fanan	Fanan l.
One that weyth one fanan and a quarter.	Fanan lxx.
One that weyth one fanan and a halfe	Fanan C.
One that weyth one fanan and thre quarters	Fanan C l.
One that weyth two fanans.	Fanan CC.
One that weyth two fanans and a quarter.	Fanan CC l.
One that weyth two fanans and a halfe	Fanan. ccc.
One that weyth two fanans and thre quarters.	Fanan ccc l.
Of thre fanans	Fanan cccc.
Of thre and a quarter	Fanan D.
Of thre and a halfe	Fanan D l.
Of thre and thre quarters.	Fanan. Dc.
Of thre and thre quarters and a halfe	Fanan Dcxxx.
Of foure fanans	Fanan Dccl.
Of foure and a quarter	Fanan Dcc.
Of foure and a halfe	Fanan Dcccc.
Of fyve fanans	Fanan M.
Of fyve and a halfe	Fanan Mcc.
Of fyve fanans, which are about xii. carattes.	Fanan. M D.

which make .150. crownes of golde.

And these are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But suche as are not perfecte, and have any spottes in them, or are not of good colour, are of lesse price accordyng to the arbitrement and estimation of the buyer.

**C** Of the Rubies which growe in the  
Ilande of Zeilam.

**I**n the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the seconde India, are founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Manicus*, the greatest parte wherof do not arrive to the perfection of the other aforesayde in colour, because they are redde as though they were washed, and of a fleshy colour. yet are they very coude and harde. The perfecteste of theym are greatly esteemed amonge the people of the Ilande, and reserved only for the kynge hym selfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When his jewellers fynde any bygge piece of this rocke of the best kynde, they put it in fyre for the space of certeyne houres. Which if it cometh out of the fyre uncorrupte, it becommeth of the colour of a burnyng cole, and was therfore cauled of the Greekes, *Anthrax*, which signifieth a burnyng cole. The same

Came that the Greekes caule Anthrax, the Latines caule *carbunculus*. These they greatly esteeme. When the kyng of Sina singa can get any of theym, he causeth a fine hole to bee boored in the vndermost part of them to the myddest: And suffereth none of the to passe out of his realme: especially if they haue byn tryed by the sayde profe. These are of greater value then the other of Segu, if they bee in theyr naturall perfection and cleauesse.

Of these, one that weith a carratte (whiche is halfe a fanan) is woorth in Calcutt	Fanan xxx.
Of two carattes	Fanan lxx.
Of thre carattes.	Fanan c l.
Of thre carattes and a halfe	Fanan cc.
Of foure carattes	Fanan ccc.
Of foure carattes and a halfe	Fanan ccc l.
Of fyue carattes	Fanan cccc.
Of fyue carattes and a halfe	Fanan cccc l.
Of syxe carattes	Fanan Dxxx.
Of syxe carattes and a halfe	Fanan Dlx.
Of seuen carattes	Fanan Dcxxx.
Of seuen carattes and a halfe	Fanan Dclx.
One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne wel proued in the fier, is woorth	Fanan Dccc.
Of. viii. carattes and a halfe	Fanan Dcccc.
One such of tenne carattes	Fanan M ccc.
One of. x. carattes and a halfe	Fanan M lxx.
Of. xii. carattes	Fanan M ccc.
Of. xiiii. carattes	Fanan M ccc.
Of. xvi. carattes	Fanan 6000.

{ which are  
iii. crows  
of golde

Of the kynde of Rubies,  
cauled Spinelle.

There is also founde an other kynde of Rubies which we caule Spinelle and the Indians, Caropus. They growe in the selfe same countrey of Segu where as are the fine Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper crust or skine of the earth. These are not so fine nor of so good colour as are the true Rubies: But haue somewhat the colour of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. yet of these

R R n, ii,      suche

The prices of

Suche as are perfecte in theyr colour, are of value halfe less then crosse Rubies.

Of the Rubies cauled Balassi.

**B**alassi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so harde. Theyr colour is sumtyme lyk a rose, and sume are in manner whyte. They growe in Balassia, whiche is a region within the firme lande about Pegu and Bengala: And are brought from thence by marchauntes of the Moores to Calcut where they are brought and polished: And are sold of the same price that are Spinelle.

Of the Diamundes of the olde myne.

**T**hese Diamundes are founde in the kyngdome of the Moores named Decan, from whence they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other Diamundes whiche are not so good, but sumer what whyte, and are cauled Diamundes of the newe myne which is in the kyngdome of Harlinga. They of the olde myne, are not polished in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyse in India, other false Diamundes of Rubies, Topases, and whyte Saphires, whiche appere to be fine: and are also founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. These stones differ in none other, saveinge that they haue losse their naturall colour. Of these, summe are founde that haue halfe the colour of Rubies, and other of Saphires: other also of the colour of a Topase. Other haue all these colours mingled together. They boze a fine hole in these throughe the myddest, whereby they appere lyke the eyes of a catte. Of the whyttest, they make many smaule diamundes whiche can not be knowne from the crosse, saveinge by touchinge of such as are skilfull in that practise. They are sold by a poyle of weight which they caule Mangiat, which wapereth two Carres, and two thyrdes, which amount to two thyrdes of thirde partes of one caratte. For foure Carres, wey one fanan whiche is about two carattes.

Two Diamundes that wey one mangiat (which is two thirde partes of a caratte) are in value.

which are thre crownes of golde.

Byre

li. Diamundes that wey one mangiar	Fanan	cl.
Fourc that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lx.
Two that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lxx.
One that wey one mangiar	Fanan	lxxv.
One of one mangiar and a quarter	Fanan	clv.
One of one mangiar and a halfe	Fanan	clxx.
Of one mangiar and thre quarters	Fanan	clxxv.
Of two mangiars	Fanan	ccxx.
Of two mangiars and a quarter	Fanan	ccclv.
Of two mangiars and a halfe	Fanan	ccclxx.
Of two mangiars and thre quarters ful perfect	Fanan	420
Of thre mangiars of lyke perfection	Fanan	cccl.
Of thre mangiars and a halfe	Fanan	ccclxx.
Of fourc mangiars	Fanan	cl.
Of fyve mangiars	Fanan	Dcl.
Of fyve mangiars	Fanan	Dccc.
Of seven mangiars.	Fanan	Dcc.
Of eyghe mangiars.	Fanan	Dcccc.

And thus they proccade, increaspnge the pryce as they increase in weight.

**C** Of Saphires.

**I**n the Ilande of Zeilam are founde the beste and moste trewe Saphires, beinge very harde and fine, and of the coloure of azure. They are of pryce as foloweth.

One that wey one caratte is of value	Fanan	lxx.
which are abowe two marcells of sylver,		
One of the weight of two carattes	Fanan	lv.
Of thre carattes	Fanan	lxx.
Of fourc carattes	Fanan	lxxv.
Of fyve carattes	Fanan	cl.
Of fyve carattes	Fanan	clv.
Of seven carattes	Fanan	lxxv.
Of eyghe carattes	Fanan	cl.
Of nyne carattes	Fanan	lxx.
Of tenne carattes	Fanan	lxxv.
Of xi. carattes	Fanan	lxxv.
Of xii. carattes	Fanan	lxxv.
Of xiii. carattes in all perfection of coloure	Fanan	lxxv.
Of xiiii. carattes.	Fanan	cl.

A marcell, is a sylver come of Venice, of xi. vnces. iii. d. with fine, wherof ten make an ync

Of

The pryces of

Of. xii. carattes

Of. xvi. carattes

Of. xiiii. carattes

One that weigheth a mitigal, which is, xi. fanans and a quarter  
thatis above xiiii. carattes

Lyke wyse in the Ilande of Zeilan, is founde an other sorte  
of Saphires which they caule *Quinigelinam*. These are not so  
stronge, of darker colour and of much lesse value then are the  
other of the best kynde, wherof one is woorth. xiiii. of these of  
equall poise.

Also in the kyngedome of *Harlinga*, in  
a mountayne aboue *Bacano* and *Mangaloz*, is founde an o-  
ther sorte of Saphires more tender and of woorse colour, whic-  
che they caule *Sunganolam*. These are sumtohat whyre and  
of smaule value: So that the most perfect of this kynde, wey-  
inge. xx. carattes, is not woorth one ducate. Theyr colour is  
inclinyng sumtohat to yelowe. There is lyke wyse founde an  
other kynde of Saphires vppon the sea coastes of the kyng-  
dome of *Calicut*, in a place named *Capucar*. These the *Indi-*  
*ans* caule *Carahatomilam*. They are of a darke gloure colour not  
shynyng but in the cleare ayer. They are also tender and brie-  
kle, and of smaule estimation amonge the *Indians*. They  
seeme on the one syde lyke glasse.

Of Topalies.

**T**he natural Topalies, growe in the Ilande of Zeilan,  
and are named of the *Indians* *Purceragay*. It is a harde  
and fine stone: and of equall estimation with the *Ru-*  
*bie* and the *Saphire*, bycause all these three are of one kynde.  
The perfectest colour of this, is yelowe lyke vnto fine beate-  
n golde. And if it bee perfect and cleane, whether it bee greater  
or lesse, it is woorth in *Calicut* as much fine gold as it wey-  
eth. But if it bee not perfect, it is woorth the weight of gold  
the fanan, which is lesse by the halfe. And if it bee in maner  
whyre, it is woorth much lesse. And of these, are smaule dis-  
amundes counterfecte.

Of Turquestes.

**T**urquestes are founde in *Ser* a place of *Siech* *Ismael*.  
Theyr mine is a dype earth that is founde vpon a black  
song

Stone, which the Moores take of in smaule pieces, and carpe them to the Island of Dimus, from whence they are brought to dyuers partes of the worlde by sea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Perose*. They are soft stones, of smaule weight and not much coude. And to knowe that they are good and true, in the day they shall appere of the verpe colour of the Turquelle: and in the nyght by the lyght, they shall appere greene. They that are not so perfect, doo not so change their colour to the light. If these stones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneath in the bottome, a blacke stone, vpon the which they growe. And if any lytle bayne ryle vpon the layde stone, it shall be the better. And to knowe more certainly that they are true Turquelles, they put on the toppes of them a lytle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oynment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of valne as foloweth.

One that weigh one caratte, is worth in Malabar. Fanan. xv.

One of two carattes Fanan. xxx.

Of foure carattes Fanan. lxx.

Of vi. carattes Fanan. cxx.

Of viii. carattes Fanan. cccc.

Of x. carattes Fanan. cccc.

Of xii. carattes Fanan. cccc.

Of xiiii. carattes Fanan. cccc.

Of greater then these they make none accompte bycause they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. These of the byggest sorte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Suzerath.

**C** Of Iacintes.

**I**acintes growe in the Islande of Zeilam. They are tender stones and yelow. They are best that are of deepe colour. The greatest part of these, haue in them certeine pimples or barbutis, whiche diminish the fayrnesse. And they that are in thyr perfection cleafe from this deformitie, are neuertheless of smaule valne: For in Calicut where they are pollyshed, they that bey enorahan are woorth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of, xvii. fanans, are not worth vii. fanans.

There

The pryces of

There are also founde other stones lyke unto catteres eyes, as Chrysolites, and Amethystes, whiche they doo not muche esteeme because they are of smaule value, as also the stones cauled *Gisgonze*.

**C Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes,**

**S**maragdes growe in the countrey of Babilon, where the Indians caule the sea *Diegu*. They grow also in other partes of India. They are stones of fayre Greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of these stones, many are counterfeit. But looking on them curiously towards the lyght, the counterfeites shewe certeyne hurbuls, as dooth glasse. But in the trewe, there is no such seene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour shynynge lyke the beames of the soonne. And beinge rubbed vppon the touche stone, they leaue the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of this sorte is the best and most trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as much as a diamunde and sumwhat moze: And this not by weyght, but by greatene, because the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. There is lykelyse founde another kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are Greene stones, but not so much esteemed. Nevertheless, the Indians reserue these to set them forth with other precious stones. They leaue not any Greene coloure vppon the souche.

**C Of dyuers kyndes of Spices, where they grow, what they are woorth in Calicut, and whither they are carryed from thence.**

**C Of pepper,**



Pepper in all the kyngedome of Malabar and Calicut pepper groweth: and is sold in Calicut by every *CC*. Bahars, fine, for *CCXX* fanans, every fanan (as I haue sayde) beinge in value, one ryal of place of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of syluer

In Venice, Bahar, weith foure cantares of the owld weighe of Portugale, by the whiche they sell all spices in Lisbona. Cantar, is in Venecce. L. xii. pounce weyght of the grosse pounce (beinge .xxviii. unces) and of the subyle pounce. L. lxxviii. So that the sayde. 712. poundes of Venecce subyle, wyl cost abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two <sup>Marchetti</sup> (whiche make one peny) the pounce. They pay also to the kyng of Calicut for custome. xii. fanans every Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accustomed to bypunge them to Cambaia, Persia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thence to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of. 6562. Marchedies the Bahar, which are. 193. fanans. Marchedies are Spanyshe copnes wherof. vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly because there arriuech no more so greate diuersitie of marchautes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the sayde kyng of Portugale made with those kynges, and the Moores, and marchautes of the countrey of Malabar.

Much pepper groweth by the waye in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is fayer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not so good and stronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and summe parte to Mecha, puiilie and by selth, butwares to the Portugales which wolde noc otherwise suffer them to passe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iiii. C. vnto. vii. C. maraudis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weighe. And frome the newe to the owld weighe in Portugale, the difference is, thoo unces in the pounce weighe. For the owld pounce consisteth of. xiiii. unces: and the newe pounce of. xvi. unces.

### Of Cloues.

Cloves growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whence they are brought to Malacha, and then to Calicut and the countrey of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut every bahar (which is. 712. poundes of the subyle pound of Venecce) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowre syfte frenche crownes, which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti) the pounce weighe. And beinge cleane from stalkes & harkes are in value 700. fanans. To cary them frome thence into

## The prices of

other regions, they paye for paspozte. xviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malacca from. x. to. xiiii. ducades as fordyngs to the rate and custome of the marchauntes,

### Of Cinamome.

**C**inamome of the best sort, groweth in the Ilande of Zeilam: and in the countrey of Malabar, groweth the woorst. That of the beste kynde, is of smaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choise and freshe, it is woorth CCC. fanans the bahar, whiche are abouze five marchetti the ponde.

### Of Ginger cauled Beledi.

**G**inger Beledi, groweth on euery syde abouze Calicut from syxe to nine myles: And is woorth the bahar. xl. fanans, and sumeymes fiftie, whiche is lesse then one marchetto the ponde.

They byngge it from the mountaynes and owt of the contrey to the cite, where they sell it by reuayle to the Indian marchauntes, who gather it together in great quantite and kepe it to such tyme as the Moozes shippes arriue there, to whom they sell it, by the price of. xc. fanans, to. Lx. whiche is lesse then two marchetti the pound, because the weight is greater.

### Of Ginger Mechino.

**G**inger Mechino groweth, begynnynge from the mountayne of Deli, vnto Cananoz. It is smaule, and not so whyte nor so good as the other. It is woorth the bahar in Cananoz, abouze. lx. fanans whiche is abouze one marchetto the ponde. They pay for the bahar syxe fanans in money for the custome. It is sould vnclensed or vnpuerged.

### Of greene Ginger in conserues.

**I**n Bengala is founde greare plentie of Ginger Beledi, of the whiche they make muche Ginger in conserues with suger, and carie it in stone pots from Martabani to bee sould in the countrey of Malabar. And is woorth the farazuela which

(which is. xxii. poundes and syre unces) after the rate of. xiiii  
 lb. oz. xvi. fanans.

That that is fresh and made in conserues, is woorth in Calicut. xxv. fanans the farazuola, because suger is dere there. Greene ginger to put in consernes, is woorth in Calicut three quarters of one fanan the farazuola, which is abowte twoo poundes for one marchetto.

**C** Of the Apothecaries drugges: And of what price they are in Calicut and Malabar.

**L** Acca of Martaban, if it bee of the beste, is woorth the farazuola, which is. xxii. pounce weyght and syre unces of Portugale after. xvi. unces the pounce (whiche is abowte. xl. pounce weyght of the subtyle pounce of Venice) And is in value. xviii. fanans: whiche are. xviii. marcells of syluer. For one fanan, is in value abowte one marcell of syluer.

Acca of the contrey, is woorth the farazuola Fanan xii.  
 Borace that is good and in great pieces is woorth the farazuola. Fanan. xxx. to. xl. & la

Camphire that is grosse in cakes, is woorth the farazuola Fanan. lxx. to. lxxx.

Camphire to sannoynr Idoles, \* \* \*  
 Camphire for theyr chyl dren to eate, is woorth the myr-  
 rigal. Fanan iii.

Aguila is woorth the farazuola Fanan. ccc. to. cccc.

Lignum aloe, blacke, heauy, and fine, is woorth Fanan. lxx.

Mulke of the best is woorth the unce Fanan xxxvi.

Beniamin of the beste, is woorth the farazuola Fanan lxx.

Tamarindi being newe, are woorth the farazuola Fanan. lxxx

Calamus aromaticus, the farazuola Fanan xii.

Endego to dye silke, trewe & good, the farazuola Fanan. xxx

Girre, the farazuola. Fanan. xviii. to. xx.

Frankensence good and in graynes, is woorth the farazuola Fanan xv.

Frankensence in paste of the basest sorte, the faraz. Fanan. lxxx

Ambzacan oz amber greese that is good, is woorth the metical Fanan ii. to. iii.

Mirabolanes in cōserue of suger, the faraz. Fanan. xvi. to. xxv  
 D O ii CaTia,

The prices of

Cassia, freshe and good, the farazuola. Fanan one & a halfe  
 Redde Sanders, the farazuola Fanan. v. to. vi.  
 Whyte Sanders and citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of  
 Timor, the farazuola Fanan. xl. to. li.  
 Spikenarde, freshe and good, the faraz. Fanan xxx. to. xl.  
 Nutte megges, whiche coome frome the Ilande of Bandan  
 where the bahar is woorth from. viii. to. x. fanaus, (which  
 importe .vi. poundes weight to the marchetto) are woorth  
 in Calicut, the faraz. Fanan x. to. xii.  
 Race which is brought from the Ilande of Bandan where  
 the Bahar is woorth fiftie fanaus (which importe abowt one  
 marchetto the pounce are woorth in Calicut the farazu:  
 ola. Fanan xxv. to. xxx.  
 Turbitches, are woorth the farazuola Fanan xiii.  
 Woozme seede of the best kynde, cauled *Semenzina*, is woorth  
 the farazuola. Fanan xv.  
 Zecumba, the farazuola Fanan ii.  
 Zedoaria, the farazuola Fanan i.  
 Gumme Serapine, the farazuola Fanan xx.  
 Aloe cicotrine, the farazuola Fanan xviii.  
 Cardamome in graynes, the farazuola Fanan xx.  
 Acubarbe groweth abundantly in the countrey of Malabar:  
 And that which commeth from China by Malacha, is woorth  
 the farazuola Fanan xl. to. l.  
 Mirabolani emblic, the farazuola Fanan ii.  
 Mirabolani helirici, the farazuola Fanan one & a halfe.  
 Mirabolani citrin & chebuli, which are al of one sort. Fa. ii.  
 Mirabolani Jndi, which are of the same citrine trees Fa. iii.  
 Tutia, the farazuola Fanan xxx.  
 Cububes which growe in the Ilande of Jana or Biaua, are  
 there of smaule price, and sould by measure withowt weight.  
 Opium which is brought from the cite of Aden where it is  
 made, is woorth in Calicut the faraz. Fanan. cclxxx. to. cccxx.  
 Opium of an other sort which is made in Lambata is woorth  
 the farazuola, Fanan cc. to. ccl.

Seedes kyl  
lyc.

Of the weyghtes of Portugale and Jndia:  
And howe they agree.

**T**he pound of the owld weight, conteyneth. xiiii. unces.  
 The pound of the newe weight conteyneth. xvi. unces.  
 xiii.

liii. cantares of the owlde weyght, make. vii. of the newe.  
And euery newe cantare, is of .L. xxviii. poundes after .xvi.  
vnces to the pounce

Euery owlde cantare, conteyneth thre quarters and a halfe  
of the newe cantar: And is of .L. xxviii. poundes, after. xiiii  
vnces the pounce.

One farazuola, is. xxii. poundes of. xiiii. vnces, and. vi. vnc  
ces more, with two fifte partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. liii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale:  
All the Spices and drugges, and all suche other thynges as  
coome fro India. are sould in Portugale by the owld weichte  
and all the reste by the newe weyght.

**C** Hereby may we well consider that as we owght to reioyse  
and gyue god thanks for the abundaunce of al these thynges  
whiche he causeth the earth so plentifully to bynge forth to  
dore vte, so may we lament thabusse of men whose rourous-  
nesse causeth great dearth and scarcenesse in the myddest of a  
bundaunce: herein no lesse offending the lawe of nature then  
doo such as by wychecraft intermingle popson with thynges  
created for the health of man, or by inchauntment corrupt the  
seedes in the ground: ye rather as the vnnatural mother who  
destropereth the chyld whom she hath longe nuryshed.

#### Of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera.



Adamus wyreth, that befoze the Portuga-  
les came to this Ilande, it was ouergrowen  
with trees and inhabited. yet were there ma-  
ny beastes, and great plentie of dooues which  
were vtterly without feare of me bycause they  
had neuer seene any men befoze, nor yet were  
accustomed to bee put in feare. In so much that they stode styl  
whyle snares were put abowte theyr neckes with longe rods  
and poles. The which thyng he sayth he hath also seene in  
other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande,  
and great abundaunce of sicche, bycause the hole Ilande is  
in maner one gardeyn.

## The pryces of

### Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctiall line.



The chiefest occupacion and liuynge of this Ilande, is the makynge of sugar, which they sell yearely to the Shyppes that comme for it out of Spayne and Portugale laden with buttes of meale and flour, also wyne, oyle, cheese, lether, swoozdes, cuppes of glasse, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dyshes of the woorkes of Maiolica. And if it were not that such bytayles and prouisions were brought them out of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchauntes which dwell in that Ilande (perteynyng to the dominion of the kynge of Portugale) shulde not bee able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eat such meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therfore the Portugales which inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke slaues of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they set to yll and labour the grounde and make suger. Amonge these whyte inhabitauntes, there are many wyche men which haue .150. or .200. and sum .300. blacke slaues of men and women to yll the grounde and doo other laborious woorkes. This Ilande was discovered foure score yeares sence by the nauigations of the Portugales and was vnknewen to the olde wyriters. It lyeth in the greete goulfe of Arike in the .30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, and is in maner rounde. It is of largenesse from side to syde .17. Italia miles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, passeth by the two poles, Arrike and Antaryke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyghe without any sensible difference, whether the son bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Arrike, is there vnsyble: But the wardens are seene sumwhat to moue about: And the starres cauled the Crocke, are seene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lying betwene Portugale and the same, a certeyne pplotte of Portugale hath wyrtten a goodly byage to Conte Rimondo,

**T**he debate and stryfe betwene the Spanyardes and  
Portugales, for the diuision of the Indies and  
the trade of Spices: and also for the Ilands  
of Molucca, which sum caule Malucas.  
Wrytten in the Spanysh toonge by  
Francisco Lopez de Gomara.



Emperours maiestie was verye gladde that  
the Malucas and Ilands of the Ipicery were  
discovered: and that he myght passe vnto  
them thzough his owne countreys withowt  
any prejudice or hurte to the Portugales:  
And bycause also that Almanzor, Suzu, and  
Cozala which were the lordes of the Ipicerie,

threwed them selues to bee his frendes and became tributaries  
to hym. He also gaue certeyne gyftes and rewarde to John  
Sebastian for his greate paynes and good seruyce, forasmuch  
as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes  
of the Malucas and ocher Ilandes ryther and greater then  
they, were found to bee in his part of those countreys which  
perceyned vnto hym accorbynge to the popes bull. And here-  
by it came to passe that there was great contention and strife  
betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowre the  
Ipicerie and the diuision of the Indies by reason of the re-  
turne of John Sebastian and thinfozmation whiche he gaue  
therof. Who also affirmed that the Portugales had neuer  
any enteraunce befoze that tyme into those Ilandes. Here by  
pon, the counsaile for the Indies, aduertised the Emperoure  
to maynteyne his acrete for those partes, and to take the trade  
of spices into his owne hand, forasmuch as it was his owne  
of deuotie, as well for that those Ilandes fell on his parte, as  
also that he had nowe founde passage and waye thzough his  
west Indies into those regions. And finally to conlyder that  
he shulde thereby obteyne and gette to him selfe greate reue-  
nues besyde thinzchynge of his subiectes and realmes, and  
that wryth smaule coaste and charge. The Emperoure beinge  
thus aduertised of the truth, tooke it for good counsaile, and  
commaunded all thynge herunto appeteynyng to bee fur-  
nished accorbyngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge  
John of Portugale had knowleage what the Emperour deter-  
mynd

John Sebasti-  
an.

The cause of  
contention.

The trade of  
spice percey-  
neth to the Em-  
peroure.

John kynge of  
Portugale.

## The pryces of

mynde to doo, and the speedy hatt his counsaile made for the performance herof, and of the conynge home of John Sebastian of Cane, with thinfoimation he made, what of stoutnesse of mynde and what for greefe, was puffed up with anger as were also the reste of the Portugales, conynge as thowgh they wolde haue plucked downe the skye with their handes, not a lytle fearynge leaste they shulde lose the trade of spices, if the Spanyarde shulde once put in theyr foote. Wheruppon the kyng immediatly made supplication to the Emperoure, not to set forwarde any thynge butt it were determined to whether of theym those Ilandes shulde belonge: And that he wolde not so muche endamage hym as to cause him to liese the trade of spices which was so commodious and profitable to hym. And finally to auoyde thoccasion of murther and bludshed whiche were lyke to ensue thereof, of the Spanyarde and Portugales thynge shulde meete together. The Emperoure althowgh he knewe that all this was but to make delays and prolongyng of tyme, yet was he gladde to haue it tryed by iustice for the better iustificacion of his cause and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt learned men, Cosmographers and pylots which shulde determine the controuersie betwene them: promysynge on bothe parties to abyde and stande to the sentence and determination made by those persons appoynted and swoyne to iudge indifferently.

The trade of  
Spices.

The contro-  
uersie deter-  
mined by Cos-  
mographers  
and pylots.

The reparticion and diuision of the Indies  
and newe worlde betwene the Spany-  
ardes and the Portugales.



This matter concernyng the trade of spices and the newe worlde of the Indies, by reason of the great ryches therof was of greate importauce and very difficultie to bee limited and drawen forth by lines. By reason wherof, it was necessarie and conuenient to seeke wyse & woorthyful men expert in nauigations, in Cosmographie, and the mathematicall sciences. The Emperoure for his syde, chose and named for iudges of the possession, the licentiate Acuna, one of the kynges counsaile. Also the licentiate Barri-  
eros

The arby-  
trers on the  
Empyours  
syde.

entos of the countsaile of the orders: The licentiate Pedro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chancerie in Vallado-  
 lity. For iudges of the proprietie, he chose Don Fernando  
 Colonno the soonne of Christopher Colonus: Also doctoz  
 Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryze Thomas Du-  
 ran, Simon of Alcazaua, and John Sebastian of Cano. His  
 aduocate & arrurney, he made the licentiate John Rodriguez  
 of Pila: & for his fyscal doctoz Ribera, & his secretarie, Bar-  
 thalome Ruiz of Castaneda. He also apoynted that Sebastian  
 Cabote, Sereñ Gomes, Runnio Garcia, Diego Buero, being  
 al expert pilots & cunning in making cardes for the sea, shuld  
 be present, & bynng foorth theyr globes and mappes with  
 ocher instruments necessarie to declare the situation of the  
 Ilandes of the Malucas abowt the which was al the conten-  
 tion and stryfe. But order was taken that they shulde shewe  
 theyr myndes on neyther syde, nor enter into the coompany  
 of the other but when they were cauled. Al these and diuers  
 ocher, wente togpyther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as  
 many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they  
 bywoght with them two fiscals and two aduocates. The  
 principall of theym, was the licentiate Antonie de Alencudo,  
 Diego Lopes of Squeyza the clarke of the weightes and re-  
 ceptes, who had befoze byn gouernour in India. Also Heral-  
 fonso of Melo, clerke: Simon of Taurira, with dyuers ocher  
 whose names I knowe not. Befoze they mette togpyther, the  
 one parte remaynyng at Badaioz and the other in Elbes,  
 there was much a doo amonge them befoze they coulde agree  
 vppon the place where they shalde meete and who shuld speke  
 fyrste. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe suche circum-  
 stances. At the last, they concluded to meete togpyther at Laya  
 a lytle cyuer which diuideth Castile from Portugale, stan-  
 dyng in the mydde way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And  
 when they were assembled togpyther one day at Badaioz and  
 an other daye at Elbes and saluted the one the other, bothe  
 parties were sworne that they shulde proceade and speake ac-  
 cordyng to truth, iustice, and equite. The Portugales re-  
 fused Simon de Alcazaua because he was a Portugale: and  
 fryze Thomas Duran because he had sumetyme byn preacher  
 to theyr kyng: So that Simon was by consent put owte of  
 the coompany, in whose roome was placed master Antonie of

Sebastian  
Cabote.

Instruments  
of Cosmogra-  
phie.  
The Ilandes  
of Maluca.

The arbiters  
on the Por-  
tugales syde.

The place  
where they  
mette.

The order of  
theyr proces.

The Portugales.

Contention for drawinge the line of the diuision.

Howe the Portugales were deceaued.

The Spany-ardes allegations.

Samatra, Malacha, China, Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of Cabo Verde.

Aleazar. yet fell they not to reasonyng the matter vntyll the fryer was put out. They were manye dayes in beholdyng globes, mappes, and cardes of the sea, and hearyng what myght bee sayde, both sydes allcagynge for the ryght which they pretended. But the Portugales standyng in dayne contention, sayde very angrily the Ilandes of Maluca wherupon they meetyng and reasonyng was at that present, fell of theyr parte and was of theyr conquest. And that they both had byn there, and had them in theyr possession before John Sebastian had euer scene them. Likewise that the line shulde bee drawen from the Ilande of Bonauilla, or the Iland called de la Sal, which are the most Easterly Ilandes from Cabouerde, and not from the Ilande of Santanton or saynt Antonie, which lyeth towarde the West, and are. lxxx. leaques the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend: and the other of the Malucas, is vntrewe. But they that haue a natyghtie matter must set it foorth with woordes and habelyng. Here they founde howe greatly they were deceaued in that they demaunded that the line shulde bee drawen thre hundreth. lxx. leaques more to the West from the Ilandes of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundreth accordyng to thassignement of the popes bul. The Spany-ardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonstration, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Bilolo, Zubut, and Tidore, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But aswell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, shulde belonge to the Castellians: and that those countreys fell out theyr syde and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also that Magallanes and John Sebastian were the fyrste Christian men that founde them and obteyned them for the Emperour, as the letters and presentes of Almanzor doo testifie. And although the Portugales had byn there fyrste, yet wente they thither after the donation of the pope: neyther got they any ryght or iuste tittle thereby. For although they shulde drawe the line by Buena Vista, what inconuenience shulde folowe therof, sith aswell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the Malucas must pertyne to the Castellians: yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of Cabo Verde shulde also pertyne to the Castellians, forsomuch as drawinge the line by Buena Vista, the Ilandes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the Emperours

Emperours syde. They continued in these controuersies for the space of two moonethes without anye resolution or ende made. For the Portugales prolonged and put off the matter, flying from the sentence with cauellations and could reasons to chende that they myght dissolue that assemble without any conclusion or determination: for so it stood them vppon. The Castilians which were the Judges of the proprietie, drew a line in the great globe three hundredeth and. lxx. leagues from saynt Antonies Ilande, spynge by Weste Cabo Verde accordyng to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vppon betwene the Catholike princes and the kynge of Portugale. These iudges gaue sentence vppon this matter, tauyng the contrary parte before them vpon the brydge of Tapa in the yeare. 1524. The Portugales coulde neyther disturbe or deferre the sentence, nor yet wolde they allowe it to bee iust and accordyng to ryght: Sayinge that there was not sufficient processe made that they shulde passe to the gypunge of sentence. And so departed threatenyng to sleie the Castilians as many as they shulde fynde in the Ilandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that theyr contreremen the Portugales had already taken the Shyppe cauled the Trinitie and had also taken the Castilians in Tidoze. Then also departed shoure men, takyng theiyr tozney to the courte gypunge vp to the Emperour all theyr wyrtynge and declaration what they had doone. And accordyng to this declaration must bee signified and marked all globes and mappes which good Cosmographers and masters doo make. The line also of the repartition and last diuision of the newe world of the Indies, ought to passe (lyttle more or lesse) by the poyntes of Humos and Buen Abrigo, as I haue sayde in an other place. And thus shall it appere evidently that the Ilandes of Spices, and also the greates Ilande of Zamorra, do pertyne to Castile. But the lande of Brasile pertyneth to the kynge of Portugale where the cape of saynt Augustine is, beinge. viii. degrees betwix the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynte of Humos to the poynte of Buen Abrigo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundredeth leagues. Beinge also sum way two hundredeth leagues East and West.

And hereafter these serious matters, wee wyll rehearse one mery thyng, which was this. It so chaunced that as

The Portugales cauellations.

The line of diuision.

The sentence.

The Portugales threaten death to the Castilians

The line of the last diuision.

The great Iland of Zamorra. The lande of Brasile, pertyneth to the Portugales.

A mery tale.

## Contencion for

Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyza, and other of those Portugales of this assemble, walked by the ryver syde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who stode keepynge his mothers clothes which she had washed, demaunded of theym whether they were those men that parted the world with Theemperour And as they answered, yea: he tooke vp his shert and shewed them his bare arse, sayinge: Toomme and drawe yovre line here throughe the myddest. Which sayinge was afterwarde in euery mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badajoz: yea euen amonge the commissioners them selues, of whosum were angry, and summe maruayled at the sayinge of the chyld.

### The cause and autoritie wherby they divided the Indies.

The golde myne of Guinea.

Alonso kynge of Portugale. Sold for thynges of smaul value.

Contencion for the kynge dome of Castile.

warre agens the Moores of Granada. The conquestes of the Portugales in Affrike. pope Alexander.



The Castilians and Portugales had longe debated and reasoned abowt the golde myne of Guinea which was found in the yeare of owre lord 1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonso kynge of Portugale the firste of that name. This was a matter of greate importaunce. For the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue golde by hole handfuls whiche was at that tyme when the sayde kynge of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the kingdome of Castile in the right of his wyfe Quene Joha (cauled the excellent) ageynst the Catholike princes Isabel and Don fernando whose it was in deede. But that stryfe was ended as sone as Don fernando had vanquished Don Alonso at a place cauled Temulos not farrefrom Toro, which place Don fernando chose rather to make warre ageinst the Moores of Granada, then to bye and sell with the blacke Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with the conquest of Affrike from the streightes forward: whiche began whete the infante of Portugale. Don Henrique (sonne to kynge John the Bastarde and master of Auis) dyd bebyrne to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the, vi. (bringe a valentian bozne) had knowleage hereof, he mynded to gyue the Indies to the kinges of Castile withowt any preuidice to the Portugales who had conquered the sea coastes of Affrike.

These

These Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withoute the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they shulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryste: And commaunded a line or meridian to bee drawen North and South from one hundredeth leagues Westwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weste, bycause the Spanyardes shulde not meddle in Affryke parteynyng to the conquest of the Portugales, to thauoydyng of all stryfe betwene them. Kyng John of Portugale, the seconde of that name, was greatly offended when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, althoughe his owne ambassadours had made the selfe same request vnto his holynesse. He also found hym selfe agreed with the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando, that they had shortened the course of the landes he had discovered, depriuyng hym of the rychesse which belonged to hym. And therefore refused to stande to the popes bull in this case: desyryng the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando to graunt him three hundredeth leagues more to the Weste, besyde the one hundredeth which they had graunted before: and therewith sent his shippes to kepe the coastes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to satisfie his mynde and to please hym accordyng to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene theym: And in fine, with the consent and agreement of the pope, graunted thood hundredeth, lxx. leagues more then the bull made mention of: At Tordeyllas the. vii. day of June, in the yeare of our lord 1494. And whereas our kynges thought that they shulde haue lost grounde in grauntyng so many leagues that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kyng of Portugale also, herein deceaued him selfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in trust, hauyng no certeyne knowlege of the situation of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaundyng that which the kyng dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requeste the three hundredeth and. lxx. leagues rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the West. And yet for all that, I doubte whether the Malucas shulde haue faulen within his conquest accordyng to the ordinatye accompte and dimension which the pylotes and Cosmographers doo make. And after this maner they

The pope  
maketh the  
division.

The kyng of  
Portugale res  
fuseth to  
stand to the  
popes bull.

The agree  
ment of the  
last division.

wherin the  
Portugales  
were decea  
ued.

divided

## Contencion for

Disubd the Indies betwene them by thantozittie of the pope  
for the auoydng of further streffe and contention.

Howe and by what occasion Themperour layde  
the Ilandes of the Malucas to pledge to the  
kyng of Portugale.



When the kyng of Portugale Don Iuan the  
thyrde of that name, had knowleage that the  
Cosmographers and pylotes of Castile hadde  
drawen the line from the place befoze named,  
and that he could not denye the truth, fearing  
also therby to lise the trade of Spices, made  
sure and request to Themperour that he shulde not send furth  
Loaisa nor Sebastian Cabore to the Malucas, and that the  
Castilians shulde not attempte the trade of spices nor seee such  
euyls and miseries as his capitaynes had shewed in those I-  
landes to them that aduentured that viage with Magalanes.  
Which thynge he greatly couered, although he payde all the  
charges of those two scerres, and made other great bargens.  
In the meane tyme, Thempetoure maryed the Lady Isabell  
syster to kyng John: and kyng John maryed the lady Ca-  
tharine syster to Themperour: whereby this matter wared  
coulede although the kyng ceased not to speake hereof, cuer  
mouynge the partition. Themperour by the meanes of a cer-  
taine Biscaigne that was with Magallanes in the gouernours  
shyppe, had knowleage what the Portugales had doone to  
the Castilians in the Iland of Tidoze, wherof he tooke great  
displeasure, and brought the sayde maryner face to face be-  
foze thambassadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he  
sayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and gouernour  
of India when the Portugales tooke the Castilians in Tidoze  
and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and such  
other thynge as they had in the shyppe named the Trinitie.  
But as the kyng of Portugales trade was greate, and diore  
necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Themperour (who was  
nowe goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1529)  
gagied the Malucas and the spicerie to the kyng of Portu-  
gale

Sebastian  
Cabore.

Themperour  
and the kyng  
of portugale  
soyned & ali-  
ance by ma-  
riage.

The portu-  
gales robbe  
the Castilians

The corona-  
tion of Them-  
perour.

gale for three hundred and fiftie thousande ducades with-  
 out any tyme determined otherwyse then the conuention  
 was defined vpon the brydge of the ryuer of Taya : for the  
 which charge, kynge John punished the licentiate Azevedo  
 because he payde the money witholdt declaration of the time.  
 The couenaunt of the pledge was blyndely made and great-  
 ly ageynst the myndes of the Castilians, as men that wel vn-  
 derstode the profite, commoditie, and rychesse of that trade :  
 Affirmynge that the trade of spices myght haue byn reued  
 for one yeare or for two, for syxe tymes as much as the kinge  
 gaue for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was thys cauled  
 to the bargeyne, as once at Granada and an other tyme at  
 Madrid, sayde that it had byn muche better to haue pledged  
 Extremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, ra-  
 ther then the Malucas, Zamorra, or Malaca, or other riche  
 landes and ryuers in the East not yet well knowen : for as  
 muche as it maye so chaunce, that eyther by continuance of  
 tyme, or aliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as thowgh  
 it perteyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, The Emperour  
 considered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kyng what  
 he receaued. The Emperour was often tymes counsayled to re-  
 lease the pledge of those Ilandes in consideration of the great  
 bantage he myght haue therby in fewe yeares. Furthermore,  
 in the yeare. 1548, the procuratours of Cortes being in Val-  
 ladolid, made petition to The Emperour to surrender the spices  
 to the kyngedome of Castile for. vii. yeares, and that they  
 wold repay to the kyng of Portugale his .350. thousand crow-  
 nes, and after those yeares, restore the trade to the crowne,  
 that his maiestie myght inioye the same as was  
 agreed at the begynnynge. But The Emperour  
 beinge then in flanders, sente woorde  
 to the counsaile that they shulde  
 not assent to Cortes his request,  
 nor speake any moze hereof.  
 Wherat, sum maryepled,  
 other were sorry, & all  
 held theyr peace.

The gageing  
 of the Ilandes  
 of Malucas.  
 Zamorra and  
 Malaca.

**O**f the Pole Antarctike and the starres about the same  
 And of the qualitie of the regions and disposition of  
 the Elementes about the Equinoctiall line.  
 Also certeyne secretes touchyng the  
 arte of saylpyng.



Mericus Westpulus in the Summarie of his  
 vyages, wyteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departynge frome Lisbona (commonlye  
 cauled Lusheburne) the viii. day of May, in  
 the yere. 1501. we sayled fyrst to the Ilands  
 des of Canarie and from thense to Capouer:  
 de which the Ethiopians or blacke Moores

caule Bisnegbe: beinge. xiiii. degrees on this syde the Equino:  
 ctiall line. From whense directynge oore course towarde the  
 South pole by the Southwest, we sawe no more land for the  
 space of thre moonethes and thre dayes. Of whiche tyme  
 durynge. xl. dayes, we had cruell fortune: In so muche that  
 for that space, the heauen in maner neuer ceased thunderyng  
 to ronne, and lyghenynge with terrible noyse, and fearefull  
 lyghes of spery exhalacions flyng about in the ayer, and  
 in maner continuall showres of rayne with darke cloudes co:  
 ueryng the heauen in such sorte that aswell in the day as in  
 the nyght we coulde see none otherwyse but as when the  
 moone giueth no lyght by reason of thicke and darke cloudes  
 The sea was in lyke case vnquieted with surgies and mon:  
 sters. After these greuous & cruel days, it pleased god to haue  
 compassion on ovr lines. For wee suddenly espied land wher  
 by we recovered ovr spirites and strength. This land which  
 wee founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leaques, although I  
 suppose that we sayled more then. 800. by reason of the cruel  
 tempest and ignorance of the Pilottes and mariniers wher:  
 by wee were lyke to haue byn cast away. For wee were in  
 suche dangerous places wanderyng in vnknown coastes,  
 that if I had not byn skylfull in the science of Cosmographie  
 we had suerly perished, forasmuch as there was not one py:  
 lot that knewe wher wee were by the space of fiftie leaques.  
 In so much that if I had not in tyme prouided for the safe:  
 garde of myne owne lyfe and them that were with me, with  
 my quadrant and Astrolabie instrumentes of Astronomie, wee  
 had

Capouerde  
 Besenegba.

A tempest.

The igno:  
 rance of py:  
 lotts and ma:  
 riniers.

The vse of  
 Cosmogra:  
 phie.

The vse of  
 the quadrant  
 and Astrola:  
 bie.

had skyl wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had persuaded the pylots by demonstrations perceyninge to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confessed that the ordinarie pilottes and mariners ignozant in Cosmographi, are not to bee compared to men of speculatiue knowleage. &c.

Wee sayled by the coaste of the sayde lande, 600. leaques And went oftentymes alande where wee were frendely and honorably interceyued of th inhabitants: In so much that considerynge theyr innocent nature, we sumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth be yonde the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee sayled so farre by the sayde coaste that wee passed the wynter Tropycke towarde the pole Antartike by xlii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynges as I sawe there, are not yet knowne to men of olde tyme: as the people, theyr customes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the laudurable influence of heauen and the planettes, and especially the order of the starres of the eyght Sphere in the inferioure hemispheric or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and abowt the South pole, wherof neyther the olde or newe wyriters haue made any mention to this daye.

To wyrite particularly of the commodities and felicities of these regions, it wolde requyre rather a hole volume then a booke: And that such, as if Plinie had had knowleage of these thynges, he myght greatly haue increased his bookes of naturall histories. The trees yue from them continually such sweere sauours as can scarcely bee imagined: And on every part put furth such gummies, liquours, and iules, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I suppose we myght fynde in them marueylous medicins against diseases and to mainteyne health. And suerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthely Paradyse in the worlde, it can not bee farre from these regions of the south, where the heauen is so beneficiall and the elementes so temperate that they are neyther hytten with coulde in wynter, nor molested with heate in summer. The ayer also and the heauen is seldome darkened with cloudes, so that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. yet haue they sumtymes moyst dewes in the moornyng and euening for the

The pole Antartike.

The starres abowt the south pole.

most pleasant: fructfull regions.

The earthely Paradyse.

Continuall temperance.

moyst dewes

## Of the pole Antartike.

space of three houres, whereby the grounde is marueylously  
 refreshed. Likewise the firmament is marueylously aboute  
 ned with certeyne starres which are not knowen to vs, wher  
 of I noted abowt. xx. to bee of suche clearenesse as are the  
 starres of Venus and Jupiter when they are nere vnto vs.

Starres vn-  
 knowen to vs

The vse of  
 Geometri.

Notable stars  
 in the inferi-  
 our hemispha-  
 erie.

And whereas haupnge the knowlege of Geometrie, I consti-  
 dered theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and also measured  
 theyr circumference and diameter, I am well assured that  
 they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge  
 other, I sawe three starres cauled Canopi, wherof two were  
 exceedynge cleare, and the thyrde sunnwhat darke. The pole  
 Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lyttle as is  
 seene abowt oure pole. But hath foure starres which com-  
 passe it abowt in forme of a quadzangle.

\*   \*   \*

\*   \*   \*

When these are hydden, there is seene on the leste syde  
 a bygght Canopus of three starres of notable greatnesse, wher-  
 che beinge in the myddest of heauen, representeth this figure.

\*

\*   \*   \*

Most bygght  
 and shynnge  
 starre.

After these, succede three other shynnge starres, wherof  
 that which is in the myddest, is of measure. xii. degrees and  
 a halfe in circumference. And in the myddest of these, is seene  
 an other bygght Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other shyn-  
 ynge starres which in byghthnesse passe al other that are in  
 the eyght sphere. Of these, that that is in the middest in the  
 superficial part of the sayde sphere, hath the measure of his  
 circumference. xxxii. degrees. After these foloweth an other  
 great Canopus, but sunnwhat darke. All these are seene in  
 the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye:  
 And beinge ioyned to the meridiane line, shewe this fygure  
 here folowynge.

Tables xii

I sawe

\* \* \* \*

\*

\*

I take also there manye other starres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obserued, I made a particular boke of the same, wherin I made mention of al such notable thyngs as I sawe and had knoweledge of, in this nauigation. The whiche booke I deliuered to the kynges maicstie, trustynge that he wyl shortly restore it me ageyne. In this hemispherie or halfe compasse of the heauen, I diligently considered many thynges which are contrarie to thoppinions of philosophers. And amonge other thynges, I sawe a whyte raynebowe about mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the foure elementes, as redde of the fyre, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blew of the water. But Aristotle in his booke intituled *Meteora*, is of another opinion. For he sayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the soonne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynste the soonne, as the shyping of the same on the water, is reflected on a waule: And that the sayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the soonne: and beinge resolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertile, and pouergeth the ayer. Also that is a token of abundaunt moysture. By reason wherof, sum are of opinion that it shall not appeare. xl. yeares befoze the ende of the world, which shalbe a token of the dyuelite of the elementes approchyng to the tyme of theyr conagration or consuming by fyre. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynst the soonne. It is thefoze neuer seene in the South, bycause the soonne is neuer in the North. Neuertheles, Plinie sayth, that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is seene at al houres. And thus much haue I gathered out of the commentaries of Landinus vpon the fourth boke of Virgyl his *Eneades*, bycause I wold defraude no man of his traauyle. I sawe the sayd raynebowe twoo or thre tymes, And not I onely, but also many other which were in my company. Lykewyse wee sawe the newe moone the selfe same day that she ioyned with the soonne. Wee sawe furthermoze vapours and burnynge flames flyinge

The inferiour hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

Aristotle his opinion of the raynebowe.

A strange opinion.

The newe moone.

## Of the pole Antartike.

ffery exhalations.  
hemispheria.

about heauen euery nyght. A lytle before, I cauled this countrey by the name of Hemispherium (that is) the halfe sphere. Which neuerthelesse can not bee so named but by spekyng improperlie in comparyson of owtres. Yet forasmuche as it seemeth to represent suche a forme, I haue improperlye so named it.

Lisbona.

The fourth  
part of the  
worlde.

Departynge therfore from Lisbona (as I haue sayde) bringe from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North about .xl. degrees, wee sayled to this countrey whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. degrees: All which summe, maketh the number of. lxxxv. beinge the fourth part of the greatest circle accordynge to the etwre reason of the number caught by the owlde autours. And by this demonstration it is manifest that wee measured the fourth parte of the worlde: Forasmuch as we that dwell in Lisbona on this syde the Equinoctiall line about .xl. degrees towarde the North, sayled from thence lxxxv. degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an overthwart line, to th inhabitants. l. degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. And that the thynge may bee more playnely vnderstode, imagine a perpendicular line to faule from the poyntes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pycke ouer the head) to vs both standynge vpryght in the places of owre owne habitacions: and an other ryght line to bee drawne from owre Zenith to theirs: Then grauntyng vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyson to them, it must of necessitie folowe

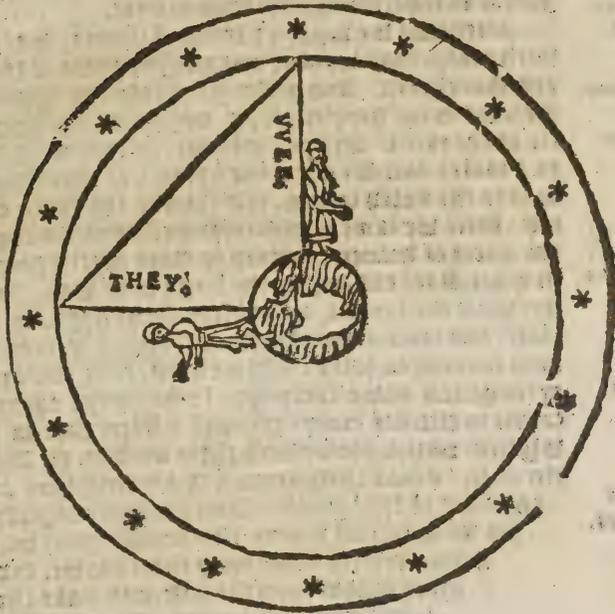
zenith.

that they are in the overthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyson to vs: In suche sorte that the figure of the sayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appeareth more playnely by the figure here followinge.

Owtre

OVER ZENITH:

THEY, ZENITH,



## Of the pole Antartike,

**A**s touchyng the starres and reasons of Cosmographie, I haue gathered thus much out of the bypage of Americus Vesputius. And haue thought good to ioyne hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corsali writeth in his bypage to East India as concernyng the same matter.

The bypage  
of Andreas  
de Corsali.

The Equinoctial  
line.  
Cap. de Spe-  
ranza.

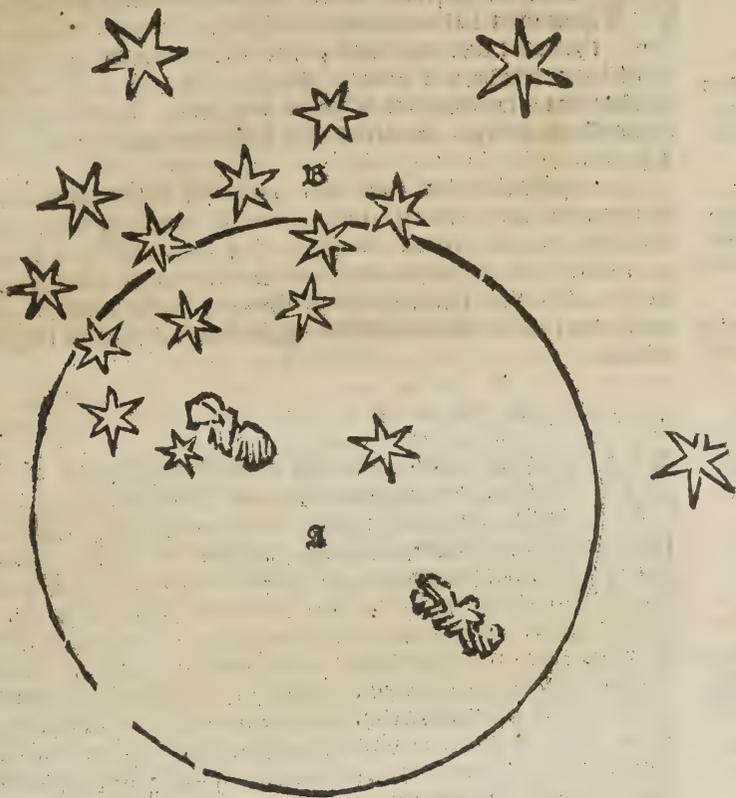
The starres  
of the vnder  
hemisphere.

Cloudes as  
howe the  
south pole.

A crosse of  
fyue starres.

After that we departed frome Lisbona, wee sayled euer with prosperous wynde, not passyng out of the Southeast and Southwest. And passyng beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heygth of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauelesyng the cape of Bona Speranza a coulde and wyndy clime because at that tyme the soonne was in the north signes, wee founde the nyght of. xiiii. houres. Here we sawe a marueylous order of starres, so that in the parte of heauen contrary to owre north pole, to knowe in what place and degre the south pole was, we tooke the day with the soonne, and obserued the nyght with the Astrolabe, and sawe manifestly twoe cloudes of reasonable bygnesse mouyng about the place of the pole continually nowe rysyng and nowe faulyng, so keepyng theyr continuall course in circular mouyng, with a starre euer in the myddest which is turned about with them aboute. xi. degrees frome the pole. Aboue these appeareth a marueylous crosse in the myddest of fyue notable starres which compasse it about (as doth charles wayne the north pole) with other starres whiche moue with them about. xxx. degrees distant from the pole, and make their course in. xiiii. houres. This crosse is so fayre and bewtiful, that none other heuenly signe may be compared to it as may appeare by this fygure.

A. The



A. The pole Antartic,      B. The Croffe.

Betherto Andreas de Corsali.

## Of the pole Antartike.

**O**f the lyke matters, and of the straunge rylpunge of the soonne in the moornyng, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare and motions of the Elementes in the coaste of Ethiope about the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gambia where plentie of golde is founde, somewhat beyonde Capo Verde, Aloisius Cadamustus wyrteth in this effecte.

The coastes of Ethiope. Golde in Ethiope.

The vyage of Aloisius Cadamustus.

The chariote of the south pole.

Duryng the tyme that wee remayned vppon the mouth of the ryuer, we sawe the north starre but once: which appeared very lowe about the sea the height of a iauclen. We saw also fyre cleare, bygght, and great starres verpe lowe about the sea. And considerynge theyr stations with owre compasse, we founde them to stande ryght south, figured in this maner.

\*  
\* \* \* \*  
\*

**W**e iudged them to bee the chariote or wayne of the south: But we sawe not the principall starre, as we coulde not by good reason, except we shuld first lose the syght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a .xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of .xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnynge of July. This countrey is ever hotte al times of the yeare. yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of July to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly about none after this sorte. There ryle continually certeyne cloudes about the lande betwene the northeast and the south east, or from the east and southeast with greate thunderyng and lychtynge and exceedynge great showres of raine. At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to sowe theyr seedes. They lye commonly with hony, herbes, rootes, kelle, and mylke. I had also intelligence that in this region by reason of the great heate of the aper, the water that raineth is hotte: And that the soonne rylpunge in the moornyng, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the rylpunge, it appeareth troubeled, dymme and smoky. The whiche thynge, I knowe not to proceade of any other cause then of the loweneste of the grounde in this contrey beinge without mountaynes.

The wynter about the Equinoctiall.

Raine and cloudes.

Thunder & lychtynge.

hot showres of raine.

The day, and rylpunge of the soonne.

**T**his discourse of dyuers byages and wayes by the whiche  
 Spices, Precious stones, and golde were brought in owlde  
 tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.  
 Also of the byage to CATHAY and East India by the north  
 sea: And of certeyne secretes touchyng the same byage,  
 declared by the duke of Moscouie his ambassadoure to  
 an excellent lerned gentelman of Italic, named Gale:  
 atinus Barrigarius. Lyke wyse of the byages of  
 that woorthy owlde man Sebastian Cabote,  
 per liuyng in Englande, and at this  
 present the governour of the com:  
 pany of the marchantes of Ca:  
 thay in the cite of  
 London.



**I**t is doubtlesse a marueylous thyng to con:  
 sider what chaunges and alterations were  
 caused in all the Romane Emptire by the  
 Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbari:  
 ans into Italy. For by theyz inuasions were  
 extinguyshed all artes and sciences, and all  
 trades of Marchaundies that were vsed in dy:  
 uers partes of the worlde. The desolation and ignoraunce  
 which ensued hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpetuall  
 darkenesse amonge men for the space of foure hundredeth  
 yeares and moze, in so much that none durst aduenture to go  
 any whyther owt of theyz owne natie countreys: whereas  
 befoze thincursions of the sayde Barbarians when the Ro:  
 mane Empire floreyshed, they might safely passe the seas to al  
 partes of East India which was at that tyme as wel knowne  
 and frequented as it is nowe by the nauigations of the Por:  
 tugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifested by that which  
 Strabo wyrteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Ti:  
 berius. For speakyng of the greatnesse and ryches of the ci:  
 tie of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a prouince of  
 the Romanes) he wyrteth thus. This only place of Egypte,  
 is apte to receaue all thynges that coome by sea, by reason of  
 the commoditie of the hauen: And lyke wyse all such thynges  
 as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of Nilus  
 wherby they may bee easely conueyde to Alexandria, beinge

The romane  
 empyre.

iiii. hundredeth  
 yeares of igno:  
 raunce.

East India  
 well knowen  
 in owld tyme,

Strabo.

The great ry:  
 chesse of Eg:  
 ypte,

The cite of  
 Alexandria.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay. ○

by these commodities the rycheſt cite of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

**Warreyloſſe  
rycheſſe.**

**The gover-  
naunce and  
reuenues of  
the Romans.  
Troglogitica,  
and India.  
The goulfe  
of Arabie.**

**Ethiopo.**

**Rich cuſtoms**

**The rycheſſe  
which were  
brought in  
owide tyme  
from India.  
and the red  
ſea.**

**The commiſ-  
ſion of Them-  
perours Mar-  
cus and Com-  
modus.**

The reuenues of Egypt are ſo great, that Marcus Tullius ſayth in one of his orations, that kynge Tolomeus Surnamed Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thouſande and ſyue hundredth talentes, which are ſeuen millions and a halfe of golde. If therfore this kynge had ſo great reuenues when Egypt was governed of ſo fewe and ſo negligently, what myght it then bee woorth to the Romans by whom it was governed with great diligence, & theyr trade of marchandies greatly increaſed by the traſaſike of Troglogitica and India? wheras in tyme paſte there could hardly bee founde. xx. ſhyppes togyther that durſe enter into the goulfe of Arabie, or ſewe theyr proos withowt the mouth of the ſame. But at this preſent, great nauies ſayle togyther in to India and to the furtheſt partes of Ethiope from whence are brought many ryche and precious marchandies into Egypt and are carped from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the cuſtomes redoubled alſwell by ſuche thynges as are brought thyrther, as alſo by ſuche as are carped from thence, for ſomuche as greate cuſtomes arryſe of thynges of great value. And that by this bypage, infinite and precious marchandies were brought from the redde ſea and India, and thoſe of dyuers other ſortes then are known in owre tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is deſcribed the commiſſion of Themperours Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearſall of all ſuche ſuffe and marchandies wherof cuſtome ſhuld bee payde in the redde ſea by ſuch as had the ſame in ſec ferme, as were payde the cuſtomes of all other prouinces perreynnyng to the Romane Emppre: and they are theſe folowynge.

**Cinamome.  
Longe pepper.  
Whyte pepper.  
Cloues.  
Coſtus.  
Cancamo.  
Spikenarde.  
Caſſia.  
Sweete perfumes.**

**Xilocaſſia.  
Gie.  
Amome.  
Binger.  
Galabacrum.  
Ammoniac.  
Balbane.  
Laſer.  
Agarike,**

**Summe**

Gumme of Arabia.	Berille.
Cardamome.	Cilindro.
Filocinamome.	Slaves.
Carpesio.	Cloth of Sarmatia.
Sylkes of dyuers sortes.	The sylke cauled Metaxa.
Linnen cloth.	Measures of sylke.
Skyppes and fures of Parthia and Babilou.	Dyed cloth and sylke.
Iuery.	Carbasi.
Woodde of Heben.	Sylke threedex.
Precious stones.	Selded men.
Perles.	Hoppingiayes.
Jewels of Sardonica.	Lions of India.
Ceraunia.	Leopardes.
Calamus Aromaticus.	Panthers.
	Purple.

Also that iuise oz liquour which is gathered of wolle and of the heare of the Indians.

By these woordes it dooth appeare that in old tyme the sayde navigation by the way of the redde sea, was wel known and muche frequented, and perhappes more then it is at this present. In so much that the auncient kynges of Egypte consideringe the great profyte of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, & wylling to make the same more easy & commodious, attempted to make a fosse oz chanel which shulde begynne in the lasse parte of the sayde sea, where was a citie named Arsinoe (which perhappes is that that is nowe cauled Sues) and shulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Helusio, which emptieth it selfe in owre sea towarde the East abowt the citie of Damiatra. They determined also to make thre cauleis oz hyghe wayes by lande, which shulde passe from the sayde bzaunche to the citie of Arsinoe: but they founde this to difficulte to bynge to passe.

In fine, kyng Tolomeus surnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to sayle bypon Nilus ageynst the course of the ryuer vnto the citie of Copto, and from thence to passe by a deserte countrey vntyll they coome about the redde sea to a citie named Berenice oz Babilonno, where they imbarcked all theyr marchaundies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabia, as appeareth by the wyppynge booke of Strabo (who wyrteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in

The great riches the kynges of Egypte had by customes.

The noble enterpryses of the kynges of Egypte. Arsinoe. Damiatra. pelusio.

Nilus. Copto.

Berenice.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

A nauigable  
trench made  
from Egypte  
to the red sea

Lakes Amari.

kyng Seso-  
stre.  
kyng Psa-  
miticus.  
kyng Darius

kyng Ptole-  
meus.

The cite Pe-  
ros.

what plynne  
writth of the  
nauigable  
trench.

The large-  
nesse and len-  
gthe of the  
trench.

the tyme of Domitian. Strabo also speaking of the sayd foote  
oz trench which was made toward the red sea, wyrteth thus

There is a trench that goth toward the red sea and the  
goulfe of Arabie, and to the cite of Arsinoe, which sum call  
Cleopatrida: and passeth by the lakes named Amari (that is)  
bitter, because in deede they were fyrst bytter. But after that  
this trench was made and the ryuer entered in, they became  
swete, and are at this present full of foules of the water by  
reason of theyr pleasauntnesse. This trench was fyrst begun  
by kyng Sesostris, before the battayle of Troy. Sum saye  
that it was begunne by kyng Psammiticus whyle he was a  
chylde: And that by reason of his death, it was left imper-  
fect: Also that afterwards, kyng Darius succeeded in the  
same enterpryse, who wold haue finished it, but yet brought  
it not to thende because he was informed that the redde sea  
was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuynge  
bothe the seas, were opened, all Egypte shulde bee drowned  
thereby. Kyng Tolomeus wold in deede haue finished it: but  
yet left it shut at the hed that he myght when he wolde, sayte  
to the other sea and returne without perell. Here is the cite  
of Arsinoe: And nere vnto that, the cite cauled Heroum in  
the vttermoost part of the goulfe of Arabie toward Egypt with  
many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewise speakynge of  
this trench, sayeth. In the furthest part of the goulfe of Ara-  
bie, is a porte cauled Danco, fro whence they determined to  
byngge a nauigable trench vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as  
is the fyrst Delta. Betwene the sayde sea and Nilus, there is  
a streight of lande of the length of. lxxii. myles. The first that  
attempted this thyng, was Sesostris kyng of Egypte: and  
after hym Darius kyng of the Persians, whome Tolomeus  
followed, who made a trench a hundred foote large, & xxx.  
foote diepe, beinge thre hundred myles in lengthe vnto the  
lakes named Amari, and durste proceade no further for feare  
of inundation, hauynge knowellege that the redde sea was  
hygher by thre cubites then al the countrey of Egypt. Other  
say that this was not the cause: but that he doubted that yf  
he shulde haue let the sea coome any further, all the water of  
Nilus shulde haue byn therby corrupted, which onely myny-  
sreth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithstandinge all these  
thynges aforesayde, all this byage is frequented by lande  
from

from Egypte to the redde sea, in which passage are thre caues  
 scis or hyghe wayes. The fyrst begynneth at the mouth of Ni  
 lus named Helusio. All which way is by the sandes: In so  
 much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyrst in the  
 earth to shewe the ryght way, the caues could not be founde  
 by reason the wynde euer couereth it with sande. The second  
 caue is two myles from the mountayne Cassius. And this  
 also in the ende of. lx. myles, commeth vppon the way or cau-  
 sey of Helusius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled An-  
 rei. The thyrde begynneth at Berro, named Adiplon: and  
 passeth by the same Arabians, for the space of. lx. myles sum-  
 what shorter, but full of rough mountaynes and great scarfe  
 nesse of water. All these caues, leade the way to the cite of  
 Actinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe  
 Carandya by the red sea. This Ptolomeus was the fyrst that  
 searched al that parte of the red sea which is cauled Troglo-  
 ditica. Of this trenche described of Strabo and Plinie, there  
 are seene certeyne tokens remaynyng at this present as they  
 affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the cite of Alcaz  
 oherwyle cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchauntes  
 that of later dayes trauallye this viage by lande, ryde through  
 the dry & baren desertes on camels toly by day and by night:  
 directyng theyr way by the starres and compase as do many  
 ners on the sea, and carryng with them water sufficient for  
 many dayes iorneyes. The places of Arabie and India named  
 of Strabo and Plinie, are the selke same where the Portuga-  
 les practise theyr trade at this daye, as the maners and cus-  
 tomes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this pre-  
 sente theyr women vse to burne theym selues alyue with the  
 deade bodies of theyr husbandes. Which thyng (as wyrteth  
 Strabo in his. xx. booke) they dyd in olde tyme by a lawe,  
 for this consideration that sumtyme being in loue with other  
 they forsooke or popposed theyr husbandes. And forasmuch  
 as accordyng to this custome, the owlde poete Propertius  
 (who lyued abowt a hundredeth yeares before thincarnation of  
 Chryst) hath in his boke made mention of the contention that  
 was amonge the Indian women which of them shuld bee bur-  
 ned alyue with theyr husbandes, I haue thought good to sub-  
 scribe his verses, whiche are these.

The viage by  
 lande from E-  
 gypte to the  
 red sea.

What kynge  
 Ptolomeus  
 discovered.

Alcaze.  
 The viage to  
 Easte Indya  
 frequented in  
 owlde tyme.  
 The customes  
 and maners  
 of the Indya-  
 ans.

125  
Of Moscoue and Cathay.

*Patris Fois lex funeris una maritis;*  
*Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.*  
*Munq' ubi mortifero lacta est fax ultima lecto,*  
*Vxorum suis stat pia turba comis;*  
*Et certamen habent lechi, que viua sequatur.*  
*Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse morti,*  
*Ardent victrices, et flamine pectora prebent,*  
*Imponuntq' suis ora perusta viris.*

As routhynge these vyages both by sea and by lande to East India & Cathay, many thynge are wyrtten very largely by dyuers autours which I omitt bycause they pertyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north seas and the coastes of Moscouia discovered in olore tyme by the viage of that excellent ponce man Rycharde Chaunceler no lesse lerned in all mathematicall sciences then an expert pylotte, in the yeare of olore lozde. 1554.

As concernynge this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the sayde lerned man Galeatius Butrigarius, and that great philosopher and noble gentelman of Italie named Hieronimus Fracastor, as I fynde wyrtten in the Italian hypozies of navigations. As they were therfoze conferrynge in matters of learnynge, and reasonynge of the science of Cosmographi, the sayde lerned man haupnge in his hande an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynge of Portugale, rehearlynge the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Islandes they had discovered. and how by theyr navigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiscovered. And sayde that of the landes of the inferiour hemispherie or halfe compasse of the baulde towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothynge knowne but that lyttle of the coaste of Brasilia vnto the streight of Magellanus. Also a part of Peru: And a lyttle aboue Aethiopia towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Also that he marueyled withoute measure that this thynge was no better considered of Christian Princes to who god hath deputed this charge, haupnge euer on theyr counsaile men of great lernynge which may informe them of this thing beinge so marueplous and noble wherby they maye obteyne glorie

The vyage to Cathay.

Rycharde Chaunceler.

A lerned discourse of dyuers vyages.

The vyages of the Portugales.

The worlde hangynge on the ayer.

What is knowne of the lower hemispherie.

The lande of Brasile, Peru.

The charge & dewtie of Christian princes.

Note.

glozie and fame by vertue, and bee impuled amonge men as  
 goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules & great  
 Alexander who traaypled only into India: and that by ma-  
 kyng the men of this owre hemispherie knowen to them  
 of the other halfe compase of the baule beneth vs, they might  
 by the tyle of this enterpryse, withowt comparyson farre ex-  
 cell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Julius Ce-  
 sar or any other of the Romane Emperours. Which thynge  
 they myght easely byynge to passe by assignynge colonies to in-  
 habite byuers places of that hemispherie, in lyke maner as  
 byd the Romanes in prouinces newly subdued. Whereby  
 they myght not only obteyne great ryches, but also enlarge  
 the Christian fayth and Empire to the glozy of god and confu-  
 sion of infidels. After this, he spake of the Ilande of saynt  
 Laurence, cauled in owlde tyme Madagascar, which is grea-  
 ter then the realme of Castile and Portugale, and reachethe  
 from the. xii. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the  
 xxvi. degree and a halfe, lpyng Northeast from the cape of  
 Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropicus Capri-  
 corni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with a  
 bundaunce of all thynge necessarie for the lyfe of man, and  
 one of the most excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in  
 the worlde: And that neuerthelesse there is nothynge know-  
 en therof, except only a fewe smaule hauens by the sea side,  
 as the lyke ignozance remayneth of the greatest part of the I-  
 landes of Taprobana, Biaua the more and the lesse, and infi-  
 nite other. Then begynninge to speake of the partes of  
 owre pole, he rauled the booke of plinie to bee brought him  
 where diligently ponderynge the. lxxvii. chapiture of the se-  
 conde booke, he founde where he reherseth the hystorie of Coz-  
 nelius Nepos, by these woordes: That in his tyme, one Cu-  
 dorus escappynge the handes of kynge Athyros, departed fro  
 the goulfe of Arabic and came by sea to the Ilande of Calise.  
 Declarynge further, that whercas this narration was many  
 yeaeres reputed for a fable, was nowe in owre tyme by the ver-  
 tue of the Portugales, kdcwren to bee true: And that lyke-  
 wyse the same Cornelius Nepos reciteth that at the tyme  
 when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconsul or licutenant  
 for the Romanes in fraunce, the kynge of Suciua gaue hym  
 certeyne Indians which saylinge out of India for marchan-  
 dies,

Hercules and  
Alexander.

The colonies  
of the Ro-  
mans in regi-  
ons subdued.

The great I-  
land of saynt  
Laurence or  
Madagascar.

The Ilandes  
of Taproba-  
na or Sisaia.  
Plinie.

The hystorie  
of Cornelius  
Nepos.

Shypps of In-  
dia ouren in-  
to the sea of  
Sermenic.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

dies, were by tempest diuened to the coastes of Germanie. When he had readde these wordes, he proceeded, sayinge that the same thynge myght bee verified nowe in owt tyme if the princes which confine vppon that sea wolde endeuoure theyr industry and diligence to bynng it to passe. And that there coulde not any navigation bee imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendome as this myght bee yf by this way the byage shulde bee founde open to India to come to the ryche countrey of CATHAY which was discovered now two hundred yeres sence by Marcus Paulus. Then takinge the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this byage shulde bee very shorte in respect of that which the Portugales nowe folowe, and also of that which the Spaniards may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared further moze that the citie of Lubyke beinge ryche and of great poure, and situate vppon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continuall navigations to trauayle the sea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyse the ryght noble kynge of Polonie whose dominions wity his realme of Lituania, extende to the sayde sea, shulde be apte to discover this secrete. But the same wity greater commoditie and moze facilitie then any ocher prince. And here slepyng a whyle, he began to speake ageyne and sayde. Nowe forasmuch as we are come to this passe, mee thynke it shulde seeme a great discurretie if I shuld not helpe you all that I knowe as touchynge this byage, wherof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeares by occasion of the wordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Augusta, it so chaunced that in those dayes there came thither an ambassadour of the duke of Moscouia, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experience in worldely thynnges, hauyng byn sent to diuers places by the sayde prince, and one of his counsaile. Of whose learninge beinge aduerised, I sought his acquayntance. And talkyng with hym one day of these Indians diuened by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the byage that myght bee discovered by the North sea to the Ilandes of spices, I perceaued that at the fyrste he marueyled exceedingly, as at a thynge that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But restynge a whyle

An enterpryse  
 wherby princes  
 may obtayne  
 trewe fame and  
 glory.  
 Cathay discovered  
 by warre.  
 Marcus Paulus.

The citie of  
 Lubyke.

The kynge of  
 Polonie.

The duke of  
 Moscouia.

An ambassadour  
 from the  
 duke of Moscouia.

whyle in maner astonyshted in his secrete phantasie, he took  
 great pleasure therein, and sayde. Forasmuch as the Portu-  
 gales haue nowe compassed about all the south partes suppo-  
 sed in owlde tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate,  
 why shulde wee not certeinly thynke that the lyke maye bee  
 done about this parte of the north withowt feare of coulde,  
 especially to men borne & brought vp in that clime? yet proce-  
 dyng further, he said, that if his Prince and master, had men  
 that wolde animate hym to discouer this byage, there was no  
 Prince in Christendome that myght do it with more facilitie.  
 Then caulynge for a mappe in which was the description of  
 Moscouia and the prouinces subiecte to the same, he decla-  
 red that from the citie of Moscouia or Mosca going towarde  
 the northeast for the space of lx. myles, they come to the ry-  
 uer of Wolochda, and afterwarde by that, and folowynge the  
 course thereof, to the citie of Utiug, so cauled bycause the ry-  
 uer of Jug fauleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they lose  
 theyr owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by  
 that, leauynge on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they  
 sayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, althoughe it  
 bee a longe tracte, as more then. 300. myles, neuerthelesse he  
 sayde that in sommer it myght commodiously bee sayled: And  
 that whereas it fauleth into the sea, there are infinite woods  
 of goodly trees apte to make shyppes. And the place so con-  
 uenient for this purpose, that shipwryghtes and other skylful  
 workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynyng, may eas-  
 sely coome out of Germanie. Also that the men which are vs-  
 ed to trauayle the sea of Germanie aboute the coastes of  
 Gothlande, Gulde bee best and most apte to attempte this en-  
 terpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger,  
 and labour. He sayde furthermore, that in the court of his  
 Prince, they haue much knowleage of the great cane of Ca-  
 thay, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the  
 Tartars, of whō the greatest part gyue obedience to the said  
 great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made also de-  
 monstracion in the sayde carde by the northeaste, that beinge  
 passe the prouince of Permia and the ryuer Iscoza (whiche  
 fauleth into the north sea) and certeyne mountaynes named  
 Catena Mundi, there is thenteraunce into the prouince of obdo-  
 ra, whereas is Vecchiadozo and the ryuer Obo, whiche also  
 fauleth

The woordes  
 of theambassa-  
 dour of mos-  
 couia.

The way fro  
 Moscouia to  
 the north Oce-  
 an & Cathay.

Wolochda.  
 Utiug.  
 Succana.  
 Duina.  
 Colmogor.  
 The north  
 Ocean.

Grete  
 wooddes.

Gothlande.

The moscou-  
 ites haue  
 knowleage of  
 the grete  
 cane of Ca-  
 thay.  
 Permia.  
 Iscoza.  
 Catena mundi.  
 Iscoza.  
 Vecchiadozo.  
 Obo.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The lake  
Chetay.  
The Tartars

The citie of  
Cambalu.

Note this se-  
crete.

Difficult tra-  
uaynge in  
Moscouia.

Commendati-  
on of the Spa-  
niardes and  
Portugales.

The hystorie  
of Paulus  
Cenurio.  
Of this reade  
more at large  
in the booke  
of paulus Jo-  
nius.

Malice may  
do more with  
sun then ver-  
tue.

The Caspian  
sea.  
Riga.  
Livonia.

faulerh into the sayd sea, and is the furthest bozther of Them-  
pire of the Prince of Moscouia. The sayd ryuer hath his ori-  
ginall in a greate lake, cauld Chetay, which is the fynde ha-  
bitacion of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Kane.  
And from this lake for the space of two monethes wyage (as  
they were credably informed by certeine Tartars taken in the  
warres) is the most noble citie of Cambalu, beinge one of the  
chiefest in the dominion of the greate Kane, whom sum caule  
the great Cham. He also affirmed, that if Shyppes shulde bee  
made on the coastes of the sayd sea, and sayle on the backe  
halfe of the coast therof (which he knowe by many relations  
made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the north east)  
they shulde doubtlesse in solowynge the same, easely discour-  
that countrey. Unto these wordes he added, that although  
there were greate difficultie in Moscouia, by reason that the  
waye to the sayd sea is full of thicke wooddes and waters  
which in the summer make great maryshes and impossible to  
bee trauyled, aswell for lacke of wytrayles whiche can not  
there bee founde, not for certeyne dayes, but for the space of  
certeyne monethes, the place beinge desolate without inha-  
bitaunces. neuerthelesse he sayde that yf there were with his  
Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whome the  
charge of this wyage shulde bee comytted, he no wayes doubt-  
ted but that they wolde folowe it and fynde it, forasmuch as  
with great ingeniousnesse and inestimable pacience, these na-  
tions haue overcome much greater difficulties then are these  
which are but lytle in conparison to those that they haue o-  
uerpassed and doo overpasse in all theyr wyages to India. He  
proccaded declarynge that not many yeares sence, there came  
to the courte of his Prince, an ambassadour frome pope Leo,  
named master Paulo Cenurione a Genuese vnder dyuers pre-  
tenses. But the principall occasion of his comynge, was,  
because he had conceaued greate indignation and hatred a-  
gainst the Portugales: And therfore intended to proue yf he  
could open any wyage by lande wherby spices myght bee  
broughte from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the sea  
Caspium (other wyse cauled Hircanum) to Moscouia: And  
from thence to bee brought in Shyppes by the ryuer Riga, whi-  
che runnyng by the countrey of Livonia, faulerh into the sea  
of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue care vnto hym: and  
cauled

caused the sayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lords, of the Tartars confininge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greates defects which they shulde of necessity ouerpaſſe, made them leaue of theſe enterpryſe: which if it had bin purpoſed by the coaſtes of this owre north ſea, it myght haue bin eaſely ſpyghed. The ſayde Ambaſadour continued his narration, ſayinge that no man ought to doubt of that ſea but that it may bee ſayled ſyre monethes in the yeare, forasmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and hor by reason of conſpynall reuerberation of the beames of the ſonne and ſorteynges. And that this thynge were as well woorthie to bee proued, as any other navigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknoen, haue bin diſcouered & brought to ciuilitie. And here makinge an ende of this talke, he ſaid: Let vs nowe omitte this parte of Moscouia wth his coulde, and ſpeake ſumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and *Baccalaos* or *Terra Baccalarum*, where in the yeare .1534. and .1535. *Jaques Cartier* in two vyages made wth three great french gallies, ſounde the great and large countreys named *Tanada*, *Dehelaga*, and *Sanguenai*: which reach from the xlv. to the li. degree, beinge well inhabited and pleaſaunte countreys, and named by hym *Rosa francia*. And here ſtepyng a while and leſtyng vpp his handes, he ſayde: Oh what doo the Chriſtian Princes meane that in ſuch landes diſcouered they do not aſſigne certeine colonies to inhabite the ſame to bringe theſe people (whom god hath ſo bleſſed wth natural gyftes) to better ciuilitie and to embrace owre religion, then the whiche, nothynge can bee more acceptaible to god? The ſayd regions alſo, beinge ſo fayre and frutefull, wth plentie of all ſortes of corne, herbes, frutes, woodde, ſpythes, beaſtes, metals, and ryuers of ſuche greatneſſe that ſhyppes maye ſayle more then .180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe ſydes infinitely inhabited: And to cauſe the gouernoures of the ſayde colonies to ſearche whether that lande toward the north named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one ſtyme lande wth *Norwaye*: Or whether there bee any ſtreight or open place of ſea as is moſte lyke there ſhulde bee, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the ſayde Indians dyuen by fortune

S S. II. abowte

The Tartars of Loidoſeſerues. The viage by the north ſea.

The woorthynesse of this vyage.

The viages of the frenchmen to the land of Baccalaos.

pleaſaunt countreys, New ffraunce.

Apoſtrophe to the Chriſtian princes.

Great ryuers.

A thynge woorthie to be ſearched.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The way to  
Cathay and  
the Ilandes  
of Maluca by  
the south west  
A notable en-  
terpryse.

The noble en-  
terpryse of An-  
toni di Mend-  
doza, Viceroy  
of Mexico.

The discou-  
rynge of the  
north west  
partes.

Shippes say-  
lynge from  
Cathay by  
the north by  
perborea sea  
to the coastes  
of the north  
west part of  
Saccalios.  
Cathay.

The sea from  
new Fraunce  
or Terra Bri-  
taniam to Ca-  
thay.

A notable  
booke.

aboute the coastes of Norway, came by that streight of sea,  
to the coastes of Germanie: And by the sayde streight to saile  
northwest to discouere the landes and countreys of CATHAY,  
and from thence to saile to the Ilandes of Maluca. And  
these surely shulde be enterpryses able to make men immortal.  
The whiche thynge, that ryght woorthy gentelmau master  
Antony di Mendoza consideringe by the singular heretic and  
magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thynge  
in practyse. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (so  
named of the great cite Mexico otherwise cauled Temistitan,  
nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the .xx. degre aboute the  
Equinoctiall, and parte of the sayde firme lande, he sent cer-  
teyne of his capitaynes by lande, and also a nauie of Shippes  
by sea, to searce this secrete. And I remember that when I  
was in fflaunders in the Emperours court, I sawe his letter  
wrytten in the yeare. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherein  
was declared howe towarde the north west, he had founde the  
kyngedome of *sepe Citia* (that is) Seven Cities, whereas is  
that cauled Cuola by the reuerend father Marco da Niza: &  
howe beyonde the sayde kyngedome yet further towarde the  
Northwest, Capitayne Francesco Masques of Lozonado, ha-  
uynge oucrpassed great desertes, came to the sea syde where  
he founde certeyne Shippes which sayled by that sea with mar-  
chaundises, and had in theyr baner vppon the proos of theyr  
Shippes, certeyne foules made of golde and soluer which they  
of Mexico caule Alcarrazzi: And that theyr mariners shewed  
by signes that they were. xxx. dayes saylynge in comynge  
to that haue: wherby he vnderstode that these Shippes could  
bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is  
situate on the contrary parte of the sayde lande discouered.  
The sayde master Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the o-  
pinion of men well practised, there was discouered so greate  
a space of that countrey vnto the sayd sea, that it passed. 950.  
leagues, which make. 2850. myles. And doubtellesse yf the  
frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue passed  
by lande towarde the sayd northwest and by north, they shuld  
also haue founde the sea wherby they myght haue sayled to  
Cathay. But aboute all thynge, this seemed vnto me mooste  
woorthy of commendation, that the sayde master Antonie  
wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural  
and

And marueylous thynges whiche they founde in searchyng  
these countreys, with also the measures of landes and al-  
tytudes of degrees: A worke doublelesse which sheweth a prync-  
ly and magnificall mynde, whereby wee may conceaue that yf  
god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemispherie, he  
wolde or now e haue made it better knowne to vs. The which  
thyng, I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this time:  
beinge neuerthelesse the greatest and most gloriois enterprise  
that may bee imagined.

And here makinge a certeyne pause, and turnyng hym  
selfe towarde vs, he sayde: Doo you not vnderstande to this  
purpose howe to passe to India toward the north west wind,  
as dyd of late a citizen of Venese, so valiente a man, and so  
well praetysed in all thynges pertynyng to navigations and  
the science of Cosmographie, that at this present he hath not  
his lyke in Spayne, in so much that for his vertues he is pre-  
ferred aboue all other pylottes that sayle to the west Indies,  
who may not passe thither without his licence, and is ther-  
fore cauled *Filoto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And  
when wee sayde that wee knewe him not, he proceeded, say-  
inge, that beinge certeyne yeares in the citie of Siuile, and de-  
syring to haue some knowlege of the navigations of the Spa-  
nyardes, it was tolde hym that there was in the citie a va-  
lient man, a Venecian bozne, named Sebastian Cabote, who  
had the charge of those thynges, being an expert man in that  
science, and one that coulde make outdes for the sea with his  
owne hande. And that by this reporte, seekyng his acquaint-  
taunce, he founde hym a very gentell person, who enterre-  
ned hym frendly and shewed him many thynges, and amonge  
other a large mapp of the worlde with certeine particular na-  
vigations as well of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes.  
And that he spake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When  
my father departed from Venese many yeares sence to dwell  
in Englande to soloe the trade of marchaundies, he tooke  
me with him to the citie of London whyle I was very yonge,  
yet hauyng neuerthelesse some knowlege of letters of huma-  
nitie and of the spherie. And when my father dyed in that  
tyme when newes were broghe that Don Christophor Colo-  
nus Venese, had discovered the coastes of India, whereof  
was great talke in all the courts of kynge Henry the seventh  
who

A great and  
glorious en-  
terpise.

Sebastian Ca-  
bote the grad  
pylot of the  
west Indies.

Commendati-  
on of Sebasti-  
an Cabote.

Sebastian Ca-  
bote told me  
that he was  
borne in Bry-  
stowe, & that  
at .iii. yeare  
old he was  
caried with  
his father to  
Venice and so  
returned a-  
gayne into  
England with  
his father af-  
ter certeyne  
yeares: wher-  
by he was  
thought to  
haue bin born  
in Venice.

## Of Moskoulé and Cathay.

who then reigned: In so much that all men with great admiration affirmed it to bee a voyage more diuine then humane, to sayle by the Weste into the East where spices growe, by a way that was neuer knowne before. By which fame and report, there increased in my harte a greate flame of desyre to attempte sum notable thinge. And vnderstandyng by reason of the sphere, that if I shalde sayle by the way of the north: west wynde, I shalde by a shorter tracte cooemie to India, I thereuppon caused the kynge to bee aduertised of my diuise, who immediatly commaunded two carauels to bee furnished with all thinges apperteynyng to the voyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yere. 1496. in the begynnyng of sommer. Begynnyng therfore to saile towarde Northwest, not thynkyng to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY, and from thence to turne towarde India. But after certeyne dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towards the North, which was to me a great displeasure. Auerbeleste, sayling alonge by the coast to see if I could fynde any goulfe that turned, I founde the lande still continet to the 56. degree vnder owre pole. And seinge that there the coast turned toward the East, dispaynyng to fynde the passage, I turned backe a geyne, and sayled downe by the coast of that lande towarde the Equinoctiall (ouer with intent to fynde the sayde passage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe cauled FLORIDA. Where, my bytayles sayling, I departed from thence and returned into England, where I founde great tumultes amonge the people, and preparauces for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no more consideration had to this voyage: Whereuppon I wente into Spayne to the Catholyke kynge, and queene Elizabeth: who beinge aduertised what I had doone, interceped me, and at theyr charges furnished certeyne shippes wherewith they caused me to sayle to discover the coastes of Brasyle, where I founde an exceedyng great and large ryuer, named at this present, *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of syluer, into the which I sayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then fyre hundred the leaques, fyndyng it euer where verpe sayle and inhabited with infinite people, which with admiration came vnkynge dayly to owre shippes. Into this ryuer, runne so many other riuers, that it is in maner incredible.

The first voyage of Sebastian Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde voyage of Cabote to the land of Brasyle, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote could see that in a region within this ryuer he sowed the grapes of

After

After this, I made many other vyages which I now pretermitte. And werynge owlde, I gyue my selfe to rest from such treuayles bycause there are now many younge and lusty pylotes and mariners of good experience, by whose sowarde-nesse I doo reioyce in the frutes of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as yow see. And this is as much as I haue vnderstoode of master Sebastian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers navigations wyrtten in the Italian tooonge.

And wheretas I haue before made mention he the Moscouia was in olde tyme discovered by Richard Chanceler in his biage toward Cathay by the direction and information of the sayde master Sebastian he longe before had this secreete in his mynde, I shall not neede here to describe that biage, forasmuche as the same is largely and saythfully wyrtten in the Laten tynge by that learned younge man Clement Adams scole master to the Durcnes hertemen, as he receaued it at the mouth of the sayde Richard Chanceler. Nevertheless I haue thought good here to speake sumwhat of Moscouia as I haue receiued in the booke of Iohn Sabel wyrtten in the Laten tooonge to the ryght noble Prynce Ferdinando Archduke of Austria and Infant of Spayne, of the manners and religion of the Moscouites, as he was partely instructed by the ambassadours of the Duke of Moscouie sent into Spayne to Iheremye Perours narchise in the yere. M. D. XX. V. He wyrteth therfore as foloweth.

I thynke it sytlic conueniente to speake sumwhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in olde tyme. Consorynge therfore the moeste ancient of the Grecke and latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceaue it to bee a thyrge which requieth no smaule iudgement of wytte and leuyng. For we see in howe olde tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are alio the manners of men: I fynde therfore that those people whom at this day we commonly caule Moscouites, were in tyme past (as wyrteth Iulius) cauled Roxolani, whom nevertheless by chauryng one letter, Ptoleme in his ryght table of Europe, cauleth Rosolanos as dooth also Strabo. They were also many yeres cauled Rutheni: And are that people which sumtyme fought manfully agayn the Capytaynes

wrote in September, and gathered therof. I thousand in December as wyrteth alio Francisco Lopez

The vyage to Moscouia.

The historye of Moscouia.

The dyuers names of Moscouia.

Roxolani.  
Ro'olani.  
Rutheni.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

The ryuer  
Mosco.

The ryuer  
Bozithenes.

The Emperour  
of Cathay.

The frose sea

Lacus Croni-  
cus.  
Saturus.

Amaltheum.

The dominio  
of the duke of  
Moscouia.

The citie of  
Moscouia.

The chiefe  
cities of Mos-  
couia.

of Methidates as Strabo wyrceth. They were cauled Mos-  
couies of the chiefe cite of al the prouince named Moscouia  
or Mosca: or (as Colaterane saith) of the riuer Mosco. They  
were sumtyme gouerned by duke Johan, whose wyfe was  
Helena of the lynage of Theemperours of Constantinople of  
the noble familie of the Paleologi. Beyond these Mosca-  
nos, Strabo sayth there is no lande inhabited. These Ruthe-  
nians therfore or Moscouites, are people of the northeaste  
parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the li-  
mettes of the great ryuer Bozithenes of Scythia, on the one  
syde with the Lituanians and Polonians, and on the other  
syde with the Tartars who cease not to breke them with conti-  
nuall warres and incursions. Especially the great Emperour  
Cham of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars; resident  
by the sea syde in Taurico Chersoneso, molesteth them with  
foze warres. They are towarde the north syde inclosed with  
the frosen sea, the lande of whose coastes beinge verye large,  
perceynerth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Mosco-  
uie. This sea is it which the owlde wyrters caule Lacus Croni-  
cus, so named of the Greeke wyrde Cronos, which the Latines  
caule Saturnus whom they sayne to bee an owlde man, of com-  
plexion coulde and slowe, and thereby name all such thynges  
as are coulde and slowe, Cronica, as by lyke reason they dyd  
this northe sea which beinge in maner euer frosen, is slowe  
and coulde and in maner immouable. And for lyke considera-  
tion (as saythe Plinie) Bethens nameth it in the Scythian  
toonge, Amaltheum, whiche woorde significeth as muche as  
congeled or frosen. But that I wander not farre frome my  
purpose: The Empire and dominion of the Duke of Moscouie re-  
cheth so farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Asia  
and also of Europe. The cite of Moscouia or Mosca, is coun-  
ted twyle as hygge as Colonia Agrippina as they saythfully  
reporthe which knowe bothe. Unto this they haue also an o-  
ther not vnequall in byggenesse cauled Gladimer. Also Bles-  
couia, Rouogradia, Smolue, and Oifer, al which they and  
hastadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall buyl-  
dynges, and strongly defended with waules bothe of brycke  
and square stone. Of these, Blescouia is strongest and emited  
ned with thise waules. Other which they haue innumerable  
are not so famous as are these wherof this duke of Moscouia  
and

and Emperoure of Russia taketh this inscription of his title. For euen at this present, when so euer epyther by his ambassadours or his letters, he dooth signifie hym selfe to bee Emperoure of Moscouie, his is accustomed to vse this title. **Basilius** by the grace of god Emperoure of all Russia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Moscouie, Rouigrade, Blescouia, Smolne, and Orifer. &c. And this is the tytle whereby the sayde ambassadours saluted yowre maiestie in the name of great Basilus when they began theyr oration. This prince of Moscouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and thos of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians sente for his ambassadoure to Theemperours maiestie into Spayne, is not one of the least. For euen he when necessitie of warre requyret, is accustomed to make for his Emperour a bande of xxx thousande horsmen. But this is to theyr singular commendation that they are so obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge commoned by hym by neuer so meane an herald, they obey incōtinent as if it were to god, thynkyng nothyng more gloriouse then to dye in the quarrell of theyr prince. By reason of which obedience, they are able in short tyme, to assemble an army of two or thre hundredeth thousande men agens theyr enemies epyther the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obreynd great victories and triumphes as well agens the Turkes as the Tartars by the excedyng multitude of theyr horsmen and continual experience in warres. At such time as Theemperour Maximilian made a league with them, they kept warre agens the kynge of Polonie. They vse not only bowes and darters after the maner of the Parthians, but haue also the vse of gunnes as we haue. And to bee briefe, onely the Moscouites maye seeme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In so muche that of theyr region were not strongly defended by the nature of the place beinge impregnable, it had or nolue byn often tymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth much with the roonge of the Boyenians, Troarians, and Sclauons: so that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderstande the Moscouite, although the Moscouian roonge be a more rude and hard phrase of speech. The historiographers wyte that the Sclauons roonge tooke the name of the confusion whiche was in Babel in the tyme

The Duke of Moscouia & Emperour of Russia. The duke of Moscouia his tytle.

Duke Basilus.

Their poure.

Their obedience to theyr prince.

Their wars & conquestes.

Summes.

Only the moscouites haue not felt the commodities of peace.

Their language.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

**Dalmatia.**

**Pannonia.  
Hungarie.**

**Theyr origi-  
nal.**

**The Sclauō  
toonge rea-  
cheth farre.**

**Great woods  
white beares  
and blacke  
woolues,**

**Abundance of  
hony and  
ware.**

**Rych fures.**

**Theyr maner  
of bargenyng**

**Rude & wyld  
people.**

**Tartares.**

of that stowt hunter Remzoth of whome mention is made in the Genesis. But I can not enowgh marueyle at this thing, that whereas betwene Dalmatia (now cauled Sclauonia) and Moscouia, both the Pannonies are situate, yet the notwithstanding, the Hungarians toonge nor hyngre agreeth with the Moscouites. Wherby wee may contereure that these nations were sumtymes diuided by legions, and that they came out of Dalmatia thither: whiche thyng also Volateranus affirmeth, sayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Moscouites) is Semidalmatica (that is) halfe Sclauone. Howe so euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Moscouites, agree in language as wee perceaued by thinterpretours which yowre maiestie had then in yowre court. For whereas the sayde interpretours were bozne amonge the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Moscouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours woordes.

There are in Moscouia, wooddes of exceedyng byggenesse, in the which blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause wherof may bee the extreme cold of the north, which dooth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mother of whytenesse as the Philosophers affirme. They haue also great plentie of bees, wherby they haue such abundance of hony and ware that it is with them of small price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reason of longe warres, theyr chiefe aduantage wherby they haue all thynges necessarie towarde theyr lyuynge, is the gaires which they haue by theyr rych fures, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, most whyte amyns, and such other which they sell to marchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and sell with simple faythe of woordes exchaungynge ware for ware withowt any curious bondes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and syluer monyes, yet doo they for the most part exchaunge theyr fures for frutes and other thynges necessarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are also sum people vnder the Dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by fleshe and mylke as doo the wyld Tartars theyr boztherers which dwel in woods by the coastes of the frosen sea. These people are byrthe,

and

and lyue in maner lyke wylde beastes. But they of the citie of Mosca and Nouigrade, and other cities, are ciuile people: and agree with vs in eatynge of fythe and fleshe althowgh theyr maner of coquerie is in many thynges differynge frome oures. Volaterane wyryeth that the Ruthenians vse money vncopned. And inquirynge further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chiefly to bee considered, that they imbrace the Christian fayth which they asseme to haue byn preached to them fythe by saynt Andzewe thappostle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine also as vnder Constantine the greate, in the yere. CCC. xviii. was concluded in the fyrtt generall counsaile holden in the citie of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determined by. CCC. xviii. bysshoppes, and also such as hath byn wyrtten and ratoght by the Greeke doctoures Basilius Magnus and Chyrisostomus, they beleue to bee so holy, firme and syncere, that they thinke it no moze lawfull one heare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the gospel of Christ. For theyr constancie and modestie is such, that no man dare caule those thynges into question which haue once byn decised by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They doo therfore with a moze constante mynde perseuer in theyr fyrtt fayth which they receaued of saynt Andzewe thappostle and his succedours and holy fathers, that doo manye of vs beynge diuided into scismes and sectes whiche thyng neuer chaunceth amonge them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touchynge the fayth or custome of religion, all is referred to the archbyshoppe and other byshoppes as to bee defined by theyr spirite: nor permyttinge any iudgemente to the inconstant and ignozant people. Theyr archebyshoppe is residente in the citie of Mosca, where also Theemperoure keepethe his courte. They haue lykewyle dyuers other byshops: as one in Nouigradia, where also Ilodorus was byshop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Rosciua, an other in Sulsali, an other in Oriseri: also in Smolne, in Belan, in Colmum, and in Volut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebyshop as the chiefe. Before the patri arche of Constantinople was opprested by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this archebyshoppe recognised hym as his superioure. In so much that this duke of Moscouia and Em-

These people  
in cities.

They: money

They embrace  
the Christian  
fayth whiche  
they receaued  
of the Apo-  
stles.

The cōsaile  
of Nicene.  
Basilius mag-  
nus.  
Chyrisostomus

They: constā-  
cie in theyr  
religion.

The bysshops  
define cō-  
trouersies in  
religion.

They:  
byshops.

The Arches-  
byshoppe.  
The patri-  
arke of Con-  
stantinople,

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

perour of Russia, not vnmyndefull hereof but a diligente obseruer of his accustomed religion, dooth at this daye yearly sende a certeyne sumppe in maner of almes to the patriarche of Constantinople, that he may with more quiete mynd looke for the ende of this his Egyptian seraitude vntyll it shal please almyghty god to restore hym to his former churche and auctoritie. For he iudgech it much impietie, if he shulde nowe forsake hym whose predicatours haue ruled and gouerned so many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so many regions and prouinces haue depended.

But to speake briefly of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in sum thynges folow the Greekes. They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the cite of Mosca, they haue a great monasterie in the whiche are three hundred munkes luyng vnder the rule of Basilus Magnus in the which is also the sepulcher of S. Sergius the abbot. They obserue theyr vowe of chastitie which none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue married virgins of good fame, may bee admitted to the order of presthod, but may neuer bee a munke. The prestes and byshoppes whiche are admitted to orders vnmarrid, may neuer after bee married: nor yet such as haue wiues, may againe when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chastitie. Such as committe adulterie or fornication, are greuously punished by the byshoppes and deprived of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the maner of the Greekes which differeth from oures in dyuers thinges, as in fermented breade after the maner of the Greekes. They put in the chalice as much water as redde wine, which water they vse to heate, bycause (not without a great myserie) there is helde furth of the syde of oure lord, both blud and water, which wee ought by good reason to thynke was not without heate: for els shulde it scarcely haue byn iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr customes and rites are accordyng to the institutions of the primatyue church and the doctrine of Basilus Magnus, and Chylostomus. In this thyng they differ greatly from vs, that they minister the communion to younge children of three yeares of age, which they doo with fermented breade dippe in a sponer full of wyne, and geue it them for the bode and bludde of Chyste.

A notable example of a Christian prince,

Their religion.

A monasterie of. ccc. munkes

Prestes.

Masse.

A myserie.

The primatyue church.

A strange custome.

A briefe

A bryefe description of Moscouia after the later  
wryters, as Sebastian Munster and  
Jacobus Bassaldus.



The prouince of Moscouia, is so named by the  
ryuer Mosco which passeth by the metropoliz  
tane citie of Moscouia cauled Mosca by the  
name of the ryuer Mosco. This prouince was  
cauled of the old wryters, Sarmatia Asiatica.  
The boztherers or confines to the Mosco-  
mians on the one syde towarde the East, are the Tartars cau-  
led Rogat, and the Scianbanians, with the Zagatians. To-  
warde the West, the prouinces of Limonia and Lituania. To-  
warde the South, the ryuer of Tanais and the people consti-  
tuting with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the old wryters Rha.  
And towarde the North, the Ocean sea cauled the Scythian  
sea, and the region of Laponia. Moscouia is in maner all  
playue and full of maryshes, wooddes, and many very great  
ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul  
this Aedyl, as the old autours named it Rha. It beginneth  
at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake  
and runneth into the sea of Bachau, named of the aunciente  
wryters, the sea Caspium or Hircanum. Under the domini-  
on of Moscouia, are certeyne regions and dukedoomes: as  
Alba Russia (that is) whyte Russia. Also Colmogoza, Pleσκο-  
nia, Baluida, Nouogardia, with also manye places of the  
Tartars which are subiecte to the duke of Moscouia. The  
chiefe cities of Moscouia, are Mosca, Pleσκοnia, Nouogar-  
dia, Colmogoza, Drogeria, Viatra, Smolensker, Perekassauia,  
Cologna, Wolodemaria, Rodauia, and Cassam. The people  
of Moscouia are Christians, and haue greate abundaunce of  
hony and waxe: also ryche furrer, as Sabels, Marternes,  
foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars  
which inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of Vol-  
ga, haue no dwellynge places, nor yet cities or castels. But  
cary about with them certeyne cartes or wagens covered  
with beastes hydes, under the whiche they rest, as wee do in  
owre houses,

Sarmatia asi-  
atica.

The Scythi-  
an Ocean.

The ryuer of  
Volga.  
Lacus albus.

The Caspian  
sea.

Their chiefe  
cities.

The wyld  
Tartars.

They

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

**Horzas.** They remoue together in great companies whiche they call Horzas. They are warlike people and good horsemen, and are all Macometistes.

**The bygnes of the cite of Moscouia.** Sebastian Munster in his booke of Vniuersall Cosmographie, wyreth that the cite of Mosca or Mosconia containeth in circuite. xiiii. myles, and that it is twyse as bygge as the cite of Praga in Bohemie. Of the countrey of Mosconia, byt syde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wyreth thus. It extendeth in largenesse foure hundred myles, and is rich in syluer. It is lawfull for no man to go owt of the realme or coome in withowt the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and maryshes. The beastes there by reason of the coulde, are lesse then in other countreis moze southwarde. In the myddest of the cite of Mosca beinge situate in a playne, there is a castell with. xvii. towres and thre bulwarkes so stronge and fayre, that the lyke are scarcely seene in any other place. There are also in the castell xvi. churches, and thre very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges. The dukes pallaice is buylde after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very fayre, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede & beere as is the maner of the mosse parte of the people that inhabite the North partes of the woodde. They are exceedyngely gyuen to droonkennesse. Yet (as some saye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in peine of death to absteyne from such stronge drynkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymes when licence is graunted theym, as twyse or thryse in the yeare. They plowe the grownde with horses and plowes of woodde. Theyr corne and other grayne by reason of longe coulde, doo seldome ware rype on the ground by reason wherof they are sumtimes inforced to rype and drye them in theyr skoues and hotte houses, and then grynd the. They lacke wyne and oyle. Mosconia is extended vnto Turham and Cozelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moscouites caule Don, hauyng his sprynges and originall in Mosconia in the dukedome of Rezensc. It ryseth owt of a grownde that is playne, baren, muddy, full of maryshes and wooddes. And where it procedeth toward the East to the mountaynes of Scythia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the south: and comyng to the maryshes of Meotis

it

It fauleth into them. The ryuer of Volga (sumetyme cauled Vaha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowynge owt of Moscouia, and then bendyng in: to the South and increased with many ocher ryuers, fauleth into the sea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Asia.

The woodde or forest cauled Hircania Sylua, occupieth a smal portion of Moscouia. Yet is it sumwhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth towarde Russia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulles cauled Ari or Bisontes, as wyrteth Paulus Iouius. There are also Alces muche lyke vnto hartes, with longe snoures of flethe and longe legges without any bowinge of theyr hour or pasternes. These beastes, the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Helenes. The iornaye that is betwene Vlna of Lithuania by Smolensc to Mosca, is trauallyd in wynter on sledes by the snowe congeled by longe froste, and made very styppery and compacte lyke Ice by reason of much wearynge and treadynge, by meanes wher of this vyage is performed with incredible celeritie. But in the sommer, the playne countreys can not bee ouercome with owt difficulte labour. For when the snowe begynneth to bee dissolued by continuall heate, it causeth maryshes and quampyes inextricable and daungerous both for horse and man, were it not for certeyne causeyes made of tymbre with in manner infinite labour. The region of Moscouia (as I haue said) beareth neyther bynes nor olyue trees, nor yet any ocher trees that bere any apples or frutes of very plesant or swete sauour or taste except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes & trees are burnt of the coulde blastes of the North wynde. Yet doo the fieldes beare all kyndes of cozne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the fynest kynde of breade is made: also mylle and panyke, whiche the Italians caule Melica: Likewyse all kyndes of pulse, as beanes, peason, rares, and suche other. But theyr chife haruest consisteth of hony and waxe, soasmuch as the hole region is replenyshed with fructfull bees which make most swete hony, not in the hul bande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to passe that both in the wooddes and shadowed launes, are seene many swarmes of bees hangynge on the

The maryshes of Westia.  
Volga.  
Ocha.

The sea Euxinum.

The forest of Hircania.  
Ari.  
Alces.

They traauyt in wynter on sledes.

Causeys of tymbre.

Trees and frutes.

Cozne and grayne.

Hony in wodes and trees.

the

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

the bowes of trees, so that it shall not bee necessaric to caule them together or charme theym with the sounde of balens. There are oftentimes founde great masses of hony combes, conserued in trees of the owlde hony forsaken of bees, foral: much as the husband men can not steke euery tree in so great and large wooddes: In so much that in the rockes or bodiēs of exceadyng great and holowe trees, are sumtymes founde great pooles or lakes of hony. Demetrius thambassadour of the duke of Moscouia whom he sene to the byshop of Rome not many yeares sence, made relation that a husbände man of the contrey not farre from the place where he remayned, see: kyng in the wooddes for hony, descended into a greate hol: lowe tree full of hony into the which he layte vp to the breast, and lyued there only with hony for the space of two dayes, caulpyng in wayne for helpe in that deserte of wooddes. And that in fine dispayrnyng of helpe, he escaped by a maruiculous chaunce, beinge drawen owt by a great beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downeward after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and oportunitie serued) perceaued the beare to bee within his reache, he suddainly clasped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to inforce her strength to leape owt of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

Lakes or  
pooles of  
hony.

A man almost  
drownd in  
hony.

A maruiculous  
chaunce.

Beares feede  
of hony and  
bees.

Beares in-  
uade bulles.

The beares  
synth.

These regions abounde with beares whiche euery where seeke both hony and bees, not only herewith to fyl theyr bel: lies, but also to helpe theyr syght. For theyr eyes are oftentymes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the bees: both which greeces are caled by eatynge of hony. They haue wear: kest heades, as lions haue strongest. In so muche that when (beinge therto inforced) they cast theim selues downe heade: longe from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr fiere, and lye for a tyme astonyshed and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sumtyme on two fiere, and spoyle trees backward. Sumtyme also they inuade bulles, & to hange on them with al theyr fiere, that they wey the with weight. The beare (as sayth Plinie) byngeth furth her byrth the .xxx. day and oftentimes two. Theyr byrth is a certeyne whyte masse of flesh without forme and little bigger then a mouse without eyes, and without heare, with onely the nayles or  
clawes

Slaves commynge forth. But the damme with continuall  
lyckynge, by litle and litle figurthe the informe byrthe.  
When shee entereth into the denne whiche shee hath chosen,  
shee creepeth thyrther with her belly vpwarde lesse the place  
shulde bee sounde by the steyppes of her fiere. And being there  
deliuered of her byrthe, remaineth in the same place for the  
space of .xiiii. dayes immoueable as wyreth Aristoteles. They  
lyue without meate fortye dayes, and for that tyme susteyne  
them selues only by lyckynge and suckynge theyr ryght foote.  
At the lengthe chaunsynge to fynde meate, they fyll theym  
selues so full, that they remedy that surfecte by vompte whi-  
che they prouoke by eatynge of antes. Theyr byrthe is op-  
pressed with so heauy a scape for the space of . xiiii. dayes,  
that it can not bee rayled eyrther with prickinge or woundes,  
and in the meane tyme growe exceedynge fat. After. xiiii.  
dayes they wake from sleepe, and begyn to licke and sucke  
the soles of theyr fore fiere and lyue thereby for a space: Noz  
yet is it apparent that they liue by any other meate vncyll the  
sprynge tyme of the yeare. At whiche tyme begynnynge to  
runne abrode, they feede of the tender buds and younge sprig-  
ges or byaunches of trees, and other herbes correspondente to  
theyr lyppes.

Before fife hundred yeares, the Moscouites honoured  
the goddes of the gentyles: And then fyrste receaued the  
Christian faith when the byshoppes of Grecia began to dis-  
sent from the church of the Latines: and therfore receaued  
the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with  
fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinke that the  
soules of deade menne are not helped with the suffragies of  
preeles, noz yet by the deuotion of theyr frendes or kinfol-  
kes: Also that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the  
tyme of the diuine seruice, the hystorie of the miracles of  
Christe and the Epistels of saynt Paule are rehearsed out of  
the pulpitte. Beyond Moscouia, are manye people whiche  
they caule Scythians, and are partely subiecte to the Prince  
of Moscouia. These are they which duke Iuan subdued, as  
are the people of Derm, Baskird, Cziremissa, Iuhra, Coze-  
la, and Dermiska. These people were Idolatours befoze the  
duke compelled them to baprisme, and appoynted a byshop  
ouer them named Streuen, whom the Barbarians after the  
U. v. i. departure

The beares  
denne.

Beares lyue  
without  
meate. xl.  
dayes.

The sleape  
of beares.

The religion  
of the moscou-  
ites.

The Scythi-  
ans subiecte  
to the duke  
of Moscouia.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

departure of the duke, fledde alpine and newe. But the duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them sore and assigned them a newe byshoppe.

It is here also to bee noted that the olde Cosmographers sayned that in these regions towarde the North pole, there shuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Rhipheos & Hyperbozeos, which neuer helesse are not founde in nature. It is also a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Motham doo sprynge out of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both these ryuers and many other, haue theyz originall in the playnes.

Nexte to Moscouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora throught the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greatest that is knowen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increaseth at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, ouerfloweth the fyeldes round about, and with abundaunce of fatte moysture, resisteth the couldenesse of the ayer. Wherate sowne in the grounde, groweth abundantly without plowynge: and fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, spryngeth, groweth, and ryppeth with woonderfull celeritie of halpynge nature.

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runneth the ryuer of Juga: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marie towne named Utiuga, beinge a hundred and fyftie myles distant from the chiefe citie of Mosca. To this marie towne from the hygher countreys, are sent the precious fures of martenes, sables, woolues and such other whiche are exchaunged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchandies. Hythero Munsterus.

And forasmuche as many doo maruaile that suche plentie of hony shuld bee in so coole a countrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therezfore to be considered that lyke as spices, gums, & odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continuall heate durynge al the hole yeare without impression of the mortifying qualitie of cold wherby al thynges are constrained as they are dilated by heate, euen so in cold & moyst regions (whose moysture is thinner & more watery the then in hot regions) are floures engendered more abundantly as caused by impression of lesse and saynter heate woorkynge in thynne matter

It was then  
an opinion  
that al riuers  
sprynge owte  
of mountaines  
The frutefull  
region of Col  
mogora.  
The great ri  
uer Diuidna.

wheate with  
owt plowing

The ryuer of  
Juga.  
Utiuga.

Fures.

The naturall  
cause of  
much hony in  
cold regions.  
Summes and  
spices in hot  
countreys.

Floures in  
coude regions

of water & the moisture lesse concocte then the matter of gummes and spices and other vinctuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For althoughe (as Gunster saithe here before) the region of Molcouia beareth nother vines or oliues, or any other frutes of sweete sauoure by reason of the coulde-nesse therof, neuerthelste forasmuch as floures (wherof hony is chiefly gathered) may in sommer season growe abundantly in the playnes, maryshes, and wooddes, not onely on the grounde but also on trees in coulde regions, it is agreeable to good reason that great plentie of honye shulde bee in suche regions as a bounde with floures, which are brought furthe with the fyrst degree of heate and fyrst approach of the sonne, as appeareth in the spryng tyme not onely by the springinge of floures in fyeldes and gardeynes, but also of blossomes of trees spryngyng before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrste drawne owte with the loweste and leaste degree of heate, as the lyke is seene in the arte of syllynge wherby all thynne and lyght moystures are lyfied by the fyrst degree of the fyre: and the heupest and thickest moystures are drawne out with more vehement fyre. As we may therfore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummes to the heate of June and spices to the heate of July. Euen so in suche coulde regions whose sommer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moysture of May then with the extreme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to byngge forth abundance of floures as thynge caused by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by theyr tast and sauoure in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate eyther byngge the tongue or offendyng the head as is in spices, gummes, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in cold and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moisture, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykewyse the length of the dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in sommer season in suche coulde regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wytteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that byamble & fearne growe not but in cold regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that spices and hotte seedes, can not growe in coulde regions, forasmuch as beinge of thynne substance, they shalde soone be mortified & extinct by excessive cold. For (as he sayth) nothing

floures of trees.

Blossomes of trees.

An example of the degrees of heate.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Longe dayes and short nyghtes.

Byamble and ferne.

Spices.

## Of Moscouie and Cathay.

can concocte, rype, and attenuate the substance of frutes with out the helpe of ayer agreeable to the natures of such thynges as are brought forth in the same, althowgh it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of swete sauour, for as much as the moysture that is in them, being thynne and but lytle, is by meane heate soone and easely concocte or made rype. Such also as are soone rype, are soone rotten according to the prouerbe.

The sauoure  
of floures.

What plinie  
wryteth of  
hony.

Plinie, althowgh in the. xi. booke of his naturall hystorie. Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and settes or plantes, except sozell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (whiche some caule goose foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayer: for in the. xii. chapyturye of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

Serius is o-  
therwyse cau-  
led *Cameula*,  
this is the  
dogge, of  
whom the ca-  
nicular dayes  
haue theyr  
name.

Thus doommeth from the ayer at the rypynge of certeyne starrs, and especially at the rypynge of *Sirius*, and not before the rypynge of *Vergilike* (whiche are the seven starrs cauled *Pleades*) in the sprynge of the day.

What is hony

For then at the moornyng sprynge, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fat dewe: In so much that such as haue bynne abode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoynded with lyquoure and the heate of theyr headde clammy. And whether

howe hony  
is corrupted.

this bee the swete of heauen, or as it were a certeyne spettyl of the starrs, eyther the iuile of the ayer pourgyng it selfe, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and simple of his owne nature as it fynde fauleth from aboue. But nowe descendyng so far, and infested not only with such vnclene vapoures and exhalations, as it mereth with by the way, but afterward also corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of sundrye tastes and qualities, and lykewyse aswel in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at theyr mouthes) as also by longe resturynge the same in hines, it neuerthelesse reteyneth a great

Hony of great  
quantitie in  
Noith regies

parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiiii. chapyturye of the same booke, he wryteth that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in sum places of *Germanie*, hony is found in such quantitie that there haue bynne seene hony combes of eght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosophie, it dooth appere that abundaunce of hony shulde chiefly bee engendered in such regions where the heate of

Sonnues

Sommer is temperate and continuall as well by nyght as by day as it is not in hotte regions where the nyghtes be longe and coulede as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thynges as are slyned by continuall heats, mowynge, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coulede (as appereth in the art of slyllynge and hatchynge of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate without interposition of contrarie and mortifyinge qualitie, crude thynges are in shorte tyme made rype, sower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heaue made lyght, grosse made subryle, harde made softe, deade made luyng, and in fine bodies made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous woork of dygestion of luyng beastes, wherby the finest part of theyr nutriment is turned into bludde, and the finest of that bludde conuerted into spirites, as the like is also secne in the nurseryment of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the grounde, all whiche are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue spoken. To conclude therfore, if hony bee eyther the sweete of the starres, or the wyse engendered of subryle and fine vapoures rysinge frome the earth, and concocte or digested in the ayer by the sayd continuall and moderate heate, it may sceme by good reason that the same shulde bee engendered in sommer season moze abundantly in coulede regions then in hot, for the causes aforesayd. And that it may by autoritie and reason moze manifestlye appeare bothe that the heate of sommer in coulede regions is continual (as I haue sayd) and also that the coulede in wynter is not there so intollerable to thynghabitauntes of those regions as other doo thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde hereunto what I haue gathered out of the booke of ziglerus wyrtten of the north regions,

hot nyghtes in coulede regions.

A similitude.

Natural heat dooth subryle and digest all thynges.

Subryle vapours digested by heate

Coulede regions

ziglerus.

**O**f the North regions and of the moderate and continuall  
 heate in coude regions aswell in the nyght as in the  
 day in sommer season: Also howe those regi-  
 ons are habitable to th inhabitants of  
 the same, contrary to thoppinion  
 of the owlde wyrters.

ziglerus.



**Q**f this matter, ziglerus in his booke of the  
 North regions in the description of Scandia  
 wyrteth as foloweth.

Wee wyll intreate of this matter, not as  
 pustynge the same in question as byd the owld  
 wyrters, nor gatherynge iudgement deducted  
 of reasons in way of argument, forasmuch as wee are already  
 moze certeyne by hystorie that these coude regions are inhabi-  
 ted. Wee wyll fyrst therfore shewe by naturall reason and by  
 consideration of the sphere, declare how by the helpe of man  
 and arte, coude regions are inhabited withowt damage or  
 destruction of lpyunge beastes: And wyll fyrste speake of the  
 qualitie of sommer, declarynge howe it is there augmented  
 yet intende I not to comprehend all that maye bee sayde in  
 this matter, but only rehearse such reasons and similitudes  
 as are most apparent and easy to bee vnderstoode.

The qualitie  
 of somer in  
 coude regions.

The course  
 of the sonne.

Vapours.

Short and  
 warme  
 nyghtes.

Sothlande

In such regions therfore, as are extended from the burne  
 line or Equinoctiall towarde the north, as much as the sonne  
 rysethe hygher ouer them, so muche are they the moze burnte  
 with heate, as Africa, because it ryseth hyghest ouer them as  
 they are nearest to the Equinoctiall: and tarynge with them  
 so much the hotter time causeth hotter days, with longer &  
 coulder nyghtes to restore the damage of the day past by reaso-  
 of the moisture consumed by vapour. But in such regions ouer  
 the which the sonne ryseth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remaine-  
 neth there the longer in the day, and causeth so much the hot-  
 ter and warmer nyghtes, as receyvyng warme vapours of  
 the day past, which vapours helpe the woork of the day. I  
 speake as I haue founde by experience, saythe Upsalientis.  
 For I haue felt the sommer nyghtes scarcely tollerable for  
 heate in Sothlande, wheras I felte them coude in Rome.  
 This benefite of thincrease of the day, doth augment so much  
 the moze in coude regions as they are nearer the poles: and  
 ceaseth

reacheth not vntyll it coome directly ouer the center or poyn-  
te of the ares or arceltree of the worlde, where the sonne beinge  
at the hyghest in sommer, is eleuate abouēt. xliiii. degrees: In  
which regions, one continual day consisteth of. vi. monethes  
from the sprynge tyme by the standynge of the soonne (cauled  
Solstitium) in the signe of Cancer to Autumne. The soonne  
therfoze, withowt any offence of the night, gyueth his influ-  
ence vppon those landes with heate that neuer ceaseth du-  
rynge that tyme, which maketh to the great increase of soom-  
mer by reason of continuance. We haue now therfoze thought  
good to gather by a certeyne coniecture howe greatly wee  
thinke the soommer to bee increased hereby.

We haue before declared howe hyghe the soonne is ele-  
uate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the staye of  
the soonne: And so manye partes is it eleuate in Rome at the  
stay of the soonne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the  
yeare. But here, in the mydde wynter, the soonne at noone  
tyde is beneficiall, and byngeth forth floures, roses, and  
seledoures. I haue gathered sum in wynter in the moneth of  
December, not procured at home by humane arte, but grow-  
inge in open gardenes in maner in euery bedde vnder the bare  
heauen, brought forth only by the soonne. But this benig-  
nitye of the soonne, continueth not pass fiue houres in the na-  
turall day, forasmuch as thoperation therof is extinct by the  
coudeneste of the nyght folowynge. But if this benefite  
myght bee receaued withowt hinderance of the nyght, as it  
is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot re-  
gions vnto winter, it shulde suerlye bynge forth manye  
wonderfull thynges, if moysture fayled not. And by  
this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceane that  
the Romane winter, althowgh it be not hotte, yet to be equal  
in heate to the full sprynge tyme in the same citie durynge the  
tyme of the sayde fiue houres. And thus by a similitude of the  
height of the soonne vnder bothe places, and of the knownen  
qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by thaccess of the soonne  
to such places where the longest day continueth certeyne mo-  
nethes, wee maye gather that soommer in places vnder the  
pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane sprynge.

But the more difficulte question, is of the tyme of the. vi.  
monethes in the whiche the soonne leaueth those regions,  
and

One day of. vi.  
monethes.

howe the  
sommer is in-  
creased in  
coud regions.

Rome.

Could nyghtes  
in hot regions.

The Romane  
wynter.

One nyght of  
vi. monethes

## Of the north regions.

**Objections.**

and goeth by the contrarye or ouerthwarte circle towarde the south in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkenesse and nyghtes not increased, which may bee the cause that beastes can not seeke theyr foode. And that also the coulde shulde then bee intollezable: by which double euyls all thynges constrained shulde dye, so that no beaste were able to abyde thiniuries of wynter and famen insuinge therof: but that all beastes shulde perishe before the sommer solowynge, when they shulde bringe forth theyr broode or succession: And that for these causes, the sayde coulde clime shulde bee perpetually desolate and uninhabitable. To al which obiections, we answer in this maner

**The twylyghtes.**

**The lyght of the moone.**

**The myght vnder the pole.**

**A demonstra-  
tion.**

As touchynge the nyghtes not increased, I saye, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the soonne fauleth, so suddely commeth the darke nyght but that the euenynge dooth substitute and prolonge the day longe after, as also the day spyngge or dawnyngge of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the rysynge of the soonne: After the whiche, the residue of the nyght that receaueth no lyght by the sayde euenynge and mozynge twilghtes, is accomplished by the lyght of the moone, so that the nyghtes are seldome vnaugmented. Let this bee an exemple proued by owre temperate regions, wherby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Therefore euen there also the twilghtes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl more presently demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the soonne descendynge from the highest halfe sphere by xviii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twylight, so that at the lengthe the darke nyght succeedeth: And that the soonne approachynge, and rysynge aboue the hyghest halfe sphere by as many paralels, dooth dimynishe the nyght and increase the twylight. Ageyne, by the position or placcynge of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralelles therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are also paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the soonne descendynge there vnder the horizon, dooth not bynne darke nyghtes to those regions but yll it cometh to the paralele distant, xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall,

Other

Other demonstrations hereof are made by certeyne figures of Astronomie, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I coulde not gette the same grauen or cutte.

Durynge the tyme of these sayde syxe moonethes of darke- nesse vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the soonne and the sayde twylyghes, onely for the space of thre moonethes, in the whiche the soonne goeth and retur- neth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of thre moonethes is withowt remedy frome hea- ren. For the moone with her full globe increased in lyghte, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackynge lyght, euery one by them selues, halfe the course of the moonethe: by whose benefite it commeth to passe that the night, named as vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that conti- nually or al at one tyme: but this also diuided into thre sortes of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche euery one endureth for the space of twoo weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accor- dyngly. And this is the reason conceaued of the poure of the sphere wherby we testifie that the sommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to luyunge beastes.

But we wyll nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this coulde so greatly feared, is moze remitte & tollerable then ooure opinion: so that compared to the nature of such beastes as liue there, it may bee abydden. And there is no doubt but there are auncours of moze antiquitie then that age in the which any thyng was exactly knowen or disco- uered of the north regions. The owlde wyters therfore per- suaded onely by naked coniecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of those places: Or rather by the estimati- on of heauen, the which, bycause they felte it to bee hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men bozne in the clyme of Egypte and Breccia, tooke thetby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hystorie of Strabo is knowen, that a potte of brasse which was broken in sunder with frosen wa- ter, was brought from Pontus and shewed in Delphis in to- ken of a greuous wynter. Here therfore, they that so great- ly feared the winter (such as chaunceth to the earth vnder the xviii. paralele) and therfore consecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what coulde such men truly define vpon regions so farre withowt that paralele, whether they

xxx. i,

were

The woone,

Remedies of nature & art.

The owlde wyters per- suaded by coniecture.

A brassen pot broken wth frost.

## Of the north regions.

**Fishes of  
the North  
seas.**

**The North  
sea.**

**The qualitie  
of water.**

**The lande**

**The diuine  
providence in  
moderatynge  
the elements**

were inhabited or not? But such as folowed these, being contented with thinuocations of the owlde autours, and bozne in maner vnder the same qualitic of heauen, persisted wyllynge-ly in the same opinion, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges wherof wee nowe intreate: so lyghly was that opinion receaued as touching the uninhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faith (forasmuch as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to stande ageynst the sentence of the owlde autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabited with hearynges, coddres, haddockes, and brettres, tunnyes, and other great fyshes, with thynfinite number wherof, tables are furnyshed throughe a great parte of Europe: Altho the are taken in the north sea extended beyonde our knowe-ledge. This sea at certeyne tymes of the yeare, poureth furth his plentifulnesse, or rather dypueth furth his increase to seke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermoze also, even the mouthes of the river of Byber receaue a fysh as a newe gost sent from the north sea. This swamme thwyle throughe Fraunce and thwile throughe Spayne: Quere passed the Ligurian and Tuscan sea to communicate her selfe to the cite of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those regions are replenyshed with fysh. In so much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguysh the thyncrease of the yeare folowynge, and the succession reparable so many hundreth yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it shulde of necessitie folowe, that one of these two elements, the earthe and the water, shuld be destructiue to byynge creatures, the water shulde chiefly haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde so tractable, that in the deepe wynter, both that increase is brought furth, and fyshynge is also exercised. The lande is lykewise inhabited with lyke plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre: Let the sayth hereof rest in the exposition folowynge, wherein we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may coomme to passe. Therfore as touchynge nature, wee suppose that the diuine providence hath made nothyng uncommunicable, but to haue gyven such order to all thynges wherby euery thyng maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremities of the elements consent with theyr nexte. The ayer is grosse about the earth and water:

Water: But thinne and hotte about the fyze. By this prouidence of nature, the uttermost sea is very salte. And salte (as wyntereth Plinie) yeldeth the fatnesse of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne nature heate, is of properie agreeable to fyze. The sea then, beinge all of such qualitie, pouereth furth it selfe farre vpon the extreme landes, wherby by reason of the saltenesse therof, it moueth and stirreth by generatiue heate, as by fatnesse it nurysheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It gynneth this fruitfulness to the earth at certeyne stads, although the earth also it selfe, haue in his inner bowels the same line: ly and nuryshing heate, wherby not only the venues, caues and holowe places, but also springes of water are made warme: And this so much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemple, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suchlande are fruteful of metals, in the which, syluer and copper are concocted and molten into veynes, which can scarcely bee dootne in fornaes. By this reason also, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceyuinge the earthe and the waters, and throughte both those natures breathyng furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualitie of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beastes, as wyntereth the huge byggenesse of the whales in those seas, with the strength of bodye and longe lyfe of suche beastes as liue on the lande: whiche thyng coude not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodiously nuryshed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increase is hyndered by any iniurie, or that is euilly fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can prosper well. Neyther are such thynges as lyue there, offended with theyr naturall wynter as thowgh an Egyptian or Ethiopian were suddely conueyed into those coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lyttle and lyttle broughte fyrst acquainted with the nature of that heauen, as may be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the historie of holy scripture. They that were led from Mesopotania, and that famous towne of Babilon toward the north partes of the worlde in the fyrst dispercion of nations, dyd not immediatly passe to the extreme boundes, but planted theyr habitacions fyrst vnder a myddle heaue betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr posteritie was accustomed the better to susteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais

The nature of the sea.

Salte.

Generatiue heate.

Outwarde coldis cause of inwards heate.

Metals.

Vapours and exhalations.

Whales.

Beastes.

Wherby maye bee considered the cause of the death of our men that sayle directly to Sussia.

No passage from one extreme to another but by a meane.

## Of the north regions.

Caves and  
dennes.

Valleys.

The best  
furies.  
Sables.

Beastes that  
lye hyd in  
Wynter.

All beastes  
haue the na-  
ture of the  
place where  
they are en-  
gendered.

nais, as he: at cometh from winter to somer, maye the  
better after abyde The and snowe beinge fyrst hardened ther-  
to by the frostes of Autumne. In lyke maner moztall men, ac-  
customed to beare the hardenelle of places nexte vnto theym,  
were therby at the length more confirmed to susteyne the ex-  
tremes. And here also, if any sharpenelle remaine that maye  
seeme intollerable, nature hathe prouyded for the same with  
other remedies. For the lande and sea, hathe gyuen vnto  
beastes, deepe and large caves, dennes, and other holowe pla-  
ces and secrete corners in mountaynes and rockes bothe on  
the lande and by the sea bankes, in the which are euer contey-  
ned warme vapoures so much the more intent and vehement,  
in howe much they are the more constrained by extreme cold.  
Nature hath also gyuen valleys diuerced and defended frome  
the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewise covered beastes with  
haire so much the thicker in howe much the vehemencie of  
cold is greater: by reason wherof the best and rycheest furies  
are brought frome those regions, as Sables whose price is  
growne to great excele nexte vnto gold and precious stones,  
and are esteemed princely ornaments. The beastes that beare  
these furies, are hunted chiefly in wynter (whch thyng is  
more straunge) because they haire is thenne thicker and clea-  
ueth faster to the skyn. Howe greuous then shall we thinke  
the winter to bee there where this lytle beast lyueth so well,  
and where the hunters may search the dennes and hauntes of  
such beastes throughte the wooddes and snowe? But suche  
beastes the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they  
are not able to abyde thiniurie of coude, eyther lye hydde in  
wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beastes  
also in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie  
to man bothe by arte and industry to defende him selfe both a  
brode and at home. Abrode, with a thicke vesture, and the  
same well doctored. At home, with large fyres on hartes,  
chymneys, and in stoues for the day, with close chambers,  
and couches, softe and warme beddes for the nyght: by whch  
the remedies they mitigate the winters which seeme rigorous  
to strangers, althoughe they are to thynhabitauntes more  
tolerable then owre opinion, as in deede by the fyrst natural  
mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such thinges are agre-  
able to them as seeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike  
and

and the beare in Sarmatia, are fiercer as in theyr presente strength and bigour: but translated into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strength and courage. The foule cauled Cicops (which sum thinke to bee the Horke) dooth not tarre the winter: yet doo the cranes cooome at that tyme.

The Scythian wyll accuse the Romane heauen as induceinge feuers, wheras neuertheles there is none more holloome. Such as haue byn tenderly brought vp, if they cooome suddely in to the campe, can not away with hunger, watchynge, heate, passages throwgh ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaules. But the old souldier exercised in the warres, heeth these as meditations of the fiede, as hardened thereto by longe experience. He that hath byn accustomed to the hadome of the cite, and wyll attempte the sayinge of the poet Virgill, *Nudus ora, sero nudus*, that is, naked and bare withowt house & home, shall to his perell make an ende of the verse, *Habebis signa ferena* (that is) he shall haue the coude ague. Suche thynges therfore as seeme harde vnto vs, beinge accustomed by litle and litle, becomme more tollerable: In so much that this increase of suferance by such degrees, dooth oftentimes grow to prodigious effectes faere beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and arte, wherby it may appere that no part of the lande or sea is denyed to luyng creatures. The reader may also perceaue howe large matter of reasons and examples may bee opened, for the declarynge of owre opinion wherewith wee rest. Let therfore thauthoritie of the ancient authors gyue place, and the content of the newe wyters agree to this history, not as nowe at the length comprehended. Whereas before many hundred years Germanie and Scandia had intercourse of marchandises not severed by the large goulfe of Bothia, but as nowe by owre commentaries brought to light. And hauyng sayde thus much in manner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wyte of the north regions.

**S**chondia.

Schondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to say as sayre Dania or sayre Denmarke. It lieth in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandunavia if there bee no faute in theyr exemplers,

what ever  
cic may doo.

use maketh  
masteries.

Scandia.

Scone, is  
sayre in the  
duch roonge.

Of the north regions. 110

The fertilitie  
of Scandia.

He meaneth  
Diodorus Si-  
culus.

Thiusitions  
of the Gothes

Transilvania

It was named Scandia, by reason of the fayrenesse and fruit-  
fulness thereof. And this aswell for that in beneficiall hea-  
uen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of hauens and marce  
townes, abundaunce of ryuers and fysh, plenty of beastes,  
great quantitie of metall, as golde, syluer, copper, and leade,  
diligent culture of the grounde, with townes and cities wel  
inhabited and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it gyueth the place to  
none other fortunate region. This was in maner vnknowne  
to the owlde Greekes and Latins as may appere by this ar-  
gumente that with one consente they affirmed that in these  
north regions the cold zone or climate, was condemned to per-  
petuall snowe, intollerable to all lyuing creatures. For fewe  
of the haue made mention herof as to be inhabited. Amonge  
whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, sayth in his fourth booke,  
that Scandania is of vnknowne byggenesse: and only that  
portion thereof to be knowne which is inhabited with the  
nation of the Hilleuiones in fiftie byllages. Neether yet is Eni-  
gia lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue  
placed most fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whi-  
che the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of masse innocente beha-  
uour vnder the tracte of those landes: and that there came  
from thence to Delphos, cerreyne religious virgines with  
holmes and gyftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore  
that that nation obserued this institution vntyll the sayde  
virgins were violated of them of whome they were receaned  
as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiqui-  
tie, both of the greatnesse of Scandia, and the people that  
inhabite the same, althowgh they were sence vnknowne, as  
lyke as the Gothes departed from these north landes al-  
thowgh they obteyned. The empire of the regions aboue the  
marillhes of Aegoris and the coastes of the sea Euxinus, with  
the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a por-  
tion which is nowe cauled Transilvania) and the bankes of  
the ryuer of Danubius, and in fine invaded the Romane Em-  
pire, yet were not the regions wel knowne from whence they  
tooke theyr originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owlde  
wyriters are vnskillfull wyrtiers, les to certifie of owre narrati-  
ons as touchyng these landes vnknowne to them, Euen so  
the other parte which excluded the same as vnhabitable, are  
so bee conuincid lesse theyr auctoritie beinge admitted, shuld  
engender

enge vnder opinions not agreeable or conuenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Moscouia, writeth thus. Scandia or Scordia, is no Island (as some haue thought) but parte of the continent or firme lande of Suetia, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Bothe lande: And that nowe the kynge of Denmarke possesseth a great parte therof. But wheras the wyters of these thinges haue made Scordia greater then Suetia, & that the Bothes and Lumbardes came frome thence, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these thre kyngdomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scordia, forasmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the sea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frozen sea, was vnknowne: And that by reason of so many marishes, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatnesse of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle knowne. Which thyng hath byn the cause that summe iudged all that was cauled by the name of Scordia, to bee one great Islande.

The Bothes and Lumbardes.

**C Gronlande.**

**G**ronlande is interpreted greene lande: so cauled for the great increase and frutesfulnesse of pasture. By reason wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at such tyme as Shyppes may passe thither they set furth great heapes of cheese and butter to bee sould, wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rough with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder thordinariation of Nordesia. To one of these, was of late yeares a byshop appoynted onely by the tittle of a suffragane in consideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place and difficult nauigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them selfe of mouable wyttes and gyuen to magical artes. For it is sayde that they (as also the people of Laponia) doo rayle tempestes on the sea with magical inchauntmentes, and byynge such Shyppes into daungeare as they intende to spoile. They vse lyttle Shyppes made of lether, and use ageynste the brulynge of the sea and rockes, and wryth them assaye ether Shyppes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writeth in his Decades

frutesfull pasture.

Religion neglected.

Inchaunters

of

The voyage  
of Sebastian  
Cabote to the  
frosen sea.

Gronlande.

wardhus.

Lapponia &  
Gronlande.

Schoeni.

Cabote tould  
me that this  
Ile is of  
freshe wa-  
ter, and not  
of the sea.

A commixtō  
of salt water  
and freshe.

The sea be-  
twene No-  
way and Is-  
lande.

Terra Viridis.

of the Spanishe navigations, that Sebastian Cabote sayling from Englande continually towarde the north, folowed that course so farre that he chaunced vpon greate flakes of Ise in the mooneth of July: and that diuertynge from thence, he folowed the coaste by the shore bendynge towarde the South vntyl he came to the cline of the Ilande of Hispaniola aboue Cuba, an Ilande of the Canibales. Which narracion hath giuen me occasion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitlarch to the continent or firme lande of Lapponia aboue the castell of Wardhus: which chynge I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebyschoppe of Midzotlia, constantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lapotic consent with them in the lyke magical practises and doo neyther imbrace the Christian religion nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykeneſſe of customes to bee betwene them because they toyne togyther in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to disagree. For betwene both these people, the distance is not full twoo hundredeth Schani, euery one being a space of grounde containing, lx. furlonges, which make. vii. myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabote chaunced into such Ise. And albeit as touchynge the mooneth of July, I will contend it is not well reherſed, no althowghe he had sayled vnder the pole, for such reasons as wee haue declared before to the contrary; neuertheleſſe, that at sum tyme he sayled by Ise, this testifieth in that he sayled not by the mayne ſea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehending and imbrayng the ſea in forme of a goulfe, wheras for the ſame cauſe, the goulfe of Borhland is froſen because it is ſtreight & narrow, in the whiche alſo the lyttle quantitie of ſalt water is ouercome by the abundance of freshe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norwaye and Iſlande, the ſea is not froſen for the contrary cauſe, for almuch as the pouce of freshe water is there ouercome of the abundance of the ſalte water. There is a ſame (but of vncerteyne autoritie) that the Spanyardeſ ſayle at this preſente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule Terra viridis, that is, the greene lande, byingynge from thence ſuche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Toward the north, it reacheth to the  
vknown

unknowne lande vnder the pole, from whence also the cheues  
and robbers of the Disme come into this lande. Whiche pigme-  
and almost enuironed with the sea, as are they whiche the  
Cosmographers caule Thelesonacti or Peninsula (that is) al-  
most Ilandes:

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East Iyde whiche lyeth  
towards Norway.

Wardhus castell.	54.		70.	30.
Towards the North.	53.	30.	71.	30.
The fyrst extention.	40.		71.	40.
The seconde extention.	28.		72.	
Witfarch, promont.	22.		67.	
The extention.	5.		61.	45.

It is continued from thence by the coastes of the lande of Baccallaos.

Towards the west and north, it is terminated with an vn-  
knowne ende of landes and seas.

Ilande.

Ilande is interpreted the lande of Ile, and is cauled of Island ca-  
the owlde wynter Thyle. It is extended betwene the led Thyle.  
south and the north almost two hundred schoenes in lon-  
gitude. It is for the most part full of mountaynes and bu- Schoeni is  
cultured. But in the playnes it hath suche frutesfull pastures, lx. furlonges.  
that they are sayne sumtymes to dyue the beastes from their  
feedynge lest they shulde bee suffocate with to much fatnes,  
This Ilande is famous by the strange miracles of nature, of  
the which Sars Grammaticus in his bystorie of Denmarke,  
and Planus Bothus in his description of the north landes,  
doe make mention. There are in it thre mountaynes of mar-  
ueylous height the toppes whereof are covered with perpe-  
tuall snowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke na-  
ture to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyling  
with continuall flames of fyre and castynge furth bymstone.  
One of these is named Helga, and the other Mons Crucis (that  
is) the mounte of the crosse. The thyrde is named Becla:  
whose flames neyther consume flaxe or towne, matters moste  
apt to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with  
lyke

Of the north regions. 10

lyke force as the shotte of great artillerie is driven furth by violence of fyre, euen so by the commixtion and repugnance of fyre, coulde, and bymistome, greate stones are here throwne into the ayer. Here vnto these mountaynes are thre chynkes or open places in the earthe of houghe byggennesse and suche depth (especially at the mounte Becla) that no syght can attayne therto. But to such as looke into them, there fyrt appere men as thowgh they were drowned and yet breathyng furth theyr sowles: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to resorte to theyr owne, they aunswere with mooznyng voyce and greuous syghes, that they must departe from thense to the mount Becla, and therewith suddely hant the owre of syght. The toweth abowt the Glannde for the space of seven or eyght moonethes, makynge by runnyng toggyther a certeyn miserable waylinge and gromyng noyse not vnlyke the voyce of man. The inhabitants thynke, that in this Isle & the mounte Becla, are the places where the euill soules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portiz or of this Isle, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a close vessel or cofer, the same dooth so vanyll the tyme when the other Isle abowt the Glannde dissoluerth, that not so much as one droppe of water or Isle can therof bee founde.

Strange Visions,

Isle.

Purgatory.

A strange thynge.

Four Springes of contrary Nature.

Abundaunce of brimstone. Dyled fyre

Scarfenesse of corne.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng toward the sea coastes, are foure spynges of water of mozte diuers and contrary nature. The fyrst, by reason of his perpetuall and feruente heate, suddely turnerth all bodie that are caste therein, into stones, reseruyng neuerthelesse theyr fyrt forme and shape. The seconde, is of intollecable coulde. The thyrde is sweeter then hony, and most pleasaunte to quenche thyrst. The fourth is playne poyson, pestilent, and deadely. There is furthemore in these spynges suche abundaunce of bymistome, that a thousande pounde weight thereof is bought for lytle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe wares, are dyled fyre, as soles, maydens, playces, salpas stockes, and such other which they exchange for wheat and such other thynge as are brought thither from Lubbeck Hamborowe, and Amsterdam. For they haue oftentymes such scarfenesse of corne, that they vse dyled fyre in the steade of breade, althowgh in sommer the Glannde so dozyll thet with greene and frucefull meadowes, that they are fayne sumtimes to

to dyue theyr beastes from pasture leaste they shulde suffocate  
 for to much fattenece, as I haue sayde before. They make  
 very good butter, and apte to bee bled in matters of physicke.  
 There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as falcons  
 gersfalcons, lanners, and sperhaukes. Also rauens, crows,  
 beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue  
 most swyfte hories: and such as runne. xxx. myles continual-  
 ly withowt rest or bayte. They haue manye churches: and  
 houses buylded of the bones of whales and other greate fyl-  
 shes. The nauigation is not open to this Ilande but in som-  
 mer season: and that only for the space of foure moonethes,  
 by reason of the coule and yle whereby the passage is stop-  
 ped. If any stryfe or debate aryse on the sea amonge the ma-  
 riners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the  
 place althowgh he haue knowleage therof, yet dooth he not  
 punythe them, forasmuch as it apperteyneth not to his office  
 to decerne such thynges as are doonne on the sea, but only on  
 the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by  
 reason of whales and such other monsters of the sea, excepte  
 the mariners take good heede and keepe them farre frome the  
 shypes with the noyse of drummes, and emptie barrells cast  
 into the sea. There are many mynstrels and other that play  
 on instrumentes, with the swete noyse whereof, they vie  
 to allure foules and fishes to theyr nettes and snares. Many  
 also, lye luyunge in caues and denues to auoyde the sharpe-  
 nesse of coule, as the Africanes doo the lyke to defend them  
 selues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne  
 cauled Wepzarch, (lyinge betwene Ilande and Brunland  
 or Bronlande) is erected a shypmans quadrant of maruillous  
 byggened, made by two pirates named Dinnigt & Dothorst  
 in fauour of such as sayle by those coastes that they may ther-  
 by auoyde the dangerous places lyinge towarde Bronland.  
 The myddest of the Ilande, 7 0 65 30.  
 The cite Harsol, &c. 7 40 60 42.

haukes.  
 white rauens.  
 houses of  
 whales  
 bones.  
 The nauiga-  
 tion to Iland

whales.  
 One thyng  
 seruyng for  
 contrary vies  
 A shipmans  
 quadrant.

Laponia.

The region of Laponia, was so named of the people that  
 inhabite it. For the Germanys, caule all suche La-  
 pones, as are simple or vnapt to thynges, This peo-

Of the north regions,

People of  
great agilitie.

A strange  
apparell.

The cause of  
an owld cr-  
roure.

So doo the  
Tartars.

Plentie of  
wyld beastes

ple is of fraule stature, and of such agilitie of bodie, that ha-  
uynge theyr quyuers of arrowes gotten to them & theyr bowes  
in theyr handes, they can with a leape, cast them selues  
thorough a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubite. They  
seyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the  
maner of the Tartars. They are exercised in hurlyng the  
darte and shootynge from theyr youth: in so muche that they  
giue theyr chyldren no meate vntyll they hit the marke they  
shoote at, as dyd in owld tyme thynhabitaunces of the Is-  
landes cauled Balares. They vse to make theyr apparell  
streight and close to theyr boddies that it hynder not theyr  
woozke. Theyr winter bestures are made of the hole skynnes  
of scales or beates artificially brought & made supple. These  
they tye with a knote aboue theyr heades, leaunye onely  
two holes open to looke throughe, and haue all the residue of  
theyr boddies couered as though they were lobed in sakes,  
but that this beinge adapted to all partes of theyr boddies, is  
so made for commoditie and not for a punishment as the Ro-  
mans were accustomed to some pericides in sakes of leather  
with a cocke, an ape, and a serpent, and so to hurle them a-  
lyue all together into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke  
it came to passe that in owld tyme it was ratherely beleued  
that in these regions there were men with rough & hery boddies  
wilde beastes, as parte made relation throughe ignoraunce,  
parte also takynge pleasure in rehearsall of suche thynges as  
are strange to the hearers. The Japoncs defended by this  
arte and industry, go abrode and withstande the sharpnes of  
wynter and the nozth wyndes, with all the iniuries of hea-  
uen. They haue no houses, but certeyne tabernacles like ten-  
tes or haies wherewith they passe from place to place & change  
theyr mansions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the peo-  
ple of Sarmacia cauled in owld tyme Amapobit, which vsed  
waynes in the steade of houses. They are much gyuen to hun-  
tynge: and haue such plentie of wyld beastes that they kylle  
them in maner in euery place. It is not lawfull for a wo-  
man to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her  
hulbande wente owte on huntynge the same daye: noz yet to  
touche with her hande any part of the beaste that is taken by  
her

tyll her husbände reache her on the spiere suche a portion of  
 flesh as he thinketh good. They tyll not the grounde. The  
 region nurysheth no kynde of serpentes: yett there greace  
 and noysoome gnattes. They take spagein greace plentie:  
 by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the  
 Ethiopians cauled Ichthyophagi. For as these drie they fill he  
 with feruent heate, so doo they dye them with coude, and  
 grende oz stampe them to powder as smaule as meale oz floute  
 They haue such abundaunce of these spages, that they haue  
 great plentie therof in certeyne soze houses to cary them vn-  
 to other landes nere about them, as Norwaye & whyte  
 Russia. Theyr shippes are not made with nayles, but are tye  
 toggyther and made fast with cordes and wythythes. With  
 these they sayle by the stoyf ryuers betwene the mountaines  
 of Laponia, beinge naked in sommer that they may the better  
 shyppie in the tyme of perell, and gather togerher such wa-  
 res as are in danger to bee lost by wyndyacke. Part of them  
 exercise handicraftes, as imbrotherynge and weaynynge of  
 cloth interlaced with golde and syluer. Suche as haue diu-  
 sed any necessary arte, oz doo increace and amende thynneri-  
 ons of other, are openly honoured, and rewarded with a  
 besture, in the which is imbrothered an argument oz token of  
 the thynge they deuised. And this remaineth to the posses-  
 sorie of theyr famelic in token of theyr deserues. They frame  
 shippes, buylde houses, and make diuers sortes of household  
 stuffe artificially, and transpoyte them to other places nere  
 aboute. They bye and sell bothe for exchaunge of wares  
 and for money. And this only by consent of both parties with-  
 out communicacion: yett not for lacke of wytt: oz for rude-  
 nesse of maners, but because they haue a peculiar language  
 vnknowen to theyr boztherers. It is a valiant nation, and  
 lyued longe free, and susteyned the warres of Norwaye and  
 Succia vntyll at the length they submitted them selues, and  
 payde eche furres for theyr tribute. They chose them selues  
 a gouerneur whom they caule a kynge: But the kyng of Suc-  
 cia gyueth hym autoritie and administratton. Neuerthe-  
 lesse, the people in theyr lutes and doubtfull causes, resorte  
 to Succia to haue theyr matters decised,

No serpents.

Great gnats.

Abundaunce  
of sylph.

Shippes with-  
out nayles.

Science ho-  
noured.

Sargeynynge  
withowt  
woodes.

Of the north regions.

No horses.

A beast of  
marueyous  
strength and  
swyftnesse.

What Schoe-  
nus is. Ioke  
of Gronland.

The change  
of the hoise.

The owld au-  
tours cauled  
all the north  
people Scy-  
thyans.

Erasmus la-  
menteth this  
in his fyrste  
booke de ra-  
tione conciona-  
di, where he  
speaketh of  
the people,  
cauled pilapii

In theyr toyneys, they goe not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any house, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses; but in the steade of them, they take certeyne wild beastes which they caule Keen, beinge of the kinde byggene of a mule, with rough heare lyke an Aste, elouen feete, and branched hornes lyke a hart, but lower and with fewer antleites. They will not abyde to bee rydden. But when they peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they so iopned to the chariotte or steade, they runne in the space of .xxiii. houres, a hundreth and fiftie myles, or .xxx. schoenous: The whiche space they take to chaunge the horizon thysle: that is thysle to come to the furthest signe or marke that they see a fayre of. Whiche doubtesse is a token both of the marueylous swyftnesse and great strength of these beastes beinge able to continewe runnyng for so great a space, in the meane whyle also spendynge sumtyme in feedynge. I suppose that this thynge was sumewhat knowen to the owld wyrters, although receaued in maner by an obscure and doubtful fame. For they also wyte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hartes.

They neyther folowe the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it or are offended therewith as are the Jewes: but do sumtymes receaue it favorably to gratifie the princes to whome they obey. And that no more of them imbrace the Christian fayth, the faulte is sumwhat to bee imputed to the byshoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiected this cure and charge of instructynge the nation, or suffered the faith of Christ to be suffocate euen in the fyrst sprynge. For vnder the pretense of religion, they woulde haue aduanced theyr owne reuenues and overburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwysle here then in all Christendome, which thynge is doubtesse the cause of mooste greuous defections. I harde John a byshoppe of Bohlande say this: We that gouerne the church of Upsalia, and haue vnder owre diocese a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynge of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen so absteynyng from vnspychuous couerousnesse wherby religion is abused for lucre, we doo in all places owre diligent endeour that we misse no occasion wherby this nation as offended by owre synnes

sinnes, maye bee the lesse wyllunge, to embrace the Christian  
 fayth. This is the state of the religion amonge the Lapones:  
 Althowgh of theyr owne institution and custome receaued of  
 theyr predicatours, they are Idolatours, honourynge that  
 luyunge thynge that they meete fyrst in the moornynges, for the  
 god of that daye, and diuynge thereby theyr good lucke or  
 euyll. They also erecte images of stone vpon the mountaynes,  
 which they esteeme as goddes, attributing to them diuine ho-  
 nour. They solempne mariages, and begynne the same with  
 fyre and slynte, as with a mysterie so aptely applyed to the  
 image of stone as if it had byn receaued frome the myddle of  
 Grecia. For in that they adhibite a mysterie to fyre; as they  
 doo not this alone (forasmuche as the Romanes obserued the  
 same custome) euen so are they herein partly to be commended  
 in that they vse the ceremonies of so noble a people. The mys-  
 terie of the fynte is no lesse to bee praysed, both forasmuche  
 as this is domesticall philosophie, and hath also a nere affi-  
 nitie and signification to these sonemnitie. For as the slynte  
 hath in it fyre luyng hydde whiche appeareth not but by mo-  
 uynge and force, so is there a secrete lyfe in both kyndes of  
 man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction, commethe  
 furth to a luyng byrth. They are furthermore experte in-  
 chaunters. They tye three knottes on a stryng hangynge at  
 a whippe. When they lose one of these, they rayse tollerable  
 wyndes. When they lose an other, the wynde is more vehem-  
 ment. But by losynge the thyrde, they rayse playne tempestes  
 as in owlde tyme they were accustomed to rayse thunder and  
 lyghnyng. This arte doo they vse ageinst such as sayle by  
 theyr coastes, and stape or moue the ryuers and seas more or  
 lesse as they lyst to thewe fauoure or displeasure. They make  
 also of leade certeyne shorte magicall daries of the quantitie  
 and length of a synger. These they thryue ageynste such of  
 whome they desyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer so farre  
 distant. They are sumtymes so vered with the canker on their  
 armes or legges that in the space of thre dayes, they dye  
 throught the vehemencie of the payne. The sonne fauleth very  
 whie in these regions: and poulengerth one continuall nyghte  
 for the space of thre mooneches in wynter, durynge whiche  
 tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the cwylyghte  
 of euenynges and moornynges. This is very cleare, but con-  
 tinueth

Idolatrie.

A misterte of  
 manage in  
 fyre & slynt.

Experte in  
 chaunters.

Magical  
 daries.

The canker.

One nyght of  
 thre moos-  
 nettes.

Of the north regions. 10

shineth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght shynynge of the moone. Therfore that day that the sonne returneth to the hemisphericke, they keepe holy day and make great myrry with solemne festiuitie. And these are the maners of this nation, not so brutish as woorthy therfore to be cauled Laponies for theyr vnaptnesse or simplicitie as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empire and vled no familiaritie or intercourse with other nations and knewe not the commoditie of theyr owne thynges, neyther the price and estimation of theyr fures in othere regions, by reason whereof they coulde geat plentie of them for sum of othere wares of smaule value.

Rich fures.

The boundes or limittes of Laponia (beinge the extreme lande of Scandia knowne towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the world yet vnknowne to vs: And furthermore towarde the same parte of the breermost sea, accordynge to this description.

The first coaste,	70	72.
The coaste folowynge.	80	7.
That thar yet foloweth,	90	70.

plentie of sea fysh.

From the first shynynge places and store houses of this sea, they cary foorth to Nordbothnia and whyte Russia, landes confinynge to them, great plentie of fysh. Wherby we may conieecture that this sea is extended on euery syde toward the North. Towarde the weste, it is limited with the moste inward goulfe of at the Castell of Wardhus at the degree.

wardhus.

Towarde the Southe, it is lymitted by a line drawen from thense vnto the degree.	54	70	30.
	90	69.	

Norwegia or Norway.

**N**orway, is as muche to say as the Northwaye. This was sumtyme a Northynge kyngedome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Feiselande and the Islandes farre about, vntill the domestical Empire was gouerned by the succession of inheritance. In the meane tyme while this gouernance ceased for lacke of debowt, it was instituted by consent of the nobilitie that the kynges shuld be admitted by election: supposynge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office forasmuche as they were placed in the

the same by such avaritie, and not by obteynnyng the kyngdome by fortune and newe advancement. But it came so to passe, that as euery of them excelled in riches, ambition and fauour by consanguinitie, so were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngdome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, attemptyng also occasions to invade foraigne realmes wherby they might strengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this present vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but also bypunge all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, constitutyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in rhinfirmitie and pouertie of the subiectes: which example, sum other princes doo followe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forsaken suche vertues as shulde haue shyned in them, as to bee *Patres patrie* (that is) the fathers of theyr countreys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proude countenaunce of dominion remayned, which opened licentiousnesse to rhiniurie of the subiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occasion had no further trust or ayde in the loue of the people, they provided for rhindempnitie of theyr owne estate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and poure of them whom they desired to kepe in subiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edefies, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repaynyng thei state. For there are no consultations admitted for the redress of the common welth: No man dare shewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vncerteyne of the myndes and consent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr poure all the navigations of Norway, wherby it may exercise no trade by sea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may seeme most vnforsunate, as lackyng the fauoure of heauen, the sea, and the lande. From hence is brought into all Europe a spūthe of the kindes of them whiche wee caule haddokes or hakes indurate and dyed with coude, and bearen with clubbes or stocks, by reason wherof the Germayns caule them stockefylthe. The rakinge of these, is most commended in Januarie that they may bee sufficiently dyed and hardened with coude. For such as are taken in the moze temperate monethes, doo corrupte and

kyngdomes  
destroyd by  
factions.

The Danes

The default  
of princes.

An example  
of tyranni.

The miserab  
le state of  
Norway.

Stockefylthe.

Of the north regions,

putrifie: And are not meete to bee caried furth.

The description of the west coaste, with the parte thereof lyinge most towarde the north.

Ward hus (that is) the watche house, or watche tower.

It is a stronge castell or fortreffe appoynted to the Lapones. The coaste foldoyng, 48 50 70. Warthkar, &c.

All the coast from hence, and the places neare about unto the degree. 45 69.

The Lapones.

beinge sumtyme lesse desolate by the seditions and destruction of Norway, the Lapones chose for theyr habitations, as commynge to a more beneficiall haunc.

Shippes in daungour by reason of whales.

Fit the Castell of Wardhus, unto the degree. 40 30 64 10

all the coaste in the sprynge tyme is daungorous to passe, by reason of whales of such huge byggnesse that sum of them growe to a hundredth cubites. For these fythes at that tyme of the yeare resort togyther for generation. Such wyppes as chance to faule eyther vppon theyr bodies, or into suche whyllepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great perell.

Castoreum.

The remedie to auoyde this daungour, is to poure into the sea Castoreum (that is) oyle made of the stones of the beaste cauled the Beuer, mengelid with water.

The roynge of whales.

For with this, the hole herde of whales vanyeth suddely to the bottome of the sea: They make a terrible roynge: and haue two breathynge places in the hyghest parte of theyr forheades, standynge furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, benze covered with a skynne, through

whales salted and referued.

the which they blow waters lyke showes or stormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynynge three

els in circuite, and euery knatte betwene them, of one elle.

They are at the least of .lx. cubites in length: And are salted and kept in stowe houses. The greatest are vnyprofitable to bee eaten by reason of theyr ranke and vnlauey taste which can not bee qualifid.

The citie of Adrofia.

Adrofia standing vpon the south syde of the sea banke, was the chiefe citie and metropolitane churche throught all Norway, Iselande, Gronlande, and the Islandes there about. This citie was noble at the fyrst vnder the Royall King Empire of Norway, conteynge in circuite .xxiiii. parishes, but

but it is nowe brought in maner to a village and is cauled in the Germanye toonge *Tutham*, as the house of the *Dyvis des*. There remaineth at this daye a Cathedrall church in token of the ancient felicitie, beinge suche that in byggenesse & workmanship of wrought stone, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greeles or compasse about the altar, was destroyed by fyre, and was repaired at the same tyme that mee write this historie. The charge of the reparacion, was estimated to bee seven thousande crownes: by which spaciouse portion, an estimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Church.

A magnificall church.

The tracte of all the sea coastes *Nordhaye*, is very quiete and meete. The sea is not frozen. The snowes indure not longe. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence which they caule *Aem* or *Remmer*. This is a lytle foure footed beaste: before the byggenesse of a rarte with a spotted saynne. These faule vpon the grounde at certeyne tempestes and suddayne showers, not yet knowne from whence they comme, as whether they are brought by the wyndes from remote *Ilandes*, or otherwise engendered of thicke and seculent cloudes. But this is well knowne, that as soone as they faule downe, greene graffe and herbes are founde in theyr bowels not yet digested. They consume all greene thynges as doo locustes: And such as they only byte, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taste of the graffe newelye spronghe. They comie togyther by flockes as doo *Swalowes*: And at an old narle tyme, cyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whose corruption the ayer is made pestiferous and molestereth the *Norwegians* with *Snymmynge* in the headde and the *jaundies*) or are consumed of other beastes named *Aefrat*. Towarde the East, it is included with in the line that is drawen by the mountaynes whose endes or vttermoost boundes they are that lye towarde the south aboue the mouthes of the ryuer *Tzelhera*. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, passeth by the castel of *Wardhus*, and is extended to the unknowen lande of the *Lapones*.

Noysome beastes of vñ knowne generation.

The lake cauled *Bas*, and the *Ilande* of *Holluen* in the myddest thereof, is in the degree.

45

30

61.

In this lake appeareth a straunge monster: which is, a serpent of houghe byggenesse. And as to all other places of

*wardhus*.  
The vnknowne lands of the *Lapones*.

A serpent of houghe byggenesse.

## Of the north regions,

the worlde, blasynge starres doo portende thalceration and chaunge of thynges, so dooth this to Norway. It was scene of late (in the yeare of Christ M. D. xxii. apperynge farre aboue the water rowlynge lyke a greate pyller : And was by coniecture farre of, esteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortly after folowed the reiectyng of Christiernus kynge of Denmarke. Suche other monstrous thynges are sayde to bee scene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtelesse excepte wee shulde thinke that the diuine prouidence haupnge mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnynge them of their offences, dooth sende suche straunge thynges (as also blasynge starres and armies feyghtynge in the ayer, with suche other portentous monsters wherof no causes can bee founde by naturall thynges) we myght els suspecte that such syghtes were but imaginations of the sence of man deceaued.

On the East side, are exceeding rough montaynes which admit no passage to Succia. The sea betwene Norway & the Ilandes, is cauled *Tialleslund*, *Euripus*, or the streights. The Ilande of *Isooth*. whose myddest, 42 67 10.  
*Langanas*, whose myddest, 41 67 30.  
*Vastral*, whose myddest, 41 30 67 30.

The sea betwene these thre Ilandes, is cauled *Muscostron* (that is) boylynge. At the rowlynge of the sea, it is swallowed into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the redowynge, with no lesse violence then the streames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This sea is nauigable butyll it be lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of delwe tyme, are caried headlonge into whyrlepoolles. The fragmentes of the lost ships, are seldome cast vp ageyne. But when they are caste vp, they are so brused and freted ageynste the rockes, that they seeme to bee ouergrowne with hore. This is the poure of nature, passyng the fabulous *Simplegades* and the fearefull *Malca*, with the daungerous places of *Silla* and *Taribdis*, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other sea hitherto knowne to man.

The Ilandes about Norway, are of such frutfull pasture, that they bynge not theyr beastes into the stables before the moneth of Nouerber : And do many places winter the abrode.

### Suecia, or Suetthlande.

¶ *Succia*, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, syluer, copper, leade,

God warneth vs by signes of thynges to coome.

The streights of boylng sea.

Dangerous places in the sea.

Frutfull Ilandes about Norway.

Solde and syluer.

Of the north regions. 275

leade, Iren, fruyte, cattayle, and exceadynge increase of fyfthe of the ryuers, lakes, and the sea. And hath no lesse plentie of such wyld beastes as are taken with huntinge.

Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Roz: way from the Castell of Wardhus vnto thend. 51 63 40

wardhus  
castell.

Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30. 61. And frome thense vnto the degrees. 61. 60. 30. Aboue the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the south ende of Lapponia from the castell of Wardhus vnto thende. 62. 70.

The goulfe  
of Suecia.

Towarde the East, it is ended with the line frome this ende vnto the degree. 63. 69. &c. Stockholme the chiefe

The citie of  
Stockholme.

citie. 64. 61. This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is strongly defended by arte and nature. It is situate in marillhes after the maner of Venec: and was therefore caused Stockholme, forasmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The sea entereth into it with two armes or branches of such largenes and depth that ships of great burden and with mayne sayles may enter by the same with theyr full freight. This suffered of late yeares greuous spoyle & destruction to the singular example of cruel hostilitie: And such, as the like hath not bin lighty shewed to any other citie receaued by league & composition.

In al the tract from Stockholme to the lake aboue the riuer of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30. 63. 50. are most taines fruitful of good siluer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the salmons and plentie of ocher fyfthes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

Sold in cold  
regions,  
fyfthe.

The dukedome of Agermannia, occupieth the north syde to the confines of Lapponia. This tract is ful of wods in the whiche they hunt the beastes cauled Uros or Bisontes, which in theyr tooonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde asses. These are of such height, that the highest part of their backes are equal with the measure of a man holdynge vp his armes as hygh as he may reach. &c. Upsalia the chiefe citie. 62. 62. 30. here is buried the body of saynt Hericus kynge and martyr.

The beaste  
cauled Uros  
or Elg.

Upsalia.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedome southwarde from the dukedome of Fempra. Under this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Copperdalia,

Oplandia, is a dukedome & the nauil or middelt of Scandia.

Oplandia,

The

## Of the north regions.

The citie of **Witcho**, on the north syde of the lake of **Wegler**, was once a great citie and able to arme. xiiii. thousande men to the warres: but is nowe brought to a byllage.

All the tracte of **Splandia**, hath mynes of syluer, cop- per, and Steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye aboute **Suecia**, the myddest is. 67 30 61 30.

**Byrdes.**

**Egges refer-  
ued in salte.**

These were cauled of the owlde wyrters **Dome**, the reason of which name remaineth to this day. For there are in these innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In so muche that they ha- bitauntes of the nere coaste, laye thyrer in the moonerth of May whole the byrdes lye on theyr egges: which they steale and reserue them in salte for a longe tyme.

## Bothnia.

**precious  
fures.**

**fylthe.**

**B**othnia is so named of the precious fures of all sortes that are caried from thence into foraigne regions. For by these and theyr sylthynge, they haue great commodi- tie. Salmons of the best sort are taken in these seas and are great ryches amonge these nations. Bothnia is diuided into two partes, as **Northbothnia**, and **South Bothnia**, cauled **Ostrobothnia**. **Northbothnia**, is termined with the south ende of the **Lapines** unto the ende. 73 30 69.

Towarde the East, it is termined with this end and vnto the degree. 73 30 68 20.

Towarde the West, with the line terminynge the East syde of **Suecia**: And towarde the South, with the residue of the goulfe of **Suecia** from thence that hath degrees. 63 69.

**Ostrobothnia**, towarde the East is termined from the said ende of the most East coaste. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes frome this ende vnto the degree. 71 66.

Towarde the north and weste, with part of the goulfe of **Suecia** &c.

## Gothia or Gothlande.

**G**OTHIA, is by interpretacion good. For the holpe name of **God**, is in the Germanic tongue **Goth** (that is) **Good**. At what tyme the **Goths** vppon a general content,

consent, sent furth theyr offsprynge or succession to seeke newe states or countreys to inhabite, and when they possessed the coastes of *Meotis* and *Asia*, none of the olde wyriters haue made mention as farre as I knowe. But they haue byn knowne since the tyme that the Romanes dilated theyr Emppre by *Illirium* (nowe cauled *Slauonie*) vnto the ryuer of *Danubius*. And were also famous from the tyme of *Cesar Dictator* and *Octavianus Augustus* by reason of theyr greate warres at *Danubius* beinge thurtermost bounde of *The Empire*. *Reuerthelesse*, in that renoume, what *Gothia* was, vnder what parte of heauen it was situate, or of whom the *Gothes* toke theyr original, it hath byn vnknowe almost to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the south ende of *Succia*: And towarde the weste, with the other mountaynes of *Norway*, which continewe from the boundes of *Succia* to the mouthes of the ryuers of *Trolhera* &c.

It hath many goodly townes, cities, castles, mines, &c. The cite of *Uilba*, beinge in the degre. 61 30 54 15. was an ancient and famous marre towne as is *Venua* in *Italia* at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflicted by thincursions of the pirates of the *Danes* and *Moscowites*, it was left desolate. There remaine to this day certeyne ruines whiche testifye the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the spiall stations of the *Gothes* that possessed *Meotis*. It is at this daye of fruitfull soyle, and famous by many goodly and stronge castles and monasteries. There is amonge other, a monasterie of the order of *Saynt Benedicte*, in the which is a librarie of a bowt two thousande bookes of olde autours.

About the yeare of *Christ* fourscore and viii. the *Gothes*, vnto whom resorted a great multitude of other people of these northe partes of the worlde, as from *Liuania*, *Prussia*, *Wallia* and *Tartaria* with diuers other countreys, makinge them dyuers *Kynges* and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and byynge in subiection the more parte of *Europe*, inuaded *Italia*, destroyed *Rome*, inhabited that parte of *Italia* now cauled *Lumbardia*, and lykewyse subdued the roialmes of *Cassile* and *Aragone*. Theyr warres contynued aboue thre hundred yeares.

### **C**Finland, and **C**ningia.

**F**inlandia, is as much to say as a fayre lande or fine land, so named for the fertilitie of the grownde, *Plinie* semeth

*Thynuations of the Gothes*

The warre of the gothes agaynst the Romanes.

The boundes of Gothland.

The cite of Uilba.

Danes and Moscovites.

A librarie of two thousand bookes.

The Gothes inuaded Europe and destroyed Rome.

## Of the north regions.

Pannonia  
falsely taken  
for Finnonia.

to caule it Finnonia. For he saith that aboute the coastes of Finlande, are many Ilandes withowt names. Of the which there lpech one before Scithia cauled Pannonia. The goulfe cauled Sinus Finnonicus, is so named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confinerth with Scithia, and runneth withowt all Tanais (that is to say) withowte the limetes of Europe to the confines of Asia. But that the name of Finlande seemeth not to agree hereunto, the cause is that this place of Finnie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Finnonia, it was a likely erreure to caule it Pannonia forasmuch as these wordes doo not greatly differ in wyppynge and sounde: so that the counterfecte name was soone put in the place of the trew name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge also ignozant of Finnonia.

Finngia.

Finngia had in owlde tyme the tytle of a kingedome, it is of such largnesse. But hath nowe only the tytle of an inferiour gouernoure, beinge vnder the dominion of the Slauons and byng the same tonge. In religion, it obserued the rites of the Breekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernance of the Moscouites. But it is at this present vnder the kyng of Suecia and obserueth the institutions of the Occidentall church. Spangthe wyne are brought thither in great plentie which the people vse merely and cherefully. It is terminated on the north syde, by the southe line of Ostrobothnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the west, it is terminated with the sea of Finnonia accordyng to this description: and hath degrees. 71. 66. &c.

Spangthe  
wyne.

Of the difference of regions and causes of greete cities, after the description of Hieronimus Cardanus. Liber. xi. de Subilitate.



Here is an other difference of regions caused of coulde and heate. For suche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with so much coulde: And such as are vnder the line where the soonne is of greatesse force, are oppressed with heate. Such as are in the myddest betwene both, are nearest vnto temperatnesse. Under the pole, it is impossible that

that there shulde bee populous cities because the lande is barren, and the cariage or conueyaunce of frutes, bycayples, and other necessaries, is incommodious. By reason wherof, it is necessarie that thinhabitantes of suche regions lyue euer in continuall wanderynge from place to place, or els in smaule byllages. Suche as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, as well for that they haue more commodious conueyaunce for necessaries, as also that they may dwell better and more safely togyther then in byllages by, reason of fortifying theyr townes with walles, and exercisyng of artes and occupations wherby the one maye the better helpe the other. yet that owlde Rome (beinge in a temperate region) was of such incredible byggenesse, the cause was that it obteyned the helpe of the world, by reason wherof, all nations had conuenance thither, and not the greatnesse of the walles. But it is necessarie that the greatest cities bee in hotte regions: firste, for that in such regions, parte of the soile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els most frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitye, when they fynde any place meete to susteyne a multitude, it foloweth of necessitie that greate cities bee bylde in such places by reason of great concourse of people resortyng to the same. An other greate cause is, that whereas in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to such commodious places, they passe through many deserte and perelous regions: So that it shalbe necessary for theyr better securitie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therfore whereas such a societie is once kytted togyther in a commodious place, it shulde bee great hinderance as well to thinhabitantes as to marchauntes if they shulde wander in incommodious places. And by this conuenance, both of suche as dwell neare to suche places, and also of straungers and such as dwell farre of, it is necessarie that in continuance of tyme, smaule townes becoome greate cities, as are these: Quinsai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, or thewylde cauled Babilon in Egypte. But if here any wyl obiecte Constantinople (in owlde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althowgh it bee not to bee compared to such cities as are more then. lx. myles in circuite, yet doo we aunswere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the cause of the greatnesse hereof, as wec sayde before of Rome.

The historie written in the latin too[n]ge by Paulus Jontius  
 byshoppe of Nuceria in Italie, of the legation or am-  
 bassade of greate Basilius Prince of Moscouia, to  
 pope Clement the. vii. of that name: In which  
 is conteyned the description of Moscouia  
 with the regions confininge abowte  
 the same euen vnto the great &  
 ryche Empire of Cathay.



**I**ntende fyrst briefly to describe the situa-  
 on of the region which we plainly see to haue  
 bin little known to Strabo and Ptolome, and  
 then to procede in rehearsinge the maners, cus-  
 tomes and religion of the people. And this in  
 maner in the lyke simple style and phrase of  
 speache as the same was declared vnto vs by Demetrius the  
 ambassadoure, a man not ignoraunt in the Latin too[n]ge, as  
 from his youth brought vp in Linonia, where he learned the  
 fyrst rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne to mans age,  
 executed thoffice of an ambassadour into dyuers Christian pro-  
 uinces. For wheras by reason of his approued faithfulnessse  
 and industrie, he had befoze byn sent as oratoure to the kyn-  
 ges of Suecia and Denmarke, and the great master of Prus-  
 sia, he was at the last sente to Thempereoure Maximilian, in  
 whose courte (beinge replenyshed with all sortes of menne)  
 whyle he was conuersant, if any thyng of barbarous maners  
 yet remayned in so docible and quiet a nature, the same was  
 put away by framyng hym selfe to better ciuilitie. The cause  
 of his legacie or ambassade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio  
 a Venuese, who when he had receaued letters commendatozi  
 of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moscouia for the trade of  
 marchaundies, of his owne mynde conferred with the fami-  
 liers of Duke Basilius as touchynge the conformation of the  
 rites of both churches. He furthermoze of great magnanimi-  
 tie and in maner obtragiuous desire, sought howe by a newe  
 and incredible viage, spices myght bee brought from India.  
 For whyle befoze he had exercised the trade of marchaundies  
 in Syria, Egypte, and Poncus, he knewe by fame that spices  
 myght bee conueighed from the further India vp the riuer In-  
 dus agaynst the course of the same, and from thence by a smal  
 byage

Demetrius  
 the ambassa-  
 dour of Mos-  
 couia.

Paulus Cen-  
 turio.

Spices  
 brought fro  
 India to Mos-  
 couia.

The ryuer  
 Indus.

byage by lande passinge ouer the mountaynes of Paropamisus, to bee caried to the riuer Orus in Bactria, which hauing his original almost from the same mountaynes from whence Indus dooth springe, and violently caryinge with it manye other ryuers, fauleth into the sea Hircanum or Caspium at the porte cauled Straua. And he earnestly affirmed that frome Straua, is an easy and safe nauigation vnto the marre to wone of Citrachan or Attrachan and the mouth of the ryuer Wolga and from thence euer ageynst the course of the ryuers, as Wolga, Dicha, and Wolcho, vnto the citie Moscha, and frome thence by lande to Riga and into the sea of Sarmatia and all the west regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accented and prouoked by the iniuries of the Portugales, who hauynge by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and possessed all the marre towones, takynge holy into theyr handes all the trade of spices to bynge the same into Spayne, and neuerthelesse to sell them at a moze greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And furthermore kepte the coastes of the Indian sea so straighly with continuall nauies, that those trades are thareby lette of, which were before crested by the goulfe of Iberia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the streightes of the sea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre sea: by which trade all Asia and Europe was abundantly satisfied and better cheape then harthe byn sence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with so manye incommodities of such longe viages wherby the spices are so corrupted by thinfecion of the poompe and other tythynesse of the shippes, that theyr naturall flavour, taste, and qualitie aswell hereby as by theyr longe reseruyng in the shoppes, sellers, and warehoutes in Luffeburne, banpthech and resolueth, so that reseruyng euer the freshest and neweste, they sel only the woorst and most corrupted. But Paulus, although in all places he earnestly and vehemently argued of these thinges, and spredd great malice and hatred ageynst the Portugales, affirmynge that not only therby the customes and reuenues of princes shulde bee much greater if that byage might bee discouered, but also that spices myght bee better cheape bought at the handes of the Moscouites, yet coulde he nothyng auayle in this sere, forasmuche as Duke Basilus

Orus or: horina a ryuer of Asia runneth through the desertes of Sychia.

The sea Hircanum, is now cauled mare Tabacur or mare de Sala. Citrachan or Attrachan.

Sarmatia is that greate countrey wherin is conteyned Russia Lithuania and Tartaria, & the north and East part of Polonia. Ageynst the Portugales. The trade of spices inowid tyme.

Spices corrupted.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

The Caspian  
sea.

Basilus wrot  
to Pope A:  
driane.

warres  
twene the  
Polones and  
Moscovites.

The seconde  
vyage of Paulus  
to Mosco:  
uia.

The pope  
persuadeth  
Basilus to  
acknowledge  
the Romane  
church.

thought it not good to make open or disclose unto a straun-  
ger and unknowne man, those regions which give entrance  
to the sea Caspium and the kyngdomes of Persia. Paulus  
therefore excludynge all hope of further trauayle, and become  
nowe of a marchaunte an Ambassadoure, broght Basilus  
letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his suc-  
cessour, in the whiche he declared with honozable and reuer-  
rende woordes his good wyll and fauozable mynde towarde  
the byshop of Rome. For a fewe yeares before, Basilus (then  
keepynge warres agynste the Polones at suche tyme as the  
generall counsaile was celebrare at Laterane) requyred by  
John, kynge of Denmarke (the father of Christierne who  
was of late expulsed from his kyngedome) that safe passage  
myght bee graunted to thambassadours of Moscovia to go to  
Rome. But wheras it so chaunced, that kynge John and  
pope Julius dyed both in one day, wherby he lacked a conue-  
nient sequester or solicitour, he omitted his consultation as  
touchynge that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot be-  
twene him and Sigismunde the kynge of Polonie: who obtel-  
nyng the victorie ageinst the Moscovites at Bozithene, sup-  
plikations were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and ban-  
quysshynge the enemies of the Christian faith, whiche thinge  
greatly alienated both kynge Basilus him selfe and all that  
nation from the byshop of Rome. But when Adriane the. vi.  
departed from this lyfe, and left Paulus nowe redie to his  
seconde vyage, his successour Clemente the. vii. perceaynng  
that Paulus styll furiously reuolued and tossed in his ynquiet  
mynde that vyage towarde the East, sente hym ageyne with  
letters to Moscovia, by the which with propense and frend-  
ly persuasions, he exhorted Basilus to acknowledge the ma-  
iestie of the Romane church, and to make a perpetuall leage  
and agreement in matters of religion, which thynge shuld be  
not only for the health of his soule, but also greatly to thir-  
create of his honour: And further promysed, that by the holy  
autozitie of his office he wolde make hym a kynge and gyue  
hym kyngely ornamentes, if receyving the doctrine of the  
Breckes, he wolde conforme hym selfe to chautozitie of the  
Romane church. For Basilus despyred the name and tytle  
of a kynge by thassignation of the byshoppe of Rome, foral-  
much

much as he iudged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the byshoppes maiestie, of whome (as he knewe ryghe well) euen Emperours them selues by an auncient custome haue receaued there insignes of honoure with the Diademe and scepter of the Romane Empire: althowghe it is sayde that he required the same of Emperour Maximiliane by many ambassades. Paulus therfore who with more prosperous iorneyes then great bantage, had from his youth traueled a greate parte of the world, althowghe he were nowe aged and sore vexed with the strangurie, came with a prosperous and speedy iornay to Moscouia, where he was gentely receaued of Basilius, and remayned in his courre for the space of two monethes. But in fine, mistrustynge his owne strength, and deterred by the difficultie of so greate a iorneye, when he had utterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius thambassadour of Basilius, before we yet thowghe that he had byn in Moscouia. The byshoppe commaunded that Demetrius shuld be lodged in the most magnificēt and princely part of the houses of Vaticanē, the roufes of whose edifices are gilted and embowed, and the chambers richly furnyshed with sylken beddes and cloth of Arrece. Wyllynge furthermore that he shuld be honorably receaued and bestured with silke. He also assigned Francisus Cheregatus the byshoppe of Apuntium (a man that had often tymes byn ambassadoure to diuers regyons) to accompanie hym and shewe hym thorder and rites of othere religion with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes rested and recreate him selfe, washyng away the sylth he had gathered by reason of the longe wyage, then apparelled with a fayre besture after the maner of his countrey, he was brought to the byshoppes presence, whom he honoured kneelynge with great humilitie and reuerence (as is the maner) and therewith presented vnto his holynes certeyne fures of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and also deliuered the letters of Basilius, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpretoure Nicolaus Siccensis translated into the Latine tongue in this effecte as foloweth,

The Emperours receaue there diademe of the byshoppes of Rome.

Demetrius in certeynement at Rome.

Demetrius is brought to the popes presence.

To

## Moscouia and Cathay.

Basilus let-  
ters to pope  
Clement.

To pope Clemente heparde and teacher of the Romane church, greate Basilus by the grace of God, lord, Empe: rour and dominatour of al Russia, and great duke of Voloder: macia, Moscouia, Rouogrodia, Policouia, Smolemia, Fifferia Jugoria, Serunia, Uercha, Bolgaria. &c. Dominator & great prince of Rouogrodia in the lower cōtrei: Also of Cernigouia, Kazania, Polotchia, Kezenia, Belchia, Koscouia, Jaro Aama, Belozeria, Udozia, Obozia, & Condiuia. &c. yow sent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citize of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and countayle with yowe and other Princes of Christsdome agepnst the enemies of the chri: stian faith: and that a free passage and redy way may bee ope: ned for bothe yowre ambassadours and owtres to coome and go to and fro, wherby by mutuall dewtie and induouce on both parties, we may haue knowleage of the state of thinges percepyng to the welth of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hether to happely by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god con: stantly and earnestly resisted the cruell and wycked enemies of the Christian faith, so are we determind to doo hereafter. And are likewise redy to consente wih or her Christian Prin: ces, and to graunt free passage into owre dominions. In con: sideration wherof, we haue sente vnto yowe owre faithfull seruaunt Demetrius Erasmus wih these owre letters: and wih hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: despyng yowe also shortly to dismitte Demetrius wih safegarde and indem: nite vnto the hoit hers of owre dominions. And we wyl like wylse doo the same if yowe sende yowre ambassade wih Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of thorder and administration of such thynges as yowe require: so that beinge aduertised of the mindes & intent of al other Christian princes, we may also con: sult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in owr dominion in owr citie of Moscouia, in the yeare from the creation of the worlde, seven thousande and thye hun: dred, the thye day of Aprill.

But Demetrius, as he is experte in diuine and humane thynges, and especially of holy scripture, seemed to haue se: create commaundement of greater matters whiche we thinke he wyl shortly declare to the senate in priuate consultations. For he is nowe deliuered of the feuer into the whiche he fell  
by

by change of ayer. and hath so recovered his strengthe and native colour, that beinge a man of threescore yeares of age, he was not only presente at the popes masse celebrated with great solemnitie in the honour of saynt Colmus and Damian but came also into the Senate at such tyme as Cardinal Campegius commynge fyrst from the legacie of Hannonia, was received of the pope and all the nobilitie of the cōurre: And furthermoze also bewed the temples of the holpe citie with the ruines of the Romane magnificence, and with woonderfynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildinges. So that we thinke that shortly after he hath declared his message, he shall returne to Moscouia with the byshop of Scazrentic the popes legate, not unrecompensed with iust rewards at the handes of his holynesse.

The name of the Moscouites is nowe newe, although the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moschos confinynge with the Sarmatians, and Plinie also placeth the Moschos at the springes of the great ryuer of Phalis in the region of Colchos aboute the sea Euxinus towarde the East. Theyr region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander about the springes of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the Northe Starres cauled Charles wayne or the greate beate, beinge for the most parte playne and of feutfull pasture, but in sommer in many places full of marishes. For whereas all that lande is replenyshed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increased by the winter snow and ise resolved by the heate of the soonne, the playnes and fyeldes are thereby overflowen with marishes, and all iozneys incumbered with continuall waters and myrie slabbynesse vntyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and marishes bee frosen ageyne, and giue safe passage to the sheades that are accustomed to iozney by the same. The woodde or forest of Bereynia (and not Hircania as is redde in sum false copies) occupieth a great parte of Moscouia, and is here and there inhabited, with houses buylded therein and so made thinner by the longe labour of men that it dooth not nowe shewe that horzour of thicke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thinke it to haue. But beinge replenyshed with many wylde beastes, is so farre extended throughe Moscouia with a continual tracte betwene

Cardinall  
Campegius.

The ruines  
of Rome.

The descrip-  
tion of Mos-  
couia.

The strares  
of great Alex-  
ander.

marishes in  
sommer.

The forest of  
Bereynia.

wylde beastes

the

## Moscouia and Cathay.

**The Scythian Ocean.**

**The beastes cauled Uri or Bisontes.**

**Belenes.**

**Of the Scythians and Tartars. Amayouii.**

**Hords.**

**The large dominion of the Tartars. Cathay.**

**The Tartars of Europe.**

**The Tartars of Asia, are subiecte to the Duke of Moscouia.**

the East and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatnesse thereof it hath deluded the hope of such as haue curiously searched thence of the same. In that parte that reacheth towarde Prussia, are founde the greare and fierce beastes cauled Uri, or Bisontes, of the kynde of bulles: Also Alces lyke unto hartes, whiche the Moscouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germanes Belenes. On the East syde of Moscouia, are the Scythians which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the stede of houses they vse wagons couered with beastes hydes, wherby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amayouii. For cities and towne, they vse greate tentes and pavilions, not defended with trenches or waules of tymbre or stone, but inclosed with an innumerable multitude of archers on horsebacke. The Tartars are diuided by companies which they caule Hordas, which word in theyr toonge signifieth a consentynge compaigne of people gathered together in forme of a citie. Every Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eithr his parentage or warlike prowes hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr boitherers and contende ambitiously and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appere that they consist of innumerable Hordas, in that the Tartars possesse the most large desertes such vnto the famous citie of Cathay in the furthest Ocean in the East. They also that are neareste to the Moscouites, are knowen by theyr trade of marchandise and often incursions. In Europe nere vnto the place cauled Promon Achilles in Taurica Cherfoneso, are the Tartars cauled Pscopites, the dowghter of whose prince, Selymus The mperour of the Turkes rooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the Polones, and wast the regions on euery syde betwene the ryuers of Boristhenes and Tanais. They that in the same Taurica possesse Cassam a colonie of the Tigurijs (cauled in owlde tyme Theodosia) doo bothe in religion & al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabit the regions of Asia betwene Tanais and Wolga, are subiecte to Basinus the kynge of the Moscouites, and chuse them a gouernour at his assignement. Amonge these, the Temu afflicted with ciuile seditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeares losse theyr

dominia

dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of volga, do religiously obserue the frendship of the Moscouites and professe them selues to be their subiectes. Beyond the Cassanites towards the North, are the Sciambani, rich in heardes of cattaille and consistyng of a great multitude of men. After these, are Rogai, whiche obreyue at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warly aſſayes. Theyr Horda, althowgh it bee most ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wyldome and vertue of the most ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealthe of Venice. Beyond the Rogais sumwhat towards the south and the Caspian sea, the noblest nation of the Tartars cauled Zagathai, inhabiteth townes buylded of stone, and haue an exceedyng greate and fayre citie cauled Samarcanda, which Jaxartes the greate ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and passyng from thence about a hundred myles, fauleth into the Caspian sea. With these people in olde dayes, Ismael the Sophi and kynge of Persia haue often tymes kepte war with doubtfull successe: In so muche that fearyng the greate nesse of theyr poure which he respected with all that he myght, he lefte Armenia and Taurisium the chiefe citie of the kynge-dome, for a pray to Selimus the byctourer of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, descended Tamburlanes the myghty Emperoure of the Tartars whome sum caule Tanberlanis. But Demetrius sayth that he shulde bee cauled Themircathla. Thys is he that abowte the yeare of Chryste .M. CCC. lxxviii. subdued almost all the East partes of the worlde: And lastly with an innumerable multitude of men inuaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiasces Otromanus their kynge, (and father to the greate grandfather of this Solyman that nowe lyueth) metyng at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bythinia, gaue hym a foze batcaille, in the whiche selle on the Turkes parte 200000. men, and Baiasces hym selfe was taken priso-ner, whom Tamburlanes cauled to bee locked in an iren cage and so caried hym abowte with hym through all Asia which he also conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquished in batcaille the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chased be-ponde Nilus, and rooke also the citie of Damascus.

The Tartars beyonde the ryuer of rioga.

Rogai.  
Sigmundus cauleth them Nagayri.

The noblest nation of the Tartars.  
The ryuer Jaxartes.

Ismael the Sophi, kynge of persia.

The citie of Samarcanda.

Tamburlanes, the myghty Emperour of the Tartars.  
The conquestes of Tamburlanes.

Baiasces.

Moscovia and Cathay.

This apparel  
they haue of  
the persians.

The Tartars  
traffike with  
the Moscovi-  
tes.

The tartars  
of the South  
syde of Mos-  
covia.

Sere and Roy  
olani.  
Ruffia.

Moscovia  
cauled white  
Ruffia.  
Lituania.  
Puffia.  
Liaonia.  
Denmarke.  
Norway.  
Tuccia.  
The people  
of Laponia.

Frome the region of these Tartars cauled Zagathel, is brought great plenty of silken apparel to the Moscovites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or broues of wyfte runnyng horses and clokes made of whyre feltes: also hailes or tentes to withstonde thynynges of coulde and rayne.

These they make very artificially and apte for the purpose. They receaue a gayne of the Moscovites, coates of cloth, and syluer monye, contynnyng all other bodily ornaments, and the furniture of superfluous housholde stuffe. For beyng defended ageynst the violence of weather and tempestes only with suche apparell and conuerting whercof we haue spoken, they trust only to theyr arrowes which they shoote as well backe wards as yng as when they assaile theyr enemies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuad Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmetts coates of leuse, and hooked swordes which they boughte of the Persians. Towarde the southe, the boundes of Moscovia are termined by the same Tartars which possesse the playn regions nere vnto the Caspian sea aboute the marythes of Meotis in Asia, and aboute the ryuers of Borysthenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Gere, and Pastarne, inhabited these regions in oulde tyme, of whom I thynke the name of Ruffia tooke originall. For they caule parte of Lituania, Ruffia the lower, wheras Moscovia it selfe, is cauled whyte Ruffia. Lituania therfore, lyeth on the North west syde of Moscovia. But towarde the full west the mayne landes of Prussia and Liaonia are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moscovia, where the Sarmatian sea breakynge furth of the streights of Cimbrica Chersonesus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is benched with a crooked goulfe towarde the northe. But in the furthest bankes of that Ocean where the large kyngdomes of Norway and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almoste enuironed with the sea, are the people cauled Lapones, a nation erodaynge rude, suspicyous, and fearefull, shyng and astonnyshed at the syght of al straungiers & shypes. They knowe neyther sentes nor apples, nor yet any benigntie eyther of heauen or earth. They prouyde them meate onely with horyng, and are appareled with the skynnes of wild beastes. They dwell in caues fylled with dype leaues, and in holow

holow trees consumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age  
 Suche as dwell neare the sea syde, fynd the moze luckyly then  
 cunningly, and in the head of cruces, reserve in store fythes  
 dyed with smoke, They are of smaule stature of body, with  
 flatte visages, pale and wannye coloure, and keep wyfte of  
 foote. Their wittes or dispositions, are not knowne to the  
 Moscovites theyr bozherers, who thynke it therefore a man-  
 neste to assayle them with a smaule poure, and iudge it ney-  
 ther profitable nor glazious, with greate armies to invade a  
 poore and beggerly nation. They exchange the most whyre  
 fures which wee caule Arnelines for other wares of byuers  
 sortes: yet so, that they lie the syghe and companie of all  
 marchauntes. For comparynge and layinge theyr wares to-  
 gether, and leauynge theyr fures in a mydde place, they bar-  
 geyne with simple sayth, with absence and vnknozen men.  
 Sum men of great credite and auctoritie, doo certifie that in a  
 region beyond the Lappones, betwene the west and the north  
 oppressed with perpetuall darckenes, is the nation of the peo-  
 ple cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful groughte,  
 doo scarcely excede the stature of owtchylidzen of ten yeares  
 of age. It is a fearefull kynde of meane, and expresse theyr  
 wordes in such charterynge toze that they seeme to be so much  
 the more lyke vnto apes, in howe muche they dyffer in sence  
 and stature from men of iust heyghe.

Towarde the North, innumerable people are subiecte to  
 thempire of the Moscovites. Theyr regions extende to the  
 Scythian Ocean for the space of almoste thre mooneches  
 iorney.

Next vnto Moscouia, is the region of Colmogora aboun-  
 dyng with cruces. Through this runneth the ryuer of Sind  
 na beinge one of the greateste that is knowne in the North  
 partes, and gaue the name to an other lesse ryuer which brea-  
 keth furthe into the sea Balthicum. This increasynge at cer-  
 tayne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, ouerflow-  
 eth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nourishinge  
 moysture, dooth maruelously refresh the mynutes of heauen and  
 the sharpe blastes of the North wynde. When it ysseth by rea-  
 son of molten snowe and greate shoures of rayne, it fauleth  
 into the Ocean by vnknozen nations, and with so large a  
 trenche lyke vnto a greate sea, that it can not bee sayled ouer

BBB b, ii. iii

Arneline fur  
 red.

Bargenige  
 withowt wor-  
 des.

The darke re-  
 gion, by this  
 darke region  
 and the pig-  
 mei, is the  
 way to Ca-  
 thay by the  
 North sea.

The Scythian  
 Ocean.

The region  
 of colmogora.

The ryuer of  
 sindna.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

In one day with a prosperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and fruitful Islandes. For corne there cast on the grounde, groweth without any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celeritie of harrynge nature fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, dooth both spyngge and rype in short space.

The ryuer of  
Juga or Jug.

Into the ryuer Diuidna, runneth the ryuer Juga: And in the corner where they ioine together, is the famous warte towne cauled Ustuga distant from the chiefe cite Mosca. li. hundredzeth myles.

Ustuga.

The ryuer of  
Diuidna or  
Dwina.

Note that whereas paulus Jounis wyrteth here that the ryuer of Diuidna, otherwyse cauled Dwina, runneth through the region of Colmogor, it is to bee vnderstode that there are two ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeast syde of Moscouia toward the frozen sea, and the other on the southwest syde faulynge into the sea Balticke, or the goulfe of Finnonia by the cite of Riga in Liuania.

And forasmuch as the trewe knowlege of these and certeine other is very necessary for all such as shall trade into Moscouia or other regions in those coastes by the north sea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hystorie of Moscouia, most faythfully and largely wyrtten by Sigismundus Liberus who was wyse sent ambassadour into Moscouia, as first by Maximilian the Emperour, and then agayne by Ferdinando kyng of Hungary and Boheme. This haue I done the rather, for that in all the mapes that I haue seene of Moscouia, there is no mention made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Colmogor: and by the cite of the same name, although the prouince of Dwina bee in all cartes placed Northwarde from the ryuer of Ustug or Succana, whiche is the same Dwina whereof we nowe speake, and wherof paulus Jounis wyrteth, although it bee not so named but from the angle or corner where ioynynge with the ryuer of Jug and Succana, it runneth Northwarde toward the cite of Colmogor, and from thence fauleth into the north or frozen sea, as shall hereafter more playnly appeare by the wordes of Sigismundus, that the one of these bee not taken for the other being so farre distant that great errour myght ensue by mistakynge the same, especially because this wherof paulus Jounis wyrteth is not by name expressed in the cartes, but only the other, wherby the errour myght bee the greater. Of that therfore that runneth by the confines of Liuania and the cite of Riga, Sigismundus wyrteth in this maner.

The ryuer  
Suchana.

The frozen  
sea.

The lake of Dwina, is distante from the spynges of Dousthernes, almost tenne myles, and as many from the maryshe of Fronow. From it, a ryuer of the same name toward the west, distante from Tuina. xx. myles, runneth from thence toward the North, where by Riga the chiefe cite of Liuania. it fauleth into the Balticke mayne sea which the Moscouites caule tuateskoie more. It runneth by Uitepsko, polozko, and Dunenburg, and not by pleseouia as one hath wyrtten. This ryuer beinge for the moste part nauigable, the Lyons caule Dwina.

Of the other Dwina wherof Paulus Jonius speaketh, he writeth as followeth.

The province of Dwina and the ryuer of the same name, is so named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Jug meete together, make one ryuer so called. For Dwina in the Moscovitea tongue, signifieth two. This ryuer by the course of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the sayde sea runneth by the coastes of Sweecia and Norwaye, and divideth the Engrolande from the Vnknowne lande. This province situate in the sul north, pertained in tyme past to the seignions of Auogorede, from Moscovia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered CCC. myles: Albeit as I have sayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the iorney can not bee well obserued by reason of many maryshes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lye in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thinke it to bee scarcely two hundred myles: forasmuch as from Moscovia to Quolochda, from Quolochda to Ulyug somewhat into the Easte; and laste of all from Ulyug by the ryuer Dwina, is the ryght passage to the northe sea. This region, beyde the castel of Colmogor and the cite of Dwina, situate almost in the mydde way betwene the springes and mouthes of the ryuer, and the castell of Pienega standyng in the very mouthes of Dwina, is vntirely without townes and castels: yet hath it many vyllages whiche are farre in sunder by reason of the barrenesse of the soyle, &c.

In an other place he writeth, that Suchana and Jug, after they are ioyned together in one, loose theyr lyke names and make the ryuer Dwina, &c. But leete vs nowe returne to the hystorie of Paulus Jonius.

Unto Ulinga, from the Permiens, Decerrians, Inugrians, Ugolicans, and Sinnegians, people inhabryng the north and northeast provinces, are brought the precious fures of Martens and Sables: Also the castes of wolues and foxes both white and blacke: And lykewyse the skynnes of the beastes called Cernati Lupi (that is) harte wolues, beinge engendered eyther of a wolfe and a hynde, or a harte and a bysch wolfe. These fures and skyns they exchange for dyuers other wares. The best kynde of sables and of the finest harte tober with nowe the vestures of princes are tyed, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are covered with the trosse similitude of the hyunge beaste, are brought by the Permiens and Decerrians, whiche they them selues also receaue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare unto the north Ocean. The Permiens and Decerrians, a lytle before owre tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols after the maner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowledge Chyche theyr God. The passage to the Inugrians, and Ugolicans, is by certeyne

Dwina and Suchana.

Gronland or Engroland.

Understand myles of Scramany, that is leagues.

Rych fures.

Lupi Cernati

Sables.

The mountaynes called by the name

Moscovia and Cathay.

Certeine tolghe mountaynes, which perhappes are they that in owlde tyme were cauled Hyperbozei. In the toppes of these, are founde the beste kyndes of Falcons: whercof one kynde (cauled Herodum) is whyte with spotted feathers. There are also ierfalcons, sakers, and peregrines, whiche were unknowne to the ancient princes in theyr excellent and this pleasures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beinge all tributaries to the kinges of Moscouia) are other nations the last of men, not knowne by any viages of the Moscouites, forasmuche as none of them haue passed to the Ocean, and are therefore knowne onely by the fabulous narrations of marchantes: yet is it apparente that the ryues of Diuidna or Dvina, dryeinge with it innumerable other ryues, runneth with a beherment course towarde the northe: and that the sea is there exceeding large: so that sayling by the coast on the ryght hande, shippes may haue passage from thence to Cathay as is thought by most lykely coniecture, excepte there be some lande in the waye.

For the region of Cathay pertyneth to the extreme and furthest partes of the East, liuate almost in the paralell of Thracia, and knowne to the Portugales in India when they sayled neare thercunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Chersonesus, and brought from thence certeine beastes made of Sables skynnes, by which only argument it is apparente that the cite of Cathay is not farre from the coastes of Scythia.

But when Demetrius was demaunded whether either by the monumentes of letters or by some left theym of theyr predecessours, they hadde any knowlege of the gothes who nowe more then a thousand yeares sence subuerred the Empire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the cite of Rome, he answered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kyng Torilas theyr chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them. And that dyuers nations of the north regions conspired to that expedition, and especiallye the Moscouites: Also that that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous Turons and wanderynge Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes forasmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scandania and Helande, were the authors of that inuasion.

haues of diuers kyndes.

The passage from Moscouia to Cathay.

Cathay.

Master Elliot cauleth Cathay the region of Auara.

The Gothes subuerred the Romane Empire.

The north regions conspired against the Romans.

Moscouia

And

And with these boundes are the Moscovites inclosed on every side, whom we thinke to be those people that Prolome cauled Madocas: but haue doubteless at this day their name of the river Mosco whiche runneth through the chiefe citie Mosca named also after the same: This is the most famous citie in Moscouia, aswell for the situation thereof beinge in maner in the myddest of the region, as also for the commodious oportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houses, and stronge fence of so fayre and goodly a castell. For the citie is extendid with a large tracte of buyldynges by the bankes of the ryuer for the space of fyue myles. The houses are made all of tymbre, and are diuided into parlors, chambers, & kitchenes of large roomes: yet neyther of vnseemely height or so lowe, but of decent measure and proportion. For they haue greate trees apte for the purpose brought from the foreste of Hercinia: of the which, made perfectly rounde like the mallets of shippes, and so layde one vpon an other that they isyne at the endes in right angles, where beinge made very faste and sure, they frame theyr houses thereof of maruelous strength with smaule charges and in verye short tyme. In maner all the houses haue priuate gardens aswell for pleasure as commodity of herbes, wherby the circuite of the dispersed citie appeareth verye greate. All the wardes or quarters of the citie, haue their peculiar chappells. But in the chiefest and highest place thereof, is the Church of our lady of ample and goodly workeman-shyppe, whiche Aristoteles of Bononie, a man of singular knowleadge and experience in architecture, buylded more then .lx. yeares sence. At the very head of the citie, a litle ryuer cauled Meglina which dyueth many cozne myles, entereth into the ryuer Moscus, and maketh almost an Island, in whose end is the castell with many strong towers and bullwarkes, buylded verye fayre by the diuise of Italian architects that are the masters of the kinges workes. In the fieldes about the citie, is an incredible multitude of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chase or persue with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kinges familiars and straunge ambassadours to whom he giueth licence by speciall commaundment. Almost thre partes of the citie is inuironed with two ryuers, and the rest vnto with a large more that receaueth plentie of water from the

sayde

The citie of  
mosca.

Richard Chas  
celer coude  
me that these  
masses are  
sumwhat ho-  
lowe on the  
one syde, and  
that the hole  
syde of the  
next entereth  
into the same  
wherby they  
lye very close

The castel of  
mosca.

white hares  
and roe byc-  
kes.

sayde ryuers. The riuie is also defended on the other syde  
 with an other ryuer named Nauka, whiche fauleth also into  
 Moscus a little beneath the citie. Furthermoze Moscus run-  
 nyng towarde the South, fauleth into the ryuer Ocha or Oc-  
 ca muche greater then it selfe at the towne Columna, and not  
 very farre from thence Ocha it selfe increased with other ri-  
 uers, vnladeth his streames in the famous riuer Volga, wher  
 at the place where they ioynne, is situate the citie of Nouogro-  
 dia the lesse, so named in respecte of the greater citie of that  
 name from whence was brought the firste colonie of the leste  
 citie. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Rha, hath his originall  
 of the greate marylhes named the white lakes. These are a-  
 boue Moscouia betwene the North and the West, and sende  
 furthe from them almost all the ryuers that are disperced in-  
 to dyuers regions on euery syde, as wee see of the Alpes from  
 whose toppes and sprynges descend the waters of whose con-  
 course the ryuers of Athene, Ido, and Rodanum, haue theyr  
 increase. For these marylhes in the steade of mountaynes  
 ful of sprynges, minister abundant moysture, forasmuch as no  
 mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe tra-  
 uayles of men, in so much that manye that haue byn studious  
 of the owlde Cosmographie, suppose the Hyphean and Hy-  
 perbozean mountaynes so often mentioned of the ancient wri-  
 ters, to bee fabulous. From these marylhes therfoze, the ry-  
 uers of Dwina, Ocha, Moschus, Volga, Tanais, and Bo-  
 rysthenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga  
 Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Borysthenes is at this  
 day cauled Reper. This, a lyttle beneath the Taurica, runneth  
 into the sea Eurinus. Tanais is receaued of the marylhes  
 of Meotis at the noble marre towne Azoff. But Volga lea-  
 uynge the citie of Moscha towarde the south, and runnyng  
 with a large circuite and great wyndynges and creekes first  
 towarde the Easte, then to the West, and lastly to the south,  
 fauleth with a full streame into the Caspian or Hyrcan sea.  
 About the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Cy-  
 trachan, which sum caue Astrachan, where marres are kepte  
 by the marchauntes of Media, Armenia, and Persia. On the  
 further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cau-  
 led Casan, of the which the Horde of the Casanite Tartars  
 tooke theyr name. It is distants from the mouth of Volga  
 and

The ryuer  
Ocha.

Volga.  
Nouogrodia.

Rha.

The whyte  
lakes.

The Hyphe-  
an & hyperbo-  
zean moun-  
taynes.

Tanais and  
Borysthenes.

The sea Eur-  
inus.

The Caspian  
sea.  
Astrachan.  
Media.  
Armenia.  
Persia.  
Casan.

at the Caspian sea fyne hundredeth myles. Abov̄e Casan, xl. myles at the enterance of the ryver Sura, Basilus that now reig- neth, buylded a towne cauled Surcium, to thintente that in those desertes, the marchauntes and traualiers which certifie the governours of the marches of the doinges of the Tartars and the maners of that ynquiet nation, may haue a safe man- sion amonge theyr customers.

The Emperours of Moscouia at dyuers tymes, cyther mo- ued therto by occasion of thynges presente, or for the desyre they had to nobilitate newe and obscure places, haue kepte the seate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers cities. For Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weste and the Lyvon sea, not many yeares past, was the headde cite of Moscouia, & obreynd euer the chiefe dignitie by reason of the incredible number of houses and edifices, with the oportunitie of the large lake replenyshed with fysh, and also for the fame of the moste auncient and venerable temple whiche more then foure hundredeth yeres sence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia Chryste the soonne of God, accordyng to the custome of the Emprours of Bizantium nowe cauled Constantinople. Nouo- grodia is oppressed in maner with continuall wynter and darkenesse of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Arctike ele- uate aboue the Horizon threescore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then Moscouia by almoste .vi. degrees. By whiche dyfference of heauen, it is sayde that at the soommer stepe of the soonne, it is burnt with continuall heate by reason of the horte nyghtes.

The cite also of Volodemaria, beinge more then twoo hundredeth myles distant from Mosca towarde the Easte, had the name of the chiefe cite and kynges towne, whyther the seate of the Empire was translated by the valiant Emperours for necessarie considerations, that such ayde, furniture, and requisites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at hande at suche tyme as they kepte continuall warre ageynst the Tartars theyr borderers. For it is situate withowt Vol- ga, on the bankes of the ryver Vlesma, whiche fauleth into Volga. But Moscha, aswell for those gyftes and commodi- ties whereof we haue spoken, as also that it is situate in the myddest of the most frequented place of all the region and Em- pire, and defended with the ryver and Castell, hath in compar-

Sura.  
Surcium.

Nouogrodia.

The temple  
of Sancta  
Sophia.

The eleuatis  
of the pole at  
Nouogrodia,  
& Moscouia.

heate by rea-  
son of short  
nyghtes.

The cite of  
Volodemaria

The cite of  
Moscha.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

**Ortografia.**  
**Volga.**

**Riga.**

**The citie of**  
**Plescoua.**

**The citie of**  
**Lubeke.**

**Frome Rome**  
**to Moscowa.**

**wynter tra-**  
**uayle by sicke**  
**snowe.**

**maryshes in**  
**summer.**

**Other writ-**  
**ters denye**  
**this.**

ryson to other cities byn thowght mosse woorthy to bee obserued for the chiefe. **Moscha** is distant from **Rouogrodia** siue hundred myles: and almost in the mydd way is the citie of **Ortografia** (otherwysse cauled **Ortwer** or **Tuwer**) bypon the ryuer of **Volga**. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and springes of the same, not yet increased by receauyng so many other ryuers, runneth but slowly and gently: And passeth from thence to **Rouogrodia** through many wooddes and desolate playnes. Furthermore frome **Rouogrodia** to **Riga** the nexte porte of the **Sarmatian** sea, is the iornay of a thousand myles lyttle more or lesse: This tracte is thoughte to bee more commodious then the other, because it hath manye towncs and the citie of **Plescoua** in the waye, beinge imbraced with two ryuers. From **Riga** (perceyninge to the dominion of the greate master of the warres of the **Lions**) to the citie of **Lubeke** a porte of **Bermame** in the goulfe of **Symblica** **Cherlonelus** (nowe cauled **Denmarke**) are numbered aboute a thousande myles of daungerous saylunge.

From **Rome** to the citie of **Moscha**, the distance is knowen to bee two thousande and fyre hundred and xij myles by the nearest way passyng by **Raenna**, **Tarulum**, the **Alpes** of **Carinica**: **Alto** **Villacum**, **Roziem**, and **Vienna** of **Parmonic**: and from thence (passyng ouer the ryuer of **Darubius**) to **Ormutium** of the **Marouians** and to **Tracouia** the chiefe citie of **Polonic**, are coumpted. xi. hundred myles. From **Tracouia** to **Vilna** the headde citie of **Lithuania**, are coumpted siue hundred myles: and as many from that citie to **Suolenzko** situz are beyonde **Bozyshenes**, from whense to **Moscha** are coumpted fyre hundred myles. The iorney frome **Vilna** by **Suolenzko** to **Moscha**, is traauypled in wynter with expedite heades and incredible celeritie bypon the snowes hardened with longe froste and compacte lyke **Ice** by reason of muche heauynge. But in sommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpassed but by difficulte and laborious traauyle. For when the snowes by the continuall heate of the soonne begyn to melte and dissolue, they cause greate maryshes and quampres able to intangle bothe horse and man, were it not that wayes are made throughe the same with bydges and causeys of wood, and almost infinite labour.

In all the region of **Moscovia**, there is no hayne or mine of

of golde or syluer, or any other common metall excepte iron: neyther yet is there any token of precious stones. And therefore they buye all those thynges of straungers. Neuerthelesse, this inuice of nature is recompensed with abundaunce of rich fures, whose price by the wanton miscelle of men is growne to such excellēce that the fures perceyninge to one sorte of apparel, are nowe soude for a thousande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that hese haue byn bought better chepe when the furehest nations of the noyth beinge ignozant of ower nyse finenesse and breathyng desyre toward effeminate and superfluous pleasures, exchanged the same with muche simplicitie ofren tymes for tryales and thynges of smaule value: In so muche that commonly the Hermians and Beccrians, were accustomed to gyue so many skynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde together, the marchantes of Moscouia coulde drawe through the hole where the harte or handyll entereth into the same. But the Moscouites sende into all partes of Europe the best kynde of hare to make lynnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Also many oxe hydes, and creadyngge great maies of ware.

They proudly denye that the Romane churchē obteynerh the principate and preeminent autoritie of all other.

They so abhorre the nation of the Jewes, that they detest the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admittē them to dwell within theyr dominions: esteemyng them as wycked and mischeuous people that haue of late taught the Turkes to make gunnes. Besyde the bookes that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue also the commentaries and homelies of saynt Ambrose, Augustine, Jerome, and Gregorie, translated into the Illirian or Slaun tongue whiche agreeth with theyrs. For they vse bothe the Slaun tongue and letters, as doo also the Slauns, Dalmates, Bohemes, Polons, and Lithuanes. This tongue is spredde further then any othyr at this day. For it is familiar at Constantinople in the courtē of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypte amonge the Mamelukes in the court of the Slaue of Alayze otherwyse cauled Scemphis or Babylon in Egypte. A greate number of bookes of holy scripture are translated into this tongue by thynndac of saynt Jerome and Tytilus. Furthermoze, besyde the hydropies of

Riche fures.

The price of fures.

How many fables skynnes for an axe.

Flax.  
Oxe hydes,  
ware.

Thei abhorre the Jewes.

Their bokes and religion.

The Slaun tongue spread further then any other.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

Saynte Jersome was borne in Iuda. many howe couled *Belclauonia.*

howe they number the yeares.

Fewe and simple lawes

The exercise of youth.

Shooyng.

The corporature of the Moscouites.

Their fare.

theyr olde countreys, they haue also booke conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyse of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no manner of knowlege of philosophie, Astronomie, or speculatiue phisicke with other liberall sciences: But such are taken for phisicians as professe that they haue often times obserued the vertue and qualite of sum vnknowne herbe.

They number the yeares, not from the byrth of Chryste, but from the begynnynge of the worlde. And this they begin to accounte, not from the monethe of January, but from September.

They haue fewe and simple lawes throughte owt all the kyngedome, made by the equitie and conscience of theyr prynces, and approued by the consent of wyse and good men: and are therfore greatly for the welthe and gouernesse of the people forasmuch as it is not lawfull to peruerse them with any interpretations or cauillations of lawyers or attorneys. They punysshethenues, rouers, priuie pychers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantitie of coulde water vpon suche as they suspecte, whiche they say to bee an intollerable kynde of torment. But sumtymes they manacle suche as are skoborne, and wyll not confesse apparent crymes.

Theyr youth is exercised in dyuers kyndes of games and plays rescmbelng the warres, whereby they both practyse policie and increase theyr strength. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and afoote. Also runnyng at the rylte, wrestlyng, and especially shootyng. For they gyue rewardes to suche as excell therein.

The Moscouites are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square set and myghtyly bylanced. They haue al grey eyes longe beardes, shorte legges, and bygge bellies. They ryde very shorte, and shote backwarde very cunnyngely euen as they lye. At home in theyr houses, theyr fare is rather plentiful then depntyie. For theyr tables are furnyshed for a smaule pryce with all suche kyndes of meates as may bee desyzed of such as are gyue to most excessive gluttony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lytle syluer peny the piere. There is incredible plentie of beastes and cattayle boche greate and smaule. The fleshe of bieffe that is kyled in the myddeste of wynter,

wynter, is so congeled and frozen, that it putrifie the not for the space of two moonethes. Theyr beste and mosse delicate dyshes, are gotten by huntynge and hawkynge as with vs. For they take all sortes of wylde beastes with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and cecus or eagles of a marueylous kynde whiche the region of Secerra byngeth furth vnto them, they take not onely felines and wylde duckes, but also cranes and wylde swannes. They take also a foule of darke coloure abowte the byggenes of a goose with redde ouerbrowes, whose fleshe in taste passeth the pleasauntnesse of pheasauntes. These in the Moscouites tounge are cauled Tetrao, whiche I suppose to bee the same that Plinie cauleth Erybratao, knowne to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the Vherians which inhabite the laundes abowte the sprynges of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Wolga minisreth vnto them great fyshes and of pleasaunte taste: especially surgions or rather a kynde of fysh lyke vnto surgions: whiche in the wynter season beinge inclosed in Ice, are longe reserved freshe and incorrupte. Of other kyndes of fyshes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof wec haue spoken befoze. And wher as they bitterly lacke natue wyne, they vse suche as are brought from other places. And this only in certeyne castles and holy misteries. Especially the pleasaunte Maluastie of the Island of Erera nowe cauled Candy, are had in mosse honoure: and used eyther as medicens or for a shewe of excellene aboundaunce, forasmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wyne brought from Candy by the streyghtes of Hercules pillers and the Landes of Bades, & tolled with such studdes of the inclosed Ocean, shulde be dyronke amonge the Scythian snowes in theyr natue puritie and pleasauntnesse.

The comon people drinke mede made of hany & hoppes sodden together, whiche they keepe longe in pyched barrells wher e the goodnes increaseth with age. They vse also beere and ale as doo the Bermans and Polones. They are accustomed for delycatenesse sommer to coole theyr beere and mede with putrynge Ice therin, whiche the noble men reserve in theyr cellars in great quantite for the same purpose. Summe there are that delyte greatly in the iuse that is pressed owte of cherries befoze theyr bee full ripe: whiche they asseure to haue

fleshe preserued longe by reason of coude. hawkynge and huntynge.

plentie of fysh.

fysh longe reserved in Ice.

wyne.

maluastie.

All the north parte of the firme lande was cauled Scythia and the people Scythians.

Drynke cooled with Ice.

wyne of cherries.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

haue the coloure of cleare and ruddy wyne w<sup>th</sup> a verye pleasant taste.

Their womē.

Their wyues and women, are not w<sup>th</sup> them in suche honoure as they are in other nations. For they vse them in manner in the place of seruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obserue theyr walkes and haue an eye to their chastitie. They are seldom bydden furth to any feastes, neither are permitted to resoꝛte to churches farre of, or to walke abroad withoute sum greate consideration. But the common sorte of women, are easely and for a smaule price allured to lecherie euen of strangers: by reason wherof, the gentelmen doo lyttle or nothyng esteeme them.

Thomas Paleologus.

John the father of kynge Basilius dyed more then .xx. yeares sence. He maryed Sophia the doughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Heloponnus (now called Mozea) and was brother to the Emperoure of constantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dyuen oute of Grecia by the Turckes. Of her were fyue chyldren borne, as Basilius hym selfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Basilius tooke to wyfe Salomonie the doughter of George Soboronius a man of synguler fidelitie and wyldome & one of hys counsaile. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barrenesse obscured.

The conquest of the turkes in Grecia.

How the princes chuse theyr wyues.

When the prynces of Moscouia delibere to marie, theyr custome is to haue choysse of all the vyrgynes in the realme, & to chuse suche as are of most fayre and bewtyfull bysage and personage w<sup>th</sup> maners & vertues accordyng, to bee browghe before them. Which afterwarde they comitte to certayne faythful men and graue matrones to bee furder viewed, in so muche that they leaue no parte of them vnserched. Of these, theye whome the prynce moste lyketh, is pronounced worthy to bee hys wyfe, not withoute greate and carefull expectatiō of theyr parentes, lpyng for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgyns also which stood in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often tynge the same day to gratyfy the prynce, maryed to hys noble n<sup>es</sup>, gentelmen, and capytaynes: wherby it surpries comynly to passe that whyle the prynces contemne the lpynage of totall descente, suche as are borne of humble parentage, are craided to the degre of princely estate, In lyke maner as Emperours

trouts of the turckes were accustomed to bee chosen by curly:  
ness of personage and warly prowes.

Basilus was vnder thage of forty and seven yeares, of  
curly personage, singular vertue, and princely qualities, by  
all meanes studious for the prosperitie and commodities of  
hys subiectes. Furthermoze in beneuolence, lyberalitic and  
good successe in hys daynges, to bee preferred before his pro:  
genitours. For when he hadde. vi. yeares kepte warre with  
the Tyuons that moued. lxxii. confederate cities to the cause  
of that warre, he obteyned the victorie and departed with  
fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted. Also  
at the begynnynge of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight  
and tooke prisoner Constantine the capitayne of the Ruthens  
whom he brought to Moscouia tyed in chaynes. But shortly  
after at the ryuer Bozithenes aboue the cite of Orsa, he  
hym selfe was ouercome in a great battayle by the same Con:  
stantine whom he hadde dismissed: yet so, that the towne of  
Smolenzko whiche the Moscouites possessed before and was  
nowe woonne by the Polens, coulde scyll pertyne to the do:  
minions of Basilus. But agaynste the Tartars, and espec:  
ally the Tartars of Europe called the Paccopites, the Mos:  
couites haue often tymes kepte warre with good successe, in  
revenge of thiniuries doote to them by theyr incursions.

Basilus is accustomed to hyngge to the fiede more then  
a hundredth and fiftie thousande horsemen deuided into three  
bandes and folowynge the banners or ensignes of theyr ca:  
pitaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges  
wyngge, is figured the image of Iosue the capitaine of the He:  
briwes at whose prayer the soonne prolonged the daye and  
steyde his course as wyrcelle the hystories of holpe scripture.  
Armies of footemen are in maner so noble in those great wyl:  
dernes, as wel for theyr apparel beinge loose and longe, as  
also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres  
truste rather to the swyftnesse of theyr lycht horses then to  
trye the matter in a pyght fyelde.

Theyr horses are of lesse then meane stature: but verye  
stronge and swyfte. Theyr horsemen are armed with pykes,  
ryuettes, mases of Iren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked  
swoordes. Theyr bodies are defended with rounde Targets  
after the maner of the Turckes of Asia: or with bendyng and  
cozuarde

Duke Basilius.

war betwene  
the Polones  
and Moichos  
uites.

war betwene  
the Moscouites  
and Tartars.

The moscouites  
army.  
Their banner.

Their horses  
and horsemen.

Their armure.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

**Hargabustlers.**

Cozarde targettes after the maner of the Greekes: Also white coates of mayle, bygantynes, and sharpe helmerces. Basiliscus dyd furthermore inspytute a band of hargabustlers on hoyle backe: and caused many greate brassen pieces to bee made by the workemanshype of certeyne Itzalpans: and the same with theyr stockes & wheeles to bee placed in the castell of Mosca.

**Sunnes.**

The kynge hym selfe with pyntely magnyfyence & singular familiaritie (wherwith neuerthelste no parte of the maiestie of a kynge is byolare) is accustomed to dyne openly with hys noble men and straunge ambassadours in hys owne chamber of presence where is scene A meruelous quantite of syluer and gylte plate standynge bypon two great and high cubbardes in the same chamber. He hath not abowte hym any other garde for the custodie of hys person sauyng only hys accustomed famylpe. For watche and warde is dyligently kepte of the faythfull multytude of the citicens: In so muche

**The prince dynerth openly.**

**Sigismundus sayth that much of this is golde.**

**The custodie of the cite.**

that euery warde or quarter of the cite is inclosed with gates rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man rashely to walke in the cite in the nyght, or without lycht. All the courte consysteth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyse souldyers which are cauled obote of euery regyon by theyr towne and byllagies, and commaunded to wayte course by course at certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre is proclaymed, all the armye is collected bothe of the owlde souldiers and by musterynge of newe in all prouynces. For the lieutenantes and capytaynes of the armye, are accustomed in all cities to muster the youth, and to admyrte to thorder of souldyers such as they thynke able to serue the turne.

**The dukes court.**

**Souldyers wages of the common treasury.**

Theyr wages is payde them of the common treasury of euery prouynce which is gathered and partely payde also in the tyme of peace although it bee but lytle. But such as are assigned to the warres, are free from all tributes, and inioye certein other pryueleges wherby they may the more gladly & cheerefully serue theyr kynge and defend theyr contrey. For in the tyme of warre, occasyon is mynystred to shewe trewe vertue and manhodde, where in so greate and necessarie an institucion, euery man accordynge to hys approued acruitie and ingenyous forwardnesse, may obreyue the fortune eyther of perpetuall honoure or ignominie,

Vix olim illa fides referentibus horrida regna  
 Moschorum, et Ponti, res glacialis erat.  
 Nunc Iouio autore, illi oculis lustramus, et vrbes,  
 Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluuios.  
 Moschouia, monumenta Ioui, tua culturaeuoluens,  
 Cæpi alios mundos credere Democriti.

**C** Other notable thynges as concernynge Moscouia:  
 gathered out of the bookes of Sigismundus Li-  
 berus. Note that when he sayth  
 myles, he meaneth leagues.



From whence Ruffia had the name, there are  
 dyuers opinions. Some thynke that it was  
 so named of one Ruffus the sonne or neie  
 of Iech the kynge of the Polons. Other af-  
 firme that it was so cauled of a certeyne  
 olde colone named Ruffus not farre frome  
 Rouogozoda or Rouogardia the more.

Ruffia.

Some also thynke that it was so cauled of the browne colour  
 of the nation. But the Moscouians confute al these opinions  
 as vntrewe: Affirmyng that this nation was in olde tyme  
 cauled Roffeia as a nation disperfed, as the name it selfe  
 dooth declare. For Roffeia in the Rutchens tounge, dooth  
 signifie disperfed or scattered. The which thyng to be true,  
 dyuers other people commyxt with thishabitautes, and dy-  
 uers prouinces lying here and there betwene dyuers partes  
 of Ruffia doo playnely declare. But whenie so euer they  
 tooke theyr name, doublelesse all the people that vse the Sla-  
 uon tounge, and professe the fayth of Christ after the maner  
 of the Greeces, (cauled in theyr common language Ruffi, and  
 in the Latin tounge Rutcheni) are increased to suche a multy-  
 tude that they haue eyther expelled all the nations that lye  
 betwene them, or drawne them to theyr maner of luyng, in  
 somuche that they are nowe cauled all Rutcheni by one com-  
 mon name.

The browne  
 colour of the  
 Ruffes.

Roffeia.

The Slaun  
 tounge spres  
 d. th farre.

Furthermoze the Slaun tounge (whiche at this daye is  
 somewhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceedyng far,  
 as vied of the Dalmates, Bosnienses, Croarians, Istrians,

DDDD, i,

and

## Moscovia and Cathay.

and by a longe tracte of the sea Adriatique vnto Forum Julii: Of the Carnians also whome the Venetians caule Charcos: and lykewyse of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Drauus: furthermoze of the Stirians within Berezium and by Quera vnto Danubius and from thense of the Mylians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabitynge euen vnto Constantinople: furthermoze of the Bohemians, Lusacians, Silesians, Morauians, and thynhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedome of Hungarie: The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyse the Circasians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus: and is from thense vled in the north partes of Germanie amonge the remanent of the Wandales inhabitynge here and there. All whiche nations althowogh they acknowledge them selues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germanys takinge the denomination only of the Wandales, caule al the that vlc the Slaun tongue, Quenden, Quinden, or Quindyth.

Wandales.

The princes  
of Russia.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in Russia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who possesseth the greatest parte therof. The seconde is the great duke of Lithuania: and the thyrde the kynge of Polonie, who nowe obteyneth the domination of Polonie and Lithuania.

The duke of  
Moscovia.

In auctoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarches of the worlde. For he deprieth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He trusteth not his owne brotherne, but oppresseth all with lyke seruitude. In so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remaine with hym in the courte, or to goo to the warres, or sendeth on ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, excepte the younge gentelmen the soonnes of the Boiatons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He vsurpeth this auctoritie alwell ouer the spiritualtie as the temporaltie: constitutyng what hen lysteth of the goods and lyfe of al men. Of his counsilers there is not one that dare dissent from hym in any thynge. They openly confesse that the wyl of the prince is the wyl of god: and therfoze caule hym the key bearer and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executor of gods wyl. By reason wherof, the prince hym selve when any petition is made to hym for the deliuerie of any aprise, is accustomed

accustomed to aunswere: When god commaundeth he shal be deliuered. lykewyse when any asketh a question of an vncertaine or doubtfull thyng, theyr custome is to aunswere thus: God knoweth and the greates prince. It is vncertaine whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre so tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyranny of the prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruell.

Basilius the sonne of John, was the fyrst that tooke bypon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner: The great lord Basilius, by the grace of god kynge and lord of all Russia and the greates duke of Anolodimaria, Moscouia, Rouogardia. &c.

Furthermore, whereas now this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the tytle and cause of this error. Note therfore that Czar in the Ruthens tounge signifieth a kynge, whereas in the language of the Slauons, Polons, Bohemes, and other, the same woorde Czar, signifieth Cesar by whiche name the Emperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slauons that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name: as sum Cral, other Kyral, and sum Kozoll: but thinke that only an Emperour is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to passe that the Ruthens or Moscouite interpretours hearinge theyr prince to bee so cauled of straunge nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, although they signifie all one thyng. But who so wyl reade all theyr histories and bookes of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Kellar. By the lyke erreure the Emperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuertheless of antiquitie vsed no hygher tytle then the name of a kynge, expressed by this woorde Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vse the Slauon tounge, caule the cite of Constantinople Czargrad, (that is) the kynges cite.

Sum caule the prince of Moscouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to procede of the whyte cappes, or other tytements they weare on theyr heades, lyke as they caule the kynge of Persia Kasilpala (that is) redde heade. He vseth the tytle of a kynge when he writeth or sendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Suetia and Denmarke, the

DDDD, ii.

greates

why the duke of Moscouia was cauled an Emperour

The greates Turke.

The whyte kynge.

The duke of Moscouia his tytle.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

greate master of Russia and Livonia, and also to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed: but he is not cauled kynge of any of them, excepte perhappes of the Livons. yet by reason of his later conquestes, sum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour because he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

To the kynge of Polone, he bleth this cytle: The greate lozde Basilus by the grace of god, lozde of all Russia, and greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, &c. leaunge owte the cytle of a kynge. For none of them vouches safethy to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe cytle, as I knewe by experiance at my being in Moscouia, at which tyme Sigismundus the kynge of Polone sente hym his letters augmented with the cytle of the duke of Masouia, wherwith he was not a lyttle offended.

Russia bapty:  
sed by saynte  
Andrew the  
Apostle.

They glozie in theyr hystories that befoze Vuolodimeria and Olha, the lande of Russia was baptised and blessed of saynt Andrew thapostle of Chryst, affiemyng that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Bozyschenes: and that he sayled vpp the ryuer to the mountaynes wher as is nowe Chiouia: and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his crosse, prophesyinge also that the grace of god shulde bee greate there, and that there shulde bee many churches of Chrystian men: Lykewyse that he afterwarde came to the sprynges of Bozyschenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat descended into the lake Ilmer: from whence by the ryuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the same lake, he came to Nouogardia: and passed frome thence by the same ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Bena, and so vnto the sea whiche they caule Quarezkoia, beinge the same that we caule the Germanye sea, betwene Quinlandia or Finlandia and Livonia, by the whiche he sayled to Rome, and was at the laste crucified for Chryst his gospell in Deloponnesus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr cronacles make mention.

The Moscouites warres

The prynce euery seconde or thyrde yeaere, causeth a muster to bee taken of the soonnes of the Boiarons, and take the an accoumpt bothe of theyr number and howe many horses and men euery of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a certeyne

A certeyne stypende to suche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue seldome any rest or quyetnesse. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Linonians, Suetians, or Tartars of Casan. Or yf it so chaunce that the prynce keepe no warre, yet dooche he yearely by appoynte garrisons of. xx. thousande menne in places as bolot Tanais and Decca to represse the incurSIONS and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Pzecopites.

As in other matters, euen so in thozder of warrefare there is great diuersitie amonge men. For the Moscouian as soone as he begynneth to slye, thinketh of none other succour but putterh all his confidence therein. Beinge pursued or taken of his enemye, he neyther defenderh him selfe nor desireth pardon.

The Tartar cast of from his horse, spoyled of al his armure & weapons, and also soze wounded, defenderh hym selfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meanes he may, vntyll his strength and spirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he seeth hym selfe destitute of all helpe and hope to escape, doth humbly desyre pardon, casting away his weapons & armure, and reching furth to the victourer his handes ioynd together to be bounde, hoppnge by captiuitie to saue his lyfe.

The Moscouites in placeinge theyr armye chuse them a large playne where the best of them pytch theyr tentes & the other make the certain arbours of bowdes fyrst in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes therof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende them selues, theyr bowes, arrowes, saddyles, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horses to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in sunder, which they forispye neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impedymnt, excepte per happes the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, tyuers and maryshes.

It may perhappes seme straunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys so longe with so smaule an armye as I haue sayde. I wyll nowe therefore brefely declare theyre sparynge and frugalitie. He that hath syxe or sumtymes more horses, sleth one of them as A packe horse to beare all theyr necessaries,

Dyuers man-  
ners of dy-  
uers people  
in the warre.

The moscou-  
ytes armye.

howe he  
maynteyneth  
his armye.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

eyes. He hath also in a bagge of two or thre spanes longe, the flour or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and .iiii. or v. poundes weyghte of stowes as the powdered. He hath lykemyse A bagge of salte, myrre with pepper if he bee ryche. Furthermore euery man carryeth with hym A hatchet, A fyre bore, and a brasen porte: so that if they chaunce to comme to any place where they can fynde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or asche, they kyndle a fyre and fylle theyr portes with water wherunto they put a spoonefull of meale with a quantite of salte, and make pottage therof, wherwith the master and all hys seruauntes lyue contented. But if the master bee very hungary he eateth all alone, and the seruantes are sumtymes inforced to faste for the space of two or thre dayes. And yf the master intende to fare sumwhat more delycately, then he addeth thereto a lytle portion of stowes asche. I speake not thys of the best of them, but of suche as are of the meane sorte. The gouernours and capytaynes of tharmpe, doo sumtymes bydde the poozer sorte to theyr tables: where theye feede them selues so wcl, that they fast two or thre dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbeare all other meates. Wheredyng forward to the battayle, they put more confydence in theyr multitude, and with what greate armys they a Tayle theyr enemyes, the epyer in the strengthe and valyante. Fe of theyr souldyers, or in well instructyng theyr armys: and fyghte better afarre of, then at hande: and therefore study howe to circumuent or inclose theyr enemyes and to assaile them on the backe halfe.

Instruments  
of warre.

They haue many trumpeters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous straunge noyse. They haue also an other kynde of instrumentes which they caule Szurna. These they blowe withoute ceasyng for the space of an houre together, so temperyng the same and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe moze, that the noyse seemeth continuall withoute intermyssion.

The Mosco-  
wites and  
Tartars ap-  
parell.

They vse all one maner of apparell: as longe coates withoute pleyghes and with narrowe beaues after the maner of the Hungaryans. These the Christians vse to burthen on the ryght syde: and the Tartars (hynge the lyke) burthen them on the lefte syde. They weare redde and hozte buskins that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the soules thereof de-  
fended

fended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr byrtes are wroughte with dyuers colours aboute the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes bysette with lyttle rounde haules lyke beades, of syluer or gylted copper, and sumtyme perles also. They gyde them selues beneath the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may seme more boozely which they greatlye esteeme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italyans, and Almaynes.

The prouince of Moscouia is noether very large nor fruit full, forasmuche as the fertyltype is hyndered with sandye grounde which epyther with to muche drynesse or moyster kyl: leth the cozne. Furthermore the immoderate and sharpe vntemperatenesse of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommethe the heate of the soonne, sumtymes dothe not suffer the cozne to rypp. For the coulde is there sumtyme so extreme, that lyke as with vs in sommer by reason of heate, such so there by extreme coulde the yearth hath many great chynkes or byraches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spetle faulng from ous mouth, are frosen befoze they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came therher in the yeare 1526. sawe the bzaunches of frutefull trees wythryzed by the coulde of the wynter befoze, which was so extreme that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Bonecz) were founde frosen to death in theyr leades. There were sum that at the same tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cartayle from the nexte villagies to Moscouia, dyed by the way with theyr beastes through the extremyte of the coulde. Furthermore, the same yeare many players that were accustomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunsyng beares, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wylde beares also inforced therto by famyn, lefte the wooddes and ranne here and there into dyuers villagies and houses: At whose comyng while the men of the countrey forlooke theyr houses and fledd into the fieldes, manye of them perpyshed throughe the vehemen- cie of the coulde. Agayne, it sumtymes so chaunceth that in sommer the heate is as extreme: as in the yeare .1525. in the which almost al kynds of pulc and grayne were scorched and burne: and such a derty of cozne folowed that draughte, that that which befoze was bowght for thre dengas, was afterwarde sould for .xx. or .xxx. Furthermore also, ma-  
upg

The prouince  
of Moscouia,

Extreme  
coulde.

Extreme  
heate in cold  
regions.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

nye billagies, wooddes, and stacks of corne, were sette on fyre by thertreame heate: The smoke wherof so fylled the regoon, that the eyes of many were soze hurte therby. There arose also as it were a darke and thynke myst without smoke which so molested the eys, that many losse theyr sight therby.

They sove and marythe the seades of melons with great diligence in certeyne rapped beddes myrte with doonge: wher by they fynde a remedy both ageynst extream cold and heat. For if the heate exceade, they make certeyne ryftes in the beddes as it were breathyng places least the seades shulde be suffocate with to muche heate. And if the cold be extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dunge.

Theyr beastes are muche lesse then oxen: yet not all without hornes as one hath written. For I have there sene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with hornes.

Not farre from the cite of Moscha, are certeyne monasteries which a farre of, seeme lyke unto a cite. They saye that in thys cite is an incredible number of houses: And that the fyrte yeare befoze my commynge thither, the prince caused them to be numbered, and founde them to be more then one and fortye thousande and fyue hundred houses. The cite is very large and wyde: and also very stabby and myrie. By reason wherof it hath many bydges and causeys.

The ayre of the regyon is so holtsome, that beyond the springes of Tanais, especially towarde the north and a great parte also towarde the Easte, the pestylence hath not byne harde of sence the memozye of man. yet haue they sunntimes a disease in theyr bowells and headdes not muche unlyke the pestylence. Thys disease they cause a heate: wherwith suche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

Some wyte that John the duke of Moscovia and sonne of Basilus, under the pretence of religion sacked & spoyled, the cite of Nougardia: and carried with hym from thence to Moscovia thre hundredth seades laden with golde, sylver, and precious stones of the gooddes of the Archebysshoppe, the marchauntes, citizins, and straungiers.

Solowki is an Ilande situate in the north sea. fiftie leagues from the continent betwene Dwina and the province of Carela. Howe farre it is distant from Moscovia, can not be well knowne by reason of manys fennes, maryshes, wooddes,

Little  
beastes.

The cite of  
Moscovia or  
Moscha.

Holtsome  
ayre.

A ryche  
people.

The Iland of  
Solowki.

Wooddes, and desolate places lying in the way. Albeit, they say that it is not three hundred leagues from Moscovia, & two hundred from Bieloiesero. In this lande is made greate plenty of salte: and it hath in it a monasterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or birgyn to enter. There is also great spythynge for hearing. They say that here the soonne at the sommer Equinoctiall, shyneth continually excepte two houres.

Bieloiesero.

The lengthe of the day.

Demetriowe, is a citie with a castel, distante from Moscovia xii. leagues declining from the west somewhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Lachoma that runneth in to the ryuer of Selt. Selt also receaueth the ryuer Dubna which unladeth it selfe in Volga. And by the commoditie of thus many ryuers, many riche marchaundies are brought without great labour or difficultie from the caspian sea by the ryuer Volga to Moscovia and byuers other prouynces & cities abowre the same.

The trade from Moscovia to the Caspian sea.

Bieloiesero, a citie with a castell, is situat at a lake of the same name. For Bieloiesero in the Moscouites tounge, signifieth a white lake. The citie standeth not in the lake as sum haue sayd. yet is it so environed with marshes that it may seeme to bee inespugnable: In consideration wherof, the princes of Moscovia are accustomed to keepe theyr treasure there. Bieloiesero is from Moscovia, a hundred leagues, and as much from Rouogardia the great. The lake it selfe, is xii. leagues in length and as much in breadth: and hath (as they say) three hundred ryuers faulynge into it. The inhabitants of this place, haue a peculyar language, although now in maner all speake the Moscouites tounge. The longest day here in the sommer Equinoctiall, is sayde to consyste of xix. houres. A man of greate name and credite toulde me, that at the begynnyng of the sprynge when the trees began nowe to bee greene, he wente in poste from Moscovia to Bieloiesero: And passing ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there so covered with Ice and snow, that he was fayne to dispatch the residue of his iorney on sledes. And although the wynter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes waxe ripe and at gaithered euen at the same tyme that they are in Moscovia. With in an arrowe shotte of the lake, there is an other lake that byngeth furth bymstone, which a certē ryuer running out of

Bieloiesero or the whyte lakes.

Diversity of temperamene in smalt by stance.

A lake of bymstone.

the

## Moscovia and Cathay.

the same, carryeth with it in great quantitie stoyng aboute the water lyke a scoomme. yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditie therby.

*Exchange of furre for othe ther ware.* The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre north and east from Moscouia, exchange theyr furre for apparel, knyues, needles, spoones, hatchets, and suche other necessa re wares. For they haue not the vse of golde and syluer.

**T**he description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lyinge North and East from Moscouia: As the way from Moscouia to the ryuer Perzora, and the prouince of Jugacia, or Iubca: And from thence to the ryuer Obi. Ipkewyle the description of ocher countreys and regions, euen vnto The myre of the greace Cham of Cathay.

*The domini- on of the duke of moscouia.*

*Uolochda. werke. Aug.*



The dominion of the Prince of Moscouia reacheth farre towarde the East and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe describe. As concernynge whiche thyng, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the Moscouite tounge, and haue here made a bypese recheatall of the same. I wyll fyrst therefore describe the iorney from Moscouia to Perzora, and so to Jugacia and Obi.

From Moscouia to the citie of Uolochda, are numbered fyftie Werkes, one Werk conceynnge almoste the space of an Italyan myle. From Uolochda to Uking towarde the righte hande descendynge with the course of the ryuer of Uolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are coumpred fyue hundredeth Werkes: where within two Werkes of the towne called Strelze and hard by the citie of Uking Suchana ioyneth. Jug which runneth from the south: from whose mouth vnto the springes of the same, are numbered fyue hundredeth Werkes.

Note that wheras here before the autour numbereth but fyftie werkes from Moscouia to Uolochda, it seemeth that the place is corrupted by the printers mystakynge one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fyftie, for Quingenta, which is fyue hundredeth. For the distance is no lesse from Moscouia to Uolochda, then is fro Uolochda to Uking, which is fyue hundredeth werkes.

But

But Suchana and Jug after they ioyne together, lose theyr fyrst names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the whiche the passage to the cite of Colmogor conceynerh fyue hundredeth Werstes: from whence in the space of fyre dayes iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at vi. monthes, And the greatestte parte of this iorney consisteth by nauigati: on. For by lande, from Quolochda vnto Colmogor, passing ouer the ryuer Quaga, are a thousande Werstes. Not farre from Colmogor, the ryuer Sienege runnyng from the Easte on the ryght hande for the space of seuen hundredeth Werstes, fauleth into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Sienege by the space of two hundredeth Werstes, they coome to a place called Nicolst: from whence within halfe a werst, theyppes haue passage into the ryuer Kuluo, which hath his original from a lake of the same name towarde the north, from whose springes is. viii. dayes byage to the mouth of the same where it entereth into the Ocean.

Saylpyng by the coastes of the ryght hande the sea, they passe by the regions of Stanuwilche, Calunczsch, and Apnu. And saylpyng abowt the promontorie or cape of Chorogofki Rosz, Stanuwilche, Lanienchy, and Dolsickh, they come at the length into the ryuer Wezen, and some thense in the space of fyre dayes to a byllage of the same name, standyng in the mouth of the ryuer Dieza: by the which ageins ascendyng towarde the lefte hande and soommer East, they come to the ryuer Diefcopa. From whence saylpyng for the space of fyue Werstes, they coomme into two lakes in the whiche are seene two wayes: wherof one on the ryght syde, goeth to the ryuer Rubicho, by the which they passe to the ryuer Zircho. Other by an other and shorter way, byng theyppes from the lake directly into Zircho: from whence, except they be hindered by tempest, they coomme in the space of three weekes to the ryuer and mouth of Czilma, flowyng into the great ryuer Perzora, which in that place is two Werstes in breadthe. Saylpyng from hence, they coomme in the space of fyre dayes to the towne and castell of Dusstosero, neare vnto the which, Perzora entereth into the north Ocean at fyre monthes. The inhabitantes of this place, are men of simple wytt. They receaued the fayth of Chryste, and were baptised in the yeare M. D. xviii.

Suchana.  
Jug.  
Colmogor.  
Dwina.

Sienege.  
Nicolst.

Kuluo.

The regions  
by the North  
sea.

Dieza.

Diefcopa.

Rubicho.

Zircho.

Czilma.  
Perzora.

Dusstosero.

from the mouth of Tzima unto the mouth of the ryuer  
 Ura, goinge by Detzora, is one monethes wyage. Ura hath  
 his springes in the mountayne Hoyas Semmai, being on the  
 left hande towarde the sommer East, and springeth oute  
 of a great stone of the same mountayne, cauled Tamen. Solf-  
 chot, from the springes of Ura to the mouthes of the same,  
 are numbered moze then a thousande Weckes. Furthermoze  
 Detzora runneth from this south wynter parte, from whence  
 ascendynge from the mouthes of Ura unto the mouthes of  
 the ryuer Stzuchogora, is three weekes wyage. They that  
 described this wyage, sayde that they rested betwene the mou-  
 ntes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potzicheriema; and  
 left the bytayles there whiche they brought with them  
 from Russia. Beyond the ryuers of Detzora and Stzuchogora  
 towarde the mountayne Camenipoias and the sea with  
 the Ilandes there abowt and the castell of Hussofeyo, are  
 dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common  
 name are cauled Samoged (that is) such as eat the eelues.  
 They haue great increate of foules, byrdes, & dyuers kyndes  
 of beastes: as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermel-  
 lines, Squirrel: and in the Ocean the beaste cauled Mozo:  
 Also Well, wyre braes, woolfes, hares, Equiwoodyant,  
 great whales, and a fyfthe cauled Semfi, with dyuers other.  
 The people of these nations, come not to Moscouia. For  
 they are wylde, and kepe the company & societie of other men.  
 From the mouthes of Stzuchogora saylynge by the ryuer  
 unto Poiaffa, Artawische, Tamen, and Poiaffa the greater,  
 is three weekes wyage. Furthermoze the ascendynge to the  
 mounte Tamen, is thre dayes iorney: from the whiche, des-  
 cendynge, they come to the ryuer Artawischa, and from thence  
 to the ryuer Sibut, from whence they passe to the castell of  
 Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Sossa. The people that  
 inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Auogolici. Lea-  
 yunge Sossa on the ryght hande, they come to the greete ry-  
 uer Dby, that springeth out of the lake Witaisko, the whi-  
 che with all the haste they coulde make, they coulde scarcely  
 passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of such breadth that it  
 reacheth fourescore Weckes. The people also that dwell a-  
 bowt this ryuer, are cauled Auogolici and Ugritzschi, from  
 the

the castell of Obra ascendyng by the ryuer of Oby, vnto the ryuer Jritsche into the which Solla entereth, is thre monethes iorney. In these places are two castels named Jeron and Tumen, keppe by certeyne lordes cauled knesi Juhorski. beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moscouia as they say. Here are dyuers kyndes of beastes and fures.

Frome the mouth of the ryuer Jritsche to the Castell of Brustina, is two monethes iorney: from tohen to the lake Bitai by the ryuer Oby (which I sayde to haue his sprynges in this lake) is more then thre monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackyng thuse of common spech. They bynge with them dyuers wares, and especially pearles and precious stones, whiche they sell to the people cauled Brustintzi and Serponowtzi. These haue theyr name of the castell Serponowt, situate in the mountaynes of Lucomorya beyonde the ryuer Obi. They say that to the men of Lucomorya, chaunceth a marueylous thynge and incredible. For they asseme, that they dye yearely at the xxvii. daye of November, beinge the feast of saynt George amonge the Moscouytes: and that at the nexte sprynge abowte the xxiii. daye of Apryll, they reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

With these also, the people of Brustintzi and Serponowtzi, exercise a newe and straunge kynde of trade. For when the accustomed tyme of theyr dyinge, or rather of sleapyng, approacheth, they leaue theyr wares in certeyne places appoynted, whiche the Brustintzi and Serponowtzi carye away leayng other wares of equall value in theyr places: whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyuyne perceaue to bee of his equall pryce, they requyre theyr owne ageyne: by reason wherof muche stryfe and fighting is betwene them.

From the ryuer of Obi descending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calamt, which came thether from Obiowa and Bogola. Beneath Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden owlde wyche) are the ryuers Solla, Beres, Twa, and Danadim, al which sprynge out of the mountayne Lame, Walschega, Woassa, and the rockes ioynyng to the same.

All the nations that inhabite from these ryuers to Aurea Anus, are subiecte to the prynce of Moscouia,

Jritsche.  
Jeron.  
Tumen.

Brustina.

Bitai.

Blacke men  
withowt  
speache.

Serponowe.  
Lucomoria.

men that  
yearely dye  
and reuyue.

A strange  
trade of mara  
chandies.

Obi.  
Calamt.

Ryuers.

Aurea

## Moscouia and Cathay.

*Aurea Anus.*

*Obdoia.*

*Aurea Anus* cauled in the *Moscouites* tongue *Slata Baba*, is an *Idole* at the mouthes of *Obi* in the prouince of *Obdoia*, standynge on the furthest banke towarde the sea. Alonge by the bankes of *Obi* and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many castells and fortrellles, all the lordes wherof are subiecte to the prince of *Moscouia*, as they say. They say also, or rather fable, that the *Idole* cauled *Aurea Anus*, is an *Image* lyke vnto an owlde wyfe hannyng a chyld in her lappe: and that there is nowe seene an other infante which they say to bee her newie: Also, that there are certeyne instrumentes that make a continuall sounde lyke the noyse of trumpettes. The which if it so bee, I thynke it to bee by reason of the wynde blowynge continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

*Coffin.*

*Cassima.*

*Tachnia.*

People of monstrous shape.  
A fyfthe lyke a man.  
Plinie wyreth of the lyke fyfthe.

The ryuer *Coffin*, fauleth out of the mountaynes into *Lucomozia*. In the mouth of thys, is a castell. Whither fro the spynges of the great ryuer *Coffin*, is two moonerthes by age. Furthermore from the spynges of the same ryuer, the ryuer *Cassima* hath hys original: which runnyng throught *Lucomozia*, fauleth into the great ryuer *Tachnia*, beyonde the which (as is sayde) dwell men of prodigious shape, of whom sum are ouergrowne with heare lyke wylde beastes: other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr byelles without neckes, and with longe handes also and withoute secte. There is lyke wyse in the ryuer *Tachnia*, a certeyne fyfthe with headde, eyes, nose, mouth, handes, feete, & other members vnterly of humane shape, and yet without any voyce, & pleasaunt to bee eaten as are other fyfthes.

All that I haue hethereto reherfed, I haue translated out of the sayde iorney whiche was deliuered me in the *Moscouites* tongue. In the which perhappes sum thynges maye seeme fabulous and in maner incredible, as of the doomme men and the deade reuyuyng, the *Aurea Anus* also, and the monstrous shapes of men, with the fyfthe of human forme: wherof althowgh I haue made dyligent inquisition, yet could I knowe nothyng certeyne of any that had seene the same with theyr eyes, neuerthelesse to gyue further occasion to other to searche the truth of these thynges, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

*Noss* in the *Moscouites* tongue signifieth a nose: and the  
foze

foze they caule all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the sea, by the same name.

The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled **Semnoi Poyas**, or **Singulus mundi**: (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the yearth.

**Kichay**, is a lake of whome the greate Chan of **CATHAY** whom the Moscouias caule **Czar Kychaiski**, hath hys name. For Chan in the Tartars language signifieth a kyng.

The places of **Lucomozya** nere vnto the sea, are saluage, full of wooddes, and inhabired withowt any houles. And albeit that the autour of thys iozney, sayd that many nations of **Lucomozya** are subiecte to the prynce of **Moscovia**, yet for asmuch as the kyngdome of **Tumen** is neare therunto, whose prynce is a Tartar and named in theyr toung **Tumenski Czar** (that is) a kyng in **Tumen**, and hath of late doone great doynage to the prynce of **Moscovia**, it is mosse lyke that these nations shulde rather bee subiecte vnto hym.

Nere vnto the ryuer **Petzora**, (wherof mentid is made in thys iozney) is the citie and castell of **Sapin** or **Sapinobogorod**, whose inhabytrauntes are named **Sapini**, and haue a private language differyng from the Moscouites. Beyond thys ryuer, are exceadyng hygh mountaynes, reachyng euer vnto the bankes: whose ridgies or toppes by reason of continuall wyndes, are in maner vterely barrayne withowt grass or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled **Singulus Mundi**, (that is) the worlde. In these mountaynes doo ierfalcons breede, wherof I haue spoken befoze. There growe also Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the best and blackest kynde of fables. And only these mountaynes are seene in all the domynions of the prynce of **Moscovia**, which perchappes are the same that the old wryters caule **Whypheos** or **Hyperbozeos**, so named of the Brecke worde **Hiper**, (that is) vnder: and **Bozeas** (that is) the nozth. For by reason they are couered with continuall snow and froste, they can not withowt great difficultie bee traunyled: and reache so farr into the nozth, that they make the vnknowne land of **Engroneland**. The duke of **Moscovia** **Basilius** the sonne of **Iohn**, sent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named **Simeon Pheodorowitz Kurbski**, and **Knes Peter Alchatoi**, to search the places beyonde these

mountaynes.

The greate Chan of Cathay.

Lucomozia.

Tumen.

Petzora.  
Papiv.

hygh mountaynes, supposed to bee hyperbozei, and Rhyphes.

Engroneland.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

these mountaynes and to subdew the nations therabout. Kurbski was yet alone at my being in Moscouia: and declared vnto me that he spent xvij. days in ascendyng the mountayn, and yet coulde not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr rounge is cauled Stolp (that is) a pyler. Thys mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of Dvina and Perzora. But nowe hauyng spoken thus muche of the sayd iorney, I wyl returne to the domynions of Moscouia with other reygons lyyng eastwarde and southe frome the same towarde the myghty Emprye of CATHAY. But I wyl first speake sumwhat brefely of the prouynce of Rezan and the famous ryuer of Tanais.

Stolp.

Cathay.

The fruitfull  
prouynce of  
Rezan.  
Jaroslaw.

The prouynce of Rezan situate betwene the ryuers of Decca and Tanais, hath a citie buylded of woodd not farre from the banke of Decca. There was tuit a castell named Jaroslaw, wherof there nowe remaineth nothynge but tokens of the olde ruine. Not farre from that citie, the ryuer Decca maketh an Ilande named Scrub: which was sumtym a great dukedome, whose prince was subiect to none other. Thys prouynce of Rezan is more fruitfull then any other of the prouynces of Moscouia: In so muche that in thys (as they saye) euery grayne of wheate byngethe furthe two and sumtymes more eares: whose stalkes or strawes growe so thicke that horses can scarcely go through them, or quayles eye out of them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fyshes, foules, byrdes, and wylde beastes. The frutes also do farre excede the frutes of Moscouia. The people are bould & warlyk men.

Honny.

### Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.



Donco.  
Aloph.  
Capha.  
Constantino-  
ple.

Wome Moscouia vnto the castell of Jaroslaw, and beyonde for the space of almoste xxiii. leaques, runneth the ryuer of Tanais, at a place cauled Donco, where the marchantes that trade to Aloph, Capha, and Constantynople, fraight theyr shippes: and thys for the moste parte in autumnne beyng a rayney tyme of the yeare. For Tanais here at other tymes of the yeare doth not so abounde with water as to beare shippes

Horses of any burden. This famous ryuer of Tanais, dy-  
 uerth Europe from Asia: and hath hys originall oz springes  
 almost. viii. leaques from the citie of Tulla toward the south  
 inclynng somewhat towards the East: and not owte of the  
 Rhiphean mountaynes as some haue wycten: But owte of  
 a great lake named Iwanowolero (that is) the lake of John:  
 being in length and breadth abowt. 1500. Werkes in a wood  
 whiche sum caule Dkonitzkilies, and ocher name it Zepipha:  
 nowlies. And owte of this lake, springe the twoo greate ry-  
 uers of Schar and Tanais. Schar towards the West recea-  
 uynge into it the ryuer of Appa, runneth into the ryuer of Oc-  
 ca betwene the West and the north. But Tanais at the fyrste  
 runneth directly East: and continueth his course betwene the  
 kyngdomes of Casan and Astrachan within fyve oz seuen  
 leaques of Wolga: And frome thense bendynge towards the  
 south, maketh the fennes oz marshes of Meotis. Further-  
 more, next vnto his springes, is the citie of Tulla: and vpon  
 the banke of the ryuer almoste thre leaques aboute the  
 mouthes of the same, is the citie of Asof, which was fyrste  
 cauled Tanas. Foure dayes toyney about this, is a towne  
 cauled Achas, situate harde by the same ryuer: whiche the  
 Moscouites caule Don. I can not sufficiently prayse this ry-  
 uer for the exceedynge abundaunce of good fyshes, and faire  
 meade of the regions on bothe sydes the bankes, with plentie  
 of holsoome Herbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and ma-  
 ny frutefull trees growynge in suche comly order as though  
 they had byn set of purpose in gardens oz archardes. There  
 is also in maner euery where suche plentie of wyld beastes,  
 that they may easely be slaine with arrowes: In so much that  
 suche a3 traunple by those regions, shal stand in neede of none  
 ocher thyng to maintayne theyr lyfe but only fyre and salte.  
 In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes toy-  
 neys. But as farre as I coulde conceiue, from the foun-  
 tainnes oz springes of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the same  
 toyneynge by launde, are almost fourescore leaques. And say-  
 ynge from Donco (frome whense I sayde that Tanais was  
 fyrste navigable) in Icarfelp. 11. dayes wyage, they come to  
 the citie of Asof tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they  
 say) fyve dayes toyney frome the streight of Tartaria, ocher-  
 wyse cauled Iscep. In this citie is a famous shate towne,

Tanais dyu-  
 derth Europe  
 frome Asia.  
 The springes  
 of Tanais.  
 A great lake.  
 The ryuer  
 Schar.  
 Casan.  
 Astrachan.  
 Meotis.  
 Tulla.  
 Achas.  
 Frome full regi-  
 ons above  
 Tanais.  
 Plentie of  
 wyld  
 beastes.  
 Fire and salt.  
 where Ta-  
 nais is fyrste  
 nauygable.  
 Asof.

Moscovia and Cathay.

**The marke of** into the which resort many marchauntes of dyvers nations,  
**Aloph.** and from dyvers partes of the world. For, that all nations  
**Liberthe ally** may the gladlyer haue recourse thither, free libertie of bying  
**rethstrangers** and sellunge is graunted vnto all; and that without the cite  
 euery man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of  
 buyunge without punyshement.

**The altars of**  
**Alexander**  
**and Cesar.**

Of the altars of great Alexander and Julius Cesar whiche many wyrrers make mention of in this place, or of theyr ruine, I coulde haue no certeyne knowlege of thynhabitauntes or any other that had oftentimes traunpled these places. Furthermore the souldyers whiche the prince of Moscovia maynteyneth there yearly to oppresse thynursions of the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, answered that they neuer sawe or harde of any such thynge. Neuerthelesse, they sayde that about the mouthes of Tanais the lesse, foure dayes iorney from Aloph nere vnto a place cauled Sewerki, by the holy mountaynes, they sawe certeyne images of stone and marble. Tanais the lesse, hath his spynges in the dukedome of Sewerki; whereof it is cauled Donetz, Sewerki and Saulety into Tanais thre dayes iorney about Aloph.

**The holy**  
**mountaynes.**  
**Tanais the**  
**lesse.**

**From Mosco**  
**uia to Aloph.**

But suche as iorney from Moscovia to Aloph by lande, they passunge ouer Tanais about the owlde and ruinate towne of Danco, doo sumwhat turne from the south to the East: In the which place, if a ryght line bee drawen from the mouthes of Tanais to the spynges of the same, Moscovia shal be found to bee in Asia and not in Europe.

**Moscovia in**  
**Asia and not**  
**in Europe.**

**C** More directly from Moscovia  
 to Cathay.

**The province**  
**of permia.**



The great and large province of Permia, is distant from Moscovia two hundred and forty or (as sum say) three hundred leaques directly betwene the East and North: And hath a cite of the same name by the ryver Uichora which runneth .x. leaques beneth Hamam. The iorney by lande can scarcely bee traunpled thither but in wynter by reason of many ryuers, marythes, and fennes. But in sommer, this iorney is dispatched with more facilitie in boates or smaule shippes by Auolochda, Uing, and the ryver Uichoda

**Marythes in**  
**summer.**

schda which runneth into Dwina. xii. leagues from Ustug. But they that go from Permia to Ustug, muste sayle by the ryuer Wischora ageinst the course of the streame: and passing ouer certeyne ryuers, sumtymes also comeyninge theyr boates into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Usting thre hundred leagues distant from the citie of Permia.

There is smaule vse of breade in this prouince. For they yearely tribute, they pay to the prynce furrer & horses. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, whiche one Steuen a byllhop (who confirmed them yet waucyng in the fayth) dyd inuente. For befoze beinge yet infantes in the fayth of Chryste, they stowe and slepde an other byllhop that was appoynted to instructe them. This Steuen afterwarde when Demetrius the soune of Iohn reigned, was taken for a saynt amonge the Rutchens. Of these people there per mayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the moonkes and heremites tharigo thyrther, doo not cease to squere from theyr baynt errour. In the wynter they iorney in Artach as they doo in many places of Ruitia. Artach, are certeyne longe parentes of woodde of almost fyre handfuls in length, whiche they make faste to theyr fiete with latchettes, & the with performe theyr iorneys with great celeritie. They vse for this purpose greate dogges in the steade of other beastes, with the which they cary theyr fardhels on sleades, as other doo with hartes in other places, as we wyll further declare hereafter. They say that that prouince toward the East confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, perteynyng to the Tarrars.

The situation of the prouince of Jugaria, is appaerente by that which we haue sayde befoze. The Moscouites caule it Juhra with an aspiration: and caule the people Juhrici. This is that Jugaria from whense the Hungarians came in eyne parte, possessed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Artista, subdued many prouinces of Europe: wherein the Moscouites doo greatly glozy, that a nation subiecte to them, inuaded and wasted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Parnus a greeke bozne, and a man of reputation with the prynce of Moscouia, wyllynge to ascribe to the ryght of his prynce the great dukedome of Lithuania, and the kynge dome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, coulde me that the Juhar

Dwina.  
Ustug.

Tribute.  
Furrer and  
horses.

monkes and  
heremites.

parentes.

Marcus Paulus wyrteth that these dogges are almost as byg as asses, and that they vse fyre to one sleade.

Jugaria.

Hungaria.  
Pannonia.  
Atilia.

222

The hygher  
or superior  
Hungarye, is  
cauled Austri-  
a.  
polonie.  
Buda.

Furres.  
pearles and  
precious  
stones.

Sibier.

Aspreolos,  
I thinke to be  
martens: yet  
sum thinke the  
to be squerels  
Sesnerus  
wyteth that  
the kynge of  
the Tartars,  
haue thier  
temes coue-  
red withowt  
wyth the  
skynnes of  
lyons: & with-  
in, with the  
skynnes of sa-  
bles and Er-  
mynes.

set of Hungary, bringe subiectes to the great duke of Moscouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and sprade inhabited the regions aboue the fennes of Georgia, and then Dannonie which was afterwarde cauled Hungarye, by the ryuer of Danubius: Also that in fine they possessed the region of Morauia so named, of the ryuer: and lyke wyle Dollontze, so cauled of Dulle, which signifieth a playne. Furthermoze that Buda was so cauled after the name of the brother of Arcila. They say also that the Hungari be the same tounge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trowe or not, I do not knowe. For althowgh I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the truty hereof, yet could I fynde no man of that region with whom my seruante bringe expect in the Hungarian tounge myght speake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the pynce of Moscouia. And albeit that pearles and precious stones are broughte frome thence to Moscouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: especially about the coast of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Permia and Turaethka: The which, whether it haue any castels or cities, I doo not yet certepuly knowe. In this the ryuer Jaick hath his originall, and fauleth into the Caspian sea. They saye that this region is deserte because it lyeth so neare the Tartars: Or that if it bee in any parte inhabited, the same to be possessed of the Tarear Schichmamai. The inhabitants haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaperes by the furres of martens, whiche in sayens and gearnes, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. yet could I haue no great plentie of them in Moscouia at my beinge there.

Note that longe after the writinge of this booke, at Rycharde Chaunceler his first being in Moscouia, Duke John Naschyich that nowe raygneth, subdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces euen vnto the great cite and mart towne of Astrachan & the Caspian sea. At the same tyme also, there was in the dukes court an ambassadour that came frome this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had byn sent ambassadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great cite of Cambalu where the great Chan kepeth his court in winter, was in maner destroyed by Necromancie and magicall artes wherein the Cathaynes are very expert as wyteth Marcus Paulus Trencus. Ther was also at the same tyme an ambassadour of the kynge of Persia cauled the great Sophie. This ambassadour was appared all in carlet, and spake much to the duke in the behalfe of owre men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

The people cauled Czeremisse, dwell in the wooddes beneath Nouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language and are of the secte of Machumet. They were sumeyme subiecte to the kynge of Casan: but the greater part of them are nowe subiecte to the prince of Moscouia. Many of them at my beinge there, were brought to Moscouia, as suspected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region with holow houses from Quiathka and Quolochda, to the ryuer of Kama. All the nation aswell women as men, are very stoyfe of foote, and expert archers: wherin they so delite, that theyr bowes are in maner neuer out of theyr handes: and gye theyr chyldren no meate vntyl they hyr the marke they shote at.

Czeremisse.

Habitacion  
withowt houses.

Two leagues distaunte from Nouogardia the lower, were many houses to the similitude of a citie or towne, where they were accustomed to make salte. These a fewe yeares sence beinge burnt of the Tartars, were restozed by the commaundement of the prince.

Salte.

Horzwa, are people inhabeyng by the ryuer of Wolga on the south banke beneath Nouogardia the lower: And are in all thynges like vnto the Czeremisses but that they haue moze houses. And here endeth The empire of the Moscouites.

Note here that Matthias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia Asiatica, writeth that the dominion of the duke of Moscouia reacheth from the north west to the southeast syue hundredth myles of Sermanie, which are more then leagues. For they affirme that a Sermanie myle is more then three Englyshe myles.

## Of the Tartars.

We wyl nowe adde hereunto sumwhat of the people confynge with the Moscouites towarde the East: of the which the Tartars of Casan are the first. But before wee speake of them particularly, wee wyl first reherse sumwhat of theyr maners and customes in generall.

The Tartars  
of Casan.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they call Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Salwolhenfes is the chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is sayde that the other Hordas had theyr offsprynge and original of this. And albe it that euery Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Salwolhenfes, Hecropenses, and Mahays with dyuers other being all Machumetans, yet doo they take it euyl and count it reproch to bee cauled Turkes: but wyl them selues to bee cauled Besermani, by the which name also the Turkes desyre to bee cauled.

Horda.

Besermani.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

And as the Tatars inhabyte many prouinces teachynge far  
on euery syde, euen so in maners and order of lypynge doo  
they not agree in all thynge. They are men of meane sta-  
ture, with broade and fat faces, hollowe eyde, with roughe  
and thyeck beardes, and poulde heades. Onely the noble  
men haue longe heare, and that exceedyng black, which they  
weare on both sydes theyr eares. They are stronge of bod-  
dy and stout of mynde: prone to leacherie, and that unnatu-  
rall. They eate the fleashe of horyses, camells, and other  
beastes excepte hogges, from which they absteyne by a lawe.  
They can so abyde fasting & hunger, that they sūtime forbeare  
meate and sleepe for the space of foure days, occupped neuer:  
theleste aboute theyr necessary affayres. Ageyne when they  
gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them selues beyond  
measure: and with that surfecte in maner recompense theyr  
former abstinence. And beyng thus oppressed with laboure  
and meate, they sleepe continually for the space of thre  
or foure days withowt doyng any maner of worke or labour:  
durynge which tyme the Tatars and Moscovites into whose  
domynions they are accustomed to make theyr incurstons, as-  
sayle them vnwares thus oppressed with meate and sleepe,  
lyng scattered here and there out of order withowt watch  
or warde. Also if when they ryde, they bee molested with  
hunger and thyrste, they vse to leete theyr horyses blud, and  
with drynkyng the same, satisfye theyr present necessyte,  
and aspyre theyr horyses to bee the better cherby. And bicause  
they all wander in vnknowen places, they vse to direct theyr  
iornys by the aspecte of the starres, and especyally of the pole  
starre, which in theyr tounge they caule Selesnikoll, (that  
is) an iten nayle. They greatly delyte in mares mylke, and  
beleue that it maketh men strong and fatte. They eate herbes  
very much: and especyally such as growe abowt Tanais.  
Fewe of them vse salte. When theyr kynges dyscrybure any  
bycayles among them, they are accustomed to gyue one horyse  
or cowe to fortye men. Of the daync beaste, the bowells and  
trypes are reserved for the chiefe men and capptaynes. These  
they heate at the fyre vntyll they may make out the doonge,  
and then deuoure them greedely. They sucke and lycke, not  
only theyr fyngers imbrued with fatte, but also theyr knyues  
and spykes wherwith they scrape the doonge from the guttes.

The nature  
of the Tar-  
tars.

They absteyne  
from hogges  
fleashe.  
Abstinence.

Uoracitie.

So doo the  
Turkes.

Jorneyng by  
the pole star.

Mares mylke

horyse fleashe  
eaten.

Cleuely.

The

The heades of horses are counted delycate dishes with them as are bores heades with vs: and are reserued only for the chiefe men. Theyr horses (wherof they haue great aboundance) are but smaule, and with short neckes: but very strong and such as can tole away with labour & hunger. These they fede with the branches & barkes or ryndes of trees & the rotes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accustome them to hard feedynge, and exercise them to continuall labour: by reason wherof (as say the Moscouytes) theyr horses are stoyffer and more durable then any other. These kynde of horses, they caule Pachmat. They haue none other saddells and serryppes then of woodd, except suche as they epyther bye of the Chrystians, or take from them by vpolence. Least theyr horse backes shulde bee hurte with theyr saddells, they vnderlaye them with grasse and leaues of trees. They also passe ouer ryuers on horsebacke. But if when they slye, they feare the pursuyng of theyr enemyes, then castynge away theyr saddells, apparelle, and all other impedymentes, reseruyng only theyr armour and weapons they slye amayne and with greates celeritye. Theyr women vse the same kynde of apparell that doo the men withowt any difference except that they couer theyr heades with linnen bayles, and vse linnen hose muche lyke vnto maryners stoppes. When theyr quenes coome abrod, they are accustomed to couer theyr faces. The other multitude of the common sorte that lyue th here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparell made of sheeps skynnes, which they chaung not vntyll they bee wozne and tozne to fytters. They tarpe not longe in one place, indyngng it a great mysery so to doo: In so muche that when they are angrie with theyr chylidren, the greatest curse that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetually in one place, and drawe the synthe of theyr stone fylthynesse as doo the Chrystians. When they haue consumed the pasture in one place, they go to an other with theyr dyones of cattayle and theyr wyues and chylidren whom they euer care about with them in Wagons: albeit the Tartars that dwell in cities and townes, vse an other order of lyuynge. If they be inclosed with any dangerous warre, they place theyr wyues, chylidren, and old folkes, in the safest places. There is no iustice amonge them, For if any man stande in

hore heades,  
deintie meate  
The Tartars  
horses.

Saddels and  
serrypps of  
woodde.

The Tartars  
Women.

The Tartars  
curse.

No iustice  
amonge the  
Tartars,

neede

Moscovia and Cathay.

meade of any thyng, he may withowt punysshement take  
it awaye from an other. If any complayne to the Judge of  
the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender de-  
nyeth not the cryme, but sayth that he coulde not lacke that  
thyng. Then the Judge is wounte to gyue thys sentence: If  
thowe also shalte haue neede of any thyng doo the lyke to  
other. Sum say they do not steale: But whether they steale  
oz not, lette other iudge. They are surely a theeu. The kynd of  
men and very poore, lpyng only by robbing of other, and  
stealyng away other mens cartayle, and vyolently also carry-  
nge awaye the men them selues whom epyther they selle to  
the Turkes oz proffer them to bee redemed by ransome, refer-  
ryng only the younge wenches. They seldome assaulte cities  
oz castells, but burne and waste towne and byllagges: In  
so muche that they so please them selues herin, that they  
thynke they haue so muche the more enlarged their empire, in  
holme muche they haue wasted and made desolate manye pro-  
uynces. And althowgh they bee mosse impacient of rest and  
quyernesse, yet doo they not kyll oz destroye one an other, ex-  
cepte they kynges see at desention betweene them selues.  
If any man bee slaine in any fraye oz quarel, and the autours  
of the myschefe bee taken, only theyr horse, harnesse, wea-  
pons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they dismissed,  
So that the murtherer by the losse of a vyle horse oz a bowe,  
is dyscharged of the Judge with these woordes: gette the  
henle and goo abowt thy busynesse. They haue no vse of  
golde and syluer, excepte only a fewe marchauntes: But ex-  
cheynge of ware for ware. And if it so chaunce that  
by sellng of such thynges as they haue stolne, they gette any  
monyne of theyr buytherers, they bye therewith certeyne appar-  
rel and other necessaries of the Moscovites. The regions of  
theyr habytations (the feelde Tartars I meane) are not by-  
mytted with any bowdes oz burthers. There was on a tyme  
a certeyne fatte Tartar taken prysoner of the Moscovites: to  
whom when the prysoner sayd, How arte thou so fatte thow  
dogge, sythe thowe haste not to eate, the Tartar answered,  
Why shulde not I haue to eate sythe I possesse so lauge a  
land from the East to the west, wherby I may bee abundantly  
sely nuryshed? But thowe mayste rather seeme to lacke, sythe  
thowe inhabytest so smaule a portyon of the worlde, and doste  
daylye

The Tartars  
are theeu  
and poore.

They reioyce  
in spoyle

The feelde  
Tartars.

A mery tale.

dayly streue for the same.

Casan, is a kyngedome, also a cite, and a castell of the same name, situate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke, almost threescore and tenne leagues beneath Ruogardia the lower. Alonge by the course of Volga towarde the East and South, it is terminated with deserte fyeldes. Towarde the souther East, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanski, and Kosatzki. The kyng of this prouince, is able to make an army of. xxx. thousande men, especially foore men, of the which the Seremille & Czubalschi are most expert archers. The Czubalschi are also cunnynge maryners, The cite of Casan, is threescore leagues distant frō the pyncepal castel Tuiachka. Furthermore, Casan in the Tartars language, signifieth a brasen potre boplynge. These Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houses, tyll the grownde, and exercise the trade of marchaundtes. They were of late subdued by Basilus the greate duke of Moscouia, and had theyr kyng assigned them at his arbitrement. But shortly after, they rebelled ageine: and associate with other Tartars, invaded the region of Moscouia, spoyled and wasted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerable captiues, euen from the cite Moscouia which they possessed for a tyme, and had bitterly destroyed the same if it had not byn for the valy- antnesse of the Almayne gunners which kept the castell with great ordinaunce. They also putte duke Basilus to flyght, and caused him to make a letter of his owne hande to Mach- metgirei theyr kyng to acknowledge hym selfe for a perpetu- all tributarie to them, wheruppon they dissolued the siege, and gaue the Moscouites free libertie to redeeme theyr cap- tiues and gooddes, and so departed. But Basilus not longe able to abyde this contumelie and dishonour, after that he had putte to death suche as by flyng at the fyrst encounterynge were the cause of this ouerthrowe, assembled an armye of a hundred and fourescore thousande men shortly after in the yeare. 1523. And sent forwarde his armye vnder the conducte of his Lieutenante: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydde battayle to Machmetgirei the kyng of Casan, with woordes in this effecte: The last yeare lyke a theefe and rob- ber withowt byddynge of battayle, thou dyddeste pryuilie op- presse me, Wherfore I nowe chalenge the, once ageyne to

Casan.

The kyng  
of Casan.

Archers.  
Maryners.

The towne  
Tartars.

Moscou's in-  
uaded by the  
Tartars.

The prince  
of Moscouia  
tributary to  
the Tartars.

Duke Basili-  
us army as-  
gynst the  
Tartars.

## Moscovia and Cathay.

pꝛoue the fortune of warre if thou mystruste not thyne owne  
 pouer. To this the kynge answered, that there were manye  
 wayes open for hym to inuade Moscouia: And that the war:  
 res haue no lesse respect to the commoditie of tyme and place  
 the of armure or strength: And that he wold take thaduantage  
 therof when & where it shulde seeme best to him and not to o:  
 ther. With which woordes Basilus beinge greatly accensed  
 and burnyng with desyre of reuenge, inuaded the kyngdome  
 of Casan: whose kynge beinge stryken with suddayne feare  
 at thapproche of so terrible an army, assigned the gouernance  
 of his kyngdome to the younge kynge of Taurica his nenie,  
 whyle he hym selfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of  
 the Turkes. But in fine the kynge of Casan submitted hym  
 selfe vpon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Mosco:  
 uites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time because theyr vic  
 rayles fayled them to mainteyne so great a multitude. But  
 wheras duke Basilus hym selfe was not present at this last  
 expedition, he greatly suspected Salitzki the Lieutenant  
 of tharmy to bee corrupted with bybes to proceade no fur:  
 ther. In this meane tyme, the kynge of Casan sent ambassa  
 dours to Basilus to increate of peace: whome I saue in the  
 dukes courte at my beyng there: but I coulde perceaue no  
 hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Basilus  
 to endomage the Casans, translated the marre to Nouogar:  
 dia, which befoze was accustomed to bee kepte in the Ilande  
 of marchauntes nere vnto the cite of Casan: Commaundyng  
 also vnder peyne of greuous punishmente that none of his  
 subiectes shulde resoꝛte to the Ilande of marchauntes: thyn:  
 kynge that this translation of the marre shulde greatly haue  
 endomaged the Casans: and that only by takyng away their  
 trade of salte (which they were accustomed to bye of the Mos  
 couites at that marre) they shulde haue byn compelled to sub:  
 myssion. But the Moscouites them selues felte no lesse incon:  
 uenience hereby then dyd the Casans, by reason of the deareth  
 and scarfenesse that folowed hereof of al such thynges as the  
 Tartars were accustomed to bynge thither by the ryuer of  
 Wolga from the Caspian sea, the kyngedomes of Persia and  
 Armenia, and the marre towne of Astrachan: especially the  
 great number of most excellent fyshes that are taken in Wol:  
 ga both on the hyther and further syde of Casan.

The kynge of  
 Casan submit  
 teth hym  
 selfe.

The Ilande of  
 marchauntes

The Caspi:  
 an sea.  
 Persia.  
 Armenia.  
 Astrachan.

But hauynge sayde thus much of the warres betwene the prince of Moscouia and the Tartars of Casan, we wyll now procede to speake sumwhat of the other Tartars inhabytyng the regions towarde the southeast and the Caspian sea.

Next beyonde the Tartars of Casan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga about the Caspian sea at the ryuer Jaick, runnyng out of the prouince of Sibier. These haue no kynges but dukes. In othere tyme, thre bretherne diuidynge the prouinces equally betwene them, possessed those dukedomes. The fyrst of them named Schidack, possesseth the cite of Scharatzick, beyond the ryuer of Kha or Volga towarde the East, with the region confinynge with the ryuer Jaick. The seconde cauled Cosum, enioyeth all the lande that lyeth betwene the ryuers of Kaman Jaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, possesseth parte of the prouince of Sibier and all the region about the same. Schichmamai, is as much to say by interpretacion, as holy or myghty. And in maner al these regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth towarde Scharatz, which consisteth of playnes and feldes.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Jaick, about the Caspian sea, there sumtymes inhabyted the kynges cauled Sawaolhenses. Demetrius Danielis (a man among these barbarians, of singular sayth and grauitie) toulde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is scene amonge these Tartars. And that his father beinge sente by the prynce of Moscouia to the kyng of Sawaolhense, sawe whyle he was in that legacie, a certeyne seede in that lande sumwhat leste and rounder then the seedes of Melones: Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heyghe of fyue spannes: And is therefore cauled in theyr tounge Bozanetz, whiche signifyeth a lyttle lambe. For it hath the headde, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly eynd: with also a very thynne skynne wherwith dyuers of thynhabitantes of those regions are accustomed to line theyr cappes and hatres and othere tzyementes for theyr heades. Many also confirmed in othere presence that they had scene these skynnes. He sayde furthermore that that plant (if it may be cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no fleithe: but hath in the steade of fleithe a certeyn

The Tartars  
neare to the  
Caspian sea.  
Nogai.

The possessi-  
on of thre  
brytherne.

The kynges  
cauled Sa-  
waulhenses.

A maruelous  
frute lyke a  
lambe.

## Moscouia and Cathay.

serue substance like vnto the Acithe of creusethes. The hooves also are not of horne as are the lames, but covered with haire in the same forme. The roote cleauerly to the nauell or myddest of the belly. The plante or fruite lyueth vntyll all the grasse and herbes growynge aboute it beinge eaten, the roote totheretofore lacke of nuryshment. They say that it is very shocete to bee eaten, and is therefore greatly despyed and sought for of the woolues and other rauenyng beasts. And albeit I esteeme all that is sayde of this plante to be fabulous, yet forasmuch as it hath byn tolde me of credible persons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

**Wandeuell.**

Of this straunge frute, Wandeuell maketh mention, where in the. lxxviii. chapure of his booke he wytyeth thus: Nowe shall I say of sum landes, countreys, and Isles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therefore who so goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he shall go through a kyngdome that men caule Cadissen, and is a great lande. There groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is ripe, men cut it a sunder: and fynde therein a beast as it were of fleshe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lytle lambe withowt woolle. And men eat that beast and the frute also, which is a great maruayle. Neuerthelesse, I sayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I sayde that in my countrey are trees that beare frute that become byrdes flying which are good to bee eaten. And that that faulterh into the water, lyueth: And that that faulterh on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. &c.

**Barnacles of the Dyke-neya.**

From the prince of Schidack, proceeding. xx. dayes iorney towarde the East, are the people which the Moscouites caule Jurgenci, whose prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they comme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that greate Chan of Cathay.

**Barack Soltan. Cathay.**

**Names of dignities amonge the Tartars.**

Names of dignities amonge the Tartars, are these, Chan, signifieth a kyng. Soltan, the soonne of a kyng. Bii, a Duke. Gursu, the soonne of a duke. Oboud, a noble man or counsiler. Oboadulu, the soonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh preste. Ksi, a priuate person.

**Names of offices.**

The names of offices are these: Alan, the seconde dignitie to the kyng. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whose counsaile they vse in al theyr weyghes a fayres. Of these the fyrste is cauled Schirni: the seconde Barni. the thyrde, Bargni: The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue sayde thus much of the Tartars, it shall suffice.

Marcus

Marcus Paulus wyrteth that the greate Chan, is cauled a Chan Cui Chan Cui  
 blai that is, the great kynge of kynges: as the greate turcke wyrteth  
 hym selfe in lyke maner, as I sawe in a letter wyrtten by hym  
 of late to the cite of Ragusa, in the which he wyrteth this subscripti-  
 on: Soltan Soliman deselun Cham Signore de Signori in sempiter-  
 no.

As concernynge Moscouia and Cathay, I was mysded to  
 haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne  
 considerations I was perswaded to proceade no further. Unto whose  
 requeste, herein satisfyng rather other then my selfe, wyllynge o-  
 therwysse to haue accomplyshed this booke to further perfection, I  
 was content to agree for two causes especially mouynge me: wher-  
 of the one is, that as touchynge these trades and vyages, as in ma-  
 ner in all other sciences, there are certeyne secretes not to bee pub-  
 lished and made common to all men. The other cause is, that the  
 parteners at whose charge this booke is printed, although the cop-  
 py wherof they haue wrought a longe space haue cost them nought  
 doo not neuer thelesse cease dayly to caule vppon me to make an end  
 and proceade no further: affirmynge that the booke wyll bee of to  
 great a pyce & not euery mans money: fearyng rather theyr owne  
 losse and hynderaunce, then careful to bee beneficiall to other, as  
 is nowe in maner the trade of all men, which ordinarie respecte of  
 priuate commoditie hath at this tyme so lyttle moued me, I take god  
 to wytnesse, that for my paynes and traуayles taken herein, such as  
 they bee, I may vppon iust occasion thynke my selfe a looser manye  
 wayes, except such men of good inclination as shall take pleasure  
 and feele sum commoditie in the knowleage of these thynges, shall  
 thynke me woorthy theyr good woorde, wherwith I shal repute my  
 selfe and my traуayles so abundantly satisfyed, that I shal repute  
 other mens gaynes a recompense for my losses, as they may bee in  
 dedde, yf men bee not vnthankfull, which only vice of ingratitude  
 hath hyndered the woilde of many benefices.

### The nauigation by the frozen sea.



In my beinge in Moscouia when I was sent  
 thither by kynge Ferdinando my lorde and  
 master, it so chaunced that Georgius No-  
 ma the duke of Moscouia his interpreter,  
 a man of great experience who hadde before  
 lerned the latin tongue in the court of John  
 kynge of Denmarke, was there present at  
 the same tyme. He in the yere of Christ. 1496. beinge sente  
 of his prince with master Dauid a Scotte borne and then am-  
 bassadour for the kynge of Denmarke, (whom also I knewe  
 there at my fyrst legacie) made me a hysse information of all  
 thozden

## Moscouia and Cathay.

the order of his tozney. The which, forasmuch as it may seeme difficult and laborious aswel for the distaunce as daungerous places, I haue thought good to describe the same as I receaued it at his mouth.

First he sayde that beinge sent of his prince with the sayd Dauid, they came first to Nouogardia the great. And wher as at that tyme the kyngedome of Suecia reuolted frome the kyng of Denmarke, and also the duke of Moscouia was at discencion with the Suerians, by reason wherof they coulde not passe by the most accustomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted theyr tozney by an other way longer but safer And came first from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiulo, by a very dyfficult and paynefull tozney. For he sayd that this tozney which can not bee to muche detested for suche laboures and trauayles, continueth for the space of three hundredeth leaques. In fine, takinge foure smaul shippes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they sayled by the coaste on the ryght hande of the Ocean, wher they sawe certeyne hyghe and rolgh mountaynes: and at the lengthe saylunge. xvi. leaques, and passyng a great goulfe, folowed the coaste on the lefte hande: And leauyng on the ryght hande the large sea which hath the name of the ryuer Perzora (as haue also the mountaynes adiacent to the same) they came to the people of Finlappia: who, although they dwell here and there in lowe cottages by the sea syde, and leade in maner a beastly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wyld Lappians. He sayde that these also are tributaries to the prince of Moscouia. Then leauyng the lande of the Lappians, and saylunge fourscore leaques, they came to the region of Norpoden vnder the dominion of the kyng of Suecia. This the Moscouites caule Katenska Semla, and the people Kayeni. Departyng from hense, and saylunge alonge by the coaste of a wyndyng and bendyng shore reachyng towarde the ryght hande, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy nose, beinge a greate stone reachyng farre into the sea to the similitude of a nose: vnder the whiche is seene a caue with a whyrlepoole which swalloweth the sea euery syre houres: and castyng furth the same ageyne with terriblye rozng and violence, causeth the sayde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the sea: and other name it Charibdis,

Nouogardia.

Suecia vnder  
the kyng of  
Denmarke.

Dwina.  
Potiulo.

hygh moun-  
taynes neare  
the north  
Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wyld  
Lappians.

The region  
of Norpoden

The cape  
cauled the  
holy nose.

A whyrlepoole  
or swallowyng  
goulfe.

rphdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this stallowyng  
 goulfe is such, that it draweth into it, inuolucth, and wa-  
 loweth by shypes and al other thynges that comme neare it:  
 and that they were neuer in greater daungoure. For the  
 whyllepooles to suddely and violently drewe vnto it the  
 shippe or barke wherin they were carryed, that with the helpe  
 of ozes and great labour they hardly escaped. When they had  
 thus ouerpasse the holy nose, they came to a certeyne stony  
 mountayne which they shulde needes compasse aboute. But  
 beinge there stayed with contrary wyndes for the space of cer-  
 teyne dayes, the pylotte of the shippe spake vnto them in this  
 effecte: This stone (sayth he) that yowe see, is cauled Semes:  
 The which except we please with summe gyfte, wee shall not  
 passe by without great daungoure. But the pylot hainge re-  
 proued of Jstoma for his bayne superstition, helde his peace.  
 And when they had byn deteyned ther by tempest for the space  
 of foure days, at the length the tempest ceased and they went  
 forthwarde on theyr wyage with a prosperous wynd. Then the  
 pilotte spake vnto them ageyne, sayinge: yowe despised my  
 admonicion of pleasyng the Semes, and scorned the same  
 as bayne and superstitious. But if I had not pynlike in the  
 nyght ascended a rocke and pleased the Semes, wee shulde  
 surely haue had no passage. Beinge demaunded what he offe-  
 red to the Semes, he sayde that he poured butter myrt with  
 olemcle vpon the stone which wee sawe reache furth into the  
 sea. As they sayled further, they came to an other cape named  
 Motka, which was almost environed with the sea lyke an Is-  
 lande: in whose extreme poynte, is situate the castell of Bar-  
 thys, which sum caule Wardhus, (that is) a house of defence  
 or fortreffe. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garr-  
 son of men to defende theyr marches. He sayde furthermoze  
 that that cape reacheth so farre into the sea, that they could  
 scarcely compasse it in eyght dayes. By which carryng leaue  
 they shulde bee hyndered, they carryed on theyr shulders with  
 greaer labour, theyr barkes and fardelles ouer a streyght of  
 lande conceyning halfe a leaque in breadth. From hence they  
 sayled to the region of the wyld Lappones, cauled Dikilap-  
 ones to a place named Drount, beinge .CC. leaques distant from  
 Dvina towarde the North. And thus farre as he sayth, doth  
 the pynce of Moscouia exacte tribute. Furthermoze leauyng  
 they

Such whylle  
 pooles, are  
 cau.ed vipers

The stone  
 cauled Se-  
 mes.  
 Superstition

Sacrifice to  
 the stone Se-  
 mes.  
 The cape  
 Motka.  
 The castel of  
 Wardhus.

The region  
 of the wyld  
 Lappones.  
 Drount,

## Moscouia and Cathay.

Joineynge  
on leades.

howe the  
hartes drawe  
leades.

xx. leagues  
in one day.

The citie of  
Berges in  
Norway.

A shorter  
ioyney.

Roskow.  
Pereaslaw.  
Castrumow.

Quolochda.  
Suchana.  
Dwina.  
Wafnia.  
Koppenhage

Liuonia.

werste, is al:  
most an Itali:  
as myc.

theyr barkes here, they synyſhed the residue of theyr iojney on leades. He further declared that there were heardeſ of hartes as are with vs of oren, whiche in the Norwegians tounge are cauled Rhen, beinge ſuſtyned bygger then owre hartes. These the Lappones vse in this maner. They iojney them to leades made lyke fyſher botes, as wee put hoyses to the carte. The man in the leade, is tyed fast by the feere leaft he fall owre by the swyfte courſe of the hartes. In his lefte hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherwith he moderateſ the courſe of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked staffe wherwith he may susteine the leade frō faulynge if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he coulde me that by this meanes he traupled twentie leagues in one daye, and then dismyſed the harre, who by hym selfe returned to his owne master and accustomed stable. This iojney thus synyſhed, they came to Berges a citie of Norwegia or Norway, situate directly towarde the north betwene the mountaynes: and went from thence to Denmarke on horsebacke. At Drontheim and Berges, the day is sayde to bee. xxii. houres longe in the summer Equinoctiall. Blasius an other of the prynce of Moscovia his interpretours, who a fewe yeares befoze, was sent of his prynce into Spayne to the Emperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorter way of his iojney. For he sayde that when he was sent from Moscouia to John the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrſt on foote vnto Roskow: And takynge shyppe there, came to Pereaslaw: and from Pereaslaw by the ryuer Volga to Castrumow: and that frome thence goynge seuen Werstes by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: saylynge by the which, when fyrſt he came to Quolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the citie of Berges in Norway, or uerpassynge in this byage all the perelles and laboures that Jstoma rehearſed befoze, he came at the length to Wafnia the chiefe citie of Denmarke, whiche the Germanes caule Koppenhagen. But in theyr returnynge home, they both confesse that they came to Moscouia by Liuania: and that they were a yeare in this byage: Albert Georgius Jstoma, sayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempestes, and inforced to tarye longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewyse constantlye affirme that in this iojney eyther of them traupled a thousand threescore and ten Werstes that

(that is) three hundred and fortie leagues. Furthermoze also Demetrius who of late was sent ambassadour from the pryncce of Moscouia to the bysshoppe of Rome, (by whose relation also Paulus Jovius wrote his description of Moscouia) confirmed all these thynges to be trewe. All they being demaunded of me of the congeled or frozen sea, made none other answer but that in places nere vnto that sea, they saw many and great riuers by whose vehemente course and abundance flowynge, the seas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the riuers is frozen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in Liuania and other partes of Succia. For althowgh by the vehemencie of the wyndes, the Ice is broken in the sea, yet dooth this chaunce seldome or neuer in riuers, excepte by sum inundation or flud the Ice gathered togyther bee lyfted vp and broken. For the flakes or piesses of Ice carped into the sea by force of the riuers, doo flote aboue the water in maner all the hole yeare, and are as gayne so vehemently frozen togyther, that a man maye there sumtymes see great heapes of the Ice of manye yeares, as dooth appere by such piesses as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also byn credibly informed by saythfull men that the sea Balthicum (otherwyle cauled the goulfe of Liuania) is often tymes frozen in many places. They say furthermoze, that in that region whiche is inhabyted of the wylde Lappones, the soonne in the sommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the space of .xl. dayes: yet that the body therof is so hydden with a darke myste or cloude three houres, that the beames doo not appere: Neuerthelesse to gyue such lyght duringe that tyme, that the darkenesse hyndereth not theyr woork. The Moscouites make theyr boiste that these wylde Lappones are tributaries to theyr pryncce. Wherat I do not greatly maruaile, forasmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Theyr tribute is onely fures and fyfhe, hauynge in maner none other thyng greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, salte, and other intplementes of gluttony, and lyue onely with fyfhe and wylde besties, yet are they excedyng prone to lechery. They are such expert archers, that if in theyr huntynge they espye any besties whose skynnes they desyre to saue vnpershyed, they wyll not lyghtly myste to hytte them

Paulus Jovius.

Riuers falling into the frozen sea.

wynde.  
Ice.

Ice of many yeares.

The sea Balthicum.

where the sun fauleth not in .xl. dayes

The wylde Lappones are tributaries to the Moscouites fures and fyfhe.

Expert archers.

## Moscoula and Cathay.

Good felowz  
they.

Necessary  
wares.

No vse of  
money.

Theyr cot-  
ages.

Mountaynes  
continually  
burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer  
Petzora.

In the nofcheylles. When they go furth on huntynge, they are accustomed to leaue at home with theyr wyues suche mar- chauntcs or straungers as they haue receaued into theyr hou- ses. So that if at theyr retuene, they perceauc theyr wyues throught the company of the straungers to be myzicr and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the straun- gers sum present. But yf they fynd it othertwyle, they thrust them furth of the doozes with woordes of reproche. But nowc by the company they haue with straungers that resorts thither for gaynes, they begyn to leaue theyr natiue barbarousnesse. They gladly admitte marchauntcs, bycause they bynge them apparel of grole cloth: also hatchettes, needels, spones, knyues, drynkynge cuppes, earthen and brasen pot- tes, with such other necessaric wares: So that they vse now to eate sodden and rosted meate, and doo embrace moze ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparell is made of the skynnes of dy- uers beastes sowed togyther. And in this apparell they sum- tymes comme to Moscouia. yet felwe of them haue cappes or hosen, which they vse to make of harrcs skynnes. They haue not the vse of golde or syluer money: but vse only barterynge of ware for ware. And beinge ignorant of other languages besyde theyr owne, they seeme amonge straungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr corages are couered onely with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne restinge habitacion. But when they haue consumed the fyfthe and wylde beastes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthemore also the sayde ambassadours of the prince of Moscouia, declared that in the same partes they sawe certeyne hygh mountaynes con- tinually castyng furth flames of fyze as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Islande of Sicilia: and chat euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnte in maner to allhes with such continuall flames. Which thynge sum con- syderynge, sayne the fyze of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concernyng these mountaynes of Norway, when I was sent ambassadour to Christierne kynge of Denmarke, I was infor- med the lyke by the gouernours of Norwaye who chaunced at that tyme to bee present there.

About the mouthes of the ryuer Petzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are sayd to bee dyuers and great beastes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne

Verteyne great beast as bygge as an ore, which thynhabitau-  
res caule *Mors*. This beast hath mozte feete lyke a beuer or  
an Otter, with a best sumwhat hygh and brode for the pro-  
porcion of the residue of his body: and two longe and greate  
teeth growynge owte of the vpper iawe. These beastes for  
rest and increafe, doo sumtymes leaue the Ocean, & by great  
heardes ascende the mountaynes: where befoze they gyue the  
selues to profounde sleepe (wherunto they are naturally insti-  
ned) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watch-  
man as doo cranes for the securitie of the reste. Whiche if he  
chaunce to sleepe, or to bee slayne of the hunters, the residue  
may easely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnynge  
with roynge (as the maner is) immediatly the hole hearde a  
wakened thereby, suddelynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr  
teeth: And so faulynge from the mountayne with great cele-  
ritie as it were on a sleade, they cast the selues headlong into  
the Ocean: where also they rest and sleepe for a whyle vppon  
the heapes of Ice. The hunters pursue these beastes only for  
theyr teethe: Of the which the Moscouites, Tartars, and es-  
pecially the Turkes, make haftes for swoozdes and dagges  
bery artificially: And vse these rather for ornamente, then to  
gyue the greater stroke for the weyght or heauinesse thereof  
as summe fable. Also amonge the Turkes, Moscouites, and  
Tartars, these teethe are soulede by weyght, and are cauled  
the teethe of fysshes.

The frozen sea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina  
to Hetzora and vnto the monthes of the great riuier Obi: be-  
ponde the which they say to bee the region of Engronland,  
vknouen and seperate from the trade and conuersation  
of owre men, by reason of hygh mountaynes coue-  
red and coulede with perpetuall snowe, and  
the sea no lesse incumbered with cony-  
nually Ice whiche hyndereth na-  
uigations and maketh them  
daungerous, as  
they saye.

The beeste  
cauled *Mors*.

The prou-  
dence of  
nature.

The frozen  
sea.

Engronland  
or Groneland

EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV LI

TERARVM MISSIVARVM QVAS

illustrissimus Princeps Edvardus eius no-  
minis Sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiber-  
niæ Rex, misit ad Principes Septemtri-  
onalem ac Orientalem mundi pla-  
gam inhabitantes iuxta mare gla-

ciæ, nec non Indiam Ori-

entalem, Anno Dñi,

1553, Regni sui

Anno septimo

et ultimo,



Edvardus sextus, Angliæ, Franciæ, &  
Hiberniæ Rex, &c. Omnibus, Regi-  
bus et Principibus ac Dominis, et cun-  
ctis Iudicibus terræ, & Ducibus eius qui  
buscunq; est excellens aliqua dignitas in ea cunctis  
in locis quæ sunt sub vniuerso cœlo: Pax, tranquillitas,  
& honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris quæ  
imperio vestro subiacent, cuiq; vestrum quemadmo-  
dū conuenit ei, Propterea quod indidit Deus Opt.  
Max. hominibus præ cunctis alijs viuentibus cor &  
desiderium tale, vt appetat quisq; cum alijs societate  
mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere, et  
mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuiq; pro fa-  
cultate

cultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem hominibus beneficijs fouere et conseruare conuenit, in illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a remotis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardentius in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumque nostrorum exempla inuitant, qui semper humanissime susceperunt et benignissime tractauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquis tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni commendantes. Quod si omnibus id prestare æquum est, certe mercatoribus imprimis præstari debet, qui per vniuersum orbem discurrunt, mare circūlustrantes et aridam, vt res bonas et vtilis quæ Dei beneficio in regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adferant, atque inde viuissim referant quæ suæ regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non destituantur commodis quæ non profert illis terra eorum, & ipsi sint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus cœli et terræ, humano generi maxime consulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenirentur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliretur amicitia inter omnes, singulique omnibus benefacere quererent, Hoc itaque ineundæ ac stabiliedæ  
amicitiæ

The kyniges letter.

amicitiæ desiderio moti viri quidam regni nostri, iter in remotas maritimas regiones instituerunt, vt inter nostros et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et eferendis aperirent: Nosq; rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, concessimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo sunt seruis nostris fidis et charis, vt pro sua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quesituri ea quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex nostris terris, id quo illi carent. Atq; ita illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, sitq; amicitia perpetua et foedus indissolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittent illi nos accipere de rebus quibus superabundant in regnis suis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis nostris res, quibus destituuntur. Rogamus itaq; vos Reges et Principes & omnes quibus aliqua est potestas in terra, vt viris istis nostris transitum permittatis per regiones vestras. Non enim tangent quicquã ex rebus vestris inuitis vobis. Cogitateq; homines et ipsi sunt. Et si quare caruerint, oramus pro vestra beneficentiã, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes vicissim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos et subditi nostri nos gereremus erga seruos vestros si quando transferint per regiones nostras. Atq; promittimus vobis per Deum omnium quæ caelo, terra et mari

et mari continentur, perq̄ vitam nostram et tranquillitatem regnorum nostrorum, nos pari benignitate seruos vestros accepturos si ad regna nostra aliquando venerint. Atq̄ a nobis et subditis nostris, ac sinati fuissent in regnis nostris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt rependamus vobis benignitatem quam nostris exhibueritis. Postquā vos Reges, Principes, &c. rogauius vt humanitate et beneficentia omni prosequamini seruos nostros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum nostrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem quæ nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, quæ ciuitas est regni nostri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, mense Iar. xiiii. die mensis, anno septimo regni nostri.

**T**he copy of the letters missiue which the right noble prince Edwarde the. vi. sent to the Kynges, Princes, & other potentates inhabytyng the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche tyme as Syr Hugh Willoby knyght and Wycharde Chaunceler with theyr company attempted theyr vyage thither in the yeare of Chryst. 1553. and the. vii. and laste yeare of his reigne.



**E**dwarde the syxte by the grace of God, kyng of Englande, Fraunce, and Ierlarde. &c. To all Kynges, Princes, Rulers, Judges, and gouernours of the earth, and all other haupngs any excellent dignitie on the same in all places vnder the vniuersall heauen: peace, tranquillite, and honoure, bee vnto youe, and your landes and regnys

208

ons which are vnder your dominions, and to euery of you  
as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the greate and almyghtry god hath gyuen  
vnto mankynd aboue al other liuing creatours, such a hart &  
desyre, that euery man desyret to ioyne frendshyppe with  
other, to loue and bee loued, also to gyue and receaue mutu-  
all benefites, it is therfore the dewtie of all men, accordyng  
to theyr poure to maintayne and increase this desyre in euery  
man with well deseruyng to all men, and especially to shewe  
this good affection to such as beinge moued with this desire,  
comme vnto them from farre countreys. For in howe much  
the longer viage they haue attempted for this intent, so much  
the more doo they therby declare that this desyre hath byn ar-  
dent in them. Furthermoze also theremples of oure fathers  
and prediceours doo inuite vs hereunto, forasmuch as they  
haue cuer gentelly and louyngly increated such as of frendely  
mynde came to them atwel from countreis nere hand as farre  
remote, commendynge them selues to theyr protection. And  
if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such humanitie toward all  
men, doubtesse the same owght chiefly to bee shewed to mar-  
chautes, who wanderynge about the worlde, searche both  
the lande and sea to cary such good and profitable thinges as  
are founde in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kynges-  
domes: and ageyne to byngge from the same, suche thynges  
as they fynde there commodious for theyr owne countreys:  
Bothe, atwell that the people to whom they go, may not bee  
desitute of such commodities as theyr countreys byngge not  
furth to them, as that also they may bee partetakers of suche  
thynges wherof they abounde. For god of heauen and earth,  
greatly prouydyng for mankynde, wolde not that al thinges  
shulde bee founde in one region, to thende that one shuld haue  
neede of an other, that by this meanes frendshyppe myght bee  
establyshed amonge all men, and euery one seeke to gratifie  
all. For the establyshynge and furtherance of which vniuer-  
sall amitie, certeyne men of oure realme moued hereunto by  
the sayde desyre, haue institute and taken vpon theym a by-  
age by sea into farre countreys to thintent that betwene oure  
people and them, a way bee opened to byngge in and cary oure  
marchaundies, desyryng vs to further theyr enterpryse. Who  
sentynge to theyr petition, haue licenced the ryght valiante  
and

and woorthy s<sup>r</sup> Hugh Wylloby knyght, and other o<sup>vr</sup>er  
 trasty and faithful seruauntes which are with hym accordyng  
 to theyr desyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknow  
 en, aswell to seeke such thynges as we lacke, as also to cary  
 vnto them from o<sup>vr</sup>er regions, suche thynges as they lacke.  
 So that herebye nor only commoditie may enseeve both to the  
 and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetuall league of  
 frendshipp be establi<sup>sh</sup>ed betwene vs bothe, whyle they per  
 mitte vs to take of theyr thynges suche whercof they haue a  
 bundaunce in theyr regions, and we againe graunt them such  
 thynges of o<sup>vr</sup>ers wherof they are destitute. Wee therfore de  
 syre yowr kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is  
 any pouere on the earth, to permitte vnto these o<sup>vr</sup>er seruauntes,  
 free passage by yowr regions and dominions. For they shall  
 not touche any thyng of yowres vntowylling vnto yow. Con  
 sider yow that they also are men. If therfore they shall stand  
 in neede of any thyng, we desyre yowe of all humanitie, and  
 for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to ayde and helpe theym  
 with such thynges as they lacke, receauynge agayne of them  
 such thynges as they shall be able to geue yowe in recompense.  
 Shewe yowre selues so toward theym, as yowe wolde that  
 wee and o<sup>vr</sup>er subiectes shalde shewe o<sup>vr</sup>er selues toward yowr  
 seruauntes, if at any tyme they shall passe by o<sup>vr</sup>er regions.  
 Thus doynge, wee promise yowe by the God of all thynges  
 that are conceyued in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the  
 lyfe and tranquillitie of o<sup>vr</sup>er kyngdomes, that we wyl with  
 lyke humanitie accepte yowre seruauntes if at any tyme they  
 shall come to o<sup>vr</sup>er kyngdomes, where they shall as frendly  
 and gentelly be receyued as if they were borne in o<sup>vr</sup>er do  
 minions, that we may herebye recompense the fauour and be  
 nignitie which yow haue shewed to o<sup>vr</sup>er men. Thus after we  
 haue desyre dyowr kynges and princes. &c. With all huma  
 nite and fauour to intercepe o<sup>vr</sup>er welbeloued seruauntes, wee  
 pray o<sup>vr</sup>er almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace  
 which neuer shall haue ende. Wrytten in London whiche is  
 the chiefe cite of o<sup>vr</sup>er kyngedome: In the yere frome the  
 creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Febr, the xiiii,  
 day of the moneth, and seventh yere of o<sup>vr</sup>er reigne.

**C**his letter was wrytten also in Greeke  
 and dyuers other languages.

III. l.

Ocher

Other notable thynges

Other notable thynges as touchyng the Indies: and  
first of the foreknowledge that the poet Seneca  
had of the syndyng this newe worlde and  
other regions not then known.  
Francisco Lopes.

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophecie.

So do the  
Egiptians.

The wordes  
of Seneca.



o speke of thynges that shalbe, longe before they  
are, is a kynde of diuination if the truth thereof  
folowe effectually. Neuerthelesse althowgh such  
thynges as are spoken eyther by coniecture, or by  
thinckinge of nature, or by naturall reason, doo  
ofentimes take place and succede accorpyngely, yet are not  
such coniectures to bee accounted as prophesies  
reueled by the spirite of god, which wee ought entierly to be-  
leue: but not so the other gathered only by certeine apparenc-  
es, similitudes, reasons, and demonstrations: althowghe it  
bee greatly to bee maruailed to consyder howe they hyere the  
trithe sumerme: which perchappes they doo accorpyng to the  
prouerbe that sayeth: He that speaketh much shall sometimes  
stumble on the truth. All this I speake consydeyng the say-  
inge of the poet Seneca in his tragedie of Medea, where his  
woordes seeme in all popntes to agree with the discoueryng  
of the Indies founde of late by Chyphofer Colon & the Spa-  
nyardes, The woordes of Seneca, are these.

Venient annis

Sæcula seris, quibus Oceanus

Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens

Pateat tellus, Tiphisq; nouos

Detegat orbis,

Nec sit terris vltima Thyle.

Islande was  
in owlde time  
cauled Thyle  
as summe  
shinke.

That is to say: Where shall coomme worldes in late yeares,  
in the which the Ocean shall vnlose the bondes of thynges,  
and a great lande shall appeare. Also Tiphis (that is nau-  
gation) shall discouer newe worldes: And Thyle shall not bee  
the furthest lande.

Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled  
Atlantica or Atlantide.



The Philosopher Plato wyrcethe in his Dia-  
loges of Timæus and Critia, that in the owlde  
time there was in the sea Atlantike ouer agens  
Africa, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater  
then Africa and Asia: affirmynge that those  
landes are from thense continent and great:  
And that the kynges of that Ilande governed a greate parte  
of Africa and Europe. But that in a certeyne greate earth-  
quake and tempest of rayne, this Ilande soonke and the peo-  
ple were drowned: Also that there remayned so much mudde  
of the drownynge or synkyng of that Ilande, that that sea  
Atlantike coulde not bee sayled. Sum take this for a fable:  
and many for a trewe hystorie, as doothe Marcellius Ficinus  
inducinge Proclus alleagyng certeyne hystories of the Ethi-  
opians wyrcen by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the same  
to bee trewe. But there is nowe no cause why wee shulde any  
longer doubt or dispute of the Iland Atlantide, forasmuch  
as the discoverynge and conquest of the west Indies do plain-  
ly declare what Plato hath wyrcen of the sayde landes. In  
Mexico also at this day they caul that water Atl. by the halfe  
name of Atlant, as by a woorde remaynyng of the name of  
the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewyse say that the In-  
dies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the re-  
manent of the same: and not the Ilandes of Hesperides or  
Ophir, or Tharsis, as sum haue thought of late dayes. For  
the Hesperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Boz  
gonas from whense Hanon browght apes: Albeit in confer-  
ryng it with Solinus, there is sum doubt by reason of the  
nauigation of fortie dayes wherof he speaketh. Aswell mape  
it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the In-  
dies, shulde bee those which the Carthaginenses founde and  
forbode theyr citisens to make any byages thither or to in-  
habite the same as Aristotle and Theophraste doo rehearse  
where they wyrc of the marueylous and vnknowne workes  
of nature. As concernynge Ophir and Tharsis, it is not kno-  
wen what or where they bee, althowgh many lerned men as  
saynt Augustine and other haue searched what citie or lande

Plato sayth  
that these  
kynges were  
the sonnes of  
Neptunus.  
An earth-  
quake.

Marcellius Fi-  
cinus.  
Proclus.

Mexico or  
new Spaine.

Hesperides.  
Cabo Verde.  
Ophir.  
Tharsis.  
Bozgonas.  
Solinus.

Lands found  
by the Car-  
thaginenses.

Aristotell.  
Theophrast.

Other notable thynges

Jonas fledde  
to Charis.

The navigati-  
ons of Salo-  
men.

Bermio is  
the Arabian  
sea.

Charis myght bee. Saynt Jerome who was expette in the  
Hebrywe tounge, sayth in many places vppon the prophetes  
that Charis is as much to say as the sea: and that wher-  
as it is wyrtten that Jonas fledde to Charis, he wente to the  
sea by a longe tozney. Furthermoze as concernynge the nau-  
gations of Salomon, it is not to bee thowght that his nauies  
sayled to the west Indies, forasmuch as to passe thither, it  
was requisite for them to sayle Westwarde departyng from  
the sea of Bermio: and not Eastward as they sayled. Ageine,  
the west Indies haue no vnicornes, elephantes, diamonds,  
and such other thynges as they broughyt in the trade of their  
navigations.

Of the colour of the Indians.



One of the marueylous thynges that god blesch  
in the composition of man, is colour: whiche  
doubtlesse can not bee considered withoute  
great admiration in beholding one to be white  
and an other blacke, beinge colourcs vterlye  
contrary. Sum lykewyse to be yelowc whiche  
is betwene blacke and white: and other of other colourcs as it  
were of dyuers liures. And as these colourcs are to be mar-  
ueyled at, euen so is it to be considered howe they dyffer one  
from an other as it were by degrees, forasmuche as sum men  
are whyte after dyuers sortes of whytenesse: yelowc after dy-  
uers maners of yelowc: and blacke after dyuers sortes of  
blackenesse: and howe from whyte they go to yelowc by dis-  
colourynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by aske col-  
our, and murrey sumwhat lyghter then blacke: and tawnye  
lyke vnto the west Indians which are all togyther in general  
eether purple, or tawny lyke vnto sodde quynses, or of the  
colourc of chesnuttes or olyues: which colourc is to them na-  
tural and not by theyr goynge naked as many haue thought:  
albeit theyr nakednesse haue sumwhat helped therunto. Ther-  
foze in lyke maner and with suche diuersitie as men are com-  
monly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, euen with like  
uarietie are they tawny in these Indies, with dyuers degrees  
diuersly inclynnge moze or lesse to blacke or whyte. No lesse  
maruayle is it to consyder that men are whyte in Simit and  
blacke

How colourcs  
dyffer by de-  
grees.

The colourc  
of the west  
Indians.

Dyues sortes  
of whyte and  
blacke.

blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of the Nutte colour at the cyuer of Plata, bringe all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lyke wyse that the men of Affryke and Asia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Terrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath or in this lyde the same line as in Mexico, Pucaran, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape, Saynt Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the same Equinoctiall. For in al the tracte of these coastes certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vasco Nunez of Balboa discovered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme that suche varietie of colours procedeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee although wee bee all bozne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cause why god hath so ordeyned it, other wise then to testifyder that his diuine maiestie hath doonne this as infinite other to declare his omnipotentie and wilddome in such diuersities of colours as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke also in beastes, byrdes, and fioures, where dyuers and contrary colours are scene in one lytle feather, or the leaues growynge out of one lytle stalk. An other thyng is also greatly to bee noted as touchynge these Indians. And this is, that theyr heare is not curle as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same climate: neyther are they balde excepte very seldome, and that but lytle. All whiche thynges may giue further occasion to phylosophers to searche the secretes of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

Difference of colour in the same climate.

Rio de la plata.

Peru. Blacke men in the west Indies. From wher procedeth the varietie of colours.

Gods wyse dome & pouer is scene in his workes.

Could heare and balde.

Why they were cauled Indians.



Am thynke that the people of the newe worlde were cauled Indians because they are of the colour of the East Indians. And although (as it semeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and fashions, yet is it true that of India they were cauled Indians.

The colour of the East Indians.

India East Indes.

India is properlie cauled that great prouince of Asia in the which grea Alexander kepte his warres: and was so named of the cyuer Indus: and is diuided into many kyngdomes conspynging with the same. From this grea India cauled

Other notable thynges

Priester John  
came out of  
India to E-  
thiophe.

Ethiopia cau-  
led India.

India not far  
from Spayne

Priester John  
knowne to  
the Portuga-  
les.

At the fur-  
thest East,  
begynneth  
the west.  
The Iland of  
Cipango.  
China.  
Cathay.  
To the East  
by the west.  
Marcus Pau-  
lus Venetus.

(cauled the East India) came great companyes of men as wy-  
teth Herodocus: and inhabited that parte of Ethiopia that  
lyeth betwene the sea Bermeia (otherwyse cauled the redde  
sea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: at which  
regions that great Christian prince Priester John dooth now  
posseste. The sayde Indians preyayled so much, that they ve-  
rely changed the customes and name of that lande, and cau-  
led it India: by reason wherof, Ethiopia also hath of longe  
tyme byn cauled India. And hereuppon came it that Arysto-  
tell, Seneca, and certeyne othe oulde autours sayd that In-  
dia was not farre from Spayne. After this also, of later  
dayes omte West India was so cauled of the sayde India of  
Priester John wher the Portugales had theyr trade. For the  
pylot of the caruell that was fyrst dryuen by forcyble wynde  
to an vnknowne lande in the Weste Ocean, cauled the same  
India bycause the Portugales so cauled such landes as they  
had largely discovered Eastwarde. Christopher Colon also af-  
ter the sayde pylot, cauled the west landes by the same name.  
Albeit, sum that take Colonus for an expert Cosmographer,  
thynke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the  
furthest and vnknowne ende thereof reachyng into the Weste  
vnder the other hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe be-  
neathe vs: affirmyng that when he fyrst attempted to disco-  
uer the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the ryche Iland of  
Cipango, which fauleth on the parte of great China or Ca-  
thay as wyteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And  
that he shulde sooner come thither by folowynge the course of  
the loonne Westwarde then ageynst the same: Albeit manye  
thynke that there is no suche Ilande, or at the leaste not yet  
knowne by that name: wheras also Marcus Paulus obserued  
no exacte description of the place eyther of this Ilande or of  
Cathay.

The fyrst discoverynge of the  
Weste Indies.



Certeyne caruell saylpyng in the weste Ocean a-  
bowt the coastes of Spayne, had a forcyble and  
continuall wynde from the East wherby it was  
dryuen to a land vnknowne and not descripyed  
in any mappe or carde of the sea: and was dry-  
uen

A harde be-  
gynnyng.

nen styl alonge by the coaste of the same for the space of many dayes vntill it came to a haue: where in a shorte tyme the most parte of the maryners beinge longe before verpe weake and feeble by the reason of hunger & trauayle, dyed: So that on ly the pylot with thre or foure other remayned alyue. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrst discovered to theyr mylfortune, but the resydue also that lyued had in maner as lyttle fruition of the same: not leaupnge or at the least not openly publyshynge any memorie therof, ney ther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what yeare it was founde. Albeit, the faute was not theyrs, but rather the malice of other, or the enuie of that which wee caule fortune.

I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hypothesies affirme that great thynge proceede and increase of smaule and obscure begynnynge, syth wee haue seene the same veresped in this fyndyng of the Indies, being so notable and newe a thynge. Wee neede not bee curious to seeke the name of the pylot syth death made a shorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl say that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the Ilands of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal navigation chauced vnto hym. Other say that he was a Spanyayne, and traded into Englande and Fraunce. Other also, say that he was a Portugale: and that eyrher he wente, or came from Mina or India: which agreeth well with the name of these newe landes as I haue sayde before. Ageyne, sum there bee that say that he brought the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilands of Madera, or to sum other of the Ilandes cauled

*delos Azores.* yet doo none of them affirme any thynge, although they all affirme that the pylotte dyed in the house of Chrystopher Colon, with whome remayned al such wyrtynge and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the sayde carauell, aswell of such thynge as he obserued both by lande and sea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those landes whiche he had discovered.

*Breathynge  
proceedyng  
of smaule and  
obscure be-  
gynnynge.*

*The pylotte  
that fyrst  
founde the  
Indies.*

*Mina.*

## Other notable thynges

**W**hat maner of man Christopher Colon was :  
and howe he came fyrst to the know-  
leage of the Indies.



Thus also be  
gan Rycharde  
Chawnceler.

Colon was  
not much ler-  
ned.  
The Ilande  
Atlantide.

The lande  
found by the  
Carthaginen-  
ses.

Colon confer-  
red with ler-  
ned men.

Christopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or  
(as sum say) in Rerui, a byllage in the territo-  
rie of Genua in Italie. He descended as sum  
thynke, of the house of the Pelicreles of Pla-  
centia in Luubardie. He beganne of a chyldre  
to bee a maryner : of whose arte they haue  
great exercise on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeares  
into Suria and other partes of the East. After this, he be-  
came a master in makynge cardes for the sea, whereby he had  
great vantage. He came to Portugal to knowe the reason  
and description of the south coastes of Africa and the naviga-  
tions of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes moze per-  
fecte to bee folde. He maryed in Portugal as sum say : or as  
many say, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at suche  
tyme as the sayde caruell arriued there, whose pylot suozned  
in his house, and dyed also there, bequeethynge to Colon his  
carde of the description of suche newe landes as he hadde  
founde, wherby Colon had the fyrst knowleage of the Indys  
es. Sum haue thowght that Colon was well lerned in the  
Latine tongue and the science of Cosmographie : and that he  
was therby fyrst moued to seeke the landes of the Antipodes  
and the ryche Ilande of Cipango wherof Marcus Paulus  
wryteth. Also that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges  
of Timcus and Critias, wryteth of the greate Ilande Atlan-  
tide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vnder-scouered be-  
yng bygger then Asia and Africa. Furthermoze that he had  
knowleage what Aristotell and Theophrastus saye in theyr  
bookes of mariuaples, where they wryte that certeyne mar-  
chauntes of Carthage saylyng from the streyghtes of Gibral-  
tar towarde the west and south, founde after many dayes a  
greate Ilande not inhabited : yet replenished with al thinges  
requisite, and hauynge many navigable ryuers. In deede  
Colon was not greatly lerned : yet of good vnderstandynge.  
And when he had knowleage of the sayde newe landes by the  
inforamation of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to cer-  
teyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchynge the  
lyke

lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this secreate and conferred chiefly with a fryer, named John Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monastery of Barbida. So that I beuely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges moze that he lefte vnspoken, were wyrtten by the sayde Spanysh pylot that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science atteyned to the knowleage of the Indies, he wolde longe befoze haue communicate this secreate to his owne contry men the Venueses, that crauyle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue come into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtrelesse he neuer thought of any such thyng befoze he chaunced to bee acquainted with the sayd pylot who founde those landes by fortune, accordyng to the sayinge of Solinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is: That arte coulde not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the moze Chyistian opinion is, to thinke that god of his singuler prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookyng downe from heauen vpon the sonnes of Adam so longe kepte vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to hym only knowne) to rayse those wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein most lyke vnto the hypppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole worlde was saued as by this caruel this newe worlde receaued the fyrst hope of theyr saluation) was dyuen to these landes. But wee wyll nowe declare what great thynges folowed of this smaule begynnynge, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

Chaunce and arte.

A Chyistian opinion.

The caruel compared to the ship of Noe.

**W**hat labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrst vyage to the Indies.



fter the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanysh caruell that discouered the Indies, Chystopher Colon purposed to seke the same. But in howe muche moze he desired this, the lesse was his poure to accomplishe his desire. For, besyde that of him selfe he was not able to furnyshe the one hypppe, he lacked also the fauour of a kynge vnder whose protection he might so enjoy the riches he hoped

## Other notable thynges

The kynge of  
Portugale.

The kynge of  
Castile  
Kynge Henry  
the seventh.

Barnarde  
knewe not  
all thynges.

The duke of  
Medina Si-  
donia.

The duke of  
Medina Celi.

to fynde, that none other myght take the same from hym or  
defeate hym therof. And sence the kynge of Portugale occu-  
pied in the conquest of Africa and the navigations of the East  
which were then fyrst attempted, the kynge of Castyle lyke-  
wyle no lesse busyed in the warres of Granada, he sent to his  
brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was also priuie to this se-  
crete) to practise with the kynge of Englande Henry the se-  
uenth beinge very ryche and withowt warres: promysynge  
to bynge hym great ryches in short time if he wolde shew him  
faueur and furnyshe hym with shippes to discouer the newe  
Indies wherof he had certeyne knowleage. But neyther here  
beinge able to bynge his sute to passe, he caused the matter  
to bee moued to the kynge of Portugale Don Alonso the fyfte  
of that name: at whose handes he founde neither faueur nor  
money, forasmuch as the licenciate Calzadilla the byshop of  
Viseo, and one master Rodrigo men of credit in the science of  
Cosmographie, withstoode him and contended that there nei-  
ther was nor coude any golde or other ryches bee founde in  
the west as Colon affirmed. By reason wherof he was very  
sadde and pensive: but yet was not discouraged or despaired  
of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found  
This done, he tooke shippinge at Lisburne, and came to Sa-  
los of Moguer where he comuned with Martin Alonso Pinzo  
an expert pylot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this  
disclosynge the hole secretes of his mynde to John Perez  
of Marchena (a fryer of the order of saynt Frances in Rabida,  
and wel lerned in Cosmographie) & declaryng vnto hym how  
by folowynge the course of the son by a temperate byage, rich  
and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commen-  
ded his enterpryse, and gaue him counsaile to breake the mat-  
ter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Enrique of Buzman  
a great lord and very ryche: And also to Don Lups of Cerda  
the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouisi-  
on of shippes well furnysed in his haven of Santa Maria.  
But wheras both these dukes tooke the matter for a dreame  
and as a thyng diuised of an Italian deceauer who (as they  
thought) had befoze with lyke pretence deluded the kynges  
of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to  
go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinando  
and lady Isabell princes of Castile: affirmynge that they  
wolde

Wolde bee ioyfull of such newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to frer Ferdinando of Talauera the queenes confessor. Christopher Colon therfore, re payred to the court of the Catholyke princes, in the yeare, M. CCC. lxxxvi. and deliuered vnto theyr handes the petition of his request as concerninge the discouerynge of the newe Indies. But they beinge moze carefull, and applyinge all theyr mynde howe they myght dzyue the Moores owt of the kyngdome of Granada, which great enterpryse they had already taken in hande, byd lyttle oz nothyng eke the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, found the meanes to declare his sute to such as had sumtymes priuate communication with the kyng. yet bicause he was a stranger and went but in simple apparell, noz otherwylse credited then by the letter of a gray frer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonso of Quintanilia the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meate and dzyinke at his owne charges, and hard gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: despyrre hym in the meane tyme to bee contente with that poore enterreynement, and not to despayre of his enterpryse: puttyng hym also in good conforzte that he shulde at one tyme oz other, coome to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilia, Colon was brolought to the presence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbishop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues & auctoritie with the kyng and queene, who brought hym befoze them after that he well perceaued and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his sute harde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the fyrst they rooke it for vayne and false that he promysed, neuertheleste they put hym in good hope that he shulde bee well dispatched when they had synished the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which answere, Colon beganne to reuiue his spirites, with hope to bee better eskemed and moze fauorably to bee hard amonge the gentelmen and noble men of the court, who befoze tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothyng dismayde oz discouraged when so euer he departed

The conquest  
of Granada.

what men  
knowe not  
they call  
fantasticall.

Colon his  
entertainmente.

The arch-  
bishop of  
Toledo.

Colon is  
brought to  
the kynges  
presence.

## Other notable thynges

The iudgement of ignorant folkes,

Colon is dispatched.

Colon his rewards.

One queent is. x. hundred and thirtie thousande.

bated the matter with them, althowghe many iudged hym phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all such as attempte any thyng beyonde they reach and the compass of they knowledge: thinking the worlde to bee no bigger then the cages wherein they are brought up and lyue. But to returne to Colon: So horte and vrgente was the siege of Granada, that they presently graunted hym his demaunde to seeke the newe landes, and to byngge from thence golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, spices, and suche other ryche thynges. They gaue hym also the tenth parte of all the reuenues and customes dewe vnto the kyng of al such landes as he shulde discover, not doynge prejudice in any thyng to the kyng of Portugale. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the privilege of the rewarde, in Granada the .xxx. daye of Aprill the same yeare that the citie was woonne. And wheras the sayde Catholyke princes had not mony presently to dispatch Colon, Lups of Castelle Angell the kynges secretary of accomptes, lente them fyve thousande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefly to be noted: wherof the one is, that for so smaule charges they haue increased the reuenues of the crowne of Castyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endynge the conquest of the Moores who possessed the kyngdome of Granada eygh hundredeth yeares, they immediatly beganne the conquest of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were ever appoynted to feyght ageynst infidels and enemies of the fayth of Iesu Chryst.

By this traualle of Colonus in so noble an enterpryse and so harde successe, dooth the sayinge of plinie appere to be most trew, wher in the preface of his natural hystory wyttē to theprouerbe *Uespasiana* he writeth in this maner. *Res ardua uetustis nouitatem dare: Nouis, auctoritatem: absoletis, mitorum, obscuris, lucem: lastiditis, gratiam: dubiis, fidem: omnibus uero naturam, et natura sua omnia. Itaq; etiam non assecutis, uoluisse abunde pulchrum atq; magnificentum est.* That is to say: It is a dyfficulte thyng to gyue newenes to owlde thynges, auctoritie to newe thynges: be worthy to thynges owt of vse: fame to the obscure: fauoure to the hatefull: credite to the doubrefull: nature to all, and all to nature. To such neuerthelesse as can not attayne to all these, it is greatly commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the same,

In the scuchen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinand<sup>o</sup> and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (so cauled for they<sup>r</sup> warres ageynst the infidels) these verses were wyrtten.

Por Castilla y por Leon,  
Nueuo mundo hallo Colon.

That is: For Castile and for Leon,  
The newe worlde founde Colon.

C Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico.



The Spayne is that parte of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South frome the lande of flozida. This was subdued to thempire of Castile by the ryght noble gentelman Ferdinando Cortese the marquesse of the vale of Quaraca. In this lande are many prouinces cōteynnyng in thē in mauer innumerable cities, amonge which that is the chiefe which the Indias caule Mexico or Te mixtitan, cōsystyng of moze thē fīue hundredeth thousand inhabitauntes. It standeth in the myddest of a lake of salte water as doth Venese in the sea. The lake concepneth fortye Iberian myles cauled Isaralange, euery one cōsystyng of .xxx. furlons, and moze as sum say. In these regions is founde great plentie of golde, syluer, and p̄cious stones, with innumerable other thynges both necessary for the lyfe of man and pleasaunt: as sylke, bombasine cotton, alame, Safferne, woade, with dyuers other thynges wherwith clothe & sylke is dyed. There is also such abundaunce of suger, that certeyne Spanyll the shippes are yearely fraughted therewith and bynge the same into Siuile from whence it is carryed in manner to all partes of Chrystendome. The inhabitauntes of Mexico are subtile people, and vse much craft in they<sup>r</sup> bargenyng. They haue not the vse of golde and syluer monye: but vse in the steade therof the halfe shelles of almonds, whiche kynde of Barbarous money they caule Tacao or Tacanguate. In manner al kyndes of cozne are there very good cheape: especially barley and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wyld beastes, Lyons, Leopardes, and Tygers, which beastes wan-

The cite of Mexico or Te mixtitan.

Golde and syluer.

Sylke.  
Cotton.  
Alam.  
woade.  
Sugar.

Shelles for money.

Come.  
Beastes.

der

## Other notable thynges

**haukyng and huntynge.** **der** in maner in euery place. The region is moſte commodious for haukyng and huntynge for the great abundaunce it hath of beaſtes and foules. But the people exerciſe all theyr curynge in makynge the images of theyr Idolatre, and in paincyng. Theyr women are baliant: and ſumptuous in theyr apparell and other pymentes. For they ſo rycheſely frynge and byſet the ſame with perles, precious ſtones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of paper greatly diſſeruyng from others. In this they expreſſe theyr myndes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwiſe theſe of letters. The nation is deſyrous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the condicions of peace vniuolated: But deſpreth rather in ciuile and moſt euell battayle amonge them ſelues then to lyue in peace and quietneſſe. Suche as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theyr enemies, eyther by ſubmiſſion or otherwyſe, are partely ſacrificed to the Idoles, and the reſidue gyuen to the ſouldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and haukes with parte of theyr pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which euery one maketh for his particular god after the phantaſie of his own brayn, and gyuech therto diuine honour. Albeit at this day they doo by lytle and lytle leaue of theyr barbarous fierceneſſe: and with othere religion embrace better maners. For they nowe profeſſe the fayth of Chryſt, and in his name pray vnto God the father.

**A warlike nation.**

**Captyues ſacrificed to Idoles.**

Underſtande here that as touchyng theſe regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entituled of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediately after the Decades, althowgh the printer haue alſo wyrtten the thyrde decade ouer the head of that booke which inreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conqueſt of this Mexico, Franciſco Lopez hath wriſten a large booke in the Spanyſhe tounge.

## Of Peru.



**P**er the prouince cauled Peru, was alſo named Noua Caſtilia by them that fyrſt founde it. This region is the weſt parte of America: and is ſituate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, proceadyng from the Weſt to the Eaſt. And ſouthward be gynneth ſinedegrees beyonde the Equinoctiall

quinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the south.

This is taken to bee the rycheft lande in golde, syluer, perles  
 precious stones, and spyces, that ever was founde yet to this  
 day. For golde is there in such plentie that they make pyl-  
 pots therof, and other bestels applyed to sylethy bles. But  
 this is moze to bee marueyled at, that in a citie cauled Collao  
 was founde a house all couered with massie plates of golde.  
 In theyr warres also theyr harnesse was of golde and syl-  
 uer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, spynges, dartes,  
 and pikes. Thinhabitantes are warlyke people and of great  
 agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes.  
 The region is exceedyng frutefull, and yeldeth corne twyse  
 in the yeare. It is so flozy thynge with many fayre wooddes,  
 mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleasaunt and necessary  
 commodities, that it seemerh in maner an earthly Paradyse.  
 It hath dyuers kyndes of beastes, and yet none hurtfull or  
 of rauenyng kynde. There are sheepe of such heygth that  
 they ble them in the steade of hozles. Some wyre that they  
 are as bygge as the younge foles of camels: and that theyr  
 woolle is very softe and fine. Also that the ewes byng  
 furth lambes twyse a yeare. The people are wytry and of gen-  
 tyl behaunour. Cunnyng also in artes, faythful of promes,  
 and of maners not greatly to bee discommended, saue that  
 they are ignozant of Chryst: who neuerthelesse is nowe know-  
 en vnto them in many places, as our hope is he shalbe dayly  
 moze and moze if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynge  
 handes to the plowe of owre lord, and sende labourers into  
 his vyneyarde.

Peru is the  
 rycheft lande  
 that is know-  
 en.

A house coue-  
 red with gold

harnes of  
 golde.

A frutful res-  
 gion.

Great sheepe

The dewtye  
 of Chyrtian  
 princes.

**C** Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata  
 (that is) the ryuer of syluer.



This ryuer reacherh very farre in length & bredth  
 and is cauled Aruai in the Indian tounge. Into  
 this fauleth an other ryuer named Paraué. The  
 fyrste that sayled into the ryuer of Plata, was  
 John Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kynge  
 of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of these seas. In the  
 ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche John Dias named Martinus  
 Gracias because a pylot of his so cauled, was buryed there.

Paraué.

John Dias  
 Solis.  
 The Ilande  
 Martinus  
 Gracias.

This

Other notable thynges

The viage of  
Sebastian  
Cabote to the  
ryuer of Pla-  
ta.  
Charlis.  
Ophir.  
Cipango.  
Cathay.

The ryuer of  
Plata.

This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer: and is dy-  
stant from the mouth of the same about forty leaques. As the  
sayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was sud-  
deynly opprelled and slayne of the Indians that prouide a-  
gainst hym. Wherewith neuerthelesse theyr barbarous cruel-  
tie was not satisfiied vntyll they had torne him in pieces and  
deuoured hym. But many yeares after, Thempereours maie-  
ste and kynge of Spayne Charles the fyfte, sente forth Se-  
bastian Cabot (a man of great courage and skylfull in Cosmo-  
graphic, and of no lesse experiance as concernynge the starres  
and the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the  
Ilandes of Charlis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Re-  
ceaynynge therfore his commission and proceadyng forwarde  
on his vyage, he arriued by chaunce at this Ilande: The  
cause wherof was that the principall vessel was lost by ship-  
wracke, and the men that saued theyr lyues by stoppynynge  
were receaued into other shippes. Perceaynynge therfore that  
by reason of this chaunce he could by no meanes performe his  
vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the sayde Ilande;  
and theruppon to conueygh his vytrayles to land, to prepare  
his soldiers to thynualion, to plant colonyes, and to erect for-  
tresses by the ryuers syde wherby the Spanyardes myght bee  
defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he  
attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was riche  
in golde and syluer. Which thyng dyd so encorage him, that  
withowt respect of perel he thought best to expugne it by one  
meanes or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte  
as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermoze as  
touchynge the ryuer, Sebastian Cabote made relation that he  
neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in bredth and depth. For  
wher eas it fauleth into the sea, it conteyneth. xxv. leaques in  
breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot sayled by the  
same into the lande for the space of thre hundred and fiftie  
leaques as he wyrteth in his owne carde. That it is of great  
depth, may hereby bee considered that manye great ryuers  
faule into it: so that the chanell can not bee shallowe that con-  
teyneth such abundance of water, and suche plenty of good  
and great fyshes. For there in is maner no fysh in the sea,  
that is not founde in this ryuer. As soone as the Spanyards  
were set alande, they made a prooue if the soyle were fruitful

fo beate cozne. Takyng therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commyttyng the same to the earth in the moneth of September, they gathered therof two thousande and fiftie at December nexte folowynge: wherein some beinge deceaued and mistakynge the thyng, haue wyrtten in the scade of two thousande and fiftie, fytie thousande and two. The lyke fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulse. Furthermoze the inhabitants declared that not farre from that place, there are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great distance from the same, to be other mountaynes no lesse frutefull of syluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearse. The inhabitants are paynetull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherein they take great pleasure: and haue therfore great plentie of bzeade of Maizim. There are sheepe of suche byggenesse that they compare them to younge camels or asses as sum say. Theyr woolle is very fine: and nearest vnto the fynesse of sylke. There are also beastes of dyuers kyndes. Amonge men there is this dyfference, that such as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most parte lyke vnto the men of oovre regions. But they that dwell about the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr colour therof) are blackyshe or purple of the colour of fine Iren or Steele. This also chauncerth to many of them, that theyr fiere and legges are lyke the legs and fiere of the foule cauled the opstrece.

maruelous  
frutifullnes.

mountaynes  
conteynyng  
golde and syl  
uer.

Great sheepe

men with be  
fouled legs.

Theyr colour

**C** Of the hygher East India cauled India  
Tercera or Trecera.



In this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngdomes: as the kyngdomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Bra cangui, Daulian, Capelan, and the greate kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wyrters Aurea Therlonelus: whose chiefe cite is also cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Under this kyngedgme are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, wherof the principall are these: Iana the greater, Iana the lesse, Polagua, Mendana Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Anbon, and Bilolo,

Malachs.

Tacho's.  
The Ilandes  
of Malacha.

## Other notable thynges

With infinite other. On the Southwest parte from Malacha,  
**The Iland of** is the great Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme Tapyo  
**Samotra.** bana, in the which are the kyngdomes of Sedir, Biraen, Ba  
 zer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and al the other cauled  
**Spices.** Maluche, bynge furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome,  
 nuttemegges, maces, and all other kyndes of spyces excepte  
**Calocut.** pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calocut and the I  
**Ceilam.** lande of Ceilam. All these sortes of spices are carped to Ma  
 lacha to bee soulde. But the greatestt parte of them is carped  
**Cathay.** to Cathay and China: and from thense to the north partes of  
**China.** Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was  
 in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of  
**precious** stones. The people are very subryle and ryche. They  
**stones.** are all appareled eyther in sylke oz cloth, oz vestures of other  
**Sylke.** woorkemanshippe: and are of good ciuilitie. They doo not  
 gladly permitte the Portugales oz other straungers to tra:  
**Cautan.** fike in theyr kyngedome: whose mosse famous place vppon  
 the sea syde, is named Cautan, and the sea Machiam, caus  
 led of the owlde wypters the sea of Sina.

**C** Of the landes of Laboradoz and Baccalaos, lying  
 west and north west from Englande, and beinge  
 parte of the firme lande of the  
 West Indies.

**The way to**  
**the Ilandes**  
**of Maluca by**  
**the north sea.**



**The Spany-**  
**shes.**

**Vasper Cor-**  
**tesreales.**

Any haue trauallyd to search the coast of the  
 lande of Laboradoz, as well to thincente to  
 knowe howe farre oz whyther it reachethe,  
 as also whether there bee any passage by sea  
 through the same into the sea of Sur and the  
 Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the E:  
 quinoctfall line: thinkynge that the waye  
 thither shulde greatly bee shortened by this wyage. The Spa  
 nyardes as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spices per:  
 teyne, dyd fyrst seeke to fynde the same by this way. The Por  
 tugales also hauynge the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd  
 trauallye to fynde the same: although hetherto neyther anye  
 such passage is founde oz the ende of that lande. In the yeare  
 a thousande and fiue hundzeth, Vasper Cortesreales, made  
 a wyage thither with two carauelles: but founde not the  
 streyght

streight or passage he sought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lye in the mouth of the goulfe Quadrado, after his name Cortesreales, lyinge in the .X. degrees and moze: and brogght from that lande abowt three scoze men for slaues. He greatly maruayled to beholde the hougge quantitie of snowe and Ise. For the sea is there frosen excedyngly. Whinhabitauntes are men of good corpozature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and labozious. They paynte theyr bodyes, and weare braselettes and hoopess of syluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the skynnes of marternes and dyuers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inwarde in wynter, and owrwarde in soommer. This apparell they gyzde to theyr bodyes with gyzdeles made of cotton, or the synewes of fyfthes and beastes. They eate fyfthe moze then any other thyng, and especially salmons, although they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houses of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the steade of ryles, couer them with the skynnes of fyfthes and beastes. It is sayde also that there are grifes in this lande: and that the beares and many other beastes and foules are whyte. To this and the Ilandes abowt the same, the Britons are accustomed to resorte: as men of nature agreable vnto them and bozne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Norwages also sayled thither with the pylot cauled John Scoluo: And the Englyshe men with Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of Baccallaos, is a greate tracte: and the greatest altitude therof, is .xlviij. degrees and a halfe. Sebastian Cabot was the fyrst that brogght any knowlege of this lande. For beinge in Englande in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth, he furnyshed thoo shippes at his owne charges or (as sum say) at the kynges, whome he perswaded that a passage might bee founde to Cathay by the north seas, and that spices myght bee brought from thence soner by that way, then by the vyage the Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundred men, and directed his course by the tracte of Ilande vppon the cape of Labrador at .lviij. degrees: affirmynge that in the moneth of July there was such cold and heapes of Ise that he durst passe no further: also that the dayes were very longe and in

111, ii, maner

*Insula Cortesreales.*

*Snowe and Ise.*

*Furres.*

*Fyfthe.*

*Gryfes. Beares.*

*The britons.*

*Sebastian Cabot.*

*The land of Baccallaos.*

*The vyage of Cabot in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth.*

*Ise in July.*

## Other notable thynges

**Baccallaos.** maner witholat myght, and the myghtes very cleave. Certeyne it is, that at the lx. degrees, the longest day is of. xviii. houres. But consydeyrng the coulde and the straungenes of the vnknowen lande, he turned his course from thense to the West, folowynge the coast of the lande of Baccallaos vnto the xxxviii. degrees, from whense he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Byttons and Danes haue sayled to the Baccallaos: and Jaques Cartier a frenche man was there thoyse with thzee galeons: as one in the yeare, xxxiiii. and the other in the. xxxv. and chose the lande to inhabite frome the. xlv. degrees to the. li. beinge as good a lande as fraunce, and all thynges therein commune to such as fyrt possesse the same.

**The people of Baccallaos**

Of these lands, Jacobus Bassaldus wyrteth thus: The newe lande of Baccallaos, is a coulde region, whose inhabytauntes are Idolatours and praye to the soonne and moone and dyuers Idoles. They are whyte people and very rustical, for they eat fleshe and fythe and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes also they eat mans fleshe pryncelye so that theye Taciqui haue no knowleage therof. The apparell of both the men and women, is made of beaves skynnes, althowgh they haue sables and marternes, not greatly esemed bycause they are lytle. Sum of them go naked in soommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Byttons and frenche men are accustomed to take fythe in the coaste of these landes where is founde great plentie of Tunnyes which th inhabitantes call Baccallaos wherof the lande was so named.

**Fythyng for tunnyes.**

**Laboradoz.**

Northwarde from the region of Baccallaos, is the lande of Laboradoz, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are manye beaves and wyde bozes. Th inhabitantes are Idolatours and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccallaos. In all this newe lande, is neyther cite or castell: but they lyue in companies lyke heardes of beastes.

### C The discouerynge of the lande of flozyda

**John Ponce.**  
water of  
great vertue,  
of this reade  
in the Des-  
sades.



The gouernour of the Ilande of Boriquena John Ponce of Leon beinge discharged of his office and very ryche, furnished and sente forth two carucls to seeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or springe wholy

whose water is of vertue to make olde men younge. Whyt he trauayled syre monerhes with obtragiouſe deſyre amonge many Ilandes to fynde that he ſought, and coulde fynde no token of any ſuch fountayne, he entered into Bimini and diſcovered the lande of Flozida in the yeare. 1512. on Eaſter day which the Spanyardes caule the flozidying day of Paſcha, wherby they named that lande flozida. And ſuppoſyng that great ryches myght be byowght from thence, he returned into Spayne and conuenaunted with kynge Ferdinando as touchynge the trade: and by thinterceſſion of Nicolas de Quanzdo and Peter Nunez de Guzman, the kynge dyd not onely make hym gouernoure of Bimini and Flozida, but alſo ſente furthe with hym thre ſhippes from Seuille toward his ſecond byage in the yeare. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Buacana otherwoyſe cauled Guadalupe, and ſent to lande certeyne of his men with the landreſſes of the ſhippes: whom the Caribales lyinge in ambuſſhe, aſſayled with theyr inueniement at rowes: and ſlaying the moſt parte, carryed away the women. With this euyl begynnynge, John Ponce departed frome hence to Boriquen and from thence to flozida wher he went alande with his ſouldyers to eſpie a place moſte commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie. But the Indians commynge furth agaynſt hym to defende the enterance, aſſayled the Spanyardes fiercelly and ſlew and wounded many of them. At which conſaucte alſo he hym ſelfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed ſhortly after in the Ilande of Cuba: and ſo ended ynge his lyfe, conſumed a great parte of the rycheſſe he had before begotten at ſaynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This John Ponce had before ſayled with Chryſtopher Colon to the Ilande of Hiſpaniola in the yeare. 1493. He was a gentel ſouldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the prouince of Higuel for Nicolas de Quando that conquered the ſame. The region of flozida is a poynt or cape of lande reachinge into the ſea lyke vnto a tounge: beinge a famous and notozious place amonge the Indians by reaſon of many Spanyardes that haue bin ſlayne there. But wheras by fame this flozida was eſtimated a ryche lande, many valient and noble men deſyred the conqueſt therof, amonge whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly myrched by thimprifonment of kynge Atabaliba) accepted

Bimini.

Buacana.

The Caribales.

Boriquena,

The death of John Ponce.

The land of flozida.

Ferdinando de Soto,

a byage

## Other notable thynges

a vyage thither with a good bande of men, and spente fyue yeare in seckynge of golde mynes, supposynge that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

The valient myndes of the Spanyardes.

The thynde attempte of the conqueste of Florida.

Certeine fryers attempte the conquest onely with woordes, but with euill successe.

The fryers are slayne and eaten.

A new kynde of disgrading

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoinge of all that went with hym withowt inhabrynge that lande, in the which the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers and stronge and hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by these mysadventures, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many woorthy gentelmen desyred this conquest in the yeare. 1544. amonge whom was Iulian Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterprise. But neyther themproure beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Doir Phylippe his sonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies wolde in any case agree to the conqueste. Neuerthelesse notwithstandinge the matter which they were partly perswaded myght otherwyle bee brought to passe, they sent thether fryer Luys Cancell of Baluaastro with other fryers of the order of saynt Dominike who offered them selues to conuertere the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the fayth of Chryst and obedience to the Emperoure, onely with woordes. The fryer therfore goinge forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yeare. 1549. went aland with foure other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne maryners with olde harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachinge, many of the Indians of the sayd Florida resorted to the sea syde, where withowt gnyng audience to his woordes, they caried hym away with thre other of his companyons and dyd eate them, whereby they suffered martyrdome for the fayth of Chryst. The resydue that escaped, made hast to the shippe and kept them selues for confessours as sum saye. Many that fauoure thintente of the fryers, doo nowe consyder that by that meanes the Indians coulde not be brought to owre frendshippe and religion. Neuerthelesse, that if it coulde so haue byn brought to passe, it had byn better. There came of late from that shippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hangged vp the skynnes with the heades and crownes of the sayd fryers in one of theyr temples,

**C**An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations abowt the same.



**T**he ancient wryters diuided this oore worlde into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Tanais as Isocrates declareth in his Panegyrico. Afterwarde they diuided Asia and Africa by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Nilus, thogh the same had byn better by the sea Bermeio (that is) the redde sea, which almoste trauerseth and passeth through the lande from the Ocean to the sea Mediterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berofus the Caldean, sayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa: and gaue them to his sonnes, Cham, Sem, and Jafer: also that he sayled by the sea Mediterraneum ten yeres. In fine we nowe conclude that the three sayde prouinces occupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in generall say that Asia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bygge as they both. Albeit Herodotus in his Helpomene, scoznethe them that make Europe and Asia equal: affirmynge that Europe in longitude is equal to Asia and Afrike: and that it passeth them in latitude, wherin he speaketh not greatly owte of square. But to speake moze of this elsewhere, not pertynyng to the matter wee haue in hande, I say that Homerus one of the most ancient wryters, sayth that the world which is diuided into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as reherseth Pomponius Mela in his thyrde booke. Strabo in the fyrst boke of his Geographie, sayth that the earth which is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Digninus also, and Solinus, confirme this sentence, Althowghe Solinus doo erre in mystakinge the names of the seas, supposynge that the Caspian sea was parte of the Ocean, beinge rather lyke vnto the sea Mediterraneum so named bycause it is in the mydlande as is the Caspian sea withowt participation of the great Ocean. Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of Tolomeus Euergetes, one Eudoxus sayled thre or foure tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde sea (cauled the goulfe of Arabie or Bermeio) presented to the same kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome thense

Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa.

Asia.

Europe.

The hole earth is an Ilande.

The Caspian sea.

Caliz is a ryuer. Nauigations from the redde sea to East India.

Other notable thynges

thence. Wynges Zuba also proued this navigation from Caliz to India as wyrteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that the navigation to India by the Ocean was then wel knowne and frequented, althowgh not so much as at this present, the same beinge neyther then or nowe a thyng of great difficultie or traasple by the coastes of hotte regions. But to sayle from India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and regions of extreme coulde, shulde bee doubtlesse a difficult and dangerous thyng, wherof is no memory amonge the olde autours sayunge onely of one Gyppe as Plinie and Mela doo wyrite, rehercyng the testimony of Cornelius Nepos who affirmeth that the kynge of Suenia presented to Quintus Pytelus Celer Lieutenant of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dyuyn by tempest into the sea of Germanie: if the same were not of the lande of Laboradoz or Bacallaos, and they deceaued in theyr coloure. For sum say that lykewyse in the dayes of the Emperoure Fredericus Barbarossa, certeyne Indians were broughed in a Canoa from the citie of Lubec in Germanie. Furthermoze pope Eneas Syluius wyrteth that the Sarmation sea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian sea. Nowe also there is great knowlege and experience howe the navigations and passage may be attempted by Norwaye and other north regions vnder the same north, and to folow that coaste to the south sea of Sur and keepe that course by the tracte of China. Olanus Bothus the archbysshop of Upsalia and bozne in Gothlande, hath wyrtten muche of these north regions and navigations by the north sea. In the tract of this vyage by the north sea, are the Ilandes of Ifflande and Brunlande, althowgh there is doubte whether Brunlande be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande. It is vt. leagues, from Lapponia, and sumwhat moze from Finmarchia a lande of Scandinavia in Europe. The people of Brunlande are stronge men and of comly stature. They sayle with small Gypes or barkes couered close aboute with lether or beastes hydes for feare of the coulde and sylthes. Brunlande as sum say, is fyftie leagues from the north parte of the firme lande of the West Indies by the lande of Laboradoz. But it is not yet knowne whether this land be continent or adherent with Brunlande, or if there bee any streyght of sea betwene the. If all bee one firme lande adioyninge by any parte, then the

two

The vyage to India by the north seas.

The hystorye of Cornelius Nepos.

Note this.

Indians in Lubec.

The Sarmatian sea,

Ifflande. Brunlande.

Lapponia. Finmarchia.

Brunlande.

The distance from Brunlande to the lande of Laboradoz.

Who great partes of the world seeme to ioyne together abowt the north pole or vnder it, or beneth it, forasmuch as it is not past fortie or fiftie leaques fro Finmarche to Grunland: wher by it may appere that althowgh there be any such straight diuidyng them, yet are they neyghbours & not farre in sunder. Furthermore from the land of Labrador by thacompt of the pilottes, is abowt foure hundred leaques to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyse cauled the Ilandes of So ria lyng in the West Ocean ouer ageynst Spayne. Also by their accompte the lande of Labrador is abowt five hundred leaques from Ireland, and sixe hundred from Spayne.

of the streight if it be.

The Ilandes of Soia, or Azores.

from labo-  
dor to Ireland.

That the Spaniardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go fiere to fiere ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispheric or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to thoppinion of the owlde wyters.



Al the ancient philosphers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any passage from oure hemispheric or halfe compasse of the earth to the Antopides by reas of the burne line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean sea lyng in the mydde way, wherby this byage shulde be hyndered and impossible, as Ma-  
Macrobius.

Macrobius wyteth at large in his comentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chrystyan phylosophers, Clemente wy-  
Clement.  
teth that it is not possible for any man to passe the Ocean: and other wyters of later tyme, seeme to confirme the same. In dede I verely beleue that this way was neuer knowen to them, as well for that euer presuppolyng the thyng to bee impossible they neuer attempted it, as also that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no shippes sufficient for so longe and difficulte a navigation to byng them knowlceage herof, as haue the Spaniardes to passe the Ocean vnto the: In so much that at this present this byage is by dayly expe-  
The Indians  
are An-  
des.  
rience so well knowen vnto the Spaniardes and Portuga-  
les, that they can in maner go thither blindfold, contrarie to thoppinion of those phylosophers. I wyll here omytte to speake of many shippes that haue sayled ordynarly frome  
Spain

¶ ¶ ¶ m. i.

## Other notable thynges

**The Wyppre  
Victoria.**

**A straunge  
thyng.**

**Shadowes  
towards the  
south.**

**The sonne ry  
synges on the  
ryght hande.**

**The vyage  
of Magella-  
no.**

**Antipodes.**

**Guinea.**

**The north  
starre.**

**The needle  
& compasse.**

Spainne to India, and speake onely of the Wyppre Victoria which compassed about the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or thre Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spainne by a contrary way, whereby is declared the ignozance of the sage antiquitie. In this navigation, they founde many secretes, amonge the which this is strange and woorty memorie, that al such deade Christians as were cast into the sea, lay on theyr backes and turned theyr faces bywarde: but the gentles lay all groouelyn on theyr bellies. They also perceaued the soonne and moone to keepe a contrary course from that they doo here, & euer to cast the shadowes of all thynges towards the south: whiche thyng also was knowen to sum of the owlde wyters. For this is manifest that the sonne ryseth on the ryght hande to theym that lyue in the thyrtye degrees on thother syde the Equinoctiall: so that lookynge towards the sonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: whereby it appeareth to bee true that they affirme. They consumed thre yeares lackynge. xiiii. dayes in voyage and commynge, and losse a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eate fleshe on frydayes, and celebrated the feast of Easter on Sundayes: so that they ouerleaped a day (not saylynge in the calender) and kept no iust rekenynge of the bisericile. The cause wherof whyle some haue searched by philosophy, they haue erred more then the maryners. They sayled x. thousande leaques and. xiiii. myles by theyr accompte, albe it they shulde haue gonne lesse, if theyr way hadde line ryghte forth. But as they were enforced partly of necessitie, and partly to fynde that they sawgh, they made many voydynges and turnynges. They trauesed the Equinoctiall line fyve tymes without burnynge, contrary to thopinion of the owlde autours. They remayned fyve monethes in the Iland of Tidoze, whose inhabitauntes are Antipodes to theym of Guinea, whereby it is appaerent that wee maye communicate with them. And althowgh they lost the syght of the north starre, yet dyd they euer directe theyr course thereby. For beinge in the. xl. degrees of the south, they sawe the needle of the compasse stande as directly towards the north as it dooth in the sea Mediterraneum: althowgh sum say that it looeth his force somewhat. About the point of the South or pole Antarrike, they sawe a lyttle whyte cloude and foure starres

lyke

lyke unto a crosse with thre other ioynynge therunto, which resemble owre Septentrion, and are iudged to bee the signes or tokens of the south exelrve of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the kere of Salamon, but greater was this of the Emperours maiestic Don Charles kynge of Spayne. The Argo of Jason whiche the antiquitie placed amonge the starres, sayled but a lytle way and a shorte byage in comparason of the shyppe Victozia whiche owght woorthely to bee kepte in the Arsenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of so famous an enterpryse. The daungours, paynes, trauayles and laboures of Ulysses were nothyng in respecte of suche as John Sebastian susceyned: whereby in the scuchion of his armes in the head of a monstrous or inuincible beast, he wgoz they gaue the woorld with this circumscription: PRIMVS CIRCVDDEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrst that hath compassed me about.

As touchynge the needle of our compasse, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that saylynge as farre south as Cap. de Boa Esperanza, the poynt of the needle styl respected the north as it dyd on this syde the Equinoctial, sayynge that it sumwhat trembled and declyned a lytle, wherby the force seemed sumwhat to be diminished, so that they were fayne to helpe it with the lode stone.

**C** Who fyrst founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof.



Speakyng much of nauigations, it myght seme a thyng vndecent to omitt to say sumwhat of the needle of the compasse: without the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderyng coniectures, euen so shulde the Indies neuer haue bynne founde but by helpe of the same, forasmuch as the shippes shulde haue byn lost in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courses were directed by the needle and compasse, which owght therfore to be compted the chiefe partes of the shyppe and principall instrumentes of saylynge. The fyrst that founde the needle and the vse therof (as Blonbus and Mapheus Birardus doo wypte) was one flamus of Alpha a citie in the kynngdome of Naples, of whome the Metropolitans glozy to this day: and that by good reason, for as much as a citizen and neyghbours chyld of theys, was

¶ ¶ ¶ m. ii.

Septentriones, are the vii. starres. that are sene by Charles wayne or the great beare. Argo of Jason.

Ulysses. John Sebastian.

The chiefe partes of the shyppe.

## Other notable thynges

**Reyn.**
**The Spany-  
ardes an  
Portugales.**
**Why the nec-  
dle turneth  
so the north.**
**The Island of  
Tercera.**
**The Island of  
Wagnere.**
**Note the quar-  
ters of the  
Iode Stone.**

the fyrst fynder of so commodious and profitable a thinge, to  
 the secrete wherof so many excellence wytres as were before  
 hym coulde not attayne, althowgh they hadde both iren and  
 the Iode stone (cauled *Mignes*) whiche are the materials of the  
 needle. Next unto *Flavius*, the chiefe commendation is dew  
 to the *Spanyardes* and *Portugales* by whose daylye experie  
 ence, the same is brought to further perfection, and the vse  
 therof better knowne: althowgh the hether to no man knoweth  
 the cause why the iren touched with the Iode stone, turneth  
 euer towarde the north starre, as playnely appeareth in euery  
 common dyall. In maner all wytres attribute this to a se-  
 create and hyd propertie, sum of the north, and other of the  
 mixture of naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene  
 iren and the Iode stone. If it bee the propertie of the north  
 or north starre, then (as the pylots make theyr reckonynge)  
 neyther shulde the needle make anye change or dyffer in  
 northeking, as in saylynge northeaste withowt the *Islande*  
 of *Tercera* beinge one of the *Islandes* of *Azores* or *Soria* and  
 two hundredeth leaques from *Spayne* towarde the West East-  
 West neyther yet shulde it lose his office (as sayth *Plinius*)  
 in passynge from the *Islande* of *Magnete*, that is, the *Island*  
 of the Iode stone, which is vnder or neare aboute the north  
 pole. But howe so euer it bee, or what so euer bee the cause,  
 trewth it is that the needle turneth euer to the north although  
 wee sayle aboute the south. We ought therefore to vnder-  
 stande that the Iode stone (whiche wee falsely caule the *adaz*  
*mant*) hath heade, fiete, and also armes as sum say. The *ir*  
*en* that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceaseth to turne dy-  
 rectly towarde the north, as is to see in the dyals that are  
 made to the soonne. The rubbinge of the fiete serueche for  
 the south: as doo lykewyse the other partes, for other quar-  
 ters and poyntes of heauen.

Note here that yf a piece of this stone, of the byggeneffe of an  
 egge or a walnute, or more or lesse, bee broken into manye smaile  
 pieces as bygge as dyce or lesse, yet euery of thore smaile ptes,  
 hath headdes, foote, and armes, as is sayde here before.

**C**The Situacion and byggenes  
of the earth.



**L** I may to some seeme a vaine thyng to seke the  
situation and byggenes of the earth, although  
it bee easy to knowe, forasmuche as it is situ-  
ate in the myddeste of the world as the center  
of the same, beinge enuironed and as it were  
borne by of the sea which compasseth it abowt.  
Mela sayth that the pylers that susteyne it, are East, West,  
North, and South: which sayinge Dauyd confirmeth in the  
C. vi. psalme. These foure are the most notable pylers of sus-  
tentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordynge to the  
motions wherof, all byages are ruled on the earthe, frome  
whense they haue theyr originall, as engendered of the dy-  
uers qualities of vapoures & exhalacions rayled by the sonne  
and other wyse. Eratoſthenes put none other sustentacions  
then the north and south poles, and parteth the earth by the  
course of the sonne: which partition Marcus Varro dooth  
greatly commende as agreable to reason. The poles are firme  
and immouable as an exeltre abowt the which the heauen mo-  
ueth and is thereby susteyned. They furthermoze declare vnto  
vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and  
which way wee go, with also the largenes of heauen and co-  
menturation of the earth. As for example: the streyght of  
Gibraltar (accompryng from Spayne) is from the north, or  
to sprake more playnely from the poynte of the earthe that is  
or may be directly vnder the north pole, abowt. liiii. degrees  
which make. ix. hundredeth and. lxxx. leagues according to the  
common computacion of the Cosmographers and Astronomers:  
And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. degrees: which ad-  
ded to the other. li. ii. make. xxx. degrees, beinge the hole  
distance from the north poynte to the Equinoctiall line diu-  
dyng the earth by the myddeste, and the quarter or fourth  
parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how  
great it is in compasse and how many leagues or myles it con-  
teynethe, is easy to perceaue accompryng euery degree. lx.  
myles. But that yowe may the better perceaue what degrees  
are, I haue thought good to speake sumwhat moze hereof.

The sea.

The wyndes

The poles.

The meas-  
ryng the cir-  
cumference  
of the earth

wher

## Other notable thynges

### ¶ What degrees are.



In the olde tyme theyr maner was to measure the earth and the woorld by furlonges, paces, and fiers, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wyrters. But after that Ptolome founde degrees a hundreth and fiftie yeares after the death of Chryſt, that maner of accompte was receaued as the best. Ptolome diuided all the hole body and face of the land and sea into three hundreth and sixtie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: so that the hole globe of the haule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He assigned lyke wyse to euery degree thre score myles, whiche make. xlii. Spany the leagues and a halfe: In such sorte that the globe or haule of the earth measured directly by any of the foure partes of the same, conteyneth in circuite fyre thousand and two hundreth leagues. This computacion and measurynge, is so certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde trewe by experience, so much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that thynvention hereof was iudged so dyfficulte by Job and the preacher, that no man had founde the measure of limites of the same. They name those degrees of longitude, that they accompte from soonne to soonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the East to the Weste by the myddle of the globe or haule of the earth. These can not well bee obserued, forasmuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no fyre or permanent signe wherunto the pylots maye directe theyr eyes or instrumentes. For the soonne, althowghe it be a moste cleare signe, yet doothe it dayely change the place of rysynge and faulynge, and keepethe not the same course the day folowynge as the Astronomers affirme. And althowghe there is no number of the that in trauallyng strange landes and seas haue spent theyr gooddes and almoste theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longitude withoutt errorre as are founde the degrees of latitude & heygth, yet is there none that by thecto hath any trewe knowlege thereof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north pointe to the south, the commensuration or measuring wherby, is most certeyne by reason that the north starre is per  
mans

Ptolome  
founde degrees.

Longitude &  
Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of  
Longitude.

The degrees  
of Longitude  
are not known.

The degrees  
of latitude.

The north  
starre.

stande and remaineth still in one place, or at the least moueth aboue the pole which is theyr firme and stedfast signe wher by they accompte theyr degrees and directe theyr vyages. By the degrees therfore accompted by these most certeine signes, is vnsaylably measured the hole circumference of the lande and sea, diuidyng the same into soure equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, arc. lxxx. degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the south poynt, other lxxx. Ageyne on the contrary syde, from the south poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxx. degrees: and from the Equinoctiall ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we coniecture by good reason aswell of this inferioure hemisphere wherof a great parte is knowen vnto vs by the nauigations of such as haue passed the streyghets of Magellanus and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo such cleare and manifest relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the southe pole beinge the other ecliptice of the worlde whose syght we lacke. For (as Herodorus sayth) yf there be any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is suche as are vnder the north) ther is alio of the hypernotios, that is such as are vnder the south: which perhappes are they that lyue in the lande of the streyghes of Magellanus as nere vnto the other pole. But what these landes are, or of what greatnes we can haue no certeyne knowlceage vntyl sum man shal haue compassed aboue the lands vnder the south pole as did John Sebastian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

These last annotations of the Indies, haue I translated owt of the booke of Franciscus Lopes, wyrtten in the Spanyshe tongue to the Emperours maiestie: and partly also owt of the carde made by Sebastian Cabot.

The circute of the earth.

The inferior hemisphere.

hyperborea.

hypernotia.

**C**A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth.



Any ignorant men thynke that the earth is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in many thynges not onely of the woorkes of nature, but also of suche as are doonne by the sight and arte of man. For they say: How can it bee rounde foral much

The eye is deceaued.

## Other notable thynges

A rynge,  
A circle.

muche as thogh a man trauayle neuer so far eyther by land  
 or sea, he seemeth euer to passe as it were by a ryght line withy  
 out any such circuite or compassynge, ascendynge or descen  
 dyng, as perperueth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The  
 which obiection, as it is grosse and simple, procedynge of the  
 narrowness of the vnderstandynge of such as can not conceaue  
 the large circumference of the lande and sea, euen so may it be  
 answered with this simple demonstration. In a rynge that  
 serueth for the spynge of a mans hande, the space of halfe an  
 ynche or lytle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a rynge or cyrcle  
 of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an  
 ynche appeareth in maner a ryght line, althogh it bee not  
 so in dedde, forasmuch as it is not possible for any parte of a  
 circle to consist of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to  
 consist of a cyrcle, sicke the partes must needes bee conforma  
 ble to the hole, consistynge of such vni forme partes as are in  
 mathematical. But not to wander to farre in these subtili  
 ties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, so shal  
 a greater parte therof seeme a ryght line or playne forme: As  
 for exemple, imaginynge a circle whose diameter (that is mea  
 sure from syde to syde) consisteth of a myle: in this circle a  
 pole length or more, may seeme a ryght line, as yowde may or  
 therwylse multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it shal appere  
 that the large circumference of the earth well consydered, a  
 muche greater parte of the circle therof then the eye of man con  
 ceaueth, may seeme to bee a ryght line, and he continually to  
 walke vppon a playne forme forasmuch as euery parte of a cir  
 cle is lyke vnto other as I haue sayde. This may suffice for  
 a simple and bryefe demonstration and induction for suche as  
 are desyrous to seeke furth to knowe the truth hereof.

C What credit owght to bee gyuen to wyrters as  
 touchynge the woorkes of nature.



The moste auncient wyrtter Diodorus, Siculus,  
 in the fourth booke of his Bibliotheca, wyrt  
 teth in this maner. If any man for the marue  
 lous straungenes and noueltie of such thinges  
 as are describied in ooure bookes, wyl not per  
 happes gyue credyt to ooure hyssorie, let hym  
with

With ryght iudgement consider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owres, and he shall the easelyer perceaue the woorkes of nature and approue owre wozynges. For owre ayer dyffereth so much from theyrs, that it myght seeme incredible if experience were not moze certeyne then doubtfull reason. In some regions the coulde is so extreme that greate ryuers are so frozen, that laden cartes and armes of men passe ouer the immouable ice. Wine also and other moist thynges are so conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is moze marueylous, that the extreme partes of suche apparell as menne weare, are so byten with coulde that they faule of. Mens eyes are also dymmed: the fyre gyueth not his natural byghtnesse: and brasen vesselles and images are broken. Sumtime by reason of thicke cloudes, thunders and lychtninges are neyther seene oz harde in such regions. Many other thinges moze marueylous thē these hath nature wrought, which may seeme incredible to the ignozant: but easy to such as haue experience. In the furthest partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the soonne is so extreme abowt noone, that noo man can se hym that standeth by hym, by reason of the thicke ayer caused by the vapoures and exhalations rayled by the heate. None can go withowt shoes but haue theyr fiere suddenly blyssered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrst, dye immediately except they haue drynke at hande, the heate so faste consumeth the moysture of theyr bodyes. Meate put in brasen vesselles, is sodde in short space by the heate of the soonne withowt other fyre. yet they that are borne and brought vp in such regions, had rather wyllyngely susteyne these incommodities then bee inforced to lyue otherwyse: such a loue of theyr natiue countrey hath nature gyuen to all men: custome of continuance from younge yeares being also of force to ouercome the maliciousnesse of the ayer. Neuerthelesse, these places of such contrary natures wherby suche strange effectes are caused, are not farre in sunder oz diuided by any great distance. For, from the maryshes of Meotis oz Meotides wher certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue sayled with shypps of burden to Rhodes in the space of ten dayes: and from thence to Alexandria in foure dayes. From whense passynge thowgh Egypte by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue

R R R n. i. arryued

The bitter-  
tie of ayer in  
dyuersa reg-  
ions.

Extreme  
coulde.

Extreme  
heate.

The force of  
education.

Extreme  
heate & coulde  
in a smale  
distance.

Frome Scy-  
thia to Ethio-  
pia.

## Other notable thynges

arrived in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the nauigation from the coldest partes of the worlde to the hottest regions, is no more then. xxxiii. continuall dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is such in places of so smaul distance, it is no marueyle that the customes and maners of lyuynge of the people of those regions, with the complexions of theyr bodyes and such thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owtres.

### The peface to the booke of Metals.



**I**n this booke of the Indies and nauigations I haue thought good to adde the booke of metals, for thre causes especially me mouynge: whereof the fyrst is, that it seemeth to me a thyng vnder cent to reade so much of golde and syluer, and to knowe lytle or nothyng of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuerthelesse thynges not onely most despyred, but also such without the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee passed ouer without many aduersities, forasmuch as poruerie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further esteemed then it is supported by ryches, syth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is become the slau to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, so named, not for the despyre that men had to golde, but for thinnocencie of lyuynge in those dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought it cruelte by breakynge the bones of owre mother the earth, to open a way to the courte of infernal pluto from thence to get golde and syluer the seedes of al mischiefes and angells of such a god, whom the antiquitie (not without good consyderation) paynted blynde, affirmynge also that of hym golde and syluer haue receaued the proprietie to blynde the eyes of men. But syth it is nowe so that we shalbe inforced to seke ayde by that which was sumyimes a myschefe, it resteth so be the matter as doo cunnynge phisicians that can mynisther popson in proportion with other thynges in such sort qualyfyng the malicioulnesse therof, that none shall therby be incoricate. Forasmuch therefore as golde and syluer haue obseynd this prerogative that they are suche necessarie eylys  
wh:che

Which the lyfe of man can not lacke without det̄t̄ment, not only they but other metals also perhappes more necessarte although not so p̄cious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knownen then only by name, syth they are th̄ instrumentes of all artes, the p̄ices of all thynges, the oz̄namentes of al dignities, and not the least port̄ion of nature, wherby the cont̄emplation of them is no lesse pleasaunte then necessary. But forasmuch as it is not here my intent to int̄t̄ate much of metals, I wylle speake of the seconde cause: which is, that if in traueylng strang and vnknoʒen countreys any mans chaunce shalbe to arriue in such regions where he may knowe by th̄ formation of th̄ inhabitants or otherwyse, that suche regions are fr̄tefull of riche metals, he may not bee without sum iudgement to make further searche for the same. The th̄yde cause is, that although this owre realme of Englande be full of metals not to bee cont̄emned and much rycher then men suppose, yet is there fewe or none in Englande that haue anye great skyll thereof, or any thyng wrytten in owre tounge, wherby men maye bee well instructed of the generation and fyndyng of the same: as the lyke ignozance hath byn amonge vs as touchyng Cosmographie and nauigations but I attempted accordyng to the port̄ion of my talene and simple lernyng to open the fyrr doore to the enteraunce of this knoweledge into owre language, wherin I wolde wythe that other of greater lernyng wolde take sume pepnes to accomplishe and byng to further perfection that I haue vndely begunne, not as an autour but a translatoure, leaste I bee iniurious to any man in ascribyng to my selfe the trauayles of other. And wheras as concernyng the knowleage of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hole woork̄e of Pyrorechia wherof I fynisshed. xxii. chapit̄ures nowe more then th̄re yeres sence, and lefte the copie thereof in the handes of one of whom I coulde neuer get it ageyne (ompyt̄yng to speake of other ingraturides) I was therby discouraged to proceade any further in that woork̄e. Neuerthelesse, syth this hyssory of the Indies hath ministred occasion to int̄t̄ate sumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne translated th̄re of the fyrr chapit̄ures of that booke, which seeme most necessary to bee knownen in this case. And hereof to haue sayde thus much in maner of a p̄face it may suffice,

Of the generation of metalles and their mynes with the  
 maner of fyndinge the same: wrytten in the Italian  
 tounge by *Vannuccius Biringucius* in his booke cauled  
*Pyrotechnia*. To his louynge frende *Maister*  
*Bernardino Boncellese*, greeting.



Whereas I promysed you to wrytte of the na-  
 tures of metalles in particular, I am nowe in-  
 forced to declare euery thinge in generale, and  
 especially of the places of their generation and  
 their order, with the forme and maner of woork-  
 ynge in the same, and the instrumentes therto  
 pertynyng. Youe shall therefore vnderstande, that mynes  
 of metalles are founde in the moste partes of the worlde, more  
 or lesse according to the diligence of wittie searchers: and shewe  
 them selues standinge in the grounde in maner in suche sorte  
 as the veynes of bludde are disperled in the bodie of lyving  
 beastes, or like vnto the braunches of trees spredde forth di-  
 uers wayes. wherfor, the diligent searchers of mines, willing  
 by a certeyne similitude declare howe the mynes are placed in  
 the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of braunches  
 planted in the myddeste of the base of a mountayne, frome the  
 whyche are deriued dyuers and many bowtes and braunches,  
 sum greate and sum smaule, muche like vnto verpe trees that  
 are in owlde woddes. They will also that in growynge, they  
 euer ingrose them selues and reache towarde the heauen, con-  
 uertyng into theyr nature the moste disposed and neare mat-  
 ter, vntil the toppes of theyr braunches extend to the highest  
 parte of the mountayne, and there shewe furthe theyr selues  
 with manifeste apperaunce, puttinge furthe in the steade of  
 bowtes and floures, certeyne fumosities of blew or greene co-  
 loure, or marchasites with smaule veynes of ponderous mat-  
 ter, or suche other compositions of tinctures. And when by  
 this means they shewe the selues vnto vs, we may make firme  
 coniecture that suche mountaynes are minercall, and that ac-  
 cordinge to the demonstrations they shewe more or lesse, they  
 are richer or poorer of myne. Therfor the searchers, according  
 to thapperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto  
 them: and with hope and securitie of profecte, apply al their  
 possible diligenc with witte and expences to digge or gette  
 oute

The mineral  
 tree.

The mynes  
 doo growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of  
 metals.

I wrote such etynges as the signes and owtewarde apperances  
 ces de clare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of  
 mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn ex-  
 alted to the highest degree of riches. Whereas therfore by this  
 meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the eys of confu-  
 deration and right Iudgemente, and see the places where the  
 mineralles are ingendered and comprehend in maner theire  
 quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or fosses accordyng ther-  
 unto, whereas they shulde otherwyle wandre by chaunce, be-  
 cause no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines  
 are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer so good iud-  
 gement, and shulde make searche for the same neuer so cury-  
 ously by litle & litle. It shal therfore in this case be necessary  
 to folow the certificats & apcrances of signes, & to encofite the  
 same as nere as may be, with eys & eares euer attentiu where  
 they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, especially by  
 enuyzinge of shepardes and other anciente inhabitauntes of  
 such regions in the which mineralles are engendered. And this  
 I speake the rather for that I am perswaded that at the first  
 sight of a mountaine, by reason of the greate barrennesse and  
 roughnes therof, and also by reason of the great aboundance  
 of waters that are engendered in the same, a right good iud-  
 gemente shall not suffice to coomme to certayne knowelcage  
 that metall is contayned in such mountaynes, vntill the scar-  
 chers haue with charges and travail caused miners in sundry  
 places to discouer the same. And therfore I also beleue that  
 vnto man although he bee neuer so stronge, wyrtie, and faire  
 castinge, shall not be able in a netwe and straunge contreye, to  
 searche by smaule porcions not onlye all the mountaynes of  
 one or moog prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but  
 shall with muche difficultie scarcely suffice to searche the se-  
 creates of only one mountayne: In so muche that sum conlyde  
 ringe the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte,  
 it shuld be requysite to worke by the arte of Negromancie,  
 which I thynke to be a fable without further knowelcage.  
 But I wolde that these necromancers shulde tell me why this  
 theire arte helpeth them no further in the woork after that  
 they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they say.  
 Why (I say) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begyn-  
 nyng to fynde the myne, so consequently in the myddest and  
 the

Signes and  
 tokens of me-  
 tals,

Mountaynes  
 in the which  
 metals are en-  
 gendered.

Ageynst see-  
 kyng metals  
 with the rod  
 wher they  
 caule *virgula  
 la diuina*.

Negromancie,

## Of the generation of metals.

the ende to bynge the same to further perfection, as to gette  
it oute, to bynge it to fusion or melynge, and to purifie or  
pouge it from drosse, which doubtlesse it shulde haue poure  
to doo if it may bee beleued that it can doo the other. But  
fozasmuch as such effectes are so fearefull and terrible, that  
they ought not or can not be practised of al men, and also per  
happes bycause such maner of woorkynge is not knowen, I  
thinke it not good to be vled: but thinke rather by good rea  
son that this arte is so much the moze to be omitted and con  
temned, in howe much we are accustomed in the begynnynge  
of dyggynge of mynes, especially to caule for the grace of god  
that it may please hym to be presente with his ayde to othre  
doubtfull and trauallous woorkes. Lettynge passe therfore  
this deuplythe diuise of such beastly and fearefull men, I ex  
horte you to folowe the practise by the foresayde signes mi  
nistrd vnto you by the benignitie of nature, bothe ground  
ed vppon the foundation of truth and approued by the experie  
nce of many practicionars, not consystrynge in woordes or  
promyses of thynges vayne and incomprehensible. With these  
signes therfore shall you searche the banks and sides of the  
halleys, with the clyffes and ryftes of the stones, and the bac  
kes, toppes, or ridges of the Mountaynes: Also the beddes,  
chanelles, and courses of ryuers, lookynge diligently amonge  
theyr sandes, and the ruines of theyr fosses, amonge the whi  
che you shall often tymes espie marchasites or smaule sparkes  
of mynes, or other dyners tinctures of metals, whereby you  
may be certified that certeyne mynes are in such places, which  
you shall exactly fynd by diligent and curious searchynge the  
clyffes of theyr ryftes and dry places. After these aduertise  
mentes, take this for a generall signe, that all suche places  
and mountaynes are mineral, oute of the which many springes  
and great abundaunce of crude water dooeth issue, haupng  
with theyr clearenes a certeyne mincral taste, and such as at  
variable seasons of the yeare chaunge theyr qualitie, beynge  
warne in the springe tyme and coulde in sommer. And this  
thyng ought you to helue the moze when you shall see the  
aspecte of such mountaynes to be rough, sharpe, and saluage  
withowt earch or trees. Or so that yt there bee a lyttle earch  
found vpon the same with a smaule beyne of herbes or grasse  
you shall perceaue the greenes therof to be sapnt and in ma  
pcc

The maner  
of searchynge  
for mynes.

A generall  
signe,

Rough and  
barren moun  
taynes.

Wet Wythered and dyed. And albeit that sumtymes also,  
 mines are founde in mountaynes hauynge earth and fructefull  
 trees in the toppes thereof, yet are they for the most part found  
 in such wherof we haue spoken. Of these other, there maye  
 fewe signes be gyuen, except to go by lytele and lytele to seke  
 the bankes of theyr sydes. But amonge all these, the best and  
 most certeyne signe that may be gyuen, is wheras on the su-  
 perficiall parte of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the  
 myne dooth shewe it selfe apparenthe to syght. Sum there are  
 that for a good signe do greatly commende the residences  
 which certeyne waters make wher they haue rested for a time  
 and beinge dyed vp of the heate of the sonne, do often times  
 shewe in certeyne partes of theyr residencies dyuers tinctures  
 of mynerall substaunce. Summe other are accustomed to take  
 such waters, and in a hessell of earth or glasse or other mat-  
 ter, cause them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dregs  
 or residence remayne in the bottome well dyed in the likenes  
 of a grose earth, of the which they make an assaye eyther by  
 the ordinarie tryall of fyre, or after some other maner as ly-  
 keth them best. And by this meanes (althowgh they attayne  
 not to theracte knowleage of the truth) yet do they approche  
 to a certeyne knowleage of the thyng wherby they haue sum  
 intelligence of what sufficiencie and goodnesse the myne is  
 which they seeke, befoze they be at any great charges in for-  
 lowynge the same: Wherby alway that with all diligent  
 aduertisement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine  
 mountaynes be curiously searched, with also the bankes and  
 sydes of the selfe same mountayne, and all such superficiall  
 partes thereof, where any stoness are founde discovered eyther  
 of theyr owne proper nature or by the course of water: presu-  
 polynge ever that it is in maner impossible but that yf suche  
 mountaynes contayne any mynes, they muste needes shewe  
 furth sum floures, tinctures, or colours of theyr exhalations.  
 yet yf it shulde so chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes  
 of the mine may be the cause hereof forasmuche as eyther it is  
 not of vapozable nature, or to be of smaule quantitie, or els  
 perchappes bycause the mountayne is greate and the myne be-  
 ey low or so farre with in, that it is not sufficiencie to put furth  
 any signes of fumosities. The cause also hereof maye bee that  
 sum stoness lyke vnto that causyd *Albasano* (which I thynke to be

The best  
 signe.

The residues  
 of waters.

Marchasies  
 are the tinc-  
 tures of my-  
 neral exha-  
 lations.

of

## Of the generation of metals.

Metals in  
fruitful mountaynes.

of that kynde which we caule the greete stone) or blacke and whyte marble of thyeke and respyng nature, may be found to lye betwene and so to stoppe the passages, that the sayde fruicities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the bypermoſte parte of the earth: by reason wherof, it is poſſible that ſuche mountaynes may byngne furth trees and herbes forasmuche as the earth therof dooth receyue his vertue and may nuryſhe theyꝛ rootes not beinge incinerate or burnt with hotte and venemous vapours of the mynes: so that the ſhoures of rayne or fluds with their courſes can not cary away the earth as in ſuch places wher the ſame is found ſoze dryed. And therfore bypon ſuch mountaynes I haue ſeene great wooddes of cheſt nutte trees, beeches alſo and okes, with well cultured and fruitfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the ſignes of the rologhneſſe or barrenneſſe of the mountayne, is not taken away but that other places may alſo haue plentie of mines whiche ought to be ſearched and folowed. But forasmuch as theſe ſignes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll ſpeake moze determinately of them in the places where I entreate of theyꝛ proper mynes: Not intendyng here to ſaye muche of theſe thynges in generall, but only to induce you to ſum clearneſſe of the fyrſt lyght. And therfore that you may gyue the moze diligent aduertifment, I ſaye vnto youe that all the mynes which youe ſhall fynde by ſuch ſignes, by what meanes ſo euer they ſhall coome to youre handes, whether they be found in ſtones, earth, or ſande, after that at the fyrſt lyght they haue ſhewed them ſelues to be mynes of metalls, youe ſhought to conſyder of what ponderoſitie or weyght they are: The which the greater that it is, ſo much the moze dooth it ſhewe both the perfeccion and goodneſſe of the ſubſtaunce, and alſo the moze quantitie of the mine. And thus preſuppoſyng that by the ſignes or other meanes youe haue founde the mine, not yet fully perceayng of what kynde of metall it myght be, to certifie youe hercof and alſo of what quantitie it is, or howe it is accompanied or myxt with other, or lykewiſe of what puritie it is of it ſelfe, or of what euyl diſpoſition or malice it is founde to be, it ſhall herein be neceſſary befoze youe be at any further charges therwith, to proue the ſame by twoe or thre assayes or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particu- lar place of assayes, Beinge therfore certifyed of the myne,  
and

Howe the  
ſignes are to  
bee conſyde-  
red.

The assay of  
the mines.

and of what metall it is, and also what quantitie it concey-  
neth, fyndyng it by accompte to bee so profitable as to beare  
the charges, I exhorte youe bouldely to gyue the fyrste at-  
tempte to faule to mynyng, and with all possible diligence to  
folowe your enterpryse: assuryng youe selfe, that of what  
so euer mynerall matter you shall take assay accordyng to the  
proportion of that pice which you tooke of the vppermost or  
dwtmost parte of the mine for that purpose, you shall fynde  
that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within  
the mountayne. And thus being certified by the assay of what  
quantitie the thyng is that appered by the signes, and of all  
other reasonable consyderacions apperteynyng to the worke,  
you shall with all celeritie dispose your selfe to faule to dyg-  
gyng, to thintent that youe may shortly cyther here enioye  
the frute of yourre trauell, or els where with better suc-  
cesse proue yourre good fortune.

But in thattempte  
of this enterpryse, you ought principally to haue respecte  
to the situation of the place where youe intende to make the  
begynnyng of your caue or fosse: Takyng good aduertise-  
ment that it be commodious for the labourers that shall worke  
therein: prouydyng aboute all thynges that it haue an easye  
enteraunce into the mountayne, with lesse charges and in short  
tyme to arryue vnder the signes which youe haue taken:  
encounteryng the same as muche as is possible as it were by  
a ryght line, fyrst with iudgemente and then with workeman  
shyppe, vntyll you stryke on the grosse masse or bodye of the  
myne, breakyng in the course of the caue al matters of hard  
compositions, as quarreys and stones ouerthwaryng the  
same: hauyng ever respecte to the outward signes whiche  
you folowe, forecasyng in yourre mynde how youe may di-  
rectly arryue to the same, euen as the maryners directe theyr  
course by theyr compasse and syght of the north starre. Also  
by syde that place where you haue determined to make the en-  
teraunce and begynnyng of the caue, you muste take choysse  
of an other place, cyther on the front of the mountayne or on  
the syde that it may bee neave and commodious to make one  
or two or mo cotages for the commoditie and necessitie of the  
workemen. One of these must bee appoynted for theyr dor-  
mitorie where sum may rest and sleepe whyle other worke,  
and that you may the moze commodiously be present and as-  
sistaunce

The richer  
myne further  
within the  
mountayne.

Consyderac-  
ons how the  
caue ought to  
bee made.

The bodie of  
the myne.

howses of  
office for the  
myners.

## Of the generation of metals.

syfaunt to theyz doynge, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforzte them in theyz laboures: also to dispence and bestowe theyz byttayles as shall bee nedefull, and to reserue the same in safe custodie, with dayly prouision of al thynges apperteynyng. The other must bee as it were a smythes forge wherin theyz woꝛne and broken tooles must bee renewed, and other newe made, to thintent that the woꝛke be not hyndered for lacke of stoꝛe of necessarie instrumentes. When these thynges are thus spynsted, with good prouision of byttayles and a sufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, causynge a presse to blesse the moꝛt tayne with all the shoppes, and to baptise the caue, dedica-  
tyng it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to our Lady or to the name of sum other saynt which yowre haue in deuoti-  
on, with inuocation to theym to prosper yowre attemptes, yow shall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intente to folowe the same withoute ceasynge as farr as yowre abilitie shall reache, or butyll yowre haue pass-  
sed ouer the lymettes signified by the signes befoze named: Takynge euer diligent heade that yowre begyn yowre caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in such order that yowr myners so continue and folow the same by a right line, that they encounter the beyne of the myne by the shortest and safest way that may bee deuiled. For it often times chaunceth, that althowgh the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners bringe with-  
drawen from the ryght course by the hope of suche branches of mynes as haue appered unto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyz atcepted course, and from the signes which they ought to haue folowed. And bysye otheꝛ preceptes, see that yow beare in memoꝛy to procure that in dyg-  
gynge, yow eschewe as muche as yowre maye, the cutryng of soft or byskell stones, aswell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as also that it seldome chaunceth that any mynes are founde in such stones. But yf yow shal chaunce so to fynde them that yow can by no meanes auoyde them, I conforzte yow that where suche cause of feare sheweth it selfe, both that yow lose not the charges of the caue and for the better safegarde of yowre woꝛkemen, it shalbe necessary that yow vse all possible diligence in well vpholdynge and for-  
tyng

Baptisinge &  
dedication of  
the caue.

The makige  
of the caue.

Causes of hi-  
dersaunce.

Soft stones.

Byinge the caue with arches of waules trauesed with stronge postes of tymber after the maner of framed beames, sustented with grose and stronge pylles made of good and stronge tymber of oke or other great trees. And in this maner owghe you to procede in dyggyng yowre myne that you may with more securitie enjoy the frute of yowr traualle. But in the olde tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to see) in the caues leste of them) folowed an other maner: so that in the steade of begynnynge the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the vpper or hyghest parte where the daye discovered the myne, dyggyng downwarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowynge the same sumtyme on the one syde, and sumtyme on the other euen vnto the depth, as the beyne shewed it selfe to theyr syght: wherof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in thoppinion of many men, this way dooth seeme much better and of more securitie to fynde that they seeke, then to dygge by the sydes: bycause that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes epyther more or lesse as a line to leade them to the grosse masse. yet who so consydereth the thynge well, shall vnderstande that the later myners haue better concealed the reason of this woork, in respecte (as is to see) of many more commodities and securities which insue rather of this maner of woorkynge then of the other: as the difficultie to descende and ascende the caue, & the daungious lest it bee stopped by by many ruines, bysyde the traualyous labour to drawe owte the mine with the rockes & fragmentes of stones: And aboue al thynge, that they shal not bee able to drawe owte the waters whiche are often tymes so abundaunt that they greatly increase the charges and traualles of the patrones of the mynes by reason of the greates ayde and helpe which shalbe requisite to haue in that case and also for the makynge of wheeles, troughes, pyppes, & pumpe, with suche other instrumentes seruyng for the purpose to drawe owte the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chasiceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet shal they be iforced to forlake their profitable & laudable vterpyse. So that to conclude, I saye (as youe maye well vnder stand) that it is a much better way and of more securitie to begynne the diggyng of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne

The fortifick of the caue.

howe the caues were made in olde tyme.

Abundauns of water in the mynes.

The beste maner of makinge the caue.

## Of the generation of metals.

rayne and to enter into the same by litle and litle a slope by  
 warde, then to begynne at the toppe or the highest backe ther  
 of. And this both for the more commodious passinge furthe  
 of the water, and also for the easier trauaile of the labourers.  
 Obseruynge euer diligently the chaunge of the signes whiche  
 appere vnto yow outwardly, vsynge the rudder and compasse  
 as do they that sayle on the sea. For hereby the myners shalbe  
 instructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by  
 the conductinge of wytte and arte, they bee brought to the  
 place of the grosse masse or bodie of the tree, whych is the  
 cause, fontayne, and original from whence the sayd trinctures  
 fumolites, and mineral signes, are deriued and sente furth  
 to the superficiall partes. And as concernynge this purpose, I  
 thincke it good to declare vnto yow howe in the Dukedome  
 of *Austria*, betweene *Ispruc* and *Alla* where I contynued manye  
 yeares, I sawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number  
 of mountaynes, by the middell wherof a ryuer passed through  
 of greate aboundaunce of water: and in maner in all the mon-  
 taignes that are there abowt, is digged great plentie of mine,  
 wherof the moste parte are of copper or leade, althoughe also  
 in maner euery of them is founde to holde sum portion of sil-  
 uer. Amonge these mountaynes, I sawe one in the whych  
 the inhabitantes of the countrey dwellyng there abowt, altho  
 red by the sight of many signes, beganne to digge a caue after  
 the maner wherof we haue spoken: In so muche that (as it  
 appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue,  
 they had digged litle lesse then two myles befoze they sawe  
 any sparke or shadowe of any myne. And beinge arriued with  
 the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the signes they folo-  
 wed, they were encountered with a beyne of the harde stone  
 cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thicke, which they pas-  
 sed through with greate trauaile and longe tyme, and with  
 the helpe of commodious instrumentes of iren hardened to  
 woodke in suche stones. And when they had thus passed  
 through this quarrey of stone, they chaunced vpon a verry  
 great beyne of the myne of copper of such sorte that when I  
 was there, lookinge betweene the one and the other, I sawe  
 on euery syde as it were a waule of the hard stone of *Albazano*,  
 and therein a boyde place of suche largenes from the one syde  
 to the other that moze then two hundred men al at one time,  
 had

The change  
of the signes.

The rudder  
& compasse.

*Austria*.

Myne of  
copper and  
leade holdis  
silver.

A caue of  
two myles.

A large caue  
of the myne  
of copper hol-  
dinge silver.

had sufficiente roome to stande labouringe frome the hygheste parte to the lowest, hauynge non other lyyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in euery place where they sawe the bre or myne shewe it selfe: and thus ceased not to woorkke continually both day and nyght, course by course, a thynge sueely maruelous to be holde. Without the mouth of the caue, I sawe great abundaunce of mine partely mixt with the stone of the bre, and partely chosyn and seperated. Amonge these pieces, there was one consistynge of a hole masse of pure mine of suche biggnes and weyght, that two good horses with a light carre could not scarsely drabe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue sayde. But to magnifie it, they cauled it syluer, bycause it helde suche plentie thereof that it surmounte the charges, whereas they had also the copper for aduantage. Youe shall further vnderstand that in the myddest of the caue, there was a chanell or gutter whyche gathered togyther the waters that fell into it continually on euery syde from the ruptures or broken places and cliffes. These waters ranne thzough the chanel with so vehemente a streame, that I suerly beleue that it might well suffice to dryue any greate mylle. In so muche that in goynge in and comming out of the caue, I remember that by the contynual faule & sprynkling of the waters from aboue & beneth, I was as wet as though I had passed thzough a greate shoure of rayne. Wherat I maruel the lesse when I consider that water is the fyrst and nearest principle of the whiche the substance of minerals is engendered. By reason wherof, such men of vnderstandynge as haue searched the natures of these thynge, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule, that all those mountaynes out of the whiche spryngeth great abundaunce of water, doo also abounde with myne. The which thynge well considerynge, and weyng the greates hereof, I faule into this accompre with my selfe, that if to the patrones of the sayde caue, the charges of the same hadde byn a hynderaunce or greafe, eyther for the length therof, or for despayre that they shuld not haue found that they sought, they wolde surely haue forsaken it. And beinge nowe comme to this harde stone after they had susteyned so great charges by the trauayle both of mynde and body, if they shulde then haue lefte of theyr enterpryse, they shulde not haue come to such ryches wherby they haue obteyned

Candlelight.

A greate masse of pure myne.

Abundaunce of water in the mynes.

Water is the nearest principle of mine rules.  
A general rule.

Great riches obteyned by searchynge of mynes.

## Of the generation of metals,

ned many commodities aswell profitable for them selues as also for theyr lordes and princes, theyr countrey, theyr kinde folkes and famelic. Neyther yet shulde they haue byn so wel able to helpe theyr poore neyghbours as they haue doone by the meanes of the valientnesse of theyr constant myndes and persistyng in so good and commendable an enterpryse. Wherefoze to conclude, yow that wyll begynne to attempet any such thyng, must be of good courage and much patience to folowe that yow haue begunne, at the least vntill yow knowe by the signes what the thyng is: hopinge euer that in goynge forwarde, the day folowynge (as it is possible) shal discover the thyng that yowe seeke and content your desyre: Wherof yow may bee the better assured, if yow well consider that the moother and matrices of moste esteemed ryches, and the myntes of al treasures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the helpe of fortune and yowr ingenious indeuoure) yow shall open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the belly of the mountaynes where suche thynges lye hyd, but shall also bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and dignitie as they of whome we haue made mention before: forasmuch as most beningne and liberall nature, doothe open her lappe and promette good successe to suche as seeke ryches by such honest meanes. The whiche way surely is muche rather to be folowed, then eyther the warres full of troubles and miserie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wanderyng abowt the world, or suche other fastidious cares perhappes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as some men like to speake) the fyndyng of mynes bee an especial grace of God, neuerthelesse, forasmuch as we are bozne to labour, it shall be necessary that we seeke the same in suche places where they are brought furth by the woork of nature, and by fear: chynge to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them, and by this meanes to receaue the grace of God with applyng ooure owne diligence therto, with helpe of the disposition of fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet shal not this only suffice withowt sufficiencie of money able to susteyne the charges and continne the woork: to thende that if yow can not fynde it with yowr owne expences, yow maye supplie the same by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners. But let vs nowe cease to reason any further of these thynges.

¶ Responde

Maganimi-  
tie & paciēce.

The moun-  
taines are  
the matrices  
of riches.

The grace of  
god is recea-  
ved by ourre  
endeuoure.

Money beget-  
teth ryches.

Whesupposyng therfore that yow haue alredy passed the charges, and haue not only founde the myne yow sought, but also haue brought furth to lycht a great quantitie therof, it shal then bee needeful (as a thyng chiefly to be consydered before yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder & examen both the comodities of such thynges as shall occurre, and also of such wherof yow shall haue neede: as ymber and woodde of all sortes, with water and byrtayles: of all the whiche, yow must haue great plentie: and especially of woodde, wherof yowe must haue great quantitie, aswell to serue to the propozition of the myne, as also to make coles to the vse of meltyng, fynyng, dryyng, garboylng, and such other byrplynges, bylde that which must serue to fortifie the caue and to buyld hoppes and cotages with such other edifices. Diligent consideration must lykelyse be had to the situacion of the place where the buyldynges shalbe erected: as that the plotte therof bee commodious with abundaunce of water hauyng a good faule. Also not onely of plentie of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of such as may serue the turne. And of all other incommodities, yowe must chiefly auoyde the lacke of water, as a thyng of greatest importaunce and most necessarie in this effecte. For by the force and weyght of the course hereof, wheeles and dyuers other ingenious instrumentes are adapted with ease to lyfte vppre greate bellowes to make fyers of great poure, to beate with hammers of great weyght, and to turne myghtie and stronge engens, by the force wherof the trauayles of men are so much furthered, that without such helpe, it were in maner impossible to ouercome suche tedious trauayles or to arryue to the ende of the woozke, forasmuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte more, and that more safely then the paynefull labour of a hundreth men. It shal therfore be needefull to haue great consyderation hereof, not onely to make these edifices or houses of office, but also to make them commodious for the purpose, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other necessaries. For if any of these effectes shulde be wantyng, the coste, tyme and trauayle, shulde bee cast away: forasmuch as these thynges doo so much the more relieue the one the other as they are ioyned togyther, and hinder the woozke not a lytle yf any be separate. But bycause these commodities can not euer be hadde all togyther, yowe ought

Necessarie  
advertisi-  
mentes.

Plentye of  
woode.

Cotages and  
edifices.

The situacio  
of the place.

The vse of  
water.

Necessarie  
considerati-  
ons.

## Of the generation of metals,

ought to wey with your selfe which of the twoo serueth for mo necessarie vles, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine most commodious to the houses, and accordinge there vnto to place the houses nere vnto the same if the commoditie of water wyll so permytte.

Albeit, if it were possible, it shulde be much better if al these necessarie commodities were ioyned togyther, whereas other wyse youe muste contente your selfe as occasion serueth.

Nowe therefore to conlude, bylyde that whiche I haue declared vnto you of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other considerations, I exhorte youe further to faule to practyse with sum myne of your owne, that you may therby take occasion to ryle to the degree of ryches whych you desire. And therfore I aduertise you that after you haue founde the mountayne and begun to digge, you shal euer go forwarde with a boulde mynde and stout corage, woorkyng with witte and Iudgement, forasmuche as in this effecte the one serueth the other in the seeede of eys to enter where they can not. Byue no credit to that whiche many ignozante folkes doo say and beleue, affirminge that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet ought we to trust more to art and practyse then to chaunce. And when you are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memozy that you haue presently with you the tallie or ruler of the caue, wherby youe may traaverse the beyne of the myne when you are coomine to it. For if you shulde folowe it by the course as it lyeth, it is possible that youe mighe folowe it a greate way not paste the biggnesse of a mans finger and perhappes lesse: By reason wherof, it might happen that you shuld lose it and neuer find it ageyne. The like shuld chaunce vnto you if after that you haue begun to digge a caue, it shulde repent you of the charges, and that for the balnes therof youe shulde forlake it, as many haue doone whobycanse they coude not fynde the mine at the first stroke, despayinge that they shulde neuer fynde it, haue forlaken it as a thynge vnprofitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt losse and damage: And thus furiously leaue of their enterpryse, not regardinge that they may leaue the frute of theyr expences and trauaile to an other that

A false opinio

The traaverse  
finge of the  
veyne.

Continuance  
in the worke.

that may folowe these begynninges, and perhappes fynde the myne within the distance of a cubit, a spanne, or a finger. We may say therfore that suche men doo willingly forsake theyr good fortune as many haue doone. He therfore that hath begunne to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away the elimination of the basenes therof, and not to feare the streghnesse of the way, but rather to applye all his possible diligence without remourse, hopinge thereby no lesse to obteyne honour and riches, then to auoyde shame and infamie for ony tpyng so profitable an enterpryse. And that you may the more circumspectly behaue you selfe in all thynges, besyde the former instructions, I further aduertise you to seeke fresche mena woork by conser in such order, that in euery sixe or egypt houres (accoydinge to the number of the mynes) you appoynt such to the woork as haue repoted or taken theyr rest, that you may by this meanes the soones come to the ende you desyre, whereunto (after you haue layde so sure a fundation) I exhorte you to runne without abyddle. And whereas to these effectes it shalbe necessarie to haue many instrumentes adapted for the purpose, I can finde otherwyse speake of them then in generall, consydeyng that accoording to the nature of the place and the myne, it shalbe necessary to vse instrumentes and iern tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be difference in such wherwith you shall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete stone, and harde freese stone, or such other. For the dyggyng of such as are found in deade and tender stones, as Alabaster and marle, it is requisite to haue apte and stronge instrumentes, as greete heevels, mattocks and spades of iern, also great & longe crookes of iern to lyfte great burdens: lykewylle greate and smaule picke axes sum of iern and sum of Steele: furthermoze greate manles with handels and without handels, and such other hothe of iern and fine Steele hardened, if the hardenes of stone shall so requyre. But as for such as shall serue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and softe stones, I neede make no mention of them, forasmuch as the tooles of the common sorte may suffice, and needfull shall I agly further instructe you to diuide such as shall serue for youre purpose. Albeit, for the moste parte, they are beereles, manles, mattocks, axes, pickes, hoes, spades, and such lyk. But as well for

Fresche men.

Instrumentes.

Of the generation of metals. ○

the soft stones as for the harde, it shalbe necessarye to haue great plencie of al sortes, to thende that the myners may lose no tyme, and that the woorker may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the parrones of the mine. Bylyde these before named, it shall also be requisite to haue plencie of greates haches, kettes, spades, shouels, sledes, and handbarrowes; boche with wheeles and without wheeles: also sakes made of rabs or butande hydres to carrie the fragmentes out of the caue.

Pyre in the caue.

¶

The conueyance of pyre.

It shall furthermore be requisite to haue greates quantitie of vncuous liquours to maintayne fire: as are the oyles of oliues, of nurtes, of linc seede, and hemye seede: Likewise the rootes of purified trees, or talowe of beastes, or fatte and oyle of fythes. For without the lyght of pyre, it is not possible for the labourers to woorker. For yet can any pyre be mayntayned in the caue except it receaue the ayer by sum respiracle or breathynge place by the meanes of a funell or trunke of woodde or such other open instrument wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

¶

The excellencie of golde.

The originall & substance of golde.

Of the myne of golde and the qualittie thereof in particular.



As muche as golde is a compounde mynerall which of the phylosophers and all men of vnderstandynge, is founde to be of greatest perfection amonge al other mynerall metalls, it is indyged by the vniuersal opinion of such men, that for the betrie and excellent qualittie thereof, it shulde be of excellie vertue to helpe and confozt men. And therfore amonge all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte lyuyng creatures) it is chietely esteemed. By reason wherof, I also the more to honour it, wyll fyrst speake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the most apparet qualitties thereof. The which although it be a metall most knowen, desyred also and sought for of all kyndes of men, yet are there not many that do care to knowe of what substance or natural mixtion it consisteth. But that yow shulde not be one of them that knowe it onely by name or by superficiall apparence; I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter thereof, is none other then elementall

all substances with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, most perfectly purified by the subtile woorkes of nature. For of these beinge thus ioynted together (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and most perfect mixture by the helpe of fermentation and decoction of the mineriall heate, whereby is caused such a permanent union betwene the sayde elementes, that they are in maner inseparable: So that by the vertue of heauenly influence or of tyme, or by the order of most prudent nature, or by all these causes concurrant, such substance is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue sayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixture, is condense and made thicke, in such sorte that the elementes thereof can not be vnbounde or loosed, so that it remaineth in maner incorruptible: The cause whereof is, that it is either conteineth in it no manner of superfluitie, or the same to be but very litle. And heresof commeth it, that althoughe it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with rust or canker for that neither of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the fyre whose force dooth incinerate or bynne to ashes & resolueth in maner all creatures: And yet is the pouer hereof so farre vnable to destroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Likewise the sayde perfect union or mixture, causeth it to be a body without steame, and without vinctuous or fat superfluitie: which is the cause that it euer remaineth in the native byghenes and sayrenes of colour, in so much that when it is rubbed bypon any thyng, it leaueth not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelow colour, as doo in maner all other metals: For yet hath it any taste or saour that may be perceaued to the sence. Furthermoze, if it be eaten either wyllyngly or by chance, it is not benemisous to the lyfe of man, as are sum of the other metals: but is rather a medicine curynge dyuers diseases. In so much that nature hath gyuen vnto it of peculiar propertie, a vertue and priuilege to conforthe the weakenes of the harte, and to gyue ioyfulnes and myrth to the spirites, disposynge thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attemptes of great enterpryses. Which singular qualities, sum wyse men asserue that it hath receaued by the influence of the sonne, and that it is therefore of such grace and pouer to helpe men: especially such

19 19 19 p. ii. as

Mineral  
heate.

The tempera-  
ture & pure-  
nesse  
of golde.

Golde is in-  
corruptible.

The bewtie  
of golde.

Golde is me-  
dicinable.

Golde is con-  
fortable.

## Of the generation of metals.

as haue many great bagges and chestes full therof. To conclude therefore, this metall is a body tractable and bright, of colour like vnto the soonne: And hath in it inwardely such a naturall attractiue or allurynge vertue, that beinge seene, it greatly disposeth the myndes of men to desyre it and esteeme it as a thyng most precious: although many there are whiche crye out: ageynst it and accuse it as the roote and sede of most pestiferous and monstrous couetousnesse, and the cause of many other myscheues. But whether it bee the cause of moze good or euyl, we entende to lette passe this disputacion as a thyng unprofitable. To proceade therefore as I haue begun I say (as befoze) that the woorthynesse whiche is founde in it, hath caused me to encreate of it befoze any other metall. And this the rather for that the order of this present worke meth so to requyre, that I may the better descende to the degrees of other metals, to thende that in these owere partes of Italy, yow may haue sum instruction of practise, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receaue sum lyght: beinge well assured that newe inuencions, wilbe the seedes of other newe wittie diuises in the vnderstandynges of suche men as with these keys shall open theyr wyttes to arryue to suche places whither they can not els come or by any meanes approche. And nowe therefore, hyspe that which I haue sayde vnto yowe in generall, I wyll furth in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the same, with also the signes whiche it sheweth furth, that I do not omytte any thyng. Last of all, I wyll shewe yowe howe it ought to bee pouzged from superfluous earthynes of the mine, after that I hal haue exprested the maner howe it is founde. But forasmuch as I haue not with mine eyes seene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thyng is put in practise, I wyll only shewe yow (hauynge made diligente inquisition for the same) what hath byn tolde me of credible persons, or what I haue gathered in readyng of dyuers autoures, by whom I am certified for a truty that the greatest plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scythia*, in those prouinces which we commonly caule the East partes, where the soonne extendeth his chiefe force and vigour. Of these places *India* is thought to be the chiefe, and especially those *Ilandes* which the ships

The attractive  
que qualitie  
of golde.

where moste  
plentie of  
golde is found.  
*Cathay*.

of Themperours maiestie and the kynge of Portugale haue  
 founde of late : as the Ilandes about Peru and Paria with the  
 firme lande of the same which extendeth it selues very farre  
 on both sydes the Equinocriall. In Europe also, golde is  
 founde in many places : as in Aethiopia, and in many places in  
 Boheme. Also in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apsla. Plinie  
 sayth that it is lykewyle founde in Austria and in Portugale :  
 and that the Romans had from thense yearely, xxiiii. pounds  
 weyght. And thus speakyng of this precious metall, I be-  
 lieue certepnly, that it is and may be engendered in all suche  
 places wher the influence of the heuens disposeth the elemen-  
 tall causes to byngge furth an apte substance for this pur-  
 pose. But nowe intendyng more particularly to speake of  
 the places of the conception hereof, yowe shall vnderstande  
 that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of stones in great and  
 tolygh mountaynes, and suche as are vterly bare of earth,  
 trees, grasse, or herbes. And amouge all the stones of this  
 myne, that is best which is of a blew or asurine colourre lyke  
 vnto a saphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is  
 not byghe and harde as is the saphire. It is also founde in  
 opyement cauled *Auripigmentum* : but more often in the mynes  
 of other metals. It is lykewyle founde in many prouinces in  
 the sandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the montaines  
 lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarrey and quarrey ioynd  
 with the sayde Azurine stone and mirte therwith. They saye  
 that this myne is so much the better in howe much it is the ye-  
 uer and of hyghe colour, shewyng in it many sparkes of gold.  
 They say furthermore that it is engendered in another stone  
 lyke vnto salte marble : but it is of a deade colour. And also  
 in another whose colour is yelow with certeyne redde spots  
 within it. They affirme lykewyle that it is founde in certefine  
 blacke stones, whose veynes sprede dyuers wayes much like  
 the courses of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde  
 in a certeyne bituminous earth, of colourre lyke vnto cley and  
 very heauy, haunyng in it a great saunour of bymstone : And  
 that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in  
 maner all together fyne, yet very harde to bee gotten oute,  
 because it consisteth of so smaule sparkes lyke vnto invisible  
 atomes of such lytelnewe that they can hardely bee perceaued  
 with the eye.

Solde in the  
 Ilande of the  
 weste Indies.

Solde in  
 Europe.

The influens  
 of heauen.

The moun-  
 taynes and  
 stones in the  
 whiche golde  
 is engendered.

*Lapis Lazuli*  
*Opyement*.  
 Solde i other  
 metalls.  
 golde in the  
 sandes of ry-  
 uers.

Sold i earth.

Solden duste.

And

## Of the generation of metals.

Ryuers in the  
which gold is  
founde.

The washtis  
and pource-  
ing. of golde.

Howe golde  
is deuided  
frome sande.

The Spany-  
ardes make  
these dilthes  
with hādels.

The drawe-  
inge out of  
golde with  
quicke siluer.

And herein may you not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other stones, or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the sands of ryuers; the which the more it is washed, the more it fauleth to the bottome: & in meltyng with the mother of his earthines, doth incorporate it selfe therewith in a brickle substance. But in fine, with much patience and by one meanes or another, or by the helpe of quickesyluer, it is drawn out. Ageyne (as I haue sayde befoze) it is found in the sandes of dyuers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer *Tago*: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*: In *Asia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In *Hungarie* and *Boheme*, it is founde in *Lassia*. In dyuers ryuers: And in *Italie*, in the sandes of *Tesino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not euery where in the beddes of theyr chanelles, but in certeyne particular places where in certeyne cloddes the sande is discovered in the tyme of the ouerflowyng of the ryuers when the water leaueh behynde it a fine sande wherewith the sayde golde is myxt in the foyme of certeyne smaule scales, and thynnynge graynes. Then in the sommer season, with patience and ingenious practise, the searchers to pource it from the grosse earthynesse of the myne; and washe it diligently: preparyng for that effecte, certeyne tables made epyther of the tymber of plane trees, of elme, or whyte nuttes, or such other woodde apte to be sawen, hauing theyr playnes made ful of hackes, & notches, with the helpe of the sawe or such other instrumentes of iren. Upon these tables standyng somewhat a slope or declynyng, with a howe houel they cast a great quantitie of water myxt with the sayde sande, which they cast so, that the water runne downe directly alonge the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as a matre most heuy, fauleth to the bottome of the sawne hackes, and there restyng and cleayng fast, is so diuided from the sande. When therfoze they perceave a sufficient quantitie of golde thus remaynyng on the tables, they gather it with diligence and put it in a tray or great shallowe dythe of wood lyke unto those which the golde finers vse: And in these they washe it more exactly ageyne and ageyne from all fylth or brackynesse. This doone, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it as they caule it) with *Mercurie* or quickesyluer, whiche afterward they seporate ageyne from the same epyther by scaynyng and presyng it throughe a bagge of lether, or by syllyng or squapozaryng the quickesyluer from it in a stillatory of glasse

and

and so fynde they the golde remaynyng in the bottome of the  
 bevell in the lyknes of fine sande, which they bynge into a  
 metalline body by melryng it with a lytle bozage, or salt pe-  
 ttre or blacke sope, & so cast it eyther in the forme of a wedge  
 or a rodde, or otherwyse as lyketh them best. And this is the  
 exacte maner of drawyng golde out of the sandes of riuers,  
 which many haue vlsed to theyr great commoditie: And that  
 the rather bycause that in folowynge this order of woork in  
 the pourgyng and diuydyng of golde, it shall not bee requir-  
 site as in other maner of practises, to bee at greate charges by  
 reason of many men which shall be needefull, with manye in-  
 struments, furnaces, fiers, and dyuers artificers: wheras in woork-  
 yng after this sorte, one man may suffice with one table and  
 one holowe shoouell, with a lytle quickesyluer and sufficient  
 abundaunce of water. But lettynge passe to speake any fur-  
 ther of these thynges: perhappes summe man wolde here de-  
 maunde from whence this golde is deriued into the sandes of  
 the sayde ryuers, and whether it be brougth thither by the  
 water, or engendered there. As touchyng which question, I  
 haue oft tymes deliberated with my selfe not without great  
 marueyle: and especially of that which is founde in the san-  
 des of the ryuers of *Tesiro*, *Adda*, and *Po*, bicause (wheras I haue  
 sayde befoze that it is brougth thither by the course of the  
 water) I can not perceaue from whence it shuld be brougth,  
 forasmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal  
 that is knowen, nere to any of those places. By reason wher-  
 of, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, seinge also that it  
 is thoppinion of certeyne wyters, that it is engendered euer  
 where it is founde: The which, if it so be, it is not rewe that  
 it is brougth thither by the water. Ageyne, if it be engen-  
 dered there, it seemeth to me a difficult thyng to comprehend  
 whether it be brougth furth there by the vertue of the water  
 or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermoze any of these shuld  
 be the cause of the generation hereof, it seemeth agreable to  
 reason that it shulde bee both founde and engendered through-  
 out all the beddes of such riuers, and at al tymes. And if the  
 influence of heauen be the most prepotent cause of this effecte,  
 then it seemeth to me that it shuld woork immediatly, bicause  
 it can not otherwyse obserue thozder whiche nature vseth in  
 the generation of metals: byt bynnginge it furth to the open

From whēse  
 golde is de-  
 riued into the  
 sandes of  
 ryuers.

That golde  
 is not engen-  
 dered in the  
 sandes of  
 riuers.

Of the generation of metals.

These, in the place where aboundeth the continuall issue  
of water, which ought also to be of such force as to remove  
the earthy substance thereof from place to place, and not to  
increase such great inequality of coldnesse and moistnes.  
And albeit that this composition begunne in this order, shuld  
not be dispersed or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it  
appareth to me that the showers of rayne and increase of  
fluddes, shulde be of sufficient poure to disemper, breake, and  
utterly destroy all such compositions as shulde be engendered  
in such places, forasmuch as all thynges are concealed by rest  
and quietnesse after the commixtion of the fyre elementes.  
And therefore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered  
where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it  
is engendered only in these places and not in other: and why  
in lyke maner, syluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are  
not also engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters  
of an easier composition of nature then it is, by reason of the  
perfecte unitie and concordance with puritie of substance &  
perfecte concoction which is in golde aboue all other metals:  
wheremas also in many places in the territories of Rome, there  
are founde many sparkes of the mine of irons of blacke colour  
amonge the sandes of certeyne smaule ryuers: And yet these  
only in certeyne particular places of the sayde riuers: wherby  
it appareth that these also, shulde not bee engendered where  
they are founde. By all which reasons and apparent effectes,  
it seemeth most agreeable to truth that the golde which is found  
in such sandes, is rather brought thither by the water, then  
engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more  
playnely herein, I suppose that this chauncerth only in great  
ryuers which receaue abudaunce of waters of dyuers springes,  
fosses, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the mel-  
tyng of snowe and partly of great showers of rayne, whiche  
faulyng in certeyne chanelles from the toppes and sydes of moun-  
tayne, wash away parte of the earth of the banks and the  
overhanginge and holowe rockes which may conteyne the  
substance of golde: Or otherwyse, that in such places, there  
are ordinarie mines in the hyghe mountaynes or other  
superficiall lowe places, perhappes incessable, and ryther  
such whither men can not come for extreme heate or cold  
or other hynderaunces, or els such as they haue contemned to  
scarche

This matter  
is apparent in  
the golde  
founde in the  
ryuers in the  
Indies.

The faulte of  
waters from  
mountaynes.

Search: And yet the same to bee so consumed by the force of water as we haue sayde, and by the course therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may also chaunce that suche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto such ryuers: And that in the space of many yeares, the springes if shewynge out of the same, may eether bee dryed by (whiche thyng hath byn scene) or els turne theyr course an other way So that it is no maruayle if in such a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of these thynges bee vnknowen euen vnto the that dwell nere such places. But in fine, howe so euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the sandes of many riuers: And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue maruayled at this thyng, I dwght woorthely to bee excused, forasmuch as where iudgement can not bee certified by reason or effectuall apparence, there arise many doubtfull coniectures and newe causes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng, the which I am informed to bee most trewe by the report of many credible persons: That is, that in sum places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yeare, pure golde springeth out of the earthe in the lykenesse of smaule herbes, wyched and wynded lyke smaule stalkes of hoppes, about the byggeresse of a packe threde, and foure syngers in length or suer a handfull. As concernynge which thyng, I haue also in the xxxiii. boke of his naturall historye, wyted the lyke to haue chaunced in Dalmatia in his tyme. The which (if it be trewe) suerly the husbande men of those fieldes shall reape heauenly and not earthely frutes, sent them of god from heauen, and brynghe forth of nature without theyr trauayle or care. A grace doublely most especial, sith that in so great a quantitie of earth graunted to the possession of men, in maner onely this is thought woorthy so hygh a priuiteage. But what shall I say of that wherof *Albertus Magnus* wyted in his booke of minerals; a fyre mynge that he hath seene golde engendered in a deade mans heade. And that the same beinge founde by chaunce in dyggynge, and perceaued by the wyghe and coloure to conteyne sum mynerall substance, was proued by experience to holde a portion of fine golde mixt with smaule sande. And in deede his wordes seeme to sound to none other sence but only that this precious metall was engendered there by the great disposition

Springs of water in mountaynes.

Vegetable golde growinge out of the earthe.

Of this, reade Alexander ab Alexandro lib. 4 Genidium dierum. Cap. 9.

Golde founde in a deade mans heade.

Of the generation of metals. 10

sition of the place and strong influence of heauen: The which  
succie is a thynge hardely to be beleued. Yet consydeyrng  
thaurorie of so greate a clerke, with the force of the superi  
our causes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather  
gyue fayth hereto then rashely to contemne the iudgement of  
so greate a clarke. And forasmuche as I haue began to tell  
yow of these effectes, I wyll not omittre to shewe yow of a  
straunge thynge which chaunced also in a part of Hungarie,  
wher a myne of golde was so found by chaunce and vnsought  
for, that it may neuerthelesse be an aduertisement to other to  
searche diligently. So it is therefore, that a woman of the  
contrey beinge accustomed to resorte with her bucke of clo  
thes to washe them in a certeyne fosse or dike where ranne a  
lyttle water, and vsynge to beate and rubbe them vpon a  
stone which seemed commodious for her purpose, chaunced at  
the length by her good fortune to espie on the stone, a beyne  
of golde trauesyng or ouerthwarringe the same abowte the  
byggensse of a grose packe threde, shewynge fayre & bryght  
by reason of her much rubbyng. Wherat marueyllynge dayly  
more and more, at the length opened the matter to her famili  
ers: wha conferrynge with such as hadde better skyll of the  
thynge, founde it in fine to bee a beyne of pure golde: And  
that the quarrie of that stone, trauesed the course of the wa  
ter of the fosse. Remouynge therfore the water, and turning  
the course thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and  
folow the mine which hath now continued certeyne .x. yeares  
sence it was fyrst found: And hath not only greatly enriched  
that contrey, But also all Chyristendome hath had great com  
moditie by the same. This haue I rehearsed vnto yow the ra  
ther that yow shulde not bee negligent in any poynt or omitt  
any signe or token wherby yowe may bee certified of greate  
thynge: nor contemnyng the shadowe of any smaile to  
kens: but aswel to gyue attentyue care and eye vnto them, as  
to feare and forseeke all such thynge as may hynder. For (as  
yow may hereby well perceaue) if credit had not fyrst ben gy  
uen to the woordes of the simple wooman, and the thynge af  
terwarde well folowed, perchappes they shulde neyther now  
nor euer hereafter haue enioyed the frute of so great a commo  
dite: Men therfore of good courage folowynge suche ryche  
signes, dyd nother feare the smailenesse of the beyne or hard  
nesse

A myne of  
golde founde  
by chaunce.

A wayne of  
golde in a  
stone.

No signes to  
be omitted.

1. p. 10. 10

ness of the stone: presupposynge by good reason that golde and syluer can not lghly bee founde in so smaule quantitie, but that the same shalbe able to surmounte the charges. And this the moze, in howe much the further yowe shall enter into the stone, as chauncerth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practised searchers, saye that the myne of golde is not founde in such great quantitie as are the mines of other metals. Wherin although perchappes they say truly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye bee founde in greate quantitie. And suerly it seemeth to me, that the benignitie of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amouge men, coulyderynge in howe many places it is dayly gatherd aswel in mountaynes as in landes of ryuers, bysyde that whiche is founde accompanied and iopned with other metals. A further profe hereof maye that bee, which is consumed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men: As that whiche the paynters bestowe in adournynge theyr woorkes: And golde smythes both in gyltynge other metals and also in makynge dyuers woorkes of massie golde: bysyde that whiche the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo consume with such as imbroderers and sylke woomen spende about the vanities of men and womens apparell and tyements. Also such as is consumed bypon trappers and furniments for hortes, with gylted harnesse and such other sumptuousnesse as pertaineth to the warres and magnifical byldinges of noble mens houses and temples: Bysyde that also whiche the covetousnesse of men hath hydde in stronge wales, and buryed in the grounde, enclosed in chayned cofers locked with triple keyes: And that whiche serueth to the dayly uses of men and wandereth about the worlde: through the handes of marchantes. The whiche thynges well conpydered, who so thinketh that nature byngeth furth but litle golde, shall perceave that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue so much as maye satisfie the thirst of theyr covetousnesse. And to speake particularly of Fraunce, although there bee no myne of golde knowne in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn moze ryche then many other prouinces: Notwithstandynge it hath often tymes byn spoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as

Golde is not founde in like quantitie as are other metals.

Argumentes of plentye of golde.

howe diuers wayes golde is consumed.

many haue to muche, but fewe haue enough. Fraunce wasted by the barbarians.

nowe of late in owre tyme by the cruell handes of the Barbarians which entered into it abowt. xl. yeares paste. But who knoweth as hath chaunced in the dayes of owre valient pre- dicessours whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occasion to chastise them and so to invade theyr regions that we maye wdonne owre owne ageyne with increase of double burtie. Or if he wyll not permitte this, perhappes he wyll graunce vs to fynde sum ryche myne of golde. For, consyderynge and seyng that this owre region of Italic is replenyshed with as many excellent thynge as in maner heauen can gyue to any habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite of golde shulde bee wantynge, wheras it byngeth such such plentie of al other mines except this of golde and tynne. And yet doo I verely beleue that it is not withowt the mynes of leage of men: As I am perswaded bothe by the golde that is founde in the sayd ryuers, and also by the dyuers and sundry meane minerals which are founde in many places and abudged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found, felte, or saene, we owghy not therby to affirme that they are not. To conclude therfoze, I thinke that in ou r partes of Italic) pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that which is currant amonge the marchauntes) then after twoo sozres, wherof the one is that which is founde in the sandes of ryuers: And the other, that whiche is gotten by the industrious & subtile art of partynge gold fro new sylvier, or fro gil- tyng sylvier, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in maner but fewe which hold not a smaul portion therof, more or lesse accozdyng to the mixtur & permanencie of theyr substan- ces, or accozdyng to the qualitie and force of the planettes which expresse theyr influence in the generation of them. And in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in owre partes of Italic. Nowe therfoze to retorne to the matter wherof is owre chiefe intente to increate, haupng before spoken suffi- ciently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde, I wyll further declare vnto youe howe it cought to be pour- ged from carthly superfluite, and especially that whiche is founde lpyng in the forme of beynes, And although I haue not seene the edifies and engens wherwith the myners are ac-  
customed

Comendacio  
of Italic

Solde and  
tynne.

meane mine-  
rals.

The golde of  
Italic.

Solde cōtay-  
ned in other  
metals.

The maner  
of pouringe  
of golde.

customed to get it out, yet I will I shew you howe by other  
 practices I haue learned to poure it, that you may not bee  
 without sum knowlege of your fortune shalbe so good as to  
 fynde any in Italy. When you haue therfore dygged out the  
 myne and placed it in order, you ought to consider in what  
 kynde of stone it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is  
 cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muste you so drawe oute the golde  
 that youe also saue the stone, because perfecte *Asure* is made  
 therof, and such as the paynters caule *Azurra Oltramarina*, that  
 is, *Asure* of beyonde the sea, which they greatly esteeme & hve  
 it deare. And to do this, it is necessary that youe first beate  
 it into fine powder, and then put it in a tray or brode reene  
 dythe, and walke it sayre and cleane with water. This done  
 amalgame or rubbe it well with quickesilver vntyll it haue  
 loked vpp and drawne al the golde into it and left the stone  
 pure of it selfe. Then strayne the quickesilver from the golde  
 through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a stillatorie  
 of glasse: And thus shal youe fynde the golde in the bottome  
 of the vessell in maner pure without quickesilver, as I haue  
 sayde before. And if youe haue no respecte to saue the stone,  
 it shall suffice to vse the common experience, meltinge it in a  
 fornae in a bayne or tesse of leade. But in my opinion, the  
 best maner to bynge it to purenesse, is first to burne the mine  
 with a gentell fyre in an open fornae, and to suffer it to euas-  
 porate well if it bee not in such stone as youe desyre to saue.  
 Then grynde it in a mylle or beate it with pestelles, adapted  
 with a wheele vntyll it be brought to fine powder. And when  
 youe haue wel washed it and so much washed the superfluous  
 earthynesse therof, then put it in a tesse made accordyng to  
 the quantitie of the same, and melt it therein with leade whi-  
 che youe shall consume partely by vapoure and partely with  
 drawinge it out by the syde of the tesse (as is the maner) un-  
 tyll youe come to the pure golde whiche youe shall in fine  
 bynge to perfecte purenesse in verely consumyng the rema-  
 nent of the leade with vehement fyre increased by the helpe of  
 stronge bellowes. And this is the vniuersal maner which you  
 may vse not only in poureyng the myne of golde, but also  
 the mynes of all other metals.

*Lapis lazuli.*

*Asure.*

Howe golde  
 is drawen  
 frome  
*Lapis lazuli.*  
 with quicke  
 silver.

The basne or  
 tesse of leade.

The maner  
 of poureyng  
 golde with  
 leade.

Of  
 the generation of metals.

## Of the generation of metals.

¶ Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie thereof.



Here are ( as I vnderstande ) diuers opinions amonge the practitioners of the mynes, whether siluer haue a proper myne by it selfe or no. The reasons of suche as write of the nature of mineralles, and thaurorie of the most, perswade me to assent to the affirmatiue: Not only to see the naturall matter distincte, as is to perceauie in the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in thez mynes are found pure by them selues without mixture, but also that I vnderstand that there hath bin found likewyse certeyne pieces aswell of this metall of siluer, as of gold and copper, brought to his laste fynesse by thonly worke of nature. And this dooth *Georgius Agricola* a lerned man of Germany confirme in his booke of minerals where he writteth that in Saronie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral siluer of such bignes, that the duke the prince & parone of that place, caused a chayre and square dyninge table after the maner of Almanye to be made therof withoute any further woork of mans hande: Blosyng often tymes that in this thynge he surmounted the greatnesse and magnificence of the Emperoure. But in dedde ( excepte copper ) I haue seene no metall taken oute of the caue pure without his bre. Yet doo I beleue it a thynge possible, consyderinge the greate force and poure of nature, thende of whose woorkynge euer intendeth to bringe all thynge to perfection as farr as it is not otherwyse hyndered. Yet ( as I haue sayde ) of the moste parte of those mynes whiche I haue seene, none of theym haue byn without mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper myne, but haue byn also mixte with other metals: And especially this of siluer more then any other, excepte onelye that which was digged in *Schio* in *Vicentina*. And therefore not without sum shaddow of appaerent reason, haue suche doubtres risen amonge the practitioners of the mynes. And yet ( as I haue sayd ) I beleue that siluer may haue and hath his proper mine, forasmuche as euery substance that maye be converted into metall, may aswell stande by it selfe pure in his owne kynde, as epyther separte or mixte with other, as is often tymes seene in

whether syl-  
uer haue a  
mine by hit  
selfe or no.

*Georgius Agri-  
cola.*  
A table of mi-  
neral siluer.

The workes  
of nature.

write me  
talca.

Of the generation of metals. 340

In one masse in the whiche diuers metals are contreynd and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that speaketh of the mine of silver, may with the same herche and without distinction, sprake also of all other metales, forasmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycause the moste noble and riche metals haue obteyned the prerogatiue to be esteemed aboue other, therfore the name of the mine is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iron, ( as doo the moste parte ) yet if they holde also golde or silver, they are cauled gold mynes or silver mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of most value. But to lette passe this matter, yowe shall further vnderstande that when suche mynes are mixte of diuers metals, they shew furth so much the more diuers and variable fumosities of tinctures and marchalites, as signes wher they bee and of what purenesse: forasmuch as euery of them according to theyr natures, exalte theyr colours which they shew furthe to the eye, sum in the similitude of asurine or blew stones, sum greene, sum yelowe, and sum of vndistinct colours accordynge to the compositions and mixtures of the fyrr matters of metals, which is also the cause that they are founde more or lesse in quantitie. Nowe to speake more particularly of this metall of silver, the philosophers speculatoours of naturall thynges, saye that it is engendered of substance more watery then speric, of complexion feminine and hegmatike in coparason to gold: receauynge more of the influence of the moone then of the son, and therfore engendered more in coulde regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the soonne: consisting also of pure elementes, although sumwhat crude and vndyggested in respecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plaine: by perceaued by theyr colours, weyght, and fixation. The practicionars affirme that it is engendered in a stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, and also in an other stone of a russet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other stone lyke vnto *Treuertino* or in *Treuertino* it selfe. The mine hercof, is very ponderous, and hath in it often tymes certeyne bymynges graynes: The which howe much the lesse they are like to the poynce of a needle so muche is the mine founde to bee the perfecter, bycause this is a token of purenesse and fixation.

And

Diuers met-  
tals in one  
masse.

In the indies  
golde founde  
in greate qua-  
ntitie, pure and  
vny mixte.

The colours  
of mineral fu-  
mosities.

The genera-  
cion & qualite  
of silver.

The influēs  
of the moone.

Stones in  
the which  
silver is en-  
gendered.

The mine of  
silver.

Of the generation of metals. 10

And when it is founde in a whyte stone, or leade stone, it is so muche the better, because it maye be the ealvier purged from the stone and earthynesse. When also it is founde spunge as it were loose amonge cerreine scales or claddes of earth, they saye that it is perfecter, although it haue not to the eye suche resplendence as other are wance to haue. They say also that it is engendered in an earth of darke russet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfection, and that there is great plentie therof within the mountayne: This also to be so much the better in howe much more it is spynge of the colour of iren or redde. And that you may the better comprehend the signes of the myne of the fore sayde metall, you shall vnderstand that euen together with the myne, epyther where it is fyrst founde, or nere vnto the same, you shall see cerreine marchalites of pelowe colour lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of suche hygge colour, so much the more do they shewe adust or burne matter and heate, as thynges contrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therfore accordynge to the degrees of suche colours, you may in maner iudge of what farnes or leanenesse the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchalites therfore as shewe the best signes of the goodnesse of theyr mynes, dwyge in colour to approche to whyttenesse as much as may bee, and to consist of smaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchalites, that howe much the narrower and lesse they are, the more do they shewe the goodnesse of theyr myne. This myne of syluer is also often times founde in a veyne of great quantitie, and yet so leane in qualitie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggyng, because it is founde in a harde stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, beinge verye harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes also, it is founde in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyse if it do not surmount the value of the charges, it is not to bee folowed. Otherwhyles also, it so chaunceth that these thre metalls are founde accompanied together in one myne: In which case it shalbe necessarie to vnderstandement of arte. And presupposynge that you desire to separate the syluer from the other metall, it is necessarie that you increase the leade. But if you passe not to saue neyther the syluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it shalbe requyred to procede with longe  
and

The mountayne.

marchalites of syluer.

What marchalites are the beste signes.

Syluer mynes in harde stones.

Syluer with copper or leade.

The dewyng of syluer from other metalls.

Of the generation of metals. 341

And great fyers vntyl the weakest matters bee consumed. But this owght to be doone especially in such mines as hold iron. Yet neyther for this or those, can there any general rule be gyven, but that accordynge vnto theyr qualitie and nature, so owght they to be diuided: And this so much the more in that they are often tymes mixt with sum drye earth, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arsenike, which are matters al together euaporable and burnt, or of harde substance to bee reduced to fusion or meltynge: In so much that the artificers sumtymes beinge ouercumme of them, leaue them as thynges vnpofitable. Wherof there can none other cause often times be gyven, then theyr owne ignoraunce by reason of extraordinary and longe fyers whiche they geue them. And therefore they woork inordinately in such kynd of mynes, except they accompanie them in the fusion or meltynge with such thynges as may defende them from the fyre. For wheras is suche abundance eyther of burnt matter, or of superfluous water: wherof the one is cauled sulphur or bymstone, & the other Mercurie or quicksyluer not fixed, or arsenike, it is necessaie that the one burne the syluer, and the other cary it away, so that of the myne there resteth none other then an earthe substance infusible and not able to bee molten. To saue the sayde myne therefore it shalbe requisite to vse discretion with much patience and conueniente meanes, fyrste after the common maner of woorkynge to euaporate the myne (as wee haue sayde) or without euaporation to grinde it smaule: then to washe it often, and in fine, if not by greate fyers, at the leaste by great baynes or testes of leade to poure it. And to bynge this effect the more easely to passe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow owght to proue in the same grindynge or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with Mercurie which is the best maner of profe, if the myne bee of a drye nature: And I knowe that it hath bynne vied of many to theyr greate profyte: And especially in those sorte of mynes which I sayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. I proue it therefore. For all kyndes of mines do not receaue it. And of this wherof I haue spoken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdynge a fourth part of syluer, and sum more then halfe. And this was founde lyeinge in maner in the superficiall parte of the earth:

¶ ¶ ¶ ¶ ¶ and

Iron.

Metals mixt  
With Antimonie  
or Arsenike

howe metals  
are preserued  
in fusion.  
Sulphur and  
mercurye.

Grinding and  
washing of  
mynes.

The amalga  
mynge of  
mines with  
Mercury.

mines hold  
dunge the  
fourth part  
of syluer.

## Of the generation of metals.

and sum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath also bin  
 founde vnder the rootes of suche trees as haue bin ouerthzo:  
 wen by tempeste: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all  
 the mynes whiche I haue seene in the dominions of Venice,  
 as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not saye that I  
 haue seene any better: Although there bee many caues wher:  
 of the most parte are of copper holdinge syluer: and emonge  
 other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the com:  
 pany of certeyne other gentlemen caused a caue to bee digged.  
 And bycause the hole charge was committed to mee, I wente  
 by occasion thysle into high Almanye to see the mynes of that  
 countrey, wherby I might haue the better experience to fauke  
 to practyse at my returne. In so much that I founde the mine  
 which we had taken in hand to folowe, to bee very good and  
 ryche: holdyng more then thre vnces and a halfe of syluer  
 in every hundreth of the myne. And doubtlesse we shuld haue  
 obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had  
 not rayled warre betwene *Maximilian* the Emperoure and the  
 signorie of *Venice*: which was the cause that those places of  
*Frioli* and *Carnia*, coulde not be quietly inhabited: wherby we  
 were enforced to forsake ovr enterpryse, and to raise and des:  
 troy thozder which we had beguine. And by reason that the  
 warres continued longe, we were constrained to diuide ovr  
 company, where I also departed an other way, hauyng euer  
 in mynde to folowe ovr attempted enterpryse when better  
 oportunitie shulde serue. In the meane tyme returnyng againe  
 into hyghe Almanie, I made more diligent searche to knowe  
 the mynes then befoze: and went to *Sbozzo*, *Plaiser*, *Ispruch*, *Alla*,  
 and *Arottinbergh*: frome whense I wente into dyuers places of  
 Italy. So that to conclude, the most and best mynes whiche  
 I haue sene to holde most of syluer, are those that are founde  
 in *Vicentina* in certeyne stones of a dark grey, or ruste colour,  
 as I haue sayde befoze. And nowe for a generall aduertise:  
 ment, I will not ony to tell you, that when you haue at:  
 tempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the marchas:  
 site and the myne myxt togyther, youe shall leaue of youre  
 woork, bycause it signifieth that the myne is neare to the su:  
 perificial part of the earth, & that it is of but lytle quantitie.  
 And thus as touchyng this myne of syluer, I can say no more  
 sayng that I haue not yet shewed youe the maner of pour:  
 ginge

Copper hol:  
 dinge syluer.

The vnces  
 of siluer in  
 every hun:  
 dret of mine

war betwene  
*Maximilian*  
 the Emperour  
 and the *Vene:  
 sians*.

The mynes  
 of Almanye.

The marchas:  
 site myxt with  
 the myne.

Of the generation of metals. 342

pyng it from earthly grossenes and to byng it to perfect met-  
tall. But bycause I haue determyned to speake largely here:  
of in the proper place of the fusion or meltyng of all metals,  
I haue thowght good to speake no further of this matter at  
this presente.

The maner of workyng in golde mynes of Egipte in old  
tyme, after the description of Diodorus Siculus, who  
wrote his historie cauled Bibliotheca, sumwhat before  
the dayes of thempereour Octavianus Augustus, &  
before the incarnation of Christ about .xl. yeares.

He wyreth therefore in his fourthe  
booke as foloweth.



We haue not thowght good to pretermitt howe  
golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonge  
the Egiptians. In the confines therefore of  
Egipte where it bordereth with Ethiopia and  
Arabia, there are certeyne places frutefull of  
metalles, out of the whiche, golde is digged  
with great labour and expenses. For a blacke earthe of mine-  
rale nature, hath certeyne baynes of mozte white marble excea-  
dinge bright and shyninge. The surveyours of this woork,  
haue assigned them a greate company of men to woozke and  
coyne golde. For the kinges of Egipte are accustomed to ap-  
pointe to these paynefull rauailes, all suche as haue byn con-  
victed for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken  
prisoners in the warres, or suche as haue byn committed to  
prison through the indignation of princes who by this mea-  
nes haue bothe great vantage by theyr labour, and punyssh  
them sufficiently for theyr offenses. For barbarous & strange  
souldiers of diuers languagies, bare ruleouer them and keepe  
them to theyr worke, in suche sorte that thuse of speache be-  
yinge taken from thym, they can not bee corrupted by loue or  
inreacie. They drawe golde out of the hardest earth decoct  
with much fyre. The softest stone which is broken with meane  
labour, is digged with instrumentes of iern by the traualle of  
many thousands of men. The scriver which decreneth the veines  
of the mine, goth before the workemen, appoynting them the  
places where they shall digge. The marble stone whiche he

Sold in a black  
earthe, and  
white marble

Then dam-  
ned to the  
metales as  
nowe to the  
gallies.

The scriver  
of the vayne,

¶ ¶ ¶ ¶ ¶

¶ ¶ ¶ ¶ ¶

## Of the generation of metals.

Golden marble.

The worke of chylidren.

milles.

The misery of the miners

The purging of the metall from the vre.

The melting of golde.

betweth them, they breake and cleave with wedges of iren by the mere strength of their bodies withowte arte. They make theyz fosse or caue, not right furthe, but as the bright nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwylse darke and obscure by reason of theyz sundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers carryng light before theyz forheades, digge great stones out of the myne, whych they let faule on the ground. From this labour they neuer rest, inforced to continual worke with strokes and conuulsiuous woordes. Childzen of thage of .xii. or .xiii. yeares of bypewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the stones into smaule pieces, and the other carry furth that which is broke. They that are past thage of .xxx. yeares, receaue the sayd broken stones at theyz hands and beate them in vessels of stone with maules of iren, to the quatitie of tares or fythes: which afterward they cast into many milles, where by the labour of two or thre women or owlde men to euery mylle, they are grounde as smaule as meale. The sylthinesse of the bodies of these labourers, is apparent to all men. For not so muche as their priuie members are couered with any thinge: And theyz bodies bys yde so sylthy, that no man can beholde them withowt compassion of theyz miserie. But no pitie, no rest, no remission is graunted them, wherher they bee men or women, younge or owlde, fycke or feeble: But are all with strokes inforced to continuall labour vntyll the pooze wretches faynt and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In so much that many of them for feare of theyz lyfe to coomme (which they thynke woorse then the present payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grounde the stones very smaule, they cast that substance vppon brode tables inclynynge sumwhat steepe or standynge a slope, and cast water thereon, scryng continually the sayde powder of marble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is washed away, and the golde as the heauier matter remayneth on the tables. When they haue doonne thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with t eyz handes & rub it with rhynne sponges, out of the which they presse a softe earth, and thus continwe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden sande. After that this preparation is fynished, other woorkemen receauynge it at theyz handes by measure and weight

weyght, cast it into earthen pottes, puttynge thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with byanne of barley, and weedes of the sea cauled reites or ouse. These thynges proportioned accordyngly, they close the pottes diligently with cley, and so let them stand in a furnelle with fyre for the space of fyue continuall dayes and nyghtes. In which space, al other thynges of contrary mixture beinge consumed, only the golde is found in the vessels, sumwhat dimynished of the fyrst weyght. And by this labour and diligence is golde possessed in the furthest parte of Egypt. Wherby, even nature her selfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in syndynge, tedious in pursynge, dangerous in keepynge, and in vse constitute betwene pleasure and sorowe.

The description of the two viages made out of England into Guinea in Affrike at the charges of certeyne marchauntes aduenturers of the citie of London, in the yeare of owre Lozde,  
M. D. LIII.

**T**hat these viages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as separate frome other viages, the cause hereof is, that after I had delyuered the sayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was despyred by certeyne my frendes to make summe mention of these viages, that sum memorie thereof myght remayne to owre posteritie if eyther iniquitie of tyme consumynge all thynges, or ignorance creppynge in by barbarousnesse and contempte of knowleage, shulde hereafter bury in obliuion so woorthy attemptes, so much the greatyer to bee esteemed as befoze neuer enterprysed by Englyshe men, or at the leaste so frequented as at this present they are and may bee to the greate commodity of owre marchauntes, if the same be not hyndered by rambition of such as for the conquestynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectynge of certeyne fortresses or rather blockhouses amonge naked people, thinke the selues woorthy to bee lordes of halfe the worlde, enuyng that other shulde enjoy the commodities which they them selues can not holy possesse. And although such as haue byn at charges in  
the

Ambition.

## The vyage to Guinea.

the discouerynge and conquestynge of such landes, owght by good reason to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminencies, and tributes for the same, yet (to speake vnder correction) it may seeme somewhat rigorous and ageynst good reason and conscience, or rather ageynst the charitie that owght to bee among Chrysten men, that such as violently inuade the dominions of other, shuld not permit other frendely to vse the trade of marchandies in places neuer or seldome frequented of them, wherby theyr trade is not hindered in such places where they them selues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martes of theyr trafike. But forasmuche as at this presente it is not my intent to accuse or defend, approue or improoue, I wil cease to speake any further hereof, and proceade to the description of the fyrrt viage as bryefely and saythfully as I was aduertised of the same by thinformation of such credible persons as made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof as much as shalbe requisite, omittynge to speake of many particular thynges not greatly necessarie to be knowen: whiche neuerthelesse with also theract course of the navigation, shalbe moze fully declared in the second vyage. And if herein fauoure or frendshyppe shall perchappes cause sum to thinke that sum haue byn sharply touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendshyppe and gyue place to truth, that honest men may receaue prayse for well doinge, and lewde persons reproche as the iust sypende of theyr euill desertes, wherby ether may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honest attempres.

**Africa.**

**The coast of  
Guinea.**

But that these vyages may bee more playnely vnderstode of al men, I haue thowght good for this purpose befoze I intreate hereof, to make a bryefe description of Africa beinge that greate parte of the world, on whose Weste syde begynneth the coast of Guinea at Cabo Verde aboute the. vii. degrees in latitude on this syde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the measyunge line, so runnyng from the north to the south and by east in sum places within h. iiii. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and so furth in maner directly east and by north for the space of. xxxvi. degrees or there about in longitude from the West to the East, as shall moze playnely appere in the description of the seconde vyage.

A bryefe

## CA hzeefe description of Affrike,



**I**n Africa the lesse are these kyngdomes: The kyngedome of Tunes and Constantina which is at this day vnder Tunes, and also the region of Bugia, Tripoli, and Lzab. This parte of Affrike is very baren by reason of the great desertes, as the desertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall portes of the kyngedome of Tunes are these: Boletta, Bizerta, Dofotarnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunes, are Constantia and Boua with dyuers other. Under this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarca, Limoso, Beit, Bamelaro, and Malta where at this presente is the greate master of the Rhodes. Under the southe of this of kyngdome, are the great desertes of Libia. Al the nations this Africa the lesse, are of the secte of Machomet and a rusti call people lpyunge scattered in byllages. The beste of this parte of Affrike, is Barbaria lpyng on the coaste of the sea Mediterraneum.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbaria) is divided into two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Celariensis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Fes and the kyngedome of Marrocco. The principall citie of Fes, is cauled Fella: and the chiefe citie of Marrocco, is named Marrocco. Mauritania Celariensis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremisen, with also the citie cauled Tremisen or Telenin. This region is full of desertes, and reacheth to the sea Mediterraneum the citie of Diam with the porte of Massaquiber. The kyngedome of Fes reacherhe vnto the Ocean sea from the West to the citie of Argilla: and the porte of the sayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

The kyngedome of Marrocco is also extended aboute the Ocean sea vnto the citie of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboute the Ocean sea towarde the West of the sayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitania (that is to say in the two kyngedomes of Fes and Marrocco) are in the sea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde time the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the south of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Jaioto, Bambza, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger,

Tunes.

Bugia.

Tri oli.

Numidia.

Ilandes of  
Tunes.  
Malta.The desertes  
of Libia.

Barbarie.

Mauritania.

The kingdōs  
of Fes and  
marrocco.Tremesin.  
Diam.

Massaquiber

Salla.

Azamor.

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.

Guinea.

Ethiopiens.

## The vyage to Guinea.

In the sayde regions are no cities: but only certeyne lowe cottages made of boubes of trees plastered with chauke and covered with strawe: In these regions are also very great desertes.

Marrocco.

Fes.

Tremesin.

Guinea.

Africa the Great.

Afrika the lesse.

Carthage.

Priester Johan.

Cape de Buona Speranza.  
The sea of Sande.  
Alcair.

The kyngedome of Marrocco hath vnder it these seuen kyngedomes: Hea, Sus, Buzula, the territorie of Marrocco, Duchala, Hazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many: as Fes, Temesne, Azgar, Elabach, Errifi, Garer, and Elcauz. The kyngedome of Tremisen hath these regions: Tremisen, Tenez, and Elgazer, all which are Machometistes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours withowt profession of any religion or other knowlege of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great, is one of the thre partes of the worlde knownen in owlde tyme and seuered from Asia, on the East by the ryuer Nilus: On the West, from Europe by the pillars of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Afrika the lesse is in this wyse bounded: On the west it hath Numidia: On the east Cyrenaica: On the north, the sea cauled Mediterraneum. In this countrey was the noble citie of Carthage.

In the East syde of Afrika beneth the redde sea, dwelleth the greate and myghty Emperour and Chrystian kynge Drexer Johan, well knowen to the Portugales in theyr vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre ion euery syde: and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chrystian and hethen that pay hym tribute. This myghty prince is cauled Dauid Theemperour of Ethiopia. Sum wyte that the kynge of Portugale sendeth hym yearly, viii. shippes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Afrika towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the cape cauled *Mare de Sabione*, a very daungerous sea, lyinge betwene the great citie of Alcair or Cairo in Egypte and the countrey of Ethiopia: In the whiche way are many inhable desertes continuinge for the space of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the sayde Chrystian Emperour were not hyndered by those desertes (in the whiche is great lacke of vittayles

and

The fyrst vyage to Guinea, 345

And especially of water he wolde or nowe haue inuaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the citie of Alcazer. The chiefe citie of Ethiope where this great Emperour is resydent, is called Amacatz beinge a fayre citie, whose inhabitantes are of the coloure of an olyue. There are also many other cities, as the citie of Sava vppon the ryuer of Nilus where Theemperour is accustomed to remayne in the loommer season. There is lykewylse a great citie named Barbaregal: And Alcon from whense it is sayde that the queene of Saba came to Ierusalem to heare the wysdome of Salomon. This citie is but lyttle, yet very fayre and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiope. In the sayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whose kyng is a Mooze and tributarie to Theemperour of Ethiope. In this prouince are many exceedynge hyghe mountaynes vppon the which is sayde to be the earthly Paradyse: And sum say that there are the trees of the soonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention: yet that none can passe thither by reason of greate desertes of a hundred dayes iorney. Also beyonde these mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza, And so haue sayde thus much of Afrike it may suffice.

From whense the queene of Saba came.

Manicongni.

The earthly Paradyse.

The trees of the soonne and moone.

The fyrst byage to Guinea.

**I**n the yeare of our Lorde, M. D. LXX. the xii. day of August, sayled from Dorchemouth two goodly shippes, the Primrose and the Lion, with a pynnele cauled the moone: beinge all well furnysshed aswell with men of the lastell sort to the number of seven score, as also with ordinaunce and vytrayles requisite to such a byage: Hauynge also two capitaynes, the one a straunger cauled Antomades Pintado a Portugale, bozne in a towne named the porte of Portugale, a wyse, discrete, and sober man, who for his cunninge in saylynge beinge aswell an expert pylot as polypke capitayne, was sumtyme in great fauoure with the kyng of Portugale, and to whom the coastes of Brasile and Guinea were comytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the sea in those partes: and was furthermoze a gentleman of the kinge his masters house. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer

The pynnele rose The Lyon. The woone

Pintado.

Brasile. Guinea.

The flatterer of fouls.

SSS li,

promiseth

## The fyrst vyage to Guinea.

promyseth but deceaueth, neuer rayseth but casteth dothne & geyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes comparisons emulation and enuie, he was after many aduersities and quarrels made ageynst hym, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euill matched with an vnequall coompanion and vnlyke matche of most sundry qualitties and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with vices dyuers and many sobly spotted, knowen of many with out profyte, and despyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes: whose smaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and his familiar conuerfacion an vndoinge, that happye was the man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and shee for her name. In fine, vnfortunate was the company that had ought to doo with hym: in so much that it was no maruayle that so goodly an enterpryse with so noble a furniture of men, shippes, and ordinaunce of all sortes, with all kynde of byttayles and that of so great abundaunce, had so smaule successe: which could be none otherwylse wher so foule a spotte byd blemyshe, ye rather deface the rest. Thus departed these noble shippes vnder sayle on theyr vyage. But first this capitayne Wyndam, puttyng furth of his shyp at Porchmouth, a kynseman of one of the headde marchauntes, and shewynge herem a muster of the tragical partes he had concealed in his brayne, and with such smaule begynnings nuryshed so monstrous a byrth, that moze happy, yea and blessed was that younge man beinge lefte behynde then if he had byn taken with them, as sum doo wylle he had doonne the lyke by theyrs. Thus sayled they on theyr vyage, vntyl they came to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wyne for the stowe of theyr shippes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At these Ilandes they met with a great garrison of the kynge of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce: yet suche as coulde not haue pryuayled if it had attempted to withstande or velyst owre shippes, for the which cause it was set furth, not only to lette and interrupte these owre shippes of theyr purposed vyage, but all other that shulde attempte the lyke. yet chiefly to frustrate owre vyage. For the kynge of Portugale was sinisterly informed that owre shippes were armed to his castel of Mina in these parties, wheras nothing leste was ment.

The euell conditions of Wyndam.

The Ilandes of Madera.

A galeon of the kinge of Portugale.

The castel of Mina.

After

After that our Shyppes departed from the Ilandes of *Agua*  
*Dera* forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine  
*Pinteado* sorowe as a man tormented with the company of  
 a terrible hydra who hycherro flattered with hym and made  
 hym a fayne countenance and shewe of loue. When dyd he take  
 vpon hym to commaunde all alone, settinge nowght bothe  
 by capitayne *Pinteado* with the reste of the marchaunte fac-  
 tours: sumtymes with opprobrious woordes and sumtymes  
 with threatenynge most shamefully abusinge them, takinge  
 from *Pinteado* the seruice of the boys and certeyne mariniers  
 that were assigned hym by thorder and direction of the woorthy  
 shypfull marchauntes, and leauynge hym as a common mary-  
 ner, which is the greatest despite and greefe that can be to a  
 Portugale or Spanyarde to be dimynished the their honoure  
 which they esteeme about all rycheite. Thus saylyng forward  
 on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, conti-  
 nuyng thei course from thence vntyll they arriued at the  
 Ilande of saynt *Nicolas* where they byrtayled them selues  
 with frethe meate of the flethe of wylde goates whereof is  
 great plentie in that Ilande and in maner of nothyng else.  
 From hense folowynge on theyr course, and taryng here  
 and there at the deserte Ilandes in the waye, because they  
 woide not coome to tyme to the countrey of Guinea for the  
 heare, and taryng somewhat to longe (for what can bee wel  
 mysused in a common wealth where in qualite with tyran-  
 nie wyl rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrst lande  
 of the countrey of Guinea where they fell with the great ry-  
 uer of *Sedo* where they myght for theyr marchaundies haue  
 laden theyr Shyppes with the graynes of that countrey, which  
 is a very horte frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it grow-  
 eth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of lmaule seedes,  
 so is the sayde frute ful of graynes which are lose within the  
 codde, hauynge in the myddest thereof a hole on euery syde.  
 This kynde of spice is much vsed in coulde countreys, and  
 may there be solde for great aduantage for therchaunge of o-  
 ther wares. But our men by the persuation or rather inforce-  
 ment of this tragicall capitayne, not regardynge and settinge  
 lyght by that commoditie in comparason to the fine gold they  
 chyrished, sayled an hundredth leagues further vntyl they came  
 to the golden lande; where not attemptinge to come nere the

howe wynd  
 abused *Pin-*  
*teado*.

The Ilandes  
 of Canarie.

The Ilande  
 of s. *Nicolas*.

Guinea.

The ryuer of  
*Sedo*.  
 Graynes.

The thrift of  
 golde.

The castel of  
*mena*.

## The fyrst vyage to Guínea.

castell percyvyng to the kynge of Portugal, whiche was  
 within the ryuer of Guinea, made sale of theyr wares onely on  
 this syde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the  
 quantite of an hundred and fiftie poundes weyght, there  
 beinge in case that they myght haue dispatched al theyr wares  
 for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue  
 gyuen eare to the counsaile and experyence of Dinteado. For  
 when that Wyndam was not satisfied with the golde whiche he  
 had (and moze myght haue had if he had tarped abowt the  
 Guinea) commaundyng the sayde Dinteado (for so he toke vpon  
 hym) to leade the Shyppes to Benin beinge vnder the Equinoctial  
 line and a hundred and fiftie leagues beyonde the Guinea  
 wher he looked to haue theyr Shyppes laden with pepper:  
 And beinge counsailed of the sayde Dinteado consyde-  
 ryng the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further  
 but to make sale of theyr wares such as they had for golde  
 wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam  
 not assentynge hereunto, fell into a suddayne rage, reuylng  
 the sayde Dinteado, caulng hym Jewe with other opprob-  
 rious wordes, sayng. This horson Jewe hath promised  
 to byng vs to such places as are not, or as he can not bring  
 vs vnto. But if he doo not, I wyll cut of his eares and nails  
 them to the mast. Dinteado gaue the forsayde counsaile to  
 goo no further for the safegard of the men and theyr lyues,  
 whiche they shulde put in daungyours if they came to late for  
 the rossia which is theyr wynter, not for coulde but for smor-  
 theryng heate with close and cloudy ayer and stormyng we-  
 ther of such purrifying qualitie that it rotted the cores of  
 theyr backes: Or els for coomyng to soonne for the scor-  
 chynge heate of the sonne whiche caused them to lenger in the  
 way. But of force and not of wyll, browght he the Shyppes  
 befoze the ryuer of Benin: wher rydynge at an anker, sente  
 their pynnel vnto the ryuer fiftie or thre score leagues, frst  
 wher the cerreyne of the marchauntes with capitayne Dinteado,  
 Francisco a Portugale, Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and  
 other marchauntes were conducted to the court wher the  
 kyng remayned. x. leagues from the ryuer syde: wher when  
 they came, they were browght with a greate company to the  
 presence of the kyng wha beinge a blacke mooze (althoughe  
 not so blacke as the rest) sat in a great house haule longe and  
 wyde,

The quantite  
of golde.

Benin.

Pepper.

Shippe admit-  
teth no coun-  
saile.

The Rossia.  
Roimng  
heate.

Scorchynge  
heate.

Benin.

Francisco.  
Nicolas Lam-  
bert.

The kyng of  
Benin his  
court.

wyde, the walles made of earthe withowte wyndowes, the  
the rooffe of thynne boordes open in sundry places lyke unto  
louers to lette in the ayer.

And here to speke of the great reuerence they gyue to their  
kyng, beinge such that if wee wolde gyue as much to our sa  
uour Chryst, we shuld remoue from our heades many plages  
which wee dayly deserue for oure conceipte and impietic.

So it is therefore, that when his noble men are in his pre  
sence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but syt crouching, as  
wee vppon oure knees so they vppon theyr buttockes with  
theyr elbowes vppon theyr knees and theyr handes befoze  
theyr faces, not lookynge vppon butyll the kyng commaunde  
them. And when they are commynge towarde the kyng as  
farre as they do see him, do they shewe such reuerence sytting  
on the grounde with theyr faces couered as befoze. Lykewyse  
when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backs to  
warde hym, but go crouching backwarde with lyke reue  
rence.

And now to speake sumwhat of the communication that  
was betwene the kyng and oure men, yowe shall fyrst vnder  
stande that he hym selfe coulde speake the Portugale tounge  
whiche he had lerned of a chylde. Therefore after that he had  
commaunded oure men to stande by, and demaunded of them  
the cause of theyr commynge into that countrey, they answered  
by Jintercado that they were marchauntes traualynge in  
to those parties for the commodities of his countrey for ex  
change of wares which they had brought from theyr coun  
treys, beinge such as shulde bee no lesse commodious for him  
and his people. The kyng then hauynge of owlde lpyng in  
a certeyne store house thirtie or forcie kyntals of pepper (euery  
kyntal beinge an hundredth weyght) wyllynge them to looke  
vppon the same, and ageyne to bynne hym a syght of suche  
marchaundies as they had brought with them. And therup  
pon sent with the captayne and the marchauntes certeyne of  
his men to conducte them to the waters syde, with other to  
bynne the ware from the pinelle to the court. Who when  
they were returned and the wares seene, the kyng grewe so  
this ende with the marchauntes, to prouyde in thirtie dayes  
the ladyng of all theyr shippes with pepper.

And in case theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the va  
lue of

Reuerence  
towards the  
kyng.

The commu  
nication be  
twene the  
kyng of Bes  
tan and oure  
men,

pepper.

The kynges  
gentlenesse  
towards oure  
men,

## The fyrst vyage to Guínea.

luc of so muche pepper, he promysed to credite them to the next returne: and thereupon sente the countrey rounde about to gather pepper, causynge the same to be brought to the court: So that within the space of. xxx. days they had gathered foure scoze toonne of pepper.

The disorder  
and death of  
oure men.

In the meane season oure men partly hauynge no rule of them selues, but eatynge without measure of the frutes of the countrey, and drynkyng the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the same, and in such extreme heate runnyng continually into the water, not bled befoze to such suddayne and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more daungerous) were they by brought into swellynge and agues. In so much that the later tyme of the yeare comynge on, caused the to dye ſū ymes iii. & ſū times. iiii. or .v. in a day. Then Wyndam perceauynge the tyme of the. xxx. dayes to be expyed, & his men dyng to fast, sent to the court in poste to capitayne Pintado and the rest to come away and to tary no longer. But Pintado with the rest, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifyinge hym of the great quantite of pepper they had already gathered and looked dayly for much moze: Despyynge hym furthermore to remember the great prayse and name they shulde wyne if they came home prosperously, and what shame of the contrary. With which answer Wyndam not satisfied, and many of theyr men dringe dayly, wylled and commaunded them agayne eyther to come away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pintado harde this answer, thynkyng to persuade hym with reason, rooke his way from the court towards the hyppes beinge conducted thither with men by the kynges commaundement.

The furie of  
Wyndam.

In the meane season Windam all rageing, brake wypp Pintados Caben, broke open his chestes, spoyled suche provisyon of coulde filled waters and suckettes as he hade provided for his health, and lefte hym nothyng neyther of his instruments to sayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulinge speke hym selfe, dyed also. Whose death Pintado comminge aboarde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dearest frend he had in the world. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd spette in his face, sum causynge hym Jewe, sayng that he had brought them thither

The death of  
Wyndam.

Pintado evil  
used of the  
maryners,

to kille them: And sum drawynge theyr swordes at hym ma-  
 kynge A Ketue to sey hym. Then he perceauinge that they  
 wolde nedes away, desyred them to tary that he might fe:ch  
 the reste of the marchauntes that were fetre at the court. But  
 they wolde not graunte his request. Then desyred he them to  
 gyue hym the shippe boate with as muche of an owlde sayle  
 as myght serue for the same, promisyng them therewith to  
 bringe Nicolas Lamberte and the rest into England: But all  
 was in vayne. Then wrote he a letter to the courte to the  
 marchauntes informyng them of all the matter, and promy-  
 syng theif god wolde lende hym life to returne with al hast  
 to ferche them. And thus was Pinteado kepte a bordeshippe  
 ageynste his wyll, thrust amonge the boyes of the shippe, not  
 bled like a man, nor yet like an honest boy: But glad to find  
 fauoure at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one  
 of theyr shippes behynde them, whiche they soonke for lake  
 of men to cary her. After this within sixe or seuen days say-  
 linge, dyed also Pinteado for very pensiuenesse and thowght  
 that strooke hym to the harte: A man worthy to serue any  
 prince and most vilely bled. And of seuen scoze men came home  
 to Plymmuoth scarcely fortye, and of them many dyed.

The death of  
 Pinteado.

And that no man shulde suspecte these wordes which I haue  
 layd in commendation of Pinteado, to be spoken vpon fauour  
 otherwyle then truth, I haue though good to adde herevnto  
 the coppie of the letters whiche the kyng of Portugale and the  
 infant his brother wrote vnto hym to reconcytle hym at suche  
 tyme as vppon the kyngs his masters displeasure (and not for  
 any other cryme or offence as may appere by the sayde letters)  
 he was onely for pouertie inforced to coomme into Englande  
 where he fyrst perswaded oure marchauntes to attempte the  
 sayde vyages to Guinea. But as the kyng of Portugale  
 to late repented hym that he had so punished Pinteado vpp-  
 on malicious inforimations of such as enuied the mans good  
 fortune, euen so may it hereby appere, that in sum cases, euen  
 Lyons them selues, may eyther bec hyndered by the contemp-  
 or ayded by the helpe of the poze myg accorpyng vnto the fa-  
 ble of Ilope.

The

The fyrst vyage to Guínea.

The coppie of Antonianes Pinteado his letters patentes wherby the kynge of Portugale made hym knyght of his house after all his troubles and imprisonment, which by wronge information made to the kynge, he had inteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laste deliuered, his cause knowne and manifested to the kynge by a grey feyer the kynges confessione.



Seven hun-  
dred, reys  
are. r. s.  
Alcap, is  
halfe a bus-  
shel.

The kynge do gyue you to vnderstande lordes Frances Deseola one of my counsayle and oruerseer of my house, that in consideration of the good seruice which Antonie Anes Pinteado, the sonne of John Anes, dwellynge in the towne cauled the portee, hath doone vnto me, my wyll and pleasure is, to make hym knyght of my house, alowynge to hym in pension seuen hundred reys monethly, and euery daye one alcap of barley as longe as he kepeyth a horse, and to bee payde accordynge to the ordinaunce of my house. Wroudyngge alwayes that he shal receaue but one marriage gyfte: And this also in such condition that the tyme whiche is excepted in owre ordinaunce for byddyngge such men to mary for gettyngge such chyldren as myght succede them in this allowaunce, which is fyve yeares after the makynge of this patente, shalbe fyfte expired before he do mary. I therfore commaunde you to cause this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricula of owre household under the tittle of knyghtes. And when it is so entered, lee the clerke of the Matricula for the certentie therof, wyte on the backe syde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the lease wherin this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, lee hym retourne this wytyngge vnto the sayd Antonie Anes Pinteado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriquez haue wytten this in Almarin the xxiij. day of September, in the yeare of owre lord. 1551. And this benenolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pinteado the. xxij. day of July this present yeare,

Rey.

The fyrst vyage to Guinea. 349

**C**The secretaries declaration wyrtten vnder  
the kynges graunt.



Our maiestie hath bouchsafed in respect and  
consyderation of the good service of Antonie  
Anes Dinteado dwellynge in the porte, and  
soonne of John Anes to make hym knyght of  
yovre house with ordinarie allowance of seuen  
hundredth reys pension by the moneth and one  
Alcayr of barley by the day as longe as he keepeth a horse:  
And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinaunce of yovre house  
with condition that he shall haue but one marriage gyfte: And  
that not within the space of. vi. yeares after the makynge of  
these letters parentes.

The secretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricos  
la. fol. 683.

*Francisco de Siquera.*

**C**The coppie of the letter of Don Lewis thinfant and  
brother to the kyng of Portugale: sent into  
Englanc to Antonianes Dinteado.



Antonie Anes Dinteado, I the infant bro:  
ther to the kyng, haue me hartely commen:  
ded vnto yow. Peter Bonsalues is gone to  
seeke yow, desyryng to bypge yowr home  
ageyne into yowr countrey. And for that  
purpose, hath with hym a safe conduct for  
yow, graunted by the kyng, that thereby  
yowe may freely and withoutt all feare come home. And al:  
though the wether be foule and stormy, yet sayle not to come.  
For in the tyme that his maiekie hath giuen yow, yow maye  
doe many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifying the  
kyng, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladde: and to bypge the  
same to passe wyll doe all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte.  
But forasmuch as Peter Bonsalues wyll make further decla:  
ration hereof vnto yow, I say no more at this present.

Wyrtten in Lixburne the. viii. day of December. Anno. M.

D. LIII.

**F F F . i .**

The

## The fyrst vyage to Guinea.

¶ The Infant don Iews.



In these forsayd wytynges I saithe vnder lele in the house of my frende Nicolas Apele with whom Dinteado left them at his vnfortunate departynge to Guinea. But notwithstanding all these friendly letters and sayre promises, Dinteado durste not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his countrey men without the presence of other, forasmuch as he had secreate admonition that they intended to slep hym, if tyme and place myght haue serued thyr wycked intent.

¶ The seconde vyage to Guinea,



In the fyrst vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hystory the the course of the nauigation, whercof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, so in the discription of this seconde vyage my chiefe intent hath byn to shew the course of the same accordynge to the obseruation and ordinarie custome of them aryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiefe in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a bryefe declaration of the same as he founde and tryed all thynges not by coniecture, but by the arte of saylynge and instrumentes percepyng to the mariners facultie. Not therfore assuminge to my selfe the commendations dewe to other, neyther so bouldde as in anye parte to chaunge or otherwise dispose the order of this vyage so wel obserued by art and experience, I haue thought good to set surely the same in such sorte and phrase of speache as is commonly vsed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the said pylot as I haue sayde. Take it therfore as foloweth.

In the yeare of oure lord. M. D. LIII. the xi. day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Temmes with thre goodly shyppes, thone cauled the Trinitie, a shyppe of the burden of seuen score toonne: Thother cauled the Barthelmeu a shyppe of the burden of. lxxx. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangelist a shyppe of seuen score toonne, With the sayde shyppes

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 350

Shyppes and two pynnelles (wherof the one was drowned in the coast of Englande) we went forwarde on ovr vyage, and leyde at Douer. xiiii. dayes. We leyde also at Rye three or foure dayes. More ouer last of all we touched at Dartmouth.

The fyrst day of Nouember at. ix. of the clocke at nyghe departynge from the coaste of Englande, we sette of the first bearynge southwest all that nyght in the sea, and the next day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the sayde mooneth about noone, makynge ovr way good, dyd runne. 60. leaques.

Item from. xii. of the clocke the thyrde daye tyll. xii. of the clocke the.iiii. day of the sayde mooneth, makynge ovr way good southeast, dyd runne eu. ry three houres twoo leaques, which amounteth to. xvi. leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. of the clocke the. iiii. day to. xii. of the clocke the. v. day, runnyng south west in the sea, dydde runne. xii. leaques.

Item runnyng from. xii. of the clocke the. v. day vntyll. xii. of the clocke the. vi. day runnyng southeast, dyd runne. xviii. leaques.

And so from. xii. of the clocke the. vi. daye vntyll. xii. of the clocke the. vii. day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre. ii. leaques which amount to. xviii. leaques the hole.

Item from. xii. of the clocke the. vii. day tyl. iiii. of the clocke the. viii. day, southsouthwest, runnyng in the sea, dyd runne xxx. leaques.

Item from three of the clocke the. viii. day, vntyll. iiii. of the clocke the. ix. day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne. xxx. leaques.

Item from. iiii. of the clocke the. ix. day tyll. iiii. of the clocke the. x. day, dyd south. outhaest in runnyng in the sea the sum of. xxiiii. leaques.

Also from. iiii. of the clocke thy. x. day vntyl. xii. of the clocke the. xi. day, dyd run southsouthwest the sum of. xii. leaques, and from. xii. of the. clocke tyll. vi. of the sayde day, dyd run. vi. leaques.

Runnyng south and by west in the sea from. vi. of the clocke the. xi. day tyll. vi. of the clocke the. xii. day, dyd run. xxxvi. leaques.

Item, ii.

From

## The seconde vyage to Guinea,

From. vi. of the clocke at after none the. xii. daye tyll. vi. of the clocke the. xiii. day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. leagues Item from. vi. of the clocke the. xiii. day, tyll. vi. of the clocke the. xiiii. day at after none that we were becalmed that we could lye south west with a sayle. And the. xv. daye in the moorninge, the wynde came to the East and easle northeast. The. xvii. day in the moorninge, we had syght of the Ile of Madera which doth vyle to hym that commeth in the north northeast parte bypyght lande in the west part of it, and very hyghe: and to the south southeaste a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a saddle throught the myddeste of it, standeth in the. xxii. degrees: and in the west parte, many springes of water runnyng dolone from the mountayne, and many whete speldes lyke unto corne fieldes, and sum whete houses to the south east parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne theweth very ragged if yow may se it, and in the northeast parte there is a byght or bay as thotogh it were a harborowe. Also in the sayde part, there is a rocke a litle distance from the thore: and ouer the sayde byght, yow shall se a great gappe in the mountayne.

The Ile of  
Madera.

The Ile of  
Palme.  
Teneriffa.  
The Canaries.

Frome Madera to the  
Ile of Palme.

Grancanaria.  
Fortes Venturas.

The Island of  
Somera.

The. xix. day at. xii. of the clocke, we had syght of the Ile of Palme and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The Ile of Palme vyleth rounde and lyeth southeaste and north weste, and the north west parte is lowest. In the south, is a rounde hyll ouer the hedde lande, and an other rounde hyll about that in the lande.

There is betwene the southeast parte of the Ile of Madera and the north west parte of the Ile of Palme. lviij. leagues. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. degrees. And owre course fro Madera to the Ile of Palme was south and south and by west, so that we had syght of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The southeast parte of the Ile of Palme, and the north northeast of Teneriffa, lyeth southeast and north weste. And betwene them is. xx. leagues. Teneriffa and the greater Canarie cauled Grancanaria, and the west part of Fortes Venturas standeth in. xxvii. degrees and a halfe. Somera is a fayre Islande and very ragged and lyeth west south west of Teneriffa. And who so ever wyll come betwene theym twoo Islandes, must come south and by east, and in the south parte of Somera, is a tobone and a good rode in the sayde parte of  
the

The seconde vyage to Guínea. 351

the Ilande: and it standeth in. xxvii. degrees & threerterces. Teneriffa. Teneriffa is a hygh lande and a great hyghe picke lyke a sugar lofe. And bypon the sayde picke is knowe thraughout Snowe. a'll the hole yeare. And by reason of that picke, it maye bee knowen aboue all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the. xx. day of Nouember from. vi. of the clocke in the moztynge vntyll foure of the clocke at after none.

C Betwene Bomera and Cape de las Barbas.

The. xxii. day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer, the soonne goeth downe west and by south.

Upon the coast of Barberie xxv. leagues by north cape blanke at. iiii. leagues of the mayne, there is. xv. sadome and good belly grounde and sande amonge, and no stremes, and two smaule Ilandes standyng in the. xxii. degrees and a terce. The coast of Barbarye. Cape blanke.

From Bomera to cape de las Barbas is a hūdrēth leagues and ower course was south and by east. The sayde cape standeth in. xxii. and a halfe: and all that coaste is starte. xvi. or xvii. sadome deepe, vii. or. viiii. leagues of frome the ryuer de Dio to cape de las Barbas, there vse many Spanyarde and Portugales to trade for fyshyng durynge the mooneth of Nouember: and all that coast is very lowe landes. Also wee went from cape de las Barbas southsou:thwest and southwest and by south: yll we brought ower selues in. xx. degrees and a halfe, rekenynge ower selues. vii. leagues of: and that was the least Holes of cape Blanke.

Then we went south vntyll we brought ower selues in. xiiii. degrees, rekenynge ower selues. xxv. leagues of. And in xv. degrees, we dyd reere the crossiers: and we myght haue reered them sooner if we had loked for theym. They are not ryghte a crosse in the moonethe of Nouember by reason the nyghtes are thorte there. Neuerthelesse we had the syght of them the. xxix. day of the sayde mooneth at nyght. The crossiers or crosse staries.

The fyrt of December owt. xiiii. degrees, we sette ower course south and by East vntyll the fourth daye of December at. xii. of the clocke the same day. Then we were in. ix. degrees and a terce, rekenynge ower selues. xxx. leagues of the Holes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge west southweste of them: The which Holes be. xxx. leagues longe. Rio Grande

The

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

The fourth of December, we beganne to sette our course southcaste, we beinge in. vi. degrees and a halfe.

The ninth day of December we set our course east southeast

The. xiiii. day of the sayde mooneth, we set oure course east, we beinge in. v. degrees and a halfe, rekenynge oure selues. xxxvi. leaques from the coast of Guinea.

Cape mensur-  
rado.  
The river of  
Sello.

The. xix. day of the sayde mooneth, we sette oure course east and by north, rekenynge oure selues. xlvii. leaques distant from cape Mensurado, the sayde cape beinge east north east of vs, and the ryuer of Sello beinge east.

The. xxii. day of the sayde mooneth we fel with cape Mensurado to the southcaste aboue two leaques of. This cape may be easly knowen, by reason the rysynge of it is lyke a porpoise hedde. Also towarde the south east there are thre trees, wherof the eastermost tree is the hyghest, and the myddlemost is lyke a hepe stacke, and the southermost lyke vnto a iebet: and vpon the mayne, are foure or fyue hygh hylles rysynge one after an other lyke round hoommockes or hyllockes. And the south east of the thre trees, is thre trees lyke a brandiers wyple: and all the coaste alonge is whyte sande. The sayde cape standeth within a lyttle in. vi. degrees.

The. xxii. of. December, we came to the ryuer of Sello, and remayned there vntill the. xxix. day of the sayde mooneth Here we thought it best to sende before vs the pyneille to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnynge of the market before the commynge of the John.

The river of  
Sello.  
Rio Dulce.

At the ryuer of Sello, we had a toonne of grapes. This ryuer standeth in. vi. degrees lackynge a certce. From the ryuer of Sello to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. leaques. Rio Dulce standeth in. v. degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of Sello is easy to be knowen by reason there is a ledge of rockes on the south east parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the haven, are fyue or fyve trees that beare no leaues. This is a good harboure: but very narrowe at the enterance into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the haven mouth right as yow enter. And all that coast betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth south east and by east, north west and by weste, beinge thre leaques of the spore. And yow shall haue in sum places rockes two leaques of: and that betwene the ryuer of Sello and cape de las Palmas,

Cape de Monte.

Cape de las  
Palmas.

Betwene

Betweene the ryuer of Sello and the riuer Dulce, is. xxv. leaques. And the hygh lande that is betweene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. leaques from the ryuer of Sello. And to the southeastwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shauo: gro and an other cauled Shyauwe oz Shauo, where yow may get freshe water. Of this Shyauwe, lyeth a ledge of rockes: and to the southeastwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betweene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. oz. x. leaques. To the southeastwarde of, is a harborowe cauled saynte Vincent. Apyght ouer ageynst saynt Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leaques and a halfe of the more. To the southeastwarde of that rocke, yow shall see an Ilande about thre oz foure leaques of. This Ilande is not paste a leaque of the more. To the east southeast of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth abou. the water: and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which yow shall knowe by the sayde ryuer and rocke. The northweest syde of the hauen, is flat lande: and the south east syde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plottie without any trees, and so is it not in any other place.

In the rode, yow shall ryde in. xiii. oz. xiiii. fadomes, good owes and lande, beinge the markes of the rode to bring the Ilande and the northweest lande together. And here wee ankered the last of December.

The thyrde day of January, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high land. But summe lowe places therof by the water syde, looke like redde cliffes with white strakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the southermost lande in all the coast of Guinea: And standeth in foure degrees and a terce.

The coast from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes oz de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke oz other daungious.

xxv. leaques from cape de las Palmas, the lande is hygher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And about. x. leaques before yow comme to cape Trepoyntes, the lande ryseth sylly hygher and hygher vntyll yow come to cape Trepoyntes. Also before yowe coomme to the sayde cape after other fve leaques to the northweest parte of it, there is cer

The lande of  
Cakeado.

Shauo.

Croke.

Saint Vincen  
tes harborow.

The riuer  
Dulce.

Cape de las  
Palmas.

The coast of  
Guinea.

Cape de tres  
puntas.

cept

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

The castell  
of Arra.

reyne broken grounde with twoo greate rockes : and within  
them in the byght of a bay, is a castel cauled Arra, pertyning  
to the kynge of Portugale. you shall knowe it by the sayde  
rockes that lye of it : For there is none such from cape de las  
Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This coaste lyeth easie and by  
north, west and by south. From cape de las Palmas to the  
sayde castell, is foure score and xv. leaques. And the coaste  
lyeth from the sayde castell to the Westernmoste poynte of the  
Trepoyntes, southeast and by south, north west and by north  
Also the Westernmost poynt of the Trepoyntes, is a lowe lande  
lyinge halfe a myle owt in the sea : and vpon the innermoste  
necke to the landwarde, is a tyste of trees, and there we arri-  
ued the. xi. day of January

The towne  
of Samma.

The. xii. day of January, we came to a towne cauled Sam-  
ma or Samua, beinge. viii. leaques from cape Trepoyntes to  
ward east northeast. Betwene cape Trepoyntes and the towne  
of Samma, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the  
sea. We continued foure dayes at that towne : and the capi-  
tayne therof wolde needes haue a pledge a horse. But when  
they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym tyll and wolde traf-  
fike no more, but that of theyr ordinance at vs. They haue  
two or thre pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

The plege  
was in John  
yorke his ne-  
ve.

The. xvi. day of the sayde mooneth, we made rekenyng  
to come to a place cauled cape Tozea where capitayne Don  
John dwelleth, whose men interceyued vs frendly. This  
cape Tozea is foure leaques eastwarde of the castell of Mina,  
otherwyse cauled La Mina, or Castello de Mina, where we arriued  
the. xviii. day of the mooneth. Here we made sale of al ovr  
cloth sauyng two or thre packes.

Cape Corea.

The castel of  
mina perty-  
nyng to the  
kinge of por-  
tugale.

The. xxvi. day of the same mooneth, we theyd anker and  
departed from thence to the Trinitie which was. vii. leaques  
eastwarde of vs where he solde her wares. Then they of the  
Trinitie wylled vs to go eastwarde of that. viii. or ix. leaques  
to sel part of their wares in a place caled Perecow, or an other  
place named Perecowe grande, beinge the eastermost place of  
both these, which you shall knowe by a great rounde hyl nere  
vnto it named Monte Rodondo lyinge westwarde from it.  
And by the water syde are many hygge palme trees. From  
hence byd we set furth homeward the. xiii. day of February  
and plyed vpp alongest tyll we came within. vii. or viii.  
leaques

perecowe.  
Perecowe  
grande.

Monte rodõ-  
do.

The seconde vyage to Guínea. 355

leagues to cape Trepoinces. About. viii. of the clocke the xxv. day at after noone, we dyd cast about to seawarde. And be: **The currants** were of the currantes, for they wyll deceaue you soze.

Who so ever shall comme from the coast of Guinea home: **Frome mina** ward, let hym be suer to make his way good west vntyll he **home warde.** reken hym selfe as farre as cape de las Palmas where the currant seteth alwayes to the eastwarde. And within. xx. leagues eastwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled **Rio de los** Rio de los Potos where you may haue fresh water and balade **Potos.** enowgh, and plentie of Iuery or Elephantes teethe. This ryuer standeth in foure degrees and almost two terces. **Iuerye.**

And when you reken youre selfe as farre thotte as cape **Cape de las** de las Palmas, bringe in a degree or a degree and a halfe, **palmas,** you may go west or west and by north vntyll you come in three degrees: and then you maye go weste north west, and north west and by west vntyll you come in siue degrees and then north west. And in the. vi. degrees, we mette northerly wyndes and greate rookynge of tydes. And as wee coulde iudge, the currantes went to the north north west. Further: **Currantes,** more betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go greate currantes which deceaue many men.

The. xxii. daie of Apryll, we were in. viii. degrees and two terces: and so we ranne to the north west, hauynge the wynde at northeast and east northeast, and sumtymes at east vntyll we were at. xviii. degrees and a terce, which was on May day. And so from. xviii. and two terces, wee hadde the wynde at east and east northeast, and sumtymes at east southe east: and then wee reckened the Flandes of cape Verde east southeast of vs, wee iudgyng oure selues to be. xlviij. leagues of. And in. xx. and. xxi. degrees, wee had the wynde more easterly to the southwarde then before. And so we ran to the north west and north north west, and sumtymes north and by west and north vntyll wee came into. xxxi. degrees, where we reckened oure selues a hundredeth and foure score leagues south west and by south of the Flande de Floze or de **The Flande** los flozes. And there we met with the wynde at south ourthe **Flore.** east, and set oure course northeast.

In. xxxiii. degrees, we had the wynde at the south and south west: and then we set our course north northeast, and so we ranne to xl. degrees: and then we set our course north: **east**

## The seconde vyage to Guinea,

east the wynde beinge at the southwest and hauynge the Ile de Flore east of vs, and, *xxvii.* leaques of.

In, *xxi.* degrees, we met with the wynd at northeast, and so we ranne north westwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the west north west and at the west within, *vi.* leaques runnyng towards the north west: And then wee cast about and ley northeast vntyll we came in, *xxii.* degrees, where we sette our course east northeast, indgynge the Ile of Coruo south and by west of vs and, *xxvii.* leaques distant from vs.

The Ile of Coruo.

A remembraunce that the, *xxi.* day of Maye, we communed with John Rafe, and he thought it best to go northeast, and iudged hym selfe, *xxv.* leaques eastwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in, *xxix.* degrees and a halfe.

where they lost the sight of the northe starre. howe the compasse dooeth varie.

Note that in the fourth day of September vnder nine degrees, we lost the syght of the north starre.

Note also, that in the, *xlv.* degrees the compasse is varied, *viii.* degrees to the west.

Item, in, *xl.* degrees, the compasse dyd vary, *xv.* degrees in the hole.

Item, in, *xxx.* degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varied, *v.* degrees to the west.

Be it also in memoire, that two or thre dayes before we came to cape Trepointes, the pyneffe went alongest the shore thinkynge to sell sum of our wares. And so we came to anchor thre or foure leaques west and by south of the cape Trepointes where we left the Trinitie.

The pyneffe rose.

Then our pyneffe came a boorde with all our men. The pyneffe also tooke in more wares. They tolde me moreouer that they wolde go to a place where the Pyntole was and had receaued much golde at the fyrste vyage to these parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantine that was then vppon the coast, dydde wey and folowe theym, and left the Trinitie aboute *lv.* leaques of from vs. And there we rode ageynst that towne foure dayes: so that Martine by his owne desyre and assente of sum of the commadioners that were in the pyneffe, wente a shore to the towne. And there John Beryn went to trafike from vs beinge thre myles of trafikyng at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyrste townes where

The towne of Samma. Golde.

The seconde vyage to Guinea. 354

wee did traffcke for gold, to the northeast of cape Trepointe:  
 Hether to continucth the course of the vyage as it was  
 described by the sayde pylot. Nowe therfore to speake sum:  
 what of the contrey and people, and of suche thynges as are  
 brought from thense.

They brought from thense at the last vyage, foure hun  
 dretch pounce weyght and odde of golde of .xxii. carattes and  
 one grayne in finenesse. Also .xxvi. butres of graynes: and  
 about two hundredth and fiftie elephantes teethe of all quan  
 tities. Of these, I sawe and measured sum of .ix. spannes in  
 length as they were crooked. Sum of them were as vyage as a  
 mans thygh about the knee: and weyed aboute foure scoze  
 and ten pounce weyght a piece. They say that sum one hath  
 byn seene of a hundredth and .xxv. pounce weyght. Other  
 there were which they caule the teeth of calves of one or two  
 or thre yeares, wherof sum were a foote and a halfe, summe  
 two foote, and sum thre or more accoꝝdyng to thage of the  
 beaste. These great teeth or tuskes, growe in the upper iawe  
 downwarde, and not in the nether iawe upwarde, wherin  
 the paynters and arras woorkers are deceaued. At this laste  
 vyage was brought from Guinea the headde of an elephante  
 of such huge byggeneite, that only the bones or crauelwe ther  
 of helpde the nether iawe and greate tuskes, wayed aboute  
 two hundredth weyght, and was as muche as I. could well  
 lyfte from the grounde. In so muche that considerynge also  
 herewith the weyght of .ii. such great teeth, the nether iawes  
 with the leete teethe, the toungue, the greate hangynge eares,  
 the bygge and longe iawte or troonke, with all the fleshe,  
 brayns, and kyne, with all other partes belongynge to the  
 hole headde, in my iudgemente it could wey lytel leise then  
 fyne hundredth weyght. This headde dyuers hau seene in the  
 house of the woorthy marchaunt by Andrewe Judde, wher  
 also I sawe it, and behelde it not onely with my bodely eyes,  
 but much more with the eyes of my mynde and spirite consy  
 dered by the woork, the cunningge and wyledome of the  
 woorker: withowt which consyderation, the syght of  
 such straunge and wonderfull thynges may rather seeme cur  
 iousities then profitable contemplations.

The elephante (which sum caule an oliphant) is the big  
 gest of all foure footed beastes. His forelegges are longer  
 then

Solde foure  
 hundredth  
 weyght.  
 Graynes.  
 Juary.  
 Elephantes  
 teethe.

The head of  
 an Elephant.

The contem  
 plations of  
 Gods woorkes

The descrip  
 tion and pro  
 pertes of the  
 Elephante.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyne toes on his fiere vndiuided. His snoute or troonke is so longe and in such forme that it is to hym in the steede of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by byngynge his troonke to his mouth. Therwith he helpeth vp his maister or keeper: therwith he ouerthowleth trees. Besyde his two greate tuskes, he hath on euery syde of his mouth foure teethe wherwith he eateth and geynderh his meate. Eyrther of these teeth, are almost a span in length as they growe alonge in the iawbe: and are abowt two inches in height and almost as much in thickenesse. The tuskes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lytle, and so faure in his mouth that it can not bee seene. Of all beastes they are mooste gentyll and tractable. For by many sundry ways they are taught and do vnderstand: In so much that they learne to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke sence and sharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once leasorned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephante lyueth two hundredeth yeaues, or at the leaue one hundredeth and twentie. The female almost as longe: but the soure of theyr age, is but. lx. yeaues as sum wyte. They can not suffer wynter or coulde. They loue ryuers and wyll ofren go into them vp to the snoute wherwith they blowe and snuffe, and play in the water: but swimme they canne not for the weyght of theyr bodyes. Plinie and Soline wyte that they vse none adulterie. If they happen to meete with a manne in wyldernesse beinge out of the way, gentilly they wyl go before hym and bynge hym into the playne waye. Joyned in battayle, they haue no smaule respecte vnto the that be wounded. For they bynge them that are hurt or mery into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by dynkyng the use of barley. They haue continuall warre agaynst dragons which desyre theyr bludde because it is very coude. And therefore the dragon bynge awapte as the Elephante passeth by, wyndeth his rayle (beinge of exceedynge length) about the hynder legges of the elephante: and so sleping bynethrusteth by his heade into his troonke and exhanterh his breath, or els byteth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his troonke. And when the elephante warreth saynt, he fauleth downe on the serpente beinge nowe full of bludde: and  
with

Debate betwene the Elephante and the dragon.

The seconde vyage to Guinea. 355

With the poyle of his body breaketh hym: so that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephant, runneth out of hym mingled togyther: whiche beinge coude, is congeled into that substance which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, otherwoyle cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermilion which the paynters vse in certeyne coloures.

*Sanguis Draconis.*  
*Cinnabaris.*

They are also of three kyndes, as of the mayntes, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no lesse differynge in condicions. Philostratus wyteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggenesse passeth the horse of Aplea, so much both the elephants of India exceede them of Lybia. For of the elephants of India, sum haue byn scene of the heygth of .ix. cubites. The other do so greatly feare these that they dare not abyde the syght of them. Of the Indian elephants, only the males haue tuskes. But of them of Ethiopia and Lybia, both kyndes are tusked. They are of dyuers heygthes, as of .xii. .xiii. and .xiiii. dodrantes, euery dodrante bringe a measure of .ix. yuches. Sum wyte that an elephant is bygger then thre wyld oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the colour of a mouse. But they of Ethiopie or Guinea, are browne. The hyde or skynne of them all, is very harde and withoute heare or byssels. Theyr eares are two dodrantes brode, and theyr eyes very litle. Our men sawe one drynkyng at a ryuer in Guinea as they sayled into the lande.

The kyndes of elephants.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vse in the warres, of theyr generation and chastite, when they were fyrste scene in the theaters and triumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they cast theyr tuskes, with thuse of the same in medicine, who so desyret to know, let hym rede Plinie in the .vii. booke of his natural hystorie. He also wyteth in his .xii. booke, that in oulde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephants teeth: as tables, treuels, postes of houses, raples, lattices for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddess, and dyuers ether thynges of Iuery both coloured and uncoloured and interprete with sundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and virginalles,

woorkes of Iuery.

They

## The seconde vyage to Guínea.

They had such plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Josephus wyrteth that one of the gates of Hierusalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whyteneſſe thereof was ſo muche extremed that it was thought to repreſent the naturall fayrenelle of mans ſkynne: In ſo much that ſuch as went abowt to ſer furth (oz rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntynge, were reprovoued by this proverbe: *Ebur atramento candelacere*. That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poettes alſo deſcribunge the fayre neckes of bewtifull virgins, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes. And to haue ſayde thus much of elephanes and Iuery, it may ſuffice.

The people  
of Africa.

Nowe therfore to ſpeke ſumwhat of the people and theſe maners and maner of lpyunge, with alſo an other brieſe deſcription of Africa. It is to vnderſtande that the people whtche nowe inhabite the regions of the coaſt of Guinea and the mydde partes of Africa, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions abowt the ſame, were in owlde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moozes, Moozens, oz Negros, a people of beaſtly lpyunge, without a god, lawe, religion, oz common welth, and ſo ſcorched and vexed with the heate of the ſonne, that in many places they curſe it when it ryſeth. Of the regions and people abowt the inner Libia (cauled *Libia Interior*) Senma Shyphius wyrteth thus.

Libia Interior.

Lybia Interior, is very large and deſolate, in the whiche are many horrible wylderneſſes and mountaynes repleniſhed with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monſtrous beaſtes and ſerpentes. Fyſt from Mauritania oz Barberie toward the ſouth is Scutia, a cologh and ſaluage region whoſe inhabitants are wylde and wanderynge people. After theſe folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and Sharufii whiche wander in the wylderneſſe carrynge with them greate gourdes of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aſſyrica, and are extended to the Weſt Ocean. Southwarde alſo they reache to the ryuer Nigritus whoſe nature agreeth with the ryuer of Nilus ſo farre as it is increaſed and diuertyed at the ſame tyme, and byngeth furth the like beaſtes as the Crocodile. By reaſon wherof, I thinke this to be the ſame ryuer which the Portugales caule Senega. For this ry

Scutia.

Ethiopes.  
Nigrite.

The ryuer Ni  
gritis oz Se  
nega.

The seconde vyage to Guinea. 356

ner is also of the same nature. It is furthermoze marvelous and very strange that is sayde of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one syde thereof, thynhabitauntes are of hygge stature and blacke: and on the other side of browne or tawny colour and lowe stature, which thynge also oovre men confirme to be trewe.

There are also other people of Lybia cauled Saramantes, whose women are common. For they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue respect to chastitie. After these are the nations of the people cauled Hyzei, Sathiodaphnite, Ozangi, Amaces, Lynamare, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Filicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Rubi. These haue the same situation in Stologie that they nowe giue to the kyngdome of Rubia. Here are certeyne Christians vnder the dominion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiopie cauled Prester John. From these towarde the west, is a great nation of people cauled Aphricerones: whose region (as farre as maye be gathered by coniecture) is the same that is nowe cauled Regnum Oguene, confinyng bypon the east partes of Guinea. From hence westwarde and sumwhat towarde the north, are the kyngdomes of Sambra and Budamel not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from hence towarde the inlande regions and alonge by the sea coast, are the regions of Binoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Synne. On the west side of these regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poynt cauled Cabouerde or Caput viride (that is) the greene cape, to the which the Portugales first directe theyr course when they sayle to America or the lande of Brasile. Then departynge frome hence, they reue to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the west and the south. But to speake sumwhat moze of Ethiopia. Although there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefly diuided into two partes: wherof the one is cauled Ethiopia vnder Egypte, a great and ryche region. To this perteyneth the Ilande of Meroe, imbraced rounde abowte with the streames of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reygned in oulde tyme. Iosephus wyrteth that it was sumtyme cauled Sabea: and that the queene of Saba came from thence to Hierusalem to heare the wysedome of Salomon. From hence towarde the East, reigneth the sayde Christian Empe-

A strange thynge.

Saramantes.

people of Lybia.

Prester John.

Regnum Oguene.

Sambra.

Guinea or Binoia.

Cap. verde.

The portugales nauigations to Brasile.

The Ilande of Meroe.

The queene of Saba.

course

The seconde vyage to Guinea.

Drexler John  
 emperor of  
 Ethiopia.

route Drexler John whom King Daule Papa Johannes, and he  
 they say that he is called Sean Juan (that is greate John,  
 whose empyre reacheth farre beyonde Nilus, and is extended  
 to the coastes of the redde sea and In dan sea. The myddle of  
 the region is almost in the 66. degrees of longitude, and, xii.  
 degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people  
 cauled Modir, Misophagi, Babiloni, Arimure, Molyli, and  
 Molybe. After these is the region cauled Trogloditica, whose  
 inhabitants dwell in caves and denues. For these are theyr  
 houses, and the flesh of serpentes theyr meate, as wyrcerh  
 Plinie and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no speache, but  
 rather a geynyng and chattering. There are also people  
 without heades cauled Blominos, hauyng theyr eyes and  
 mouth in theyr breke. Lykewys Scruophagi and naked Ba  
 phalantes. Satyrs also which haue norhyng of men but on  
 ly shape. More ouer Diuei great hunters, Memmones also,  
 and the region of Smyrnophora which byngeth furth myrre  
 After these is the region of Azania in the whiche many ele  
 phantes are fownde. A great parte of the other regions of A  
 fricke that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, are nowe ascrib  
 bed to the kingdome of Melinde, whose inhabitants are  
 accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabia, and theyr  
 kyng is ioyded in frendship with the kyng of Portugale, and  
 payeth tribute to Drexler John.

The other Ethiopie cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner  
 Ethiopie, is not yet knowne for the greatnesse therof but on  
 ly by the sea coastes. yet is it described in this maner. Fyrst  
 from the Equinoctiall towarde the south, is a greate region  
 of Ethiopians which byngeth furth whyte elephantes, ty  
 gers, and the beastes cauled Rhinocerontes. Also a region  
 that byngeth furth plentie of Cinamome, lying betwene the  
 branches of Nilus. Also the kingdome of Habech or Habas  
 sia, a region of Chyphen men, lying both on this syde and be  
 yonde Nilus. Here are also the Ethiopians cauled Ichthio  
 phagi (that is) such as lyue only by fish: and were tyme  
 subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthmore the  
 Ethiopians cauled Bahafii, and Anthropophagi that are ac  
 customed to eate mans flesh, inhabite the regions nere vnto  
 the mountaynes cauled *Montes Luna*, (that is) the mountaynes  
 of the moone. *Bazaria*, is vnder the tropike of Capricorne.  
 After

People of the  
 east syde  
 Africa.

Ophiophagi.

People with  
 out heades.

Myrre.  
 Azania.

Regnum Me  
 linde.

Ethiopia In  
 terior.

Whyte ele  
 phantes.

Habassia.

Ichthiophagi

Anthropopha  
 gi.  
 Montes Lu  
 na.  
 Bazaria.

The seconde vyage to Guinea. 357

After this, foloweth the fronte of affrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bone Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, *Cap. Bone Spei* by the which they passe that sayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulfes are cauled, foras-  
muche as the same are in every globe and carde, it were here superfluous to rehearse them.

Sum wyte that Aphrica was so named by the Grecians because it is without coulede. For the Greeke letter Alpha or, A, signifyeth pyuation, voyde, or without: and phrice, signifyeth coulede. For in deede althowgh in the see of wynter they haue a cloude and tempestious season, yet is it not coulede, but rather smothering hot with also hot shoures of raine and sumwhere suche scorchyng wyndes, that what by one meanes and other they seeme at certeyn tymes to liue as it were in fornaes, and in maner already halfe way in Hur gatorie or hel. Gemma Phisicus writeth that in certeyn partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the night season is seene shynge with many straunge spers and flames vsyng in maner as high as the moone: And that in the element are sumtime harde as it were the sounde of pipes, trumpettes, and drummes. Whiche noyses may perhappes be cauled by the vehemente and sundry motions of such fery exhalations in the ayer, as we se the lyke in many experiences brought by fyre, ayer, & wynd. The holownesse also & diuers reflexions & breaking of the cloudes may be greate causes here of, hylpde the vehemant cold of the myddle region of the ayer wherby the sayd fery exhalations ascending thether are suddenly stryken backe with greate force. For euen common and dayly experience teacheth vs by the whyllinge of a burninge torge what noyse fyer maketh in the ayer, & much moze where it strineth when it is inclosed with ayer as aperch in gounns, and as the like is seene in only ayer inclosed, as in orgen pipes and such other instrumentes that go by winde. For wynde as say the philosophers is none other then ayer vehemently mo- ued, as we see in a payer of belowes and suche other.

Sum of otre men of good credit that were in this last vyage to Buinea, affirme earnestly that in the nyght sea- son they felt a sensible heate to coomme from the beames of the moone. The which thynge althowghe it be straunge and insensible to vs that inhabite coulede regions, yet doothe it  
XXXI.      stande

Aphrica with  
owt coulede.

The winter  
of Africa.

Flames of  
fire & noyse  
in the ayer.

The myddell  
region of the  
aer is coulede.

The strife of  
elementes.

wynde.

The heate of  
the moone.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea,

The nature  
of the stars.

stande with good reason that it may so be, forasmuche as the nature of the starres and planets (as wyrteth Plinie) consisteth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a spirite of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Dauid seemeth to confirme in his. Cxx. Psalm, where speakyng of such men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he sayth thus: *Per diem sol non exuret te, necluna per noctem.* That is to say. In the day the soonne shall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

Spoutes of  
water fauling  
out of the  
ayer.

Cataracts of  
heauen.

Veheement  
motions in  
the sea.

A strange  
thyng.

The poure of  
nature.

They say furthermoze that in certeyne places of the sea, they sawe certeyne streames of water which they caule spoutes faulynge out of the ayer into the sea: And that sum of these are as hygge as the greate pylers of churches: In so muche that sumtymes they faule into thypes and put them in greate daungion of downyng. Sum phantasie that these shulde bee the cataractes of heauen whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be suche furions and eruptions as Aristotle in his boke de Mundo, saith to chaſse in the sea. For speakyng of suche straunge thynges as are seene often tymes in the sea, he wyrteth thus: Often tymes also euen in the sea are seene euaporations of fyre, and suche eruptions and breakyng furth of sprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, whyrlepooles, and furions are caused of such other veheement motions not only in the middelt of the sea, but also in creekes and streyghtes. At certeyne tymes also, a great quantitie of water is suddely lyfted vp and carryed abowt with the moone. &c. By which woordes of Aristotle it dooth appere that such waters maye bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and suddely faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes perteyneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler toulde me that he hadde Sebastian Labot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther abowt the coastes of Brasile or Rio de Plata, his thyppe or pinnes was suddely lyfted from the sea and cast vpon the land I wotte not howe farre. The which thyng and suche other lyke woonderfull and straunge woorkes of nature whyle I consyder and caule to remembraunce the narrownes of mans vnderstandyng and knowleage in comparyson of her mighty poure, I can but cease to maruaile and confesse with Plinie that

that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaste parte of whose pouce is not yet knownen to men.

Many thynges more owre men sawe and considered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put sum in memory that the reader maye aswell take pleasure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hystorpe. Amonge other thynges thercoze touchyng the maners and nature of the people, this may seeme straunge that theyz princes and noble men vse to pounse and rase theyz skynnes with prey knottes in diuers foymes as it were branched damaske, thynkyng that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and especially their women in maner laden with collars, bracelets, hoopes, and chaynes eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my selfe haue one of theyz bracelets of Iuery wayinge two pounde and hi. ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make .xxxviii. ounces. This, one of theyz women dyd weare vppon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggest parte of the toothe turned and sumwhat carued, with a hole in the myddest wherin they put theyz handes to weare it on theyz arme. Sum haue of euery arme one and as many on theyz legges, wherewith sum of theym are so galded that althoughe they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyll they by no meanes leaue them of, sum weare also on theyz legges great shackles of shyght copper which they thynke to bee no lesse cumly. They weare also collars, bracelets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blew stones lyke beades. Lykewylse sum of theyz women weare on theyz bare armes certeyne foressees made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyz fyngers also they weare rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wozethe lyke vnto that whiche chylidren make in a ryng of a rusthe. Amonge other thynges of golde that owre men bowght of them for exchaunge of theyz wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in theyz baryngnyng, and wyl not lose one sparke of golde of any value. They vse weyghtes and measures, and are very circumspecte in occupyinge the same. They that shall haue to do with them must vse them gettely: for they wyl not trafike or buyng in any wares if they be euill vled. At the fyrst viage that owre men had into these parties, it so chaunsed that at theyz departure from the fyrste

place

They rase  
their skynnes.

Fine iewells.

A bracelet.

Shackelles.

Ringes.

Dogs chains  
of golde.

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

- A muske cat.** place where they dyd trafike, one of them epyther stole a muske catte or tooke her a way by force, not mistrustynge that that Gulde haue hyndered theyr bargenyng in an other place wher they intended to go. But for al the haill they could make with full sayles, the fame of theyr mysusage so prevented the that the people of that place also offended therby, wold byng in no wares: In so muche that they were enforced epyther to restore the catte or pay for her at theyr price befoze they could trafike there.
- Their houses** Theyr houses are made of foure postes or trees, and covered with bouwes.
- Their feeding** Theyr common feedynge is of rootes and such fyshes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There are also such spyng fyshes as are seene in the sea of the Weste Indies. Oure men salted of theyr fyshes hopynge to prouyde store therof. But they wolde take no salt: And muste therefore be eaten furthwith as sum say. Howe be it, other affirme that if they be salted immediatly after they be taken, they wyl last vncorrupted. x. or. xii. dayes. But this is more straunge, that
- Feing fishes** parte of such flesshe as they caried with them oure of Englande and putrified there, became sweete ageyne at theyr returne to the clime of temperate regions.
- A straunge. thing.** They vse also a straunge makynge of breade in this maner. They grynde betwene two stones with theyr handes as much corne as they thynke maye suffice theyr famelic. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitie of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they stycke vpon sum post of theyr houses, where it is baked by the heate of the sonne: So that when the master of the house or any of his famely wyll eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it.
- Their wheate.** They haue very fayze wheate, the ere whereof is twoo handfulls in length and as bygge as a great bulkeushe, and almost foure ynches abowt where it is byggest. The steme or strawe, semeth to be almost as bygge as the lytle fynger of a mans hande, or lytle lesse. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as our peason: rounde also, and verye whyte and sumwhat spynge lyke perles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substance of theym turneth into floure, and maketh lytle branne or none. I coulde in one ere twoo hundred

dyeth and thre scoze graynes. The ere is inclosed in thre blades longer then it selfe, and of two inches brode a piece. And by this fructifullnesse the soonne seemeth partly to recompence such griefes and molestacions as they otherwyle receaue by the seruent heate therof. It is doubtelesse a woorthy contentment to consider the contrary effectes of the soonne: or rather the contrary passions of suche thynges as receaue the influence of his beames eyther to theyr hurte or benefite.

The soonne.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the milke that droppeth from the cut branches of the barren date trees cauled *Palmitis*. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the sayde branches euery euynge and let them so hange all nyght, or els they set them on the ground vnder the trees that the dropes may faule therein. They say that this kynde of drynke is in tast much lyke vnto whey, but sumwhat sweeter and more pleasaunt. They cutte the branches euery euynge because they are scered vp in the day by the heate of the soonne. They haue also great beanes as bygge as chestenuttes, and verpe harde with a shell in the seeede of a hulke.

Their drinke.

Many thynges more myght be sayd of the maners of the people and of the woonders and monstrous thynges that are engendered in *Afrika*. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of such thynges as oure men partely sawe and partely brought with them.

And wheras before speakynge of the frute of graynes, I describ'd the same to haue holes by the syde (as in deede it is as it is brought hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that those holes were made to put syrnges or twygges throughe the frute thereby to hange them vp to drye at the soonne. They growe not passe a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes them selues, are cauled of the physicians, *Brauna Paradyssi*.

Graynes.

At theyr commynge home, the keles of theyr shippes were maruelously ouergrowe with certein shels of .ii. ynches lengch and more as thicke as they coude stande, and of such byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of the. They certeynly affirme that in these there groweth a certeyne slimy substance which at the length kylping owt of the shel & sailing in the sea, becometh those faules which we cal barnacles.

Shelles that cleave to shippes.

Barnacles.

The

## The seconde vyage to Guinea.

The lyke shelles haue byn seene in shippes returning from the lande. But these shelles were not past halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guinea, I sawe the Symrofe lying in the docke, and in maner covered with the sayd shelles, which in my iudgemente shulde greatly hynder her sayllinge. Theyr shippes were also in many places eaten with the woozmes cauled Bromas or Bissas whereof mention is made in the Decades. These creepe betwene the planks whiche they eat through in many places.

Bromas.

A secrete.

Amonge other thynges that chanced to them in this vyage, this is woorthy to be noted, that whereas they sayled thether in seven weekes, they coude retorne in no lesse space then. xx. weekes. The cause wherof they say to be this: That about the coast of Cabo Verde, the wynde is ever at the East by reason wherof they were enforced to sayle farre owte of theyr course into the mayne Ocean to fynde the wynde at the west to byrnye them home. There dyed of owre men at this last vyage about. xxiiii. wherof many dyed at theyr retorne into the clime of the coude regions, as betwene the Ilandes of Sozia and Englande. They brought with them certeyne blacke slaues, wherof sum were taule and stronge men, and coude well agree with owre meates and drynkes. The coude and moyst ayer dooth sumwhat offende them. Yet doubtleste men that are bozne in hotte regions may better abyde coude, then men that are bozne in coude regions may abyde heate, forasmuch as vehement heate resolucth the radicall moisture of mens bodies, as could cōstreyneth and preserueth the same.

The death of  
owr men.

Could may be  
better abidē  
then heate.

This is also to bee considered as a secrete woozke of nature, that throughout all Afcyke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare about the same on bothe sydes, the regions are extreme hotte and the people very blacke. Whereas contrarily such regions of the West Indies as are vnder the same line, are very temperate and the people neyther blacke nor with curle and short woolle on theyr heades as haue they of Afcyke, but of the coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades: the cause of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

The west In  
dies.

It is also woorthy to bee noted that summe of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is, that they ouertooke the course of the soonne, so that they had it north from them

at

## The seconde vyage to Guinea. 360

at noone the. xiiii. day of Marche. And to haue sayde thus much of these vyages it may suffice. For (as I haue sayd before) Whereas the parteners at whose charges this booke is printed, wolde longe sence haue me proceeded no further, I had not thought to haue wyrtten any thynge of these vyages but that the liberalitie of master Toy encouraged me to attempte the same. Whiche I speake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wolde be to chargeable.

**C** The maner of fyndynge the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes after the description of Gemma Shyplius.



**D**ireccauynge what contention is and longe hath byn not only amonge the pylottes that by trauallyng the sea haue observed the starres, but also amonge sum men that are skylfull in mathematicall sciencens, wherof many affirme that the longitude (that is to meane, the course from the East to the Weste) can not be perfectly knowen, I haue thought good for the better satisfying of such as desire to haue sum knowleage hereof, to interprete such demonstrations as I haue redde of the declarynge of the same in Gemma Shyplius, who as touchynge this matter hath added to thynventions of other, a moze certeyne way of his owne diuise wherby (as he sayth) he can fynde the longitude of regions although he were dyuen out of the way a thousande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye unknowen and of unknowen distance. He wyrteth therfore as foloweth.

When you haue founde the place of the moone, you ought to consyder the houre when she occupied that place. Then ether by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonsus you ought to knowe in what houre the moone entereth into the same signe of the zodiake in an other region or towne whose longitude is well knowen. Then reducyng the houres to xxiiii. the lesse number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres & mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xv. and diuide the minutes of the houres by foure: so shall appere the degrees of the Equinoctial contepned betwene two

By the moone.

## The maner of fyndynge

meridians. And if after this diuision there remaine any minutes, multiplie them also by .xv. and thereby shalbe knowen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knowen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take awaye from the same longitude if they be lesse: So shall youe in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknowne from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the same is more easely and redely founde geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whose longitude is knowen in the globe. Then directe the poynthe or stile that moueth aboue the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupyeth the place assigned in that region. Then turne the globe vntill the stile that sheweth the houre, be comen to the houre in the whiche the yowesought the vnknowne place of the moone. And so shall the degrees of the Equinoctiall distance or diuided frome the moueable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which youe seeke. Neuerthelesse, the more certeine way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by sum one thyng that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclipyses of the moone. For the diuers houres beinge knowen in the whiche the sayd eclipyses chaunce in diuers regions, the longitudes maye thus as well be knowen by geometric and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But forasmuch as this doth neyther appere at all tymes nor to all men, and the other way is somewhat difficult, neyther at all tymes redy by reason of the coniunctions of the moone and furthermore also sumtymes vncerteyne and varyng sum what from the truth for the diuers aspectes and latitudes of the moone, it so chaunceth hereby that wee haue epyther no longitudes or the same very vncerteyne of many regions, and especially of those which the Spanyardes haue of late discovered. For no certentie doubtlesse can be knowen by such commensurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of such byages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the first booke of his Cosmographie. I wyll therefore adde hereunto sum thyng of myne owne inuention wherby by an easy way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may bee founde in all byages and nauigations,

The Ilandes  
of Canarie.

howe to fynd  
the longitude  
by the globe

The Eclipyses  
of the moone.

Answere

The longitudes of regions. 361.

A newe maner of fyndynge the Longitudes of regions.



Let see that in these oovre dayes certeyne lyttle clockes are verpe artificially made the whiche for theyz smaule quantitie are not comberous to be carped abowt in all byages. These often tymes moue continually for the space, of. xxiiii houres: and may with helpe continewe theyz mouynge in maner perpetually. By the helpe therfoze of these the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Befoze wee enter into any byage, wee muste fynde foze that the sayde clocke exactly obserue the houres of the place from whense we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer cease. Accomplyshynge therfoze. xv. or. xx. myles of the byage, if wee desire to knowe howe much in longitude we are distant frome the place of oovre departure, we must tary vntyll the poynt of stile of the clocke do exactly come to the poynt of sum houre: and at the same moment by oovre Astrolabe or globe, owght wee to seeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which if it agree in minute with the houres which the Horoscopium or ascendent dooth shewe, then is it certeyne that wee are yet vnder the same Meridian or the same Longitude: and that oovre course hath byn towarde the south or north. But if it dyffer one hour or any mynute, the are the same to bee reduced to degrees or minutes of degrees as we haue sought in the chapiture here befoze.

Lyttle clockes

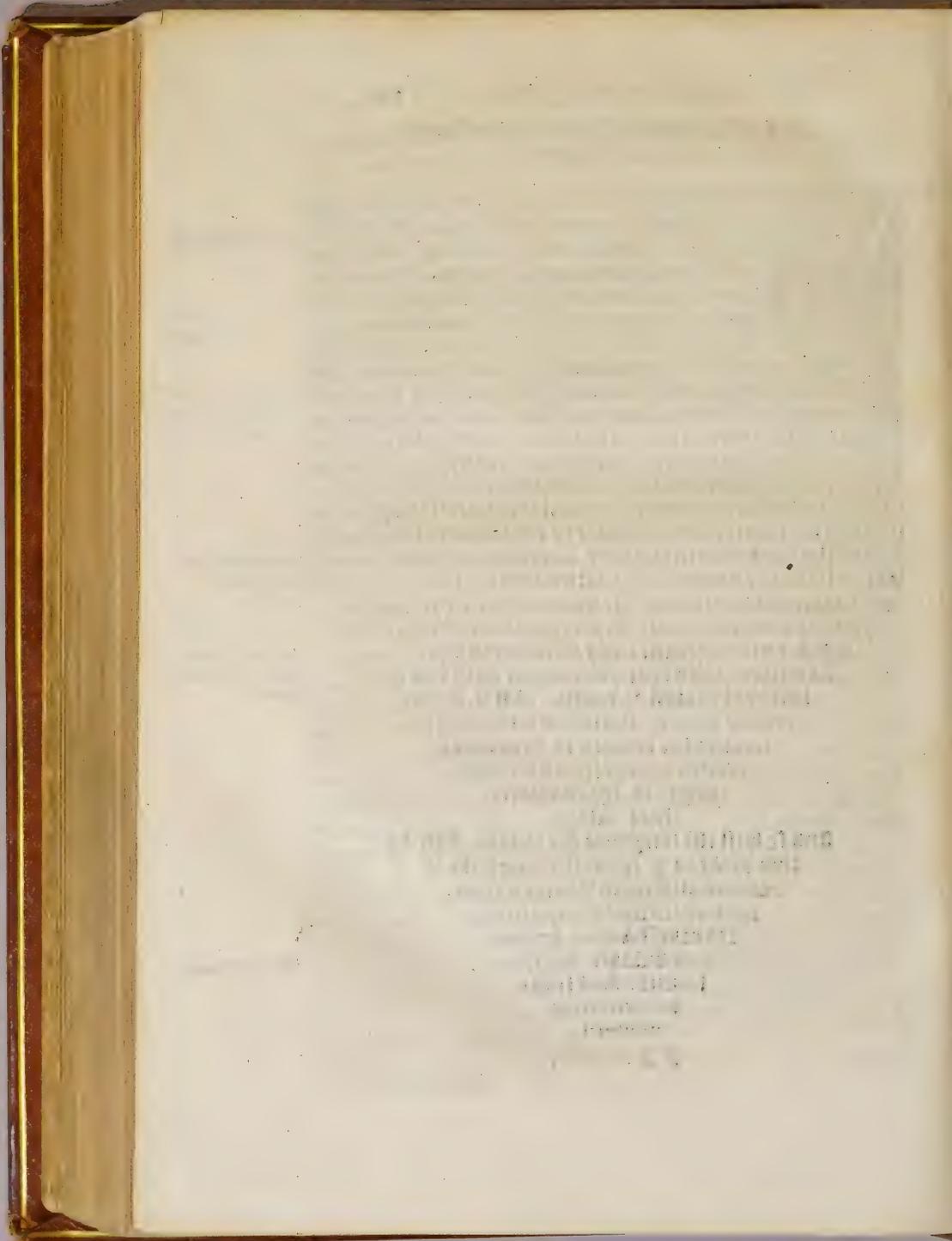
By the Astrolabe and globe.

Horoscopus or the Ascendent.

And so shall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can I fynde the longitude of regions althowgh I were a thousand myles oovr of my attempted course & in an vnknewen distance, but the latitude must fynde bee perfectly knowne.

The latitude.

FINIS



**C**A byrse reherſal of the contentes  
of the bookes of the fyrſt Decade, and  
ſo ſolowynge of all the other  
Decades. Folio. i.



**L**In the fyrſt booke is declared howe Chryſtopho-  
rus Colonus otherwoyſe cauled Columbus, per-  
ſuaded fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of  
Spayne, to ſoozther his attempte in ſearching  
newe and vnknowne landes in the Weſt Ocea-  
n. Alſo of the. vii. Iſlandes of Canarie, by  
whom they were founde and conquered.

Howe Colonus founde the Iſlandes of Hiſpaniola, and  
Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales oz Caribes,  
whiche are accuſtomed to eate mans fleſhe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maiz-  
gum, wherof the people of the Iſlandes make theyr breade.

Of the golde found in the ſandes of ryuers, and of the ſer-  
pentes whiche are without hurte. Alſo of turtle doues, duckes  
and poppingiayes.

Of Maſtit, and Aloe, with dyuers frutes and trees vn-  
knowne to vs: and of the frutefulnes of the Iſland of Hiſpa-  
niola whiche the Spanyardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the ſeconde vyage of Colonus into theſe regions, and  
howe he was furnyſhed with. xvii. ſhyppes and a thou-  
ſande and two hundred ſouldyers, with all kynde of artiſ-  
crpe, artificers, and grayne to ſowe. And of the tree frome  
the whiche water droppeth continually into a trenche made by  
mans hande.

**T**he contentes of the ſeconde booke. Fol. 4.

**C**Howe Colonus departynge from the Iſlandes of Canarie,  
ſayled. viii. hundred and. xx. leagues in. xxi. dayes, and came  
to Dominica an Iſlande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant  
ſauour of ſpices whiche proceded from the Iſlandes.

Of the Iſlandes of Balanta oz Balana and Guadalupea,  
and of the trees whiche beare that kynde of cotton whiche the  
Italians caule Bombaſine, and the Spanyardes Algadon.

Of dyuers kyndes of poppingiayes: And of the Iſland of

p p p.ii

Maiz:

## The contentes of the decadcs.

Matinino or Madanino, being inhabited only with women:  
Also of dyuers other frutefull Ilandes: And of a condictre  
which the Spanyarde had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are scene the mynes of  
metals and precious stones: and of the frutefull and peopu-  
lous Ilande cauled Surichena or Boziquen. or *Insula s. Iohannis*

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyrst byage he  
lefte in Hispaniola, were slayne in his absence by the rebelliz-  
on of Guaccanarillus, kynge of the Region of Xamana: and  
of the free kynde of lyfe which they leade that haue not the  
vse of money.

Of the. vii. maydens which swamme. iiii. myles in the sea:  
And of the maner of gatherpng of gold in the sands of riuers

### C The Contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 10.

A particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, whi-  
che Colonus thynketh to be Ophir, from whence kynge Sa-  
lomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the maruelous frutefulnes of Hispaniola, and of the  
suger canes growynge there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibana, and of the  
ryuers in whose sandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of excedyng great quantitie.

Of wylde vines of pleasaunt taste, and of grasse which in  
foure dayes groweth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of  
the East and the West: And of the frutefull and populous I-  
lande of Iamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had sayled abovre  
the lowest hemispherie or halfe circle of the earth, and of a se-  
create of Astronomie touchynge the same matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundred Ilan-  
des, and passed by thre thousande vnnamed.

Of certeyne serpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote  
longe, whose fleshe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne  
trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whose water is very hotte: and of the hun-  
tyng fythe which taketh other fythes.

Of great abundaunce of Tortoyles as bygge as targets, and  
of a frutefull mountayne well inhabited.

## The contentes of the decades,

Of dogges of deformed shape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water.

Of wooddes of date trees and ppnepaple trees, and of certeyne people appaveled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare spices, and of cranes of exceedyng bignes.

Of stocke doues of more pleasaunte taste then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous governoure as touchinge the immortalitie of the soule: Also of the rewarde of vertue and punishmente of vice.

A similitude of the golden worlde, and of prouision with owte care.

Howe the admirall fell sicke by reason of to much watchyng: And of a sedition which rose among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hispaniola.

### C The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 18.

Howe the Kinges of the Ilande of Hispaniola, were by the Spaniardes mysbehauoure prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall sent for them.

Howe kinge Cannaboa the Lorde of the house of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, conspired the Admirals death, and howe he with his familie were take prisoners.

Of a greate famine that chaunced in the Iland of Hispaniola: and howe the Admirall builded certeyne fortrellles.

Of a piece of rude golde waighinge. xx. vnces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde greate plenty of Amber and ozpemente: And of the wooddes of brasile trees.

Howe thynhabitaunces are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region disposethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Cannaboa came ageynste the Admirall with an army of fine thousand naked men: and howe he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the fructfull vale Wagona, in the sandes of whose ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certeyne whiche wyndes and tempestes.

Howe the Admirall sente forthe his brother Bartholomeus

## The contentes of the decades.

Iomeus Colonus with an army of mē to search the gold mines  
& of the fosses which he found to haue bin digged in old tyme

### **C** The Contentes of the .b. booke. Fol. 22.

Howe the Licueteraunt builded a fortreffe in the golde  
mynes: And prepared instrumentes for the pouginge and fy-  
ninge of the golde.

Howe certeyne thypes laden with byrtayles, came frome  
Spayne: And howe the Licueteraunt sent the kynges which  
rebelled, with thre hundred captiues into Spayne.

Howe the Licueteraunte remoued his habytacion: And  
buylded a fortreffe which he cauled saynt Dominickes towre  
Also howe he passed ouer the ryuer Pariba, and entered into  
the wooddes of bzalyle trees.

Howe the great kynge Beuchius Anacauchoa, frendely  
entercepted the Licueteraunt, and brought hym to his pal-  
layce, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaued him  
honorably with pompes and triumphes.

Of the fortreffes which were erected in Hispaniola: And  
howe the Licueteraunt exacted tribute of the kynges whiche  
rebelled ageyne.

Howe the Licueteraunt sette vppon the kynges vnbaces  
in the nyght season, and tooke .xiii. of them prysoners.

Howe kynge Guacionexius, capitayne of the conspiracte  
was pardoned, & howe he perswaded the people to obedience.

Howe kynge Beuchius Anacauchoa, sente messingers to  
the Licueteraunt to repayre to his pallayce where he founde  
.xxii. kynges redy with theyr tributes: And howe the queene  
Anacaona entyled hym to eate of the serpentes flesshe.

Howe the serpentes flesshe is prepared to be eaten: And  
howe delicate meate theyr egges are yf they be sodden.

Howe queene Anacaona, syster to kynge Beuchius Ana-  
cauchoa, entercepted the Licueteraunt, and gaue hym muche  
houholde stuffe and many vessels of Gybene woodde artificie:  
ally wrought and carued.

Howe kynge Anacauchoa and the queene his syster went  
aboarde the Licueteraunt his thyppe, and howe greatly they  
were amased to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Roldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the  
Licueter

## The contentes of the decades,

Lieutenantes absence: by whose mysdemeanour also kynge  
Buarionerius was prouoked to a newe conspiracie, & with  
hym Maiobanerius the kynge of the mountaynes.

¶ The contentes of the syxte boke. Foli. 28.

¶ The chyde byage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from  
his accustomed rase by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande  
of Madera for feare of certayne frenche for pirates and rousers.

¶ Of the. iiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Hel  
perides, and are nowe cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or  
Cabouerde. Also of the Tortoyles of the Ilande of Bonauis  
sa, wherewith the leaper is healed.

¶ Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme  
heate nere the Equinoctial where the north pole was eleuate  
onely syue degrees: And how saylyng from thence westward,  
he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea ry-  
syng as it were the backe of a mountayne.

¶ Howe the Admirall saylyng westwarde, and neuer pas-  
syng owt of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a tem-  
perate Region and people of goodly cozpozature: And what  
difference is betwene the natures of Regions bepng vnder one  
paralele and one eleuation of the pole.

¶ Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita: and of the swiffe  
course or faule of the Ocean from the East to the weste.

¶ Of the goulkes cauled Os Draconis: And of the conflict  
betwene the freshe water and the salte.

¶ Of a sea of freshe water: And a mountayne inhabited one-  
ly with monkeys and marmalettes.

¶ Of the sayre, riche, and large region of Paria: And howe  
frendly th inhabitants entreated the Admirall and his men,  
Also of pleasaunte wyne made of dyuerse frutes: And of  
greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

¶ Of the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, and Curiana,  
beyng regions of the large prouynce of Paria: And of the  
sea of herbes or weedes.

¶ A certeyn secrete as touchyng the pole starre and the eleua-  
tion of the same: Also of the roundnesse of the earthe.

¶ Of the mountaynes of Paria in the toppes wherof Coloz-  
mus earnestly affirmeth the earthly Paradise to be situate: And  
wherher

## The contentes of the decades.

Whether *Baria* be part of the firme land or continent of *India*.

The contentes of the .vii. booke. fol. 33.

Howe *Roldanus Feminus* with his confederates, accused the Admirall to the kynge : And howe he purged hym selfe and accused them

Howe kynge *Guarionerius* rebelled ageyne : And with him kynge *Maiohanerius* : Also howe they with other kinges came ageynst the Lieutenaunte with an armye of .viii. thousande naked and paynted *Liguanians*. Also twoo rare examples of frendshyppe and faythfulnes in barbarous princes.

Howe *Colonus* the Admirall and the Lieutenaunte hys brother, were sent bounde into *Spayne* : And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the .viii. booke. fol. 37.

The Navigation of *Petrus Alphonsus* frome *Spayne* to *Baria*, where in the region of *Curiana*, he had in thorte space .xv. vntes of pearles & greate plenty of bytrailes for haukes belletes, pyntes, lokinge glasses, and suche other tryfelles,

Of certeyn coniectures wherby *Baria* is thought to bee parte of the firme lande: And of the golden region of *Cauchietia*, where in the moneth of *November* the ayre is temperate and not coulde.

Howe *Alphonsus* had a conflicte with the *Canibals* : and howe they are accustomed to invade other countreys.

Of greate abundaunce of salte in the region of *Baria* : & howe the dead bodies of theyr princes are dreyed, reuerued, and relygiouly honoured.

Howe *Alphonsus* at his returne to *Spayne* frome *Curiana*, brought with hym threescore and .xvi. pounce weight of pearles which he bought for owtze tryfells amountinge only to the value of fise shyllyngs.

The contentes of the .ix. booke. fol. 40.

The Navigation of *Vincencius Pinzonus* and *Aries Pinzonus*, and howe they sayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne,  
loste

## The contentes of the decades.

losse the syght of the northe starre, and founde the starres in  
other order.

Howe Vincentius passynge the equinoctiall toward the  
fourth pole, founde fierce and warlike people of great stature:  
And of the sea of frethe water.

Howe Vincentius directting his course toward the north  
weste from the equinoctiall, reconcered the syght of the northe  
pole, and by the regions of Maracamball, Camomorus, and  
Beruora, came to the fayre and ryche prouince of Paria, and  
to the regions of Os Diaconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Cu-  
riana.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is ment that mayne land  
now cauled America) shulde be parte of the fyne lande or con-  
tinent of India, beyonde the ryuer of Ganges and no islande:  
And of the exceedynge great riuer Maragnonus replenished  
with Ilandes.

Of Boziostomea and Spiciostomea, the mowthes of the fa-  
mous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Jster: And of  
the commotities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria.  
Also of the woodes of hyasile trees.

Of many frutfull Ilandes wasted and lefted desolare by re-  
son of the Tanballes crueltie: And of the trees of Cassia Sif-  
tula. Also of other trees of exceedynge bygnelle.

The description of a certayne monstrous beaste, And howe  
Vincentius losse two of his shippes by tempeste.

Howe Vincentius at his returne to Spayne, brought with  
hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious stonnes cauled  
Topases. And of the navigations of certayne other inhabitan-  
tes of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the  
diuerse superstitions of the inhabitaunces of Hispaniola.  
Also of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of  
deuylls, whiche they caule zemes.

### The Contentes of the .v. booke. fol. 48.

Of great glentic of golde, perles, and frankensence found  
in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beastes in Gape  
Dyfferynge from owtres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them selues to conquere  
the newe founde landes, beyng in largenesse chryse as great

## The contentes of the decades.

As Europe beyde the southe landes parteynyng to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Iland of Sancti Iohannis, otherwise cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Also of the ryche golde mynes of Hispaniola, and of the order of workyng in the same.

Of the two chiefe golde mynes of Hispaniola. And of a pece of golde weyng thye thousande thye hundredeth and seene pounde weyght.

Howe the golde is fyned and distributed: And howe that only in the meltynge shoppes of the two golden mynes of Hispaniola, is molten yearely aboue thye hundredeth thousande pounde weyght of golde.

Howe thenteryples of the Sparyardes are not inferiour to thacres of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admirall discovered the lande ouerageynst the west corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanania.

## The Contentes of the booke of the seconde Decade.

### The contentes of the fyrst booke, fol. 51.

Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kynge gaue free lycenng to all suche as wolde attempre any wyages: And of the nauigatiōs of Diego Nicuesa, & Alphōsus Fogeda

Of the Ilande Codigo and the region of Caramacri: And of certeyne sweere apples whiche turne into woodmes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

Howe Alfonso Fogeda, the Lieutenannt of Uraba, entercountryng with the barbarians had the ouerthrowe. And howe in this conflicte, fyfte of his men were slayne with Iohannes de la Cosa theyr cappytaine.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicuesa the Lieutenannt of Beragua, reuenged the death of theyr coompanions: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulled from the golde mynes by the fierce wylde of the barbarians byng arrowes infected with poyson.

Howe

## The contentes of the decades.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thigh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almost consumed with famine.

Howe a hyganine was drowned with the stroke of a cyclone: And of the nauigation of Ancilus from Hispaniola to Oraba.

Of the lamentable chyppe, iacke of Ancilus: And of the darreres and wynde bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owlde frutes and newe all the yeare.

Howe cruelly thye of the Canibales with theyr bowes and innemied arrowes assailed Ancilus with a hundred of his men: In which conflict they wounded and slew many. Also of theyr wyfenesse of foore.

Of the great ryuer of Darfena: And howe Ancilus encountered with fyue hundred of the inhabitants of the goule of Oraba and put them to flight. Also howe he founde greate plentye of wrought golde and household stufte in a thicket of reedes.

The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 59.

Howe Nicuesa losse his felowes in the darke nyght and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he sought: And howe the capitaynes of the other chypes consulted howe to fynde hym. Also of the ryuer Lagartos in the which greene Ipartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forooke theyr chypes that the foulyers myght bee without hope of departite: And of the miserable chaunce of Petrus de Umbria and his felowes.

By what chaunce Nicuesa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his company susteyned. Also of the region of Gracia Dei or Cerabaro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Marthae.

Howe Nicuesa caused them to remoue theyr habitacion from Beragua to poynte Garmoz where he bylded a forreffe. And howe his men by warre and famyn, were consumed from seven hundred and odde, to scarcely one hundred.

Howe one Maichis Runnez vsurped thauentie of the Lieutenante chyppe of Oraba in thabence of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hispaniola to Oraba.

Of the ryuer Salta descendyng from the toppe of a high mountayne

## The contentes of the deca decs.

mountayne covered with snowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a conflict ageynst the barbarians, losse. xlvii. of his men by reason of theyr inuenemed arrowes.

Of the force of the popson wherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the same. Also howe Colmenaris by gunneshot and kyndelynge fyers off the hyghe toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes leste: desolate in Daricna.

### The contentes of the thyrde booke. fol. 61.

Howe Picuela was sought forth to acquiere the contentions of Uraba: And howe he was ageyne reiected.

Howe Waschus Punnez invaded, tooke prysoners, and lpyled the kynges bothe kynges about the region of Uraba: And howe Ancilus Lieutenant for Fogeda was cast in pryson, and afterwarde set at libertie.

Howe Ancilus tooke his vyage from Uraba to Spayne to accuse Waschus: who also at the same tyme sent Waldiua aswell to speake in his defence, as also to certifie the kyng of theyr doynge.

Howe kyng Sarceta conspired with the Spanyardes ageynst kyng Doncha whom they put to flyght and lpyled his vyllage.

Howe kyng Comogus frendely entercepted the Spanyardes and brought them to his pallasce where he serued them the dyed Carkales of his auncestours reserved and sumptuously apparelled: And howe the kynges elder sonne gaue Waschus and Colmenaris foure thousand vnces of brought gold and fiftie staves. Also a myetic oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherein he certified them of a countrey exceeding ryche in golde, &c.

### The contentes of the fourth booke. fol. 66.

Of horribble thunder and lpyhtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, and of grayne which wareth tyme thyrle a yeare. Also howe digestion is strengthened by owtwarde coule.

Howe Waldiua is sent ageyne into Hispaniola to moue the gouernour and counsaile there, to sende into Spayne to the

## The contentes of the decades,

the kynge for a supplie of a thousand souldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe he carped with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfte parte of golde and othes thynges.

Howe Ualchus invaded the kynges inhabeynge the regions about the goulfe of Arabia; and howe he put kyng Daiba to fyght, in whose byllage he founde wrought golde amountynge to the weyght of seuen thousande Castellans.

Of battes as bygge as turtle dooues which sumtyme byt men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, whose bytynge is also benemous: but is healed with water of the sea or by cauterization as are also the woundes of venemous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafistula, and a towne of fyue hundred houses, whose kyng Abenamachei was taken and his arme cutte of in the fyght.

Of trees of exceedynge bygnesse and heyght: And howe kyng Abibeiba had his pallaice in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was enforced to descende and entreate of peace.

### The contentes of the fyfth booke, fol. 69.

Howe kyng Abzaiba newe a capitayne of the Spanyards and caused the kynges to rebell. Also howe they were put to fyght and many of theyr men slayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe conspiracie with a hundred great Canoas and fyue thousand men: And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and prevented. Also howe Rodericus Colmenaris sacked the byllage of Tichiri and honge the kyng therof with foure of his chiefe rulers, and commaunded them to be shotte throught with arrowes.

### The contentes of the syxte booke, fol. 72.

Howe Ualchus with his confetherates, sente Johannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hispaniola and from thêle to Spayne to the kyng for a thousand men to passe over the mountaynes to the golden regions: And what miseries theyr susteyned in that vyage. Also of the death of Ualchus, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the prosperous vyage of Ancifus: And howe godde wrought

## The contentes of the decades.

Brought miracles by the simple faith of a mannet. Also how god respecteth the innocencie of sayth for his sake: And how one religion turned into another, holdeth still many thinges of the fyrste.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptised by reason of the miracles: And howe they rewarded the prestes by towhome they were baptised.

Howe Ancellus shortly after his acceptaill in Spayne, resorted to the court and made his complayne to the kynge of this coluacie of Malchus, wherupon the kynge gave sentence against hym: And howe after this barbarous nations are to embrace the Christian sayth.

**C**The contentes of the seventh booke. fol. 79.

Howe Dulcedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena, were honorably emperceyned at the court and brought to the kynges presence: And howe theyr complexion was changed by alteration of the ayre.

Howe Petrus Arias a nobleman, was elected governour and Lieutenannt of Dariena: And howe other of the court laboured for the same office. Also howe the byshop of Burgos spake to the kynge in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thousande and two hundredeth souldyers appoynted hym at the kynges charges: And of the kynges custome house in the cite of Seville, cauled the house of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyardes profered the selues to go at theyr owne charges: And of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kynges licence. Also howe the autour reproveth Aloisius Cadamustus a wyrtier of the Portugales byages.

Howe Petrus Arias shortly after his departme frome Seville, lost two of his shippes and was bypven backe agayne by tempest: And howe beinge newly furnyshed, hee passed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrde byage of Vincentius Pinzonus, and howe he came to the regions of Paria where encounterynge with this habitantes he put them fyrst to flyght: but after faultynge to entreatie of peace, they gave hym greate plentie of golde and  
ab undaunce

## The contentes of the decades,

Abundance of masculine frankensence with dyuers other  
punctly presentes.

Of the greate multitude of poppingiayes which are in the  
region of Paria, and howe thynhabitours are apparelled.  
Also of the fyne kynges that made a league of frendeshyppe  
with Vincentius.

Howe Vincentius sayled Southwarde by the tracte of the  
regions of Paria vntyll he came to the poynthe of that longe  
lande which the ourour supposeth to be the greate Ilande Ar- Cap. 5. Ar-  
gustim  
lantike wherof the owlde wyters make mention.

The contentes of the. viii. booke. Fol. 80.

A contention betwene the Castellians and Portugales as  
concernynge the diuision of the newe founde landes : And  
howe the controuerisie was synplyed by the byshop of Rome.

Howe Don Chrystopher the gouernoure of the Ilande of  
Sancti Iohannis, was slayne by the Canibales and the bys-  
hop put to flyght. Also of the other byshops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Cruz, slew  
and eate a kyng with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to  
the Chrystians and made faggottes of theyr bones : And how  
querelynge with olde men, they put them to silence.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 81.

Of the marvelous frutesfullnes of the regions of Beragua,  
Uraba, and Dariena : And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and  
frutes. Also of the pleasaunt taste of wyynes as they beinge  
fedde with the frutes of Microbalatie trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wyld beasts : And of a  
beaste of straunge forme.

Of the ryuers of the goules of Uraba, as the ryuer of Da-  
riena and Rio Brandis : And howe the great serpentes call-  
led Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers bysythe Nilus in  
Egypte. Also howe thaurour of this booke was sent Amba-  
sador to the Soldane of Alcaiz in Egypte.

Of the Portugales nauigacions, and of the ryuer Seneg-  
ga founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Also of the mul-  
titude of byrdes & foules beinge in the maryshes of Dariena.

3 page

## The contentes of the decades.

A phyllosophicall discourse of the originall and generation of springes and ryuers: And of the breadth of the lande dyspydng the north and south Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradise: And howe springes are engendered by conuersion of ayre into water.

Of the often faule of rayne vnder the Equinoctiall line, and of the porres of the sea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the owlde wynters: And howe certein ryuers runnyng throughe the caues of the earth, breake furth into springes afarre of.

### The contentes of the first booke. fol. 86.

Howe the newe founde landes discovered by the Spanyards in the West Ocean, are eyght tymes bigger then Italis besyde that which the Portugales possesse: And of the cardes of the sea drawen by Colonus and Americus Vesputius.

The order of mesurynge the lande: And howe a league conteineth foure myles by sea and but thre by lande.

The Nauigation of Johannes Dias, and of the sundry eleuations of the pole starre.

Of the Ilande of Boiuca or Agnaneo, and of the springe whose water being dronke, causeth old men to loke yonge.

Howe Nicuesa and his souldiers were so oppressed with famine, that they were dyuen to eate mangie dogges, coades, and deade men: And howe a brothe made of a dogges skinn, has soulede for many pieces of golde.

### The contentes of the bookes of the thyrde Decade.

#### The contentes of the first booke. fol. 88.

Of the desperate aduencure and good fortune of Waschus: And how with a hundred fourscore and ten men, he brought that to passe for the which Petrus Arias was sente with a thousande and two hundred frethe souldyers.

Howe

## The contentes of the decades,

Howe iren seructh for moze necessary bles then gold, and howe superfluities hynder libertie.

Howe Ualchus in one conflicte, Aetwe syre hundzereht bar barjans with theyr kynges: And howe he founde the house of kyng Quarequa infected with unnatural lecherie, commaundynge that the kyng and fortye suche as he kepte for that purpose, shulde be gyuen for a pray to his dogges whiche he bled to serue in the warres ageynst these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moozes: And howe Ualchus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuyng thanks to god, he behelde the newe South Ocean neuer befoze sene nor knowne to men of owre worlde.

Howe Ualchus put kyng Chitapes to flyght, and after made a league of frendshyppe with hym: And howe the king gaue hym. iiii. hundzereht poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng Coquera was putte to flyght, who also beinge receaued to frendshyppe, gaue Ualchus syre hundzereht and fiftye poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfe cauled Sinus. S. Michaclis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes: And of the manly corage and godly zeale of Ualchus. Also of the rylsunge and faulynge of the South sea.

Howe kyng Tumaccus beinge dyuen to flyght and after warde reconciled, gaue Ualchus. vi. hundzereht and. xiiii. pecos of golde, and two hundzereht and fortye of the greatest and fayrest pearles: And howe the kyng caused his men to fysh for pearles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margaritea Dines: And of the abundaunce of fayre and great pearles founde therein.

Of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall line: And of the Portugales navigations to the Antipodes inhabytyng the fyue and fiftye degree of the South pole. Also a declaration of Antipodes, and of the starres about the South pole.

### The contentes of the seconde booke, Fol. 95.

Of the maner of fysshynge for pearles and of the thre kyndes therof. Also dyuers other questions concerninge perles.

Of the multitude of the shell fyshes wherein perles are ingendered and founde in maner in all places in the South sea: And of abundaunce of golde founde almoste in every house.

AAAAA. i.

Also

## The contentes of the decades.

Also howe the treasure of nature is in those coastes: And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kynge Teaocha gaue Ualchus. xx. poundes weighe of wrought golde and two hundredth perles. Also of desertes full of wyld beasts, and howe Ualchus was troubled with greate heate in the moneth of Nouember.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyed in cheynes and torne in pieces: Also howe Ualchus gaue. iiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vse of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fierceneffe of the Canibales.

Howe kynge Bononiana fauoured the Chrystians and gaue Ualchus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also his oration to Ualchus.

A similitude prouynge greate plentie of golde in the regions of the south sea, and of the tranayles which owlde soulyders are able to susteyne.

### The contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 99

Howe kynge Buchibuca submytted hym selfe to Ualchus, and sent hym certeyne vesselles of golde. Also howe kynge Thiozilus sente hym. xxx. dythes of pure golde.

Howe iren serueth for more necessary vses then gold. Also an exemple of the lyfe of ower fyrste parentes.

Howe kynge Bocchorola submytted hym selfe, and gaue Ualchus. xv. pounce weyght of wrought golde. Also howe Tumanama the great kynge of the golden regions towarde the south sea, is taken prisoner. Lykewyse howe he gaue Ualchus. xxx. pounce weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. lx. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the cause of vehement wyndes nere vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the coloure of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zauana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Also howe kynge Comogrus baptised by the name of Charles, gaue Ualchus. xx. pounce weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Ualchus, and howe he was turned frō Goliath to Gileus, and frōme Anteus to Hercules: And with what facilitie the Spanyardes shall hereafter ob-

## The contentes of the decades,

teyne greate plentie of golde and pearles.

Of the Spanyardes conquestes, and fiercenesse of the Canibales. Also an exhortacion to Chrystian princes to sette forward Chrystes religion.

**C** The contentes of thes ourr booke. Fol. 104.

**C** The fourth vyage of Colonus the Admirall frome Spayne to Hispaniola, and to the other Ilandes and coastes of the firme lande: Also of the floreyng Ilande Guanassa.

Of seuen kyndes of date trees, wylde vynes, and Myrobalanes: Also of byrdes and foules.

Of people of goodly stature which ble to paynt theyr bodies: And of the swiftest course of the sea from the east to the west. Also of frethe water in the sea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana: And of greate Torroyles and reedes. Also of the foure famous Ilandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Ilandes cauled Limonares.

Of sweete savours and holtsome ayer: And of the region Quicuri, and the haven Cariai or Myrobalanus: Also of certeyne cunyle people.

Of trees growng in the sea after a straunge sorte, and of a straunge kynde of Monkeys which invade men and feight with wylde bozes.

Of the greate goulfe of Cerabaro replenished with many frucefull Ilandes, and of the people which weare cheynes of golde made of ouches wrought to the similitude of dyuers wylde beastes and foules.

Of fyve byllages whose inhabitauntes gyue them selues onely to gatherynge of golde, and are paynted, vsynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Also of seuen ryvers in all the which is founde greate plentie of golde: And where the plentie of golde ceaseth.

Of certeyne people which paynt theyr bodies, and couer theyr priue members with shelles, haung also plates of golde hangng at theyr noses.

Of certeyne woodmies which beinge engendered in the seas were abowt the Equinoctiall, eat holes in shippes: And how the Admirals shippes were destroyde by them.

AAAA, ii,

Howe

## The contentes of the decades.

Howe the kynge of Beragua enterteined the Lieutenane and of the great plenty of gold in the ryuer of Duraba and in al the regions there about: Also in rootes of trees and stones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieutenane and his company wolde haue erected a colonie helpe the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulsed by thinhabitantes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Ilande of Jamaica where he lyued miserably the space of tenne moonethes: And by what chaunce he was saued and came to the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Of holtsome regions, temperate ayer, and continual spring al the hole yeare: Also of certeyne people which honour golde religiously durynge theyr golden harvest.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heygth and hygher then the clowdes: Also the discription of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparynge the same to Italy.

Colonus his opinton as touchynge the supposed continente, and ispynyng of the north and south Ocean. Also of the breadth of the sayde continente or firme lande.

Of the regions of Uraba and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnonus and the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis. Also of certeyne marvellous and desolate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the same.

Of .xx. golden ryuers about Dariena and of certeyne precious stones, especially a diamunde of marueilous byggeneue bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroidal factes of the Spanyardes and howe they concernne effeminate pleasures. Also a similitude prouynge greate plenty of golde and precious stones.

### C The contentes of the fyfth booke, Fol. 113.

C The navigation of Petrus Arias from Spayne to Hispaniola and Dariena, and of the Ilandes of Canarie. Also of the Ilandes of Madanino, Guadalupea, and Balantia.

Of the sea of herbes and mountaynes covered with snow: Also of the swyfte course of the sea towards the west.

Of the ryuer Baica, the region Caramaiti, and the poyre Carthago

## The contentes of the decades,

Carthago and Sancta Martha: Also of Americus Vesputius and his expert cunnynge in the knowledge of the carde, compasse and quadrant.

Howe the Canibales assayled Petrus Arias with his hole nauie, and shot of theyr venemous arrowes euen in the sea. Also of theyr houses and household stuffe.

Howe Gonzalus Quietus founde a saphire bygger then a goodle egge: Also emerodes, calcidonies, iaspers, and amber of the mountaynes.

Of wooddes of brasile trees, plentie of golde, and marcha sites of metals founde in the regions of Caramairi, Baira, and Saturma. Also of a straunge kynde of marchaundes exercised amonge the people of zunu.

That the region of Caramairi is lyke to an earthly Paradise: And of the fruitefull mountaynes and pleasaunte gardenes of the same.

Of many goodly countreys made desolate by the fiercenes of the Canibales, and of dyuers kyndes of breade made of rootes. Also of the maner of plantynge the roote of Iucca, whose iuice is deadly popson in the Ilandes, and without hurte in the continent or firme lande.

Of certeyne golden ryuers, harres, wylde bores, foules, gossampine, whyte marble, and holsome ayer. Also of the greate ryuer Maragnonus descendynge from the mountaines covered with snowe, cauled Serra Reuata.

Howe Petrus Arias waied certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales: And howe by the stoppe course of the sea, his shippes were caried in one nyght fortye leaques beyonde the estimation of the beste pylottes.

### The contentes of the syxte booke. fol. 118.

Of sundry opinions why the sea runneth with so stoppe a course from the East to the west: and of the greate goulfe of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote from Englande to the frozen sea, and howe beinge repulled with Ice in the moonethe of July, he sayled farre westwarde.

Of people appavelled with beastes skynnes: And howe beastes take fyshes in the sea and eate them.

AAAA a, iiii,

Howe

## The contentes of the decades.

Howe Sebastian Cabote after that he had discovered the lande of Baccallaos or Baccalarum, was cauled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of the assistance of the counsaile of thaffayres of India, & of his second viage

Of the Ilande Fortis: And howe a great foule as bygge as a storke lyghed in the gouernours shyppe. Also howe he arriued at Dariena with the kynges nauie.

Howe Alschus receaued the newe gouernour: And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctial.

Howe Petrus Aries the newe gouernour distributed his army to conquere the south regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the same.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of the expedition ageynst the kyng of that region.

Of the Violent course of the sea from the east to the west: And of the difficulte saylynge ageynst the same.

Of the pestiferous and vnholsome ayer of Sancta Maria Antiqua in Dariena: and howe the Spanyardes were of necessitie inforced to plant theyr fyrst colonie and habitation there.

The cause of the variete of regions lyinge all vnder one degree or paralelle, and by what meanes the soonne beames are cause of feruent heate.

Of toades and flees engendered of droppes of water, and of a house set on fyre with lyghenyng.

*Tanquam canis  
& Nilo.*

Of a dogge deuoured of a Crocodyle, and of the venemous bytyng of great batters. Also of Lions and Tygers and other wyld beasts.

Howe in these regions all foure footed beasts growe to a bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the fyrste broode. Also of certeyne trees of whose planckes if ships be made, they are safe from the woormes cauled Byoma or Bytas.

Of a tre whose wood is present payson yf it be only bozne about: And of an herbe that is a preseruatiue ageynst the same.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the south sea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynst the Canibales.

¶ The contentes of the. vii. booke. fol. 124.

¶ The particular description of the Ilande of Hispaniola, and

## The contentes of the decades,

and of the ryche Ilande cauled Margaritea Diues lyinge in the South sea. Also of the greate abundaunce of bigge pearles founde in the same.

Howe the autoure compareth Hispaniola to the earthely Paradyse: And howe it farre excelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayre.

Of the fyrste inhabitours of Hispaniola & of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitants of Hispaniola in theyr songes & chymes had certeyne prophesies that appereled men shulde come to theyr contrey and byynge them into seruitude: And of theyr familiaritie with spirites. Also howe those spirites haue no more appered to them sence they were baptised.

Of theyr experyence in swymmyng: And of theyr detestable serpentes, byzdes, foules, and poppingiais.

Of the forme and situation of Hispaniola nere the Equinoctiall: And howe coulde is in sum place thereof accidental and not by the situation of the region.

Of oren and swyne of exceedinge bygnesse: And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the byann. Also howe the swyne are fedde with myzobalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, byzyle, mastix, gossampyne, Elemtrum &c: And of thyncommodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande: And howe the provinces are divided into regions.

Howe Andreas Mozalis sayled into a dangerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne: And of hols eyuers deuoured of suche caues. Also of the conducte of the waters.

Of a standynge poole in the tope of an hygh mountayne: And howe ferns and byamble bushes growe only in coulde regions.

The contentes of the .viii. booke .fol. 130

Of a greate lake or standynge poole of swete and salte water, and of the sea fyshes in the same in the myddelande of the Ilande. Also of deuourynge fyshes cauled Tiburoni.

Of the ryuers falling into the lakes, and of .xx. springes in the space of a furlonge,

A more

## The contentes of the decades.

Amiruelous hyffoz of a kynge stryken dumme and lame by a myracle: And of the Indian language.

Howe suche as are drowned in the lake, are neuer caste by ageyne: And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddeste of a standynge lake. Also of a lake of freshe water, and an other of salte and freshe water.

Of a large playne of two hundredeth myles in length: And an other of a hundredeth and twentie.

Of the meruelous fyfthe oz monster of the sea, cauled Manari oz Marum, fedde with mans hande: and howe he carryeth men over the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hylles, playnes, and ryuers of Hispaniola: And howe golde is founde in all mountaynes and golde and fyfthe in all ryuers.

Of salte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increase from the caues of the mountaynes. Also howe there is no hurtefull beaste in the Ilande.

Of the pleasures of Hispaniola: And of the region of Cotohi well inhabtyed and situate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachynge to the clowdes.

Of moderate coule in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygnesse.

Howe pure and massie gold is founde in the region of Cotoy oz Cotohy: And that the veyne of golde is a luyngge tree. Also of the rootes, branches, and floures of the same, and howe certeyne caues are susteyned with pylers of golde.

What golde is broughte yearlye frome Hispaniola into Spayne: And of the salte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as stoness and cleare as crystall. Also sprynges of salte, freshe and colde water.

Of certeyne wyld men luyngge in caues and dennes with out any certeyne language: And of theyr merueylous swiftnesse a foote.

Of pyrche of the rocke and twoo kyndes of trees: And of the leafe of a tree vled in the steepe of paper. Also howe thyn habitantes thinke that the Christians can make those leaues speake and disclose all secrettes.

Of a stronge coloure made of the iuse of a certeyn apples: And of the herbe whose smoke is payson.

## The contentes of the decades.

The contentes of the .ix. booke, fol. 136.

Of the kyndes of frutes wherwith th inhabitantes of Hispaniola lyued fyrste, and howe they came to the knowledg of Yucca. Also howe Ceres fyrst found wheate and barley in Egypte.

Why they kynges are cauled by dyuers names, & by what names they salute the kynges chyldren when they are borne: Howe they make theyr testaments, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buried with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hispaniola: And where it rayneth but lyttle, and where much.

Of the colonies and byllages that the Spanyardes haue buylded in Hispaniola: & of the other Ilands about the same

Of a sprynge which runnyng vnder the sea from Hispaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arctusa: Also of habitabyle regions vnder the Equinoctial, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Amma Album*: And of the Canibales: Also wherby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes: And of the generatioun of greate Toxoyles and of theyr egges.

The contentes of the .x. booke. fol. 140.

Of the expedition ageynste the kyng of the Ilande Dites in the south sea: And howe after foure condicions, submyttinge hym selfe, he gaue our men a hundreth and ten pounce weyght of greate pearles. Also howe he agreed to pay yearely a hundreth pounce weyght of pearles for a tribute.

Howe ares and hatchettes are moze esteemed then golde, or perles: And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnys. Also howe the kyng of Dites and his famelie were baptised.

Of perles of great pryce: And howe Paule the byshop of Rome bougth a perle for foure and fortie thousand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles: And of a hundreth perles founde in one shel fythe. Also of the byrth of perles.

Of the regions of the Easte syde of the goulfe of Arabia: And

## The contentes of the decades.

And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumcised people which haue the knowledge of letters and vse bookes : And what chaunced of the captiuities which Petrus Arias sente furth byuers wayes. Also howe John Solysius was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fierceneſſe.

Howe John Pontius was repulſed of the Canibales, and of the lewde behauiour of John Aiora.

Of the variable fortune of Bonſaius Badaſocius : And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was ſpoyled of all.

Of the golden region of Coiba Dices : And howe theyr ſlaues are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the ſouly ſea : And of the regions frome whence the Portugales fetch the ſpices.

Of a ſtrange kynde of ſowlyng : and of the trees that beare gourdies.

Of the later opinions as touchyng the ſtoppe courſe of the Ocean towarde the weſte : and of the continent or firme lande. Also of the byage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena, and the maner of gatheryng of golde in the ſame : Also of the droptic of courtouſnes which is not ſatysfied with ryches.

¶ For the contentes of the booke of the Ilands lately founde ſee the margente notes of the ſame.

¶ ¶ ¶

¶ ¶ ¶

I haue not in wyrtynge byn very curious  
To auoyde the ſcornes of Rhinoceros noſe,  
Or the ſpyled iudgement of ſeuere Ariſtarchus  
Not fearyng thereby any thyng to loſe,  
But haue thought it ſufficient to be open and playne  
Not lookyng for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well,  
I I be not barbarous I deſyre no more,

I haue not for enery woorde asked counsell  
Of eloquent Eliot or Syr Thomas Moore,  
Take it therfore as I haue intended,  
The fautes with fauour may soone be amended,

The poet Homere for all his eloquence,  
Lacked not Zoilus to be his foe,  
Wherfore I conclude this for a trewe sentence,  
That no man lacketh suo bargello:  
For as no beaste lyuerh without woorme or aye,  
So no man lacketh his priue enemy.

### Rumpatur Zoilus.

C Fautes escaped in the pryntynge. F. the leafe,  
L. the line. B. the backe syde of the leafe.

- F. 2. B. L. 36. helpen, reade helped.  
F. 3. B. L. 25. thre fethers, reade theyz fethers.  
F. 9. L. 28. fourme, reade forme.  
F. 20. L. 37. otre, reade potre.  
F. 22. B. L. 27. shure, reade sure.  
F. 30. L. 6. clooke, reade cloke.  
F. 34. L. 5. wodes, reade wooddes.  
F. 36. B. L. 22. put out and.  
F. 36. the last line. put out, I do.  
F. 36. B. L. 34. first parte, reade fyft parte.  
F. 38. B. L. 13. gardens, reade guardens.  
F. 52. L. 18. parte, reade porre.  
F. 62. B. L. 25. and, reade then.  
F. 68. the last line, put out trees.  
F. 92. L. 18. Michald, reade Michards.  
F. 92. L. 19. ans, reade and.  
Also there the laste line, put out, arose.  
F. 95. L. 12. cause, reade cause.  
F. 96. B. L. 15. gretheardes, reade greate heardes.  
F. 99. L. 17. filt hye, reade fylthy.  
F. 118. B. L. 35. langitude, reade longitude.  
F. 128. L. 42. eyses, reade heres.

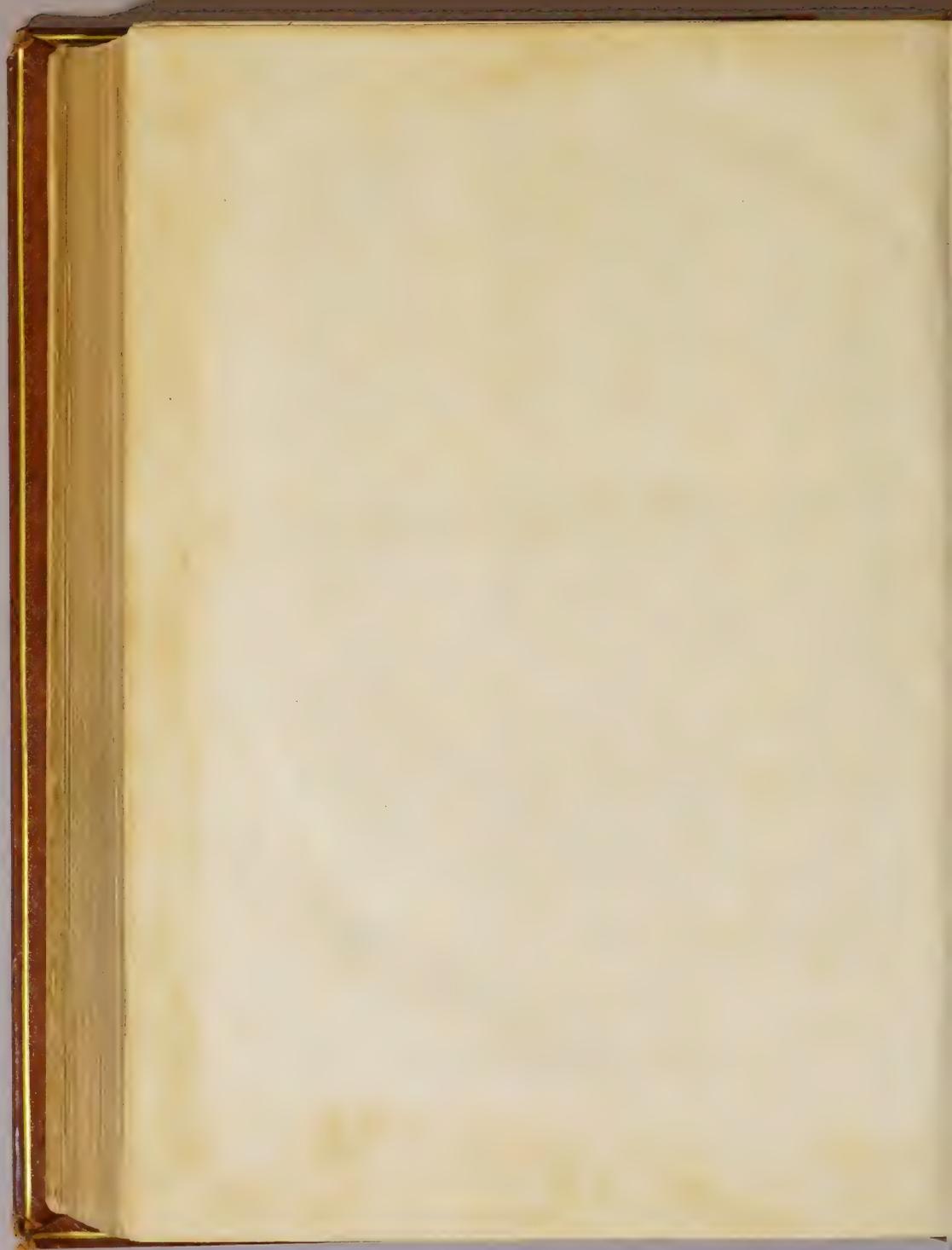
BBH

- f. 129. l. 1. Antiqua, reade Antiqua.
- f. 140. l. 17. counceled, reade counsayled.
- f. 150. l. 15. beles, reade bayles.
- f. 150. l. 33. prouydence, reade prouince.
- f. 153. l. 32. trackes, reade tractes.
- f. 154. l. 2. selde, reade seldome.
- f. 157. l. 26. wod, reade woodde.
- f. 168. B. l. 13. hortamus, reade hortauur.
- f. 170. B. l. 17. for. 1593. reade. 1493.
- f. 171. l. 21. without, reade with.
- f. 188. B. l. 33. burie, reade burne.
- f. 193. B. l. 21. webs, reade webbes.
- f. 199. B. l. 37. shydinge, reade shyninge.
- f. 202. l. 17. ny, reade any.
- f. 206. B. l. 23. fourme, reade forme.
- f. 208. B. l. 7. codes, reade coddes.
- f. 209. l. 15. wars, reade warres.
- f. 212. l. 40. ignitie, reade dignitie.
- f. 219. l. 10. vs, reade them.
- f. 228. l. 37. rant, reade ranne.
- f. 241. l. 4. Colonuo, reade Colono.
- f. 249. l. 17. reade by the commynge of the  
Bothes and Mandales: &c.
- f. 262. B. l. 15. Thus, reade this.
- f. 296. l. 26. reade Singulus Mundi, that is the  
gerdle of the worlde, othertypse cauled Catena  
Mundi, that is, the chapne of the worlde.
- f. 298. B. l. 3. sennes, reade fennes.
- f. 300. l. 20. ceelcrypte, reade celeritie.
- f. 317. l. 27. reade Tercera or Terciera.
- Also. l. 35. kyngedgme, reade kynngdome.
- f. 322. l. 17. owre compasse, reade the compasse.

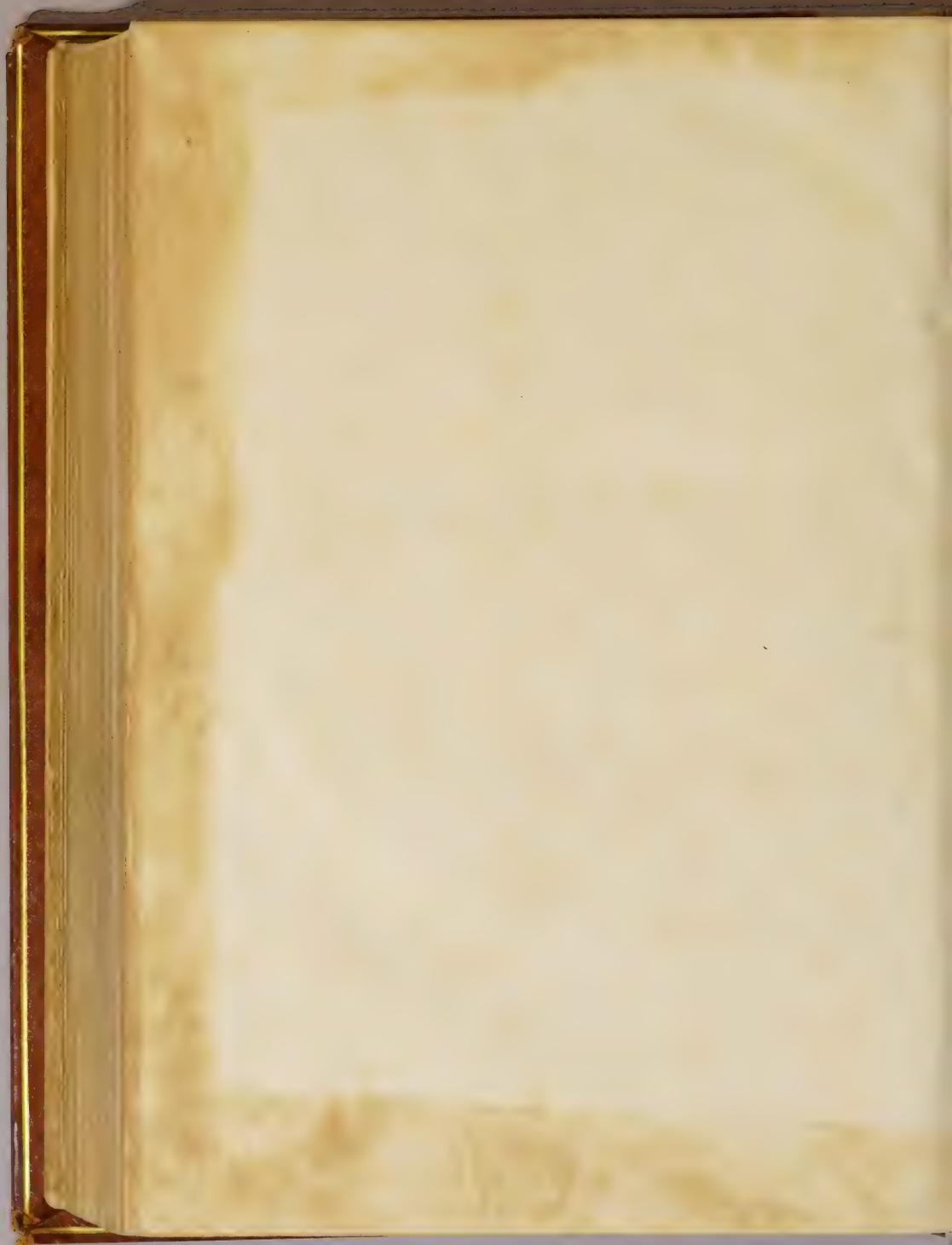
**C**Imprynted at London in Lumbarde Streete  
at the signe of the Cradle by  
Edwarde Sutron.

Anno. Dñi. M. D. LV.









H 555  
A 587d1

*Sebastian Cabot 255*





